

Andre Adams is the name i will be turning 22 in a few months. But people dont believe im 22 cause of the people i hang around with and people i do business with and I prefer it that way . I have my own place and live alone. My mother is white while my dad is black/ coloured. My father mother is zulu who married into a coloured family THE ADAMS well i have features of my mum , i have greenish eyes, my mums dimples, my fathers body structure , my own creation ke my lips not thick nor thin ,they pretty pink not too pink though cause i smoke im also covered in ink

I only have 2 siblings dorian and Kimberley. Dorian is the oldest his 25 while kim is only 15. my father died while i was still in high school as for my mum i dont have much to say about her cause after my father death she went crazy. Since me and dorian have our own places kim lives with my mothers parents

Relationship wise , im not very good. To be honest I love f\*cking around no matter how grown I am well girls tend to be in a relationship with me but im not in a relationship with them. Only because im always busy and sticking to one girl just aint me and the girls i f\*ck with know that very well

Best friends Themba and deon oh and im a paramedic

## INSERT #1

Deon; im tired man like im really tired , i want to go and sleep

Me; its not just you why are we even waiting here, i knew i should have not accompanied you

Deon; she said she was coming , so i dont know whats up

Me; maybe her parents said no, we have been waiting outside here for an hour or even more man and she said she was coming an hour ago , lets just go

Deon;let me text her

Me; done?

Deon; yeah lets go

I started the engine and we drove off

Me; so whats really going on with this girl

Deon; \*laughing\* just fun, you know

Me; \*laughing\* hmmmm ohk

Deon; what?

Me; you have been telling me about this girl for weeks now, i dont think its fun anymore

Deon; what you mean

Me; i mean you beginning a relationship with this girl

Deon; no im not

Me; really, you have been seeing this girl for weeks. I dont even remember the girl i f\*cked a month ago but nowadays you f\*cking one

Deon; you make it sound like its a bad thing

Me; no its not but it is unlike you

Deon; \*laughing\* sometimes its not all about hitting it you know

Me; tell me that when im 50 ohk

Deon; or even 60 when it comes to you

I just laughed. We got to his place

Me; dont call me tomorrow i just want to sleep ohk

Deon; haha why the f\*ck would i even call you, bye man

Me; sharp

He got off the car and i drove to my place , i opened the oven and my food was in there courtesy of masesi my very own helper. More like my mother actually. I ate my food while watching highlights and went to bed i was not a tv person.

The next morning

Masesi; andre.... Andre

Me; mmmmmm

Masesi; breakfast

Me; mama il eat when i wake up, i just want to rest

Masesi; are you sick

Me; no

She kept talking but i did not hear anything cause i zoned off again. Later that day woke up, checked the time and it was 2 thats how tired i was , i washed up, brushed my teeth and went downstairs with my boxers

Masesi; i thought you were dead

Me; \*laughing\* i was just tired ma , so how are you

Masesi; im good andre you?

Me; im good ma

I took my breakfast and went out , outside the pool and called my brother

Dorian; the man himself

Me; hey man, where you at

Dorian; the warehouse why?

Me; wanted to know , let the guys know im not coming in  
Dorian; whatsup

Me; nothing im just tired

Dorian; ohk il come by your house later

Me; ohk

I chilled at home the whole day, masesi kept feeding me and i did not mind . Later that day dorian came by and we just hung out. As brothers meaning no talking about work but things that happen in our lives

generally

Dorian; so have you seen mum?

Me; no man, im too busy

Dorian; no you not

Me; why must i go and see her and when i do see her what do i even say to her

Dorian; she is your mother

Me; so, dont you think i know that. Just like i said i dont even know what i would say to her. Shes insane

Dorian; and its not her fault that shes sick

Me; have you seen Kimberley

Kimberley was my sister

Dorian; i was thinking we go see her sometime this weekend

Me; tomorrow plus its Saturday

Dorian; you hitting the club tomorrow

Me; you know i am arent you going

Dorian; \*laughing\* why you even asking. I need me a girl

Me; good luck man

Dorian; what ? You know girls are crazy over this  
\*pointing at his face\*

Me; you fucken sound gay

Dorian; piss off , so will you pick me up tomorrow

Me; sure what time should we leave

Dorian; early latest 10

Me; cool, now get the fuck out of my house

Dorian; you are a b\*tch ass nigga

Me; \*Laughing\* i dont care, leave

After he left. I went straight to bed

INSERT #2

The next morning wore blue jeans, white long sleeve top, and white nikes with a cap , took my car keys and left to pick up dorian, got to his place and we drove to my grandparents house. We got there and they were relaxed while kim was all ready

Me; hey you

Hugging kim

Kim; hey dre, i missed you

Dorian; and you did not miss me

Kim; i missed the both of you guys come on

Me; missed you too nana... Hi ma

Kissing my grandmother on the cheek

Ma; helo baby, how are you

Me; im good ma ... Dad

Grandfather; helo boy

Dorian; how is the most beautiful couple in this world doing

ma; \*laughing\* you are so sweet baby come here

She kissed him on the cheek

Me; so whats going on , are you two good?

Dad; yes boy but we would appreciate it if we would see you more

Me; i know dad its just we too busy

Grandfather; so how is business going

Me; great the money is coming in good with large numbers

Dad; thats great so where are you going

Dorian; we just going to grab lunch

Ma; ohk please bring me something to eat

Me; will do ma... Lets go nana

She took her small bag and we headed out

Dorian; so hows school

Kim; exhausting and im only in grade 9 just imagine

Me; \*laughing\* so have you finally decided what you want to do

Kim; not exactly, its so hard to choose a career and the most scary part , will you actually be the person you set your mind too

Dorian; yes you will

Kim; no dorian , not all the time i dont want to get disappointed do you have any idea how many people wanted to be doctors and lawyer but it never came true

Me; so whats your point exactly

Kim; i will only make a decision when i get to varsity  
Dorian; you do know that the subjects you do next year  
also help you on what you want to do

Kim; no they dont , i wont be learning all the things iv  
learned in high school in varsity

Me; dorian means you cant do general and when you get  
to varsity want to do health science cause they will require  
you to have done science at school

Kim; which is why im going to do science cause that way i  
can choose whatever i want to study in varsity

Dorian; you seriously dont know which career path you  
want to follow

Kim; no and its for the best

Me; you getting too smart for your age, people your age  
are dreaming on how after school they will do this and be  
that but you no

Kim; next thing i set big dreams, i get 40% for matric and  
varsities reject me for what i dreamed about and end up  
studying for some degree or diploma that wont get me  
anywhere

Me; so kim if you dont dream

Kim; i dont get disappointed at all

Dorian; ohk tell me this varsities will ask you which programme you applying for then what

Kim; for each and every varsity i apply for i will apply for different courses

Me and dorian both turned to look at her on the back seat

Kim; what \*raising her shoulders\*

Dorian; nothing Kimberley nothing

Kim; ohk

We went to watch a movie, more like they watched the movie while i was busy on my phone. Like i easily get bored so a movie was just boring for me. After the movie we went to spurs and i ordered my usual. Steak, chips and beer while they got food for themselves.

Kim; so the 2 of you , whats new

Dorian; well nothing , same old same old

Kim; by same old you mean you still dont have gfs, you still criminals

I looked up from my plate and looked at her

Me; you getting too smart for your shoes ne

Kim; \*Laughing\* what im just saying

Dorian; well you right same old and you

Me; nothing is new in her life shes still unpopular , her crush does not know she exist oh and you still depend on criminals to give you pocket money

Kim; i see you got jokes ne

Dorian; \*laughing\* just like you have jokes

Me; \*laughing\* exactly

Kim; and for your information me and my crush talk

Us; oh really?

Kim; yes

Dorian; what did he say? Maybe something like you not his type

Me; no oh maybe something like you more like a sister to him

Me and dorian laughed and she just looked at us

Kim; he said he wanted to f\*ck me

She immediately got rid of the smiles on our faces

Me; WHAT?

Dorian; dont f\*ck with us

Kim; \*laughing\* now who is laughing

Me; i will kill you Kimberley

Kim; im just joking relax , geez

Dorian; you better be joking

We ate our lunch bought a few clothes around 6 we dropped her off and hit the club at rosebank. Well it was packed it usually is though

Me; hey man

Shane; hey dre

Fist bumping

I sat down

Abel; yho ntwana zkhiphana ( what's up)

Me; yho ntwana nix yazi, lana abo girl ngizele bona phela mina lah ( nothing ey I just came for the girls here)

girl; but then that's the only reason you go clubbing

I turned and it was my angel , no our angel. MBALI. She was the only girl that knew every shit we did, the girls we fucked. I mean she was the queen of our kingdom. We met few years back and our friendship kicked off there

Me; \*laughing\* i was wondering where you are?

I got up and hugged her

Mbali; you good muhleza

Me; ngi ryt mubi

Mbali; hey guyyysssss abantu bami

The guys; hey baby

She sat down next to deon

Mbali; can i just get drunk guys like please i want to have fun

Me; im with you on that

We got ourselves shots and the party began

#GOODMORNING

INSERT #3

By 4 am we were all drunk and i mean drunk. We walked out of the club

Me; \*shaking my head\* im not driving

Deon; who is driving then?

Mbali; i dont give a fuck who drives , just someone get on the driver seat

abel; i i will

Us; NO!!!

Me; you know what fuck this il drive.

Shane drove the other car and i drove my car

Mbali; when i said i wanted to be drunk, i didnt mean to be this drunk

Deon; \*laughing\* you always drunk

Mbali; fuck off deon

We went to deon crib , parked and went inside. I threw myself on the couch and passed out there

Next day woke up on the couch. raising my head was just another story

Mbali; \*kicking me\* wake up

Me; mmmm

Mbali; dre wake up

Me; what?

Mbali; we have to go

Me; where?

Mbali; you have to drop me off

Me; no

Mbali; please

Me; deon , will drop you off im in no state to drive

Mbali; ohk but lets go

Me; who is driving

Mbali; deon will drive

Me; ohk

I got up grabbed something to eat then headed out. I sat on the passenger seat, pushed my sit back and covered my face with my cap and closed my eyes trying to sleep

Deon; so Monday you going to school

Mbali; yeah man like i just want to graduate ey

Deon; but you only left with a year

Mbali; a year that is too long papa , i mean too long

Me; what year are you doing now

Mbali; i cant believe you dont know that

Me; \*laughing\* i do i just want to make sure

Mbali; 3 rd year

Me; akufani lala yazi

Mbali; voetsek... Thank you guys ne

Us; sure

Mbali; so when am i seeing you again

Deon; Friday

Mbali; thats too far, why dont you pick me up from school wednesday

Me; \*laughing\* you just want to show off ngathi ne

Mbali; piss off

Deon; \*laughing\* see you wednesday ke

Mbali; love you guys

Us; we know

She just laughed and closed the door

Me; take me home

Deon; im not your fucken driver

Me; i dont care

He drove me home and dropped me off

I took a long shower and went out, i had a few missed calls from my girls so i called helen

Helen; baby been waiting for your call

Me; i know you have

Helen; where are you, i miss you

Me; you miss me or my d

Helen; \*laughing\* both, now come over i want to have fun

Me; give me half an hour

Helen; ohk il be waiting

I quickly changed , took my car keys and left. Drove to helen place and she was outside i did not get out of the car. She came to my window

Helen; mmmhmmm you looked this good for me wow

Me; \*laughing\* what you doing out

Helen; my friend just left , come on in

Me; ohk

I got out off the car and followed her inside

Me; where were you yesterday?

Helen; was out

Me; out \*raising my eyebrow\*

Helen; yes

Me; you better not be fucking some nigga and fucking with me again

Helen; come on dre of course not, you know i fuck with you only

Me; good come here

I picked her up and pinned her to the wall , she wrapped her feet around my waist but i unlock them and put her down again. I removed her clothes and she took of my belt before she could push my pants down i took out the

wrapper at the back off my pocket ,she went down and the girl did her magic, sucking, licking and made me moan. I pulled her up , picked her up and pinned her on the wall , she locked her feet around my waist "make me happy' she whispered to my ear and i followed her instructions, the deeper and faster i went. The louder her moans were and the harder she scratched my back. I pushed in the last inch and she gasped for air while her body trembled. I walked to the bed and just lay her there cause she was exhausted. I went out, grabbed my clothes and plate of food , sat at the lounge and watched tv

Helen; you ate

I turned and she was wearing a baggy top only

Me; yeah, just finished eating

She sat next to me

Helen; dre can i ask you something

Me; sure

Helen; will we ever be a couple

I turned to look at her

Helen; i mean like a real relationship, i became your only girl

Me; dont ruin my mood

Helen; im sorry never mind

Me; i dont mind, now i hope we never going to talk about this again

She nodded her head

#### INSERT #4

Monday morning. Prepared for work and it was the usual hectic accidents we were busy mostly at soweto and other cases. Around 7 i knocked off and went to the warehouse

Sandile; boza yami

Me; sure boy, ugrand

sandile; ngi mnandi wena

Me; ngi grand

Dorian; so we got a new merchandise

Me; how good is it

Shane; great boza , its the real thing

Me; will see if its selling ke, via ekari

Themba; \*rubbing his hand\* we should get it by the end of this week and stephen will get it in 2 weeks time, should we finish everything by that time, papers, disc everything

Me; but its possible right

Themba; who are we?

Me; \*laughing\* exactly...im meeting new customers boma next week and sending some of our stuff that side in a few days

Dorian; money is coming in

Me; and dollars baba

Deon; which means w..

I cut him off

Me; no deon, you already getting too much man

Deon; of course you were going to say that

Me; Wednesday im not going to work , so il probably be here ohk

Them; cool

I left for home and just went to bed. Tuesday none much happened just work and went straight home. Wednesday woke up and wore my nike shorts, nike hoodie, black cap, and all star and headed to the warehouse. Well when im there its usually the same just work around 2 me and deon left to pick up mbali

We got to her school and after 10 minutes she showed up

Mbali; can we go to mcd please

Me; only because im hungry

We parked from a distance cause there was no space and walked there, gaining stares of course. Mbali opened the door and it was packed mostly students and they could not remove their eyes

Me; i think im going to have fun

Mbali and deon looked at me

Me; oh please dont act like you dont know me

Mbali; dont worry we not surprised

We ordered our food and stood at the other line waiting for our food but there was a girl in front of us she was beautiful , beautiful body , she was hot

Me; excuse me

She turned and it looked like she was taken by me , cause she was just staring at me

Me; is this the line for collecting food

Her; \*smiling\* yes , you at the right place

Me; thank you

Her; pleasure

Me; im andre by the way

Her; candice

Me; you beautiful

Candice; \*laughing\* you not bad yourself andre

Mbali; dude, you eating or??

Me; are you eating with someone?

Candice; well my friend, shes saving a sit for us

Me; ohk can i see you again

Candice; if you want to

Me; give me your numbers

She didnt even hesitate

Her; ohk

I gave her my phone and she saved it

Me; il call you ohk

Her; ohk

Hugged her and we left

Mbali; how the fuck do girls fall for that shit

Me; \*laughing\* i dont know and i dont care as long as i get their numbers im cool with that

Deon; \*smiling\* it never gets old

Me; except to you

Mbali; \*laughing\* yeah iv been meaning to ask you, whats with you and this girl

Me; \*laughing\* thank you mbali lets ask him

Deon; cant you be happy for a guy

Mbali; no, no dont get us wrong we happy for you but is it a start of a relationship or what... You have been with this girl for a month, you call her all the time i have been friends with you for way too long that i know its not you to hang out with one GIRL for so long unless

Me; unless...

Deon; unless what

Us; you in a relationship

Deon; maybe

Me; maybe thats definitely a yes

Mbali; \*clapping her hands\* you have grown, im proud of you now please tell this ass on my right to get serious and stop fucking around

Me; dont even bother to waste your breath

We got to the warehouse and ate all together

'mbali; so how much is the merchandise worth

Me; 3

Mbali; 3 really

Me; yeah man its not bad

Mbali; the last one something ne

Shane; yeah this time around , it not some cheap stuff

Themba; and suppliers are happy which is why it went up

Mbali; thats great cause i need a favour

Deon; what

Mbali; i need kicks guys

Me; which one

Mbali; puma it 2. 3

Me; how much you got

Mbali; 1

Deon; \*laughing\* baby 1 not even 1 something

Mbali; nah man like my mum is so selfish with her money nowadays and whenever i want something , shes always telling me about fees and its annoying

Me; why dont you just live at res

Mbali; will you pay for res

Ty; , why dont you get nsfas

Mbali; i cant cause my mum works at government so they think my mum can afford to pay my fees im not poor enough for them

Me; thats fucked up and youl get it by the end of this week

She kissed all of us

Mbali; thank you guys

Sandile; uyazi noma yini for wena

## INSERT #5

Well our Wednesday was fun, shane dropped off mbali home. When i got home i called candice

Me; hi

Candice; hi, who is this?

Me; andre

Candice; oh andre im sorry, i was expecting your call earlier , i thought you wont call

Me; and why would i not call, i did take your numbers to call you and not decorate my phone

Candice; \*laughing\* guess i judged you too soon

Me; yeah so how are you

Candice; im good but tired it was a long day

Me; when will i see you

Candice; well during the week its school but weekend , no from Friday i can be all yours

Me; \*laughing\* you are so freaky, you already want to make yourself mine

Candice; maybe

Me; no maybe baby , come on you want me or not cause i want you

Candice;.....

Me; candiceeeee are you still there

Candice; yeah maybe i dont know

Me; \*laughing\* that is what i wanted to hear. Il pick you up Friday when i get back from work and will go grab something to eat

Candice; ohk cant wait

Me; me too baby

After talking to candice i went to bed. Thursday was just another busy day , Friday went to work and knocked off at 4 , went home to take a quick shower and just wore a pair of jeans, golf tshirt and pair of sneakers. I left and went to maponya cause that was the closest mall for her. She

called me letting me know she was at news cafe. I got out off the car and she looked beautiful. She was wearing white shorts , pink top and white sandals she looked beautiful no lie for a moment i wanted her to be my gf

Me; hey beautiful

Hugging her

Candice; hey you

Me; you look beautiful

Candice; i try , but you on the other hand

Me; \*laughing\* we would go in here but i think you still too young

Candice; \*punching me\* not too young to be with you

Me; \*laughing\* yeah of course not

We walked inside and she wrapped her hand around my arm and i did not mind

Me; so how was school

Candice; just another long boring day babe

Me; what you studying

Candice; business administration

Me; thats nice

Candice; yeah its not too bad

Me; thats not convincing

Candice; i actually wanted to do law but my marks were not on my side so had to switch to bba

I immediately thought about what kim said

Me; at least you doing something

Candice; yeah and you, what do you do

Me; im a medic

Candice; thats nice, but you dont look like a medic

Me; \*laughing\* why is that

Candice; \*pointing at my tattoo\* this

Me; \*laughing\* my tattoos, thats crazy

Candice; iv never seen a medic with one, so maybe thats why... You really love ink dont you

Me; yeah a lot , you have any

Candice; always wanted one but never got the courage too

Lady: hi I'm nakedi il be with you throughout you ready to order?

Me; yes babe?

Candice; yes

Me; give me this plate , greek salad and heinekein

Candice; and il also have this but with hunters gold

Her; ohk

Candice; so who are you fucking?

Me; \*laughing\* who am i fucking, what you mean

Candice; i oviasly know you not singel so who are you fucking

Me; il be fucking you

Candice; \*laughing\* you think so

Me; i know so or am i lying cause i can see the hunger in your eyes

Candice; hunger??? Im just hungry for the plate that will be coming in a few minutes

Me; ohk candice

Candice; you killing me andre

Me; \*laughing\* what did i do

Candice; you reading my mind

Me; so i was right

Candice; yeah , you something else

Me; haha well thank you mami

Our food arrived and we dug in

Candice; so why dont you show your real eyes

Me; what you mean

Candice; yesterday you were wearing lenses even today

Me; actually these are my real eyes, people always think  
im wearing contact lenses

Candice; \*laughing\* no way ! You lying

Me; can you spot lenses

Candice; yeah

Me; come here and sit here \*tapping my legs\*

She sat on top off me and looked up so she could try and  
pot "lenses"

Candice; these are your real eye vele

Me; yeah

She went back to her seat

Candice; can i ask you something

Me; sure

Candice; which race do you belong to

Me; \*laughing\* i dont know my dad was coloured but  
everything about him was black zulu guy but he was too  
light, his father was coloured while my mum is white

Candice; so you coloured

Me; im not sure , maybe

Candice; what you mean maybe

Me; i mean exactly that

Candice; your dad was coloured and you dont look black

Me; cause i have coloured eyes and im light

Candice; well yeah

Me; but my d is off a black guy

She spilled her drink in her mouth and i just laughed out loud

Me; \*Laughing\* act like a lady

Candice; piss off

She was great company no lie , after eating i paid and we left. Got to her place i said my goodbye and left

This was late breakfast, lunch coming up around 3/4 and supper 8.

## INSERT#6

Saturday dressed up clean, wore my black slim fit trousers, white shirt, black tie and black blazer with formal shoes , brushed my hair nicely and took the nicest car and

left for randburg i had a meeting there. Got to the restaurant and everyone was already there

Me; gentleman

Them; mr adams

Me; how you doing

Mr william; not very good, but we hope by the end of this meeting everyone will be good

Me; lets hope so, lets get ourselves drink

The waiter came and served us with our drinks

Me; lets get down to business

Stephen; the new merchandise

Me; its coming in next week , a barge will be 500

Owen; come on turner , 500

Me; its pure and cut, talk about uncut il give it to you for 100

Mr william; 3 barge il have to give you 1.5

Me; exactly man, that simple

Owen; ohk guess we have no other choice

Me; \*laughing\* no you dont

Stephen; the g wagon man, lets get down to real business

Me; my boys are organising that , you know how much i need on that right

Stephen ; and il pay you in cash

Me; perfect, now my business

Jake; i have this new gadget

Me; from where

Jake ; come on turner , you know where i get it

'me; i just dont need fucked up shit

Jake; you have my word on that and just so you trust me , i give it to you for a week try it out, you dont like it you give it back to me but if you do we talk about cash later on

Me; thats all i needed to know

Owen; why is it you get your things so simple but we have to fight you, with ours

Me; \*laughing\* its called knowing your shit

Months passed and my business was doing good. I was still close to candice not a relationship though and helen. November passed by so fast and next thing it was december i loved december i mean i loved it. Mbali was done with her exams and it meant partying for us all

Woke up Monday morning , took a long shower and just chilled after few hours deon, mbali, helen, nhlanhla came to my place

Me; is there a party i should know about

Mbali; yeah \*shouting\* PARTY AT YOUR PLACE

Me; why are you so loud?

Helen; hey babe

Me; hey you

Nhlanhla; we missed you man and you know you missed us too

Me; keep telling yourself that shit

Mbali; im ordering pizza ohk

Deon; please man triple deck, chicken, triple cheese

Mbali; got it

We went to sit outside

Mbali; i ordered 5 and drinks

Me; im really lazy to go out so one of you will have to go

Mbali; il go car keys?

Me; bed side

Mbali; ohk

Mbali left with helen leaving us guys

Nhlanhla; this girl is in love with you

Me; no shes not man come on she knows were we stand

Deon; but still , no girl will stand this shit of yours but she does

Me; so what do you suggest i do

Nhlanhla; \*laughing\* how the hell should we know

Me; exactly , things are good between us and i told her she must not fall in love with me straight so if she did thats all on her

Nhlanhla; \*laughing\* theres no girl in the world that will change you wena, you will forever die like this

Me; and i dont want any girl to change me

Deon; but candice , fuck man

Nhlanhla; candice is real candy

Me; \*laughing\* shes something i mean shes hot

Deon; more than hot , she makes me want to forget about kamo

Me; while we on kamo, you still fucking with this girl

Deon; yeah man

Nhlanhla; are you fucking or dating deon

Deon; whats the difference

Me; the difference is if its "fucking" you can still fuck with other girls but if its dating you fuck her alone

Deon; guess its the second one

Me; fuck deon really?

Deon; you should try it and you will know how i feel

Nhlanhla; \*laughing\* you whipped man

Me; listen to this guy, you talking about feelings now

Deon; just leave me ohk i like her a lot so please

Me; next thing you will not longer be going out with us

Deon; cant you just be happy for me

Nhlanhla; no we are

He looked at me

Me; oh no boy, im happy for you do you man do you...

Anyway have you seen dorian

Nhlanhla; no he only said he was going to meet us here

Me; ohk

We waited for the girls and after a few minutes they arrived with our drinks. The pizza had already arrived and dorian came too.

Helen; can i sleep over tonight

Me; sure but tomorrow im going to work

Helen; il leave tomorrow morning

Me; ohk i care for you ohk

Helen; \*smiling\* me too

Deon; so ntwana are we doing our last year , next year

Mbali; we have too man , im freaked out about the whole idea

Me; why, you have never failed so whats up

Mbali; with varsity you never know your faith i mean never

Deon; just so you know you fail, our friendship ends

Me; im with you on that

Mbali; oh nice how great is this

Me; \*laughing\* yeah simple and if you pass

Nhlanhla; you get something for it

Mbali; what exactly

Me; 5 grand

Mbali; \*laughing\* what?

Helen; really?

Me; yeah 5 , we have to do our last year mami even if it means giving you 5

Mbali; but guys you cant put this much pressure on me, iv already written my exams

Me; thats the fun of it. We want to see the time you were not going out with us if you were really studying

Mbali; i hate all of you i mean hate all of you

Dorian; but its a good deal come on , we know our queen would never fail

Me; exactly

Mbali; and i so want my money if i pass

Me; you will get it as soon as i see the results

Mbali; so can i ask you guys for a favour

Deon; what up

Mbali; the is a cousin of mine , coming this side december so can you organise her a ticket for 31st

Nhlanhla; you mean nkuli

Mbali; no, you dont know her actually shes moving here

Me; why

Mbali; well her mum died and she recently lost her father , you remember the funeral i went too in capetown

Dorian; shame man, thats painful

Mbali; yeah so cause she had no siblings , my parents decided to take her in after all my father and her father were family . So she will be transferring universities coming this side and living with us

Me; you think she will be up for a party

Mbali; no but i cant live her alone

Dorian; ohk il definitely organise it for her

Me; are you having a crush on this girl already

Dorian; no man, i mean like its painful ey losing both parents and having no one to turn too

me: So shes alone?

Mbali; besides us , she also has her grandparents that are too old to look after her

Me; how old is she

Mbali;20

Helen; and shes only going to do her second year next year thats a shame

Mbali; no actually third year she finished school when she was 17

Me; smarty pants

Mbali; hell yeah , shes studying medicine

Us; FUCK!!!

Deon; that cries out nerd and filthy

Mbali; \*laughing\* what?

Nhlanhla; its just always the smart people are the unclean ones , most of the time in highschoool. Work everywhere

Me; \*laughing\* i have to agree

Mbali; no shes not in fact she is beautiful

Me; of course you going to say thats, shes your cousin

## INSERT #7

The following week on a Friday i went to work when i knocked off went to pick up kim since she nicely asked to stay over the weekend and have fun with me

Me; helo ma

Ma; helo baby , how are you

Me; tired im here for the miss

Ma; shes already packed , take care off her please

Me; i will ma relax, do you need anything

Ma; no baby we fine

Kim came downstairs with her bags

Me; you only coming over for the weekend

Kim; i know but i need everything in these bags

Me; fine

I helped her out and took them to the car, i stayed with my grandmother for an hour or 2 just catching up and we left for my place

Kim; is masesi there

Me; yes shes always there you know that

Kim; and dorian

Me; im not sure about him, its either his working or at his place

Kim; why is it that you boss dorian around but he is the oldest

Me; no i dont kim

Kim; yes you do , one time i heard you swearing at him

Me; \*laughing \* what did you hear

Kim; \*imitating me\* WHERE THE FUCK DID YOU GET THAT FROM, YOU FUCKEN STUPID

Me; \*laughing\*kim stop lying iv never said dorian is stupid

Kim; ohk i made that up but the rest is true

Me; well its my business and when we working together his just like everybody else and not my big brother

Kim;what would you say if i wanted to work with you

Me; nothing, its your choice

Kim; wooo never ever, i would be crazy to work for you

Me; \*laughing\* shut up

We got to my place and masesi was waiting for us, well the 2 ladies screamed and excitedly hugged each other. I grabbed my plate and went to the lounge. Kim sat next to me

Kim; why dont you change

Me; im lazy kim

Kim; ohk give me the remote

I gave it to her

Me; no girly shit kim

Kim; i know this is fine

We watched tv, then put on a movie we laughed and the second movie she fell asleep. I picked her up and tucked her in her bed. Then went to my bedroom changed and fell asleep the moment i closed my eyes

Saturday morning went downstairs and kim was swimming

Me; you fast is that your shower

Kim; you know im bathing right now

Me; \*laughing\* have you eaten

Kim; no let me go out

Me; ohk

I went back to the kitchen and sat on one of the chairs  
she joined me dripping wet

Kim; so what we going to do today

Me; i was hoping you will tell me that

Kim; gold reef please

Me ohk , go wash and then will meet each other down  
here in 30 minutes ohk

We ate our breakfast and i went up, took a shower wore  
my ripped jeans , airforce and golf tshirt and black cap ,  
kim was wearing shorts, chucks and blue top with  
sunglasses

We arrived and it was full, it usually is december time.  
Well we did what she wanted us to do and we both had  
fun then grabbed lunch.

Kim; so who are you dating

Me; no one

Kim; dont you want to find a stable gf

Me; no

Kim; why are you so against falling in love

Me; im not

Kim; yes you are or maybe it what happened to mum and dad

Me; nothing happened to them

Kim; exactly they were happy andre, really happy and you just scared to be in a relationship

Me; why would i be scared

Kim; that when you have finally found the person you love , they will leave you and it will break you just like mum broke when dad died

I just looked at her

Kim; you cant be sleeping with different girls andre all the time, sooner or later you will have to be a father and be married how will you get all of that if you just being a player

Me; oh wow my 15 year old sister is lecturing me about relationships and i dont want to be married or have kids so drop it

Kim; whatever but you know im telling the truth

Me; who are you dating kim, relationship expert

Kim; \*laughing\* no one

Me; tell me all of that when you have a bf

Kim; but you dont want me to have a bf

Me; yes i dont so that means will both die alone

Kim; shame keep telling yourself that

After our lunch we went back home and the time was 7 got there and the guys were outside. I got out off the car

Mbali; why the hell dont you answer your phone

Me; i dont even know where it is

Kim; hey guys

Them ; hey kim

Deon; we going clubbing

Me; nah you can go

Mbali; hell no we not , kim lets get you dressed

Kim; im going to a club

Me; first time and last time

I went back to the car and drove inside. She went upstairs with mbali and we waited for them i was ohk so i was not going to change after a few minutes they came down

She was wearing a mini , top and chucks, makeup and small bag. We drove in my car with mbali and went to pick up candice. Then went to sandton

Bouncer; but turner man, shes young

Me; come on man here

I gave him 2 hundred and he let kim in

Me; you either stay with me, the guys or mbali ohk. I dont want you all over the place or it will be the last time i go with you anywhere

Kim; ohk i am allowed to have fun right

Me; not too much fun

Candice; thats your sister

Me; yeah

Candice; you all look alike, you, dorian and her

Me; haha i dont think so

## INSERT #8

Me; what is that

Kim; its a drink

Mbali; its just a cocktail, give the kid a break... Drink it lala

She looked at me

Me; \*laughing\* this is the last time im allowing you to do such kimberley

Kim; thank you

Well we all had fun, candice was all over me and kim looked disgusted at that after a few hours being there dorian arrived and was shocked and happy to see kim. Mbali was with kim the entire time, dancing with her and other stuff

Candice; am i coming home with yo...

Girl ; hey guys

I turned and it was helen

Me; hey baby

I hugged her and she kissed me on the cheek , candice just looked at me but i did not pay her any attention

Candice; so

Me; so ?

Candice; am i

Me; ohk if you want too then you will come home with me

Candice; \*smiling\* ohk

I got back to my drink

Helen; how did you even get in

Kim;i have my ways

Helen; \*laughing\* you mean your brother has his ways

Kim; and that

Me; lets go and dance

She took my hand and we went to the dancefloor

Me; you ohk

Helen; yeah, whats her name

Me; candice

Helen; she is beautiful

Me; you also beautiful

Helen; \*laughing\* of course i am

Me; why didnt you tell me you coming

Helen; wanted to surprise you but you surprised me

Me; \*laughing\*im sorry

Helen; i know you so was expecting it

Me; lets go get drunk

Helen;\*raising her hands \* YESSSSS

We went back and got ourselves drunk then went home.  
Candice got more busy than me cause i was half dead

Sunday i took candice home and came back. Went to kim room and she looked dead so i just left her went to sit outside and got busy with my phone

Helen; I MISS YOU WHEN YOU FREE PLEASE COME SEE ME

Me; IL COME SEE YOU OHK

Helen;thank you

CANDICE; I WAS SCARED TO ASK YOU FACE TO FACE , WHATS UP WITH THAT GIRL

Me; ASK ME THAT WHEN YOU SEE ME BABY

DINEO; ITS BEEN A WHILE, MISS TALKING TO YOU

Me; WHY VELE YOU JUST DISAPPEARED

DINEO; NAH WAS BUSY WITH MY EXAMS BUT NOW IM FREE

ME; OHK WE SHOULD HANG OUT

DINEO; PLEASE

NOMONDE; BABE, HOW ARE YOU ENJOYING YOUR LEAVE I MISS YOU

ME; MISS YOU TO BABY , JUST HOLD ON

NOMONDE; CANT WE MEET UP

ME; OHK IL ORGANISE THAT

MBALI; YHO NTWANA EKHANDA

ME; LOL IM GOOD AS IF I DIDNT EVEN DRINK

MBALI; YOU LUCKY, I DONT LIKE THIS CHICK OF YOURS

ME; CANDICE???

MBALI; SURE SHES TOO BITCHY

ME; LOL KANJAN

MBALI; SIZORINGA

ME; MXM UYAKHENYA WENA UYENZAN

MBALI; NGIBLOMILE NE COUSIN YAMI

ME; SHE ARRIVED

MBALI; YEAH , SHE ARRIVED FEW HOURS AGO  
UNGIDLISA NGAMA PIPE NAYE

ME; LOL USHO KANJAN SNOB

MBALI; EHHHH NIX KANJAN LIKE UMOOI YHO

ME; TELL ME MORE

MBALI; VOETSEK WENA PHUMA DAAR

ME; HAO WUWE OKHULUMA NAMI MOS, MANJE  
SEKAZOBLOMA DAAR

MBALI; SURE

Kim; i feel like someone is sitting on my head

Me; good , now you know drinking is not for you

Kim; you telling me you feel like this all the time when you drink

Me; no never

Kim; why do i feel like this

Me; cause its not for you... Here

I gave her the yoghurt and she began eating it. I jumped to the pool and we spent most of the day there.

## INSERT #9

Few days passed on the 16 candice left with her friends and me and my squad of course but we only left around 5. we got to mbali crib at 6 and deon parked outside her gate , i was sitting on the passenger seat. I called her

Mbali; ntwana ngyeza ( boy im coming)

Me; uze ne glass ne (bring a glass with you)

Mbali; ohk

I hung up , my seat was pushed back

Deon; mara mbali is hot ne ( but mbali is hot ne

I turned and looked at him

Me; whats this

Deon; whats what

Me; you telling me mbali is hot, you have a crush on mbali

Deon;no i i \*stuttering i mean shes hot that's all

I raised my eyebrow

Deon; what dont look at me that way

I turned and looked outside , mbali showed up wearing blue shorts, white top, cap and chucks with a glass

She opened the door and got in

Me; what the hell were you doing?

Mbali; well i was convincing amahle to come with us

Us; amahle??

Mbali; my cousin

Deon; oh so why isnt she coming

Mbali; she does not want too , she didnt feel like going to party

Me; i knew she was miss goody

Deon; man, she just lost her father give her a break

Me; youv become a sensitive bitch

Deon; fuck you

Mbali; yeah you right but she agreed to go out with us on the 31st

Deon; thats great cant wait to see her

Me; \*laughing\* what the hell is wrong with you man, like really whats wrong

Mbali; \*laughing\* what you mean , he seems ohk to me

Me; no i mean like a few minutes he said...

He cut me off

Deon; shut the fuck up

Mbali; he said what

Me; nothing lets just get there ohk

We got to that event and it was happening, it was a huge crowd . We took our camp chairs and coolers and had fun the whole night and i met nobuhle oh god thank you. The sounds were too loud we couldnt even hear each other speak so we had to shout whenever we speak

Me; YOU LIKE MBALI DONT YOU

DEON; NO

ME; MAN, IM YOUR BEST FRIEND AND HAVE BEEN FOR YEARS NOW , I KNOW YOU

DEON; MAYBE A LIL

ME; AND WHAT HAPPENED TO THAT GIRL KAMO  
DEON; CAN WE TALK ABOUT THIS WHEN WE NOT  
DRUNK

ME; \*LAUGHING\* OHK MAN

Guy; ye dog thats my girl

I turned to look up and it was some guy nje small boy i  
looked at nobuhle and back at those guys

Me; askies ( excuse me?

Guy; ngithi ugirl wami, yewena asivaye ( im saying this is  
my girl as for you lets go)

Themba ; asi respectaneni, ovias ugirl uyamubona ukuphi  
angithi ende ufuna ukubala (lets respect each other, as  
you can see the girl wants to be here)

Guy; ye clever voetsek (piss off)

Themba got up

Me; boy bloma , mami il call you ne get out of here (boy  
relax, mami il call you)

Guy 2; usijwayela ama simba wena ne (you trying to fuck  
with us dont you)

These guys were irritating me. I took my steel and put it  
on my leg pointing at them

Me; niyangkhenya manje, thathani lesfebe senu before  
ngiyoni bantintela ( you beginning to bore me, take this  
bitch of yours before I get convicted because of you)

They kept quiet

Me; go

Nobuhle stood up and went to them

Guy; sizohlangana (will meet)

Me; voetsek (piss off)

They left and our fun was not ruined at all

Everyone was drunk. We headed to our cars and suddenly there were loud noises. The guys from earlier appeared and now we were fighting against them first thing we made sure off was mbali was safe. Then it heated off bottles breaking gun shots, bricks chaos all over after we were done with them we left for home. we got to my house and the guys were still pissed as fuck. They wanted to go back and literally kill them but i was too drunk and i was just laughing at the entire situation

The next morning i woke up and there was blood on my sheets , i was stabbed on the shoulder and only then i noticed i was hurt. I immediately went to the bathroom

and cleaned my wound and covered it and went downstairs

Me; what the fuck happened yesterday

Mbali; fight

Me; there was a fight

Shane; yeah cause of some girl that was all over you

Me; fuck i dont even remember what happened

Mbali; you dont remember you got hurt

Me'; no only seeing it today so is there anyone hurt

Themba; no, i just wonder how you even got hurt cause we had all the power

Me; fuck i dont even know man

I sat down next to mbali

Me; you not hurt right

Mbali; no im good

Me; ohk

Shane; do you really have that girls numbers

Me; which girl???

Mbali; \*laughing\* what do you remember dre

Me; \*laughing\* eish its hard to think cause of the pressure

Shane; you have to remember so that girl will tell us about those guys and we finish it

Me; nah man, it was probably small boys we have bigger issues to deal with than fight over some stupid thing a girl that i dont even remember

Themba; ohk man, so wena your cousin

Mbali; eish singihambeni yazi ( let me go )

Me; youl leave around 5 come on

Mbali; no, i have to spend time with her and im with you guys most of the time

Us ; ohk

Mbali; lets go so you will drop me off

Me; mara mbali (but mbali)

Mbali; lets go dre

Me; you driving

Mbali; ohk

She said her goodbye and we left, got to her place got out off the car and went to the drivers seat

Me; il see you when

Mbali; will talk on the phone

Me; ohk bye

Mbali; and take care of that wound

Me; haha i will man , i still need to remember this shit

I got in the car and mbali immediately hit the window, i rolled it down

Me; what

Mbali; thats her

I turned to mbali house

I tried to make things easier for everyone by translating where I used zulu.

## INSERT #10

I could not see her cousin on the face, she was wearing a black hoodie that was baggy and it covered her ass and she was wearing the hat of the hoodie with black pants . She was sweeping, her face facing the other direction

Me; i cant even see her

Mbali; shes too shy ,see you man

I started the engine and drove off

#MBALI

I opened the gate and amahle was sweeping

Me; hey

She lifted her head up and her beauty was revealed , its like her name suited her she was beautiful. She was the full package i dont think iv ever witnessed such beauty in a person who is not even wearing any make up

Amahle; \*smiling\* hi

Me; uphi umama (where's mum)

Amahle; uphumile umama (she went out)

Me; ohk

Amahle; so did you enjoy?

Me; yeah it was too lit like always

Amahle; that was your bf?

Me; \*laughing\* eeew no

Amahle; \*laughing\* i thought he was your bf

Me; no his my best friend, fuck bf eeew

She just laughed even her laugh was perfect i went inside and took a shower. She was sitting on the lounge

Amahle; so your friends are guys

Me; yeah

Amahle;hmmmm

Me; what?

Amahle; nothing

Me; so you going on the 31st right

Amahle; yeah its been a while since i had fun

Me; do you miss your parents

Amahle; everyday, i feel like im not me , you know if it was up to me i woul... \*she paused\*

Me; you would what

Amahle; dont freak out, but i would take my life cause i feel like i have nothing else to live for

Me; why do you say that

Amahle; mbali when you go to school and you graduate you doing it so you make your parents proud right

I nodded my head

Amahle; and when you work, you want to work for them repay them for everything they did for you, remove the baggage on their shoulders right and just take care of them right

I nodded my head again

Amahle; so my parents are no more , i cant make them proud, they cant see what i will achieve i wont hear the word" im proud of you princess"im working for who, i wanted to work for them but now im just alone in this big

world. My grandparents are old mbali im not wishing anything bad on them but they can die anytime so nje

Me; we here for you amahle dont even think that, yes it wont be the same without your parents but they watching over you and will always be proud of you

Amahle; thats cause you have to not because you want to and my parents cant see anything they just 6 feet underground sleeping but anyway thanks for trying to make me feel better

She got up and went to the kitchen

I fell so sorry for her and i did not know what to say cause i did not understand her pain at all so i got busy with my phone

Deon;you got home safe

Me; yes thank you for asking , what are you guys doing

Deon; just sitting around the pool but dre just went to bed

Me; ohk i miss you so much already

Me;why are you lying

Dre; what you mean

Me; the guys think you sleeping

Dre; lol i just said im going to my bedroom wena uright

Me; im ohk man i just feel sorry for amahle

Dre; your cousin?

Me; yeah

Dre; why

Me; i was just talking to her dre and i mean shes hurting deep.

Dre; its still early let her deal with it,you remember how i was when my dad died

Me; yeah but you way stronger than that, you should have heard her the way she spoke

Dre; then keep her busy, dont leave her alone cause if you do she thinks a lot and that will wound her even more

Me; but she wants to be alone

Dre; give her space sometimes not all the time

Me; ohk so le bitch yakho ikuphi (so where is this bitch of yours)

Dre; lol why do you hate her so much

Me; i dont even know why i just do

Shane; mama what did you mix in your drink last night

Me; lol no you want to copy it

Shane; mxm eish im really craving for it

Me; il show you when i see you or il write it down when i have time and send it to you

Helen; i want to tell him so bad

Me; you do know you will only hurt yourself right

Helen; but mbali, im in love with him and it kills me seeing him with another girl

Me; yazini helen ne do you bubu but i know dre and he will tell you shit , why did you allow yourself to fall for him

Helen; come on , you fell for deon so

Me; yeah thats me and im handling it very well no one knows that except for you but you on the other hand abo themba and the guys they can see that you in love with him

Helen; who knows he might feel the same way

Me; bubu you need to stop doing you

Dre; ahhh bubu what you mean , you know we need to do us

Me; its getting you in shit

Dre; with

Me; nothing just be careful

Amahle;that smile

Me; \*laughing\* the things these people say

Amahle; when do you receive your results

Me; maybe by the end of this week . So you had a bf in cape town

Amahle; not anymore we broke up weeks before i came here

Me you want one

Amahle; i dont know, i think im going to stay away from boys right now

Me; \*laughing\* ohk amahle

Amahle \*smiling\* wena do you have one

Me; no only because im surrounded by a group of guys that dont want to see me with any guy

Amahle; \*laughing\* but ay mara nvm

Me; no talk

Amahle; im sure you have a crush on one of your friends ne

Me; \*laughing\* why you saying that

Amahle; its just girls and guys never actually want to be friends you get me sooner or later, you will have feelings for each other

I looked at her with my brow raised

Amahle; \*laughing\* what ?thats how i see it , guys end up looking at you different, girls end up being jealous when they see their "friend " with a girl

Me; thats crazy

Amahle; \*laughing\*its my opinion dont take it serious

Me; you a snob

Amahle; not at all yazi iv done some pretty crazy shit. Iv threw house parties in my house when i was in high school.i got arrested for it Iv also had guy friends in cape town coloureds that were in gangs

Me;\*laughing\* maybe you know dre

Amahle; why would i

Me; his part of some gang and they do some pretty shitty things and scary

Amahle; when i see him il ask him about the godfather now that madala was my best friend i could say he had each and every part in his body tattooed he was a ....

Me; \*screaming\* THATS IT , THATS THE ONE HE ALSO HAVE TATTOOS OF THAT GANG TATTOOED ON HIS BODY

amahle; your friend is a .....

Me; yes the one who dropped me off today

Amahle; \*laughing\* cool man when i go to the cape to visit il ask about him

Me; his a dog , i mean the legend in the making

Amahle; you see im not a snob

Me; yeah i was wrong about you

Amahle; \*laughing\* lets go cook

## INSERT #11

The week passed by so fast and Monday it was christmas. Well before christmas lunch had to go see my mum with kim and dorian

Kim; cant wait to see mummy

Us;....

Kim; arent you guys excited

Dorian; we are baby

Me;.....

Kim; andre

Me; what kim

Kim; arent you excited

Me; no

Kim; why are you like this, shes your mother why dont you just be happy

I turned with anger

Me; \*shouting\* BE HAPPY, BE HAPPY FOR WHAT KIM. IM NOT YOU THAT I WILL FORGET EVERYTHING THAT WOMAN DID TO ME

Dorian; man calm down

Kim just looked at me and tears fell and i felt so bad for snapping at her

Me; im sorry baby

I tried touching her

Kim; \*crying\* dont touch me

He moved at the back of dorian seat and i just looked at her but she looked outside

I turned back to my seat and then the drive was silent

We got to that hospital and as i was about to get off

Kim; it would be best if you remained in the car, mum does not need negative energy especially your energy

I closed my door and pushed my seat back and closed my eyes i quickly zoned off

After few hours the doors opened and they came back but i did not move into the position i was in. we drove to my grandparents house. I got out and left them there

Me; hey fam

My entire family was there , aunts , uncles and other

Them; hey baby

They kept kissing me and the 2 walked in. After hours being there i was full and i was drinking with my other cousins

Ma; baby come here

Me; what?

ma; come

I walked with her inside and kim was there. I turned around

Ma; get back here

I turned around

Ma; what is it that kim tells me

Me; what did you tell ma

Kim; the truth

Me; and i told her the truth ma

Ma; why are you 2 fighting i just dont get it and why did you shout at her

Me; cause she was getting on my nerves ma

Ma; you must never shout at your sister again now make things right

Me; im not apologising

Ma; andre adams

Me; im sorry kim

Kim; and?

Me; and what

Kim; im sorry kim , i will never shout at you or talk bad about mum

Me; yeah all of that

Kim; and will go see her again tomorrow

Me; hel...

Ma looked at me

Me; fine kim

I went back outside

And we all had fun as a family, took family pictures and stuff and it was nice me and dorian slept over there cause we were both too drunk and i mean too drunk to drink and ma would not allow us to drive

The next day, woke up and we had to tidy up the place

Jack; andre

I turned

Me; sure man

Jack ; i want to smoke

Me; \*laughing\* lets go , im also going to smoke

We walked out and walked to an open place

He took out his weed and i did the same

Jack; so how have you been

Me; im good man you?

Jack; good i need you to help me out man

Me; with what

Jack; work

Me; work

Jack; i want to work with you

Me; no man, come on now

Jack; why not

Me; you family , this business is fucked up

Jack; dude please i dont want to go back to drugs and i cant find a job

Me; i work with drugs, they will be in front of you , you will get tempted

Jack ; please man

Me; you putting me in an awkward position

Jack; im sorry but i need to keep myself busy

Me; il call you and pick you up then will talk ohk

Jack ; ohk

After smoking we went back home and just chilled as a family and it was nice ey

## INSERT #12

The next day we made final touch ups for 31st and everything was set. The 28 me and kim went to see my mum and 29 was just another day i was with kim the whole day. The 30

Woke up and went to eat downstairs

Masesi; hi baby

Me; hi ma

Masesi; how are you

Me; im good and you ma

Masesi; im good baby

Me; so where are you going tomorrow

Masesi; il be home with my kids after 12 i go to bed

Me; \*laughing\* i so dont want to grow old

Masesi; im not old andre

Me; of course not mama what, you old nah

She just laughed after eating went to take a shower said  
my goodbye and left

Helen; hey

Me; hey you , you good

Helen; yeah just cant wait for tomorrow

Me; you have no idea, so what will you wear

Helen; you will just have to wait and see dont you

Me; its not like i have a choice

Helen; exactly are you bringing candice

Me; yeah why

Helen; just asking

Me; you fine with it

Helen; \*smiling\* yes babe , im cool with it

Me; ohk want to go get something to eat

Helen; please

We went to buy food, ate and just chilled

Helen; try to avoid fighting tomorrow

Me;\*laughing\* i cant believe you just said that to me

Helen; what im being honest

Me; ohk i will and you should tell people not to piss me off

Helen; stay away from people girls

Me; its not my fault they crazy over me , you know

Helen; \*laughing\* i know

She kissed me and i kissed her back

Helen; lets go inside

Me; you really want to

Helen; why you even asking me that

Me; its just tomorrow

Helen; i dont care , lets go

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

We got out of the car and went to have fun . After a few hours i left and went to deon place.

Deon; you smell pussy

Me; fuck you

Deon; \*laughing\* where do you come from

Me; helen place

Deon; you playing this girl

Me; no im not , can we talk about something else

Deon; sure so tomorrow

Me; what about it

Deon; what time will we leave

Me; i was thinking around 7 we go buy booze and oviasly it will be long and then around 8 we pick up mbali then will probably arrive there around 9

Deon; ohk but i want clothes

Me;\*laughing\* yho boy same here and i thought we will leave no mbali but they done

Deon; they?

Me; ye...

Deon; oh her cousin ne

Me; yeah will go with shane and simphiwe

Deon; ohk

Me; so will you confess

Deon; confess to who ?what

Me; mbali

Deon; dude just leave that ohk , geez

Me; \*laughing\* just tell her you like her even though im not in it for this relationship

Deon; no i cant

Me; but you crazy mbali out of all the girls her Shes like one of us dude just imagine if you fuck each other after that it will be awkward

Deon; i dont care about you guys but like i want her

Me; but then i dont even think she will want you

Deon; why not

Me; cause you were fucking this girl kamo and you told us everything about it

Deon; can you give me hope

Me; no wait, are you seriously going to tell her tomorrow

Deon; yeah

Me; \*laughing\* please tell me before you tell her so i will leave

Deon; you fucked up man

Me; \*messing his hair\* im just joking, il put in a good word for you oh wait she already knows you a fucker  
\*laughing\*

Deon; \*laughing\* i dont even know why you my best friend you know that

Me; cause we not different

Deon; oh please me and you we different

Me; this is why i tell you shit, cause you talk shit

Deon; get the fuck out of my house

Me; bye man, wake up tomorrow ohk

Deon; cool

I left and drove to my house and just jumped on my bed and zoned off

The next day took a shower and deon picked me up it was dorian, simphiwe and shane

Me; so where we going

Simphiwe; sandton baba

Dorian; im excited about tonight

Me; \*laughing\* everybody is ey

Shane; man tonight how many girls are going down

Me; \*laughing\* i dont know all i have to say is lord be with me tonight

They all laughed

Dorian; who you bringing

Me; my girls

Deon; candice and helen

Me; yebooo

Simphiwe; but then you seriously messed up in a funny way

Dorian; wena uzo noban ( who are you coming with)

Simphiwe; siyohlangana phambili (will meet them there)

Deon; \*laughing\* you crazy

## INSERT #13

After buying everything we need. They dropped me off at home. I took out things that i will probably need oviasly my steel and money. I went to the warehouse to do some errands and met up with dineo

Me; so where you going

Dineo; theres a bash at my street so

Me; ohk be careful mama

Dineo; ohk wena?

Me; im not sure will just have too see listen i have to go

Dineo; already

Me; yeah , need to sort out some things

Dineo; ohk

I left to go do my hair i dyed it blonde and it was a mohawk then went back to my house. I took a shower and wore blue dungaree , white short sleeved top with white cap and airforce, i left the other side of the dungaree untied , took a bag that carried money and steel and went to my car that was past7 i was already running late i got in the car and drove off

My phone rang and it was mbali

Me; my baby

Mbali; bubu where you at?

Me; yho im running late

Mbali; so who will pick us up

Me; il ask themba

Mbali; ohk does that mean will meet you there

Me; yeah

I hung up got to deon place , he took his car and we drove to a bottle store bought alcohol and food , the alcohol yho it was galore

I called mbali

Me; did he pick you up

Mbali; not yet cant you pick us up

Me; yho bubu the line at the bottle store is crazy il probably be late

Mbali; eish ohk will just wait for him

After a few hours we finally left and got to the venue which was packed i mean it was packed and the ladies i was going to get in trouble. I had to leave them there and go pick up candice. I got to her place

And i called her

Me; im outside

Candice; im coming

I waited for her for like an hour geez girls. She came out and she was wearing shorts,top and sneakers she was beautiful, she got inside

Me; you look beautiful

Candice; thank you baby \*kissing me\*

Me; lets go

I started the engine and we drove off

Me; so we going to have fun right

Candice; yes \*she held my thigh\*

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

We got there and we walked to the guys mbali had not arrived and they said they were on their way . I took my beer and sat on my camp chair , candice was sitting on my lap

Candice; i really love you

My eyes were wide open and i couldnt speak

Candice; \*laughing\* im just joking

Me; dont joke like that

Candice; why you so afraid

Me; im....

Mbali; IM HERRRRRRREEEEE \*Screaming\*

She looked beautiful, i ignored her and moved my eyes back to candice

Candice; i dont like your friend

Me; mbali

Candice; yeah

Me; you will have to learn to love her

Mbali; this is my cousin amahle

Candice ; but why , for all i know she could be having a crush on you

Me; no she does not, thats so disgusting

Mbali; i know so keep your hands to yourself

Candice; but maybe she does not feel that way

ME; no sh....

Mbali; ANDRE!!!!!

I turned to face her and my eyes grew wide

Mbali; this is my cousin amahle...

INSERT #14

Theres no way this girl is real. She was beautiful iv never seen anyone that beautiful before, her body , her face i just stared at her

Mbali; andre!!

She was light skinned, had a dark colour lipstick , had the cutest dimples ,big eyes , she had on a weave , her body. Was shaped as an hour glass , boobs, hips, waist. She was wearing a black jean, black top with black cap and white nikes. This girl was beautiful fuck

She just stared at me raising her eyebrow then i realised i was staring

Me; oh hey

Her; hi

Candice; whats your name?

She looked at candice from her head , moving her eyes to her feet where they hang on top of my legs

And just smiled

Her; \*smiling\* amahle

This girl iv never been taken that back by a girl especially, even her smile , she had the cutest dimples ever i wanted to see the creators of this creation

Deon; you beautiful

Her; thank you

Candice turned my head

Me; hmmm

Candice; im here

Me ; i know

I took out my phone and texted mbali

Me; how the fuck can you hide that from me

I looked at her and she was not checking her phone. I called her and she checked her screen and looked at me i guess she figured

Mbali; lol hide what

Me; your cousin

Mbali; lol causes shes not your type

Me; shes definitely my type

Mbali; she wants a relationship dre

Me; fuck you

The party went on , i had two girls but i couldnt keep my eyes off from the one girl who didnt seem interested in me

#AMAHLE

ANDRE HMMM HE WAS SOMETHING ELSE . HE WAS HOT  
WONT LIE BUT HE SEEMED LIKE A PLAYER NO HE  
SCREAMED PLAYER. HIS DIMPLES WHEN HE SMILED LOL  
WE BOTH HAD DIMPLES, HIS LIPS OHHHHHH

Deon; mbali told me about your parents really sorry ey

Me; its fine, im healing so

I looked up at dre and he was busy with the girl sitting on  
his lap

Themba; yho girl you really beautiful

Me; thank you

Mbali; try this you will love it

She gave me a glass and i tasted it, it was really good

Me; this is good , theres no taste of alcohol

Mbali; thats what makes it nice

Dorian; so did you love the cape

Me; i love the cape , i still do

Dorian; but you will love jozi so much more

Me; jozi is a busy place , im not sure if i will but i will have  
to adjust to it

Deon; but you got us so dont worry about it

Me; \*laughing\* thanks i guess

Shane; yeah we only mbali friend which makes us your friend now

Mbali; yes so get used to these faces cause you will be seeing them most of the time

Me; \*laughing\* well if im not at school then will hang out

Deon; she also tells us you studying medicine

Me; \*laughing\* what has she not told you and yes i am

Themba; the big man over there \*pointing at andre \* is a paramedic

andre; whats happening

Me; they were just telling me you were a medic

andre; yeah and you soon to be dr right

Me; still have a long way to go but yeah

We looked at each other until mbali screamed to the song that came on and i moved my eyes away from him

Dorian ; want to go dance

Me: yes please

I took his hand and stood up and began dancing i was a good dancer i mean i knew how to move

We all got drunk, drinks everywhere , weed, i was high and drunk next thing it was the count down. We counted

down and everyone hugged including me and dre and he smelled so good. Was this guy real or i was just imagining him . After a few more drinks and dancing black out

## INSERT #15

Everyone was drunk yesterday in a shocking way , including me. I woke up from the sofa, we were at deon place and went to the kitchen to make coffee for myself. I could not stop thinking about "amahle" in such a way i dreamt about her. Why did she have so much effect on me was one question i kept asking myself. I could not wait to see her again

Girl; eish where am i

I turned and it was the princess herself

Me; morning

She lifted her head up and just stared at my tattoos on my chest

Me; my face is up here

Her; where is mbali?

Me; i dont know

Her; what you mean , you dont know

Me; i mean exactly that, you want this

She nodded her head. I gave her my cup and made myself another one

Me; so did you have fun

Her; yeah but i wanted to remember something

Me; \*laughing\* that hurts i know ... I have never seen someone look beautiful even after they wake up

Her;....

I turned and she was looking at me

Me; what?

Her; what are you doing?

Me; what you mean?

Her; like is this the flirting stage cause if it is i dont think i want to be number 3

Before i could say anything

Her; i need to find mbali

Before she could walk far , i held her hand , she turned

Her; what?

Me; nothing

I let go of her and she went upstairs, what the hell was i doing no what the hell was she doing to me

I went to sit outside on the balcony when mbali and amahle showed up with deon and dorian

Me; guess you found her

Mbali; she was looking for me

Me; yeah

Dorian; i cant feel my head

Amahle; \*laughing\* thats how i felt when i woke up

Deon; eish forgot to say this, happy new year

Mbali; \*laughing\* happy new year guys

They all just laughed, i tried so hard to avoid amahle eyes as beautiful as they were

Mbali; ntwana you ohk

I nodded my head

Candice appeared wearing my top she looked sexy but amahle would look way sexier in it . Fuck this girl was messing with my head

Me; hey you \*kissing her \*

Candice; hey

She sat on my lap . I tilted my head and amahle wasnt even looking at me and that pissed me off a bit

Me; im really tired , i want to sleep in my own bed

Mbali; dont be such a bore its a new year

Me; not today mama, you coming?

Candice; yes

Me; wheres helen

Amahle; the room i slept in

Me; mbali can you go call her for me

Mbali; sure

I took my things and headed to my car , helen came in and i dropped them off at their houses then went to my place

I took a cold shower and went out wrapped a towel around my waist and got busy with my phone

Mbali; talk to me , whats wrong

Me; nothing mami i was just tired

Mbali; iv been friends with you for years , i know you but this time around i dont know whats wrong you looked drained

Me; exactly cause i was tired

Mbali; come open for us

Me; what

Mbali; we outside

I peaked downstairs and they were at the gate. I just walked out with the towel

Me; do you understand when someone says they want to rest

Deon; not on the 31st or 1 ai whatever man

I opened the gate and they got in

Me; let me wear something

Amahle ; you the general of the....

I stopped on the stairs and the guys kept quiet too. I slowly turned to look at her.

## INSERT #16

Me; what?

amahle; you the general of the.....

Deon; how the fuck you know that

amahle; the tattoos

I walked towards her and just looked at her. No one knew what my tattoos meant except for certain people

Me; what do they mean

She moved her fingers on my shoulders

Amahle; these babies are to show you the general  
her fingers on my chest

Amahle; this shows how you entered the gang and i know  
you were not a bitch

I just looked at her she was right

Me; who are you?

Amahle; \*smiling\* wouldnt you like to know, Anyway  
what are we doing

All of the guys were looking at her including me

Amahle; oh please guys stop it , mbali

Mbali; i dont know ey, where are we going

Me; let me get dressed

I walked upstairs and couldnt stop thinking about what  
amahle said but she did live in the cape that must be the  
reason she knows all of this. I wore a pair of jeans, black  
top, black cap and white chucks went downstairs and the  
girls went there

Me; where are they

Deon; bathroom

Me; doing what

Deon; they were going to bath

Me; ohk

We sat outside after a few minutes. They came out  
amahle was in shorts, cap, airforce and white top that was  
open at the back she looked oh god

Themba; ready to go

Them; yes

We went out mbali, threw their bags at the boot

We got in the car, amahle left with deon and i left with  
mbali alone

Mbali; so will you talk to me

Me; about

Mbali; you?

me; i told you earlier i was tired

Mbali; ohk

Me; why didnt you tell me about your cousin

Mbali; i did

Me; not everything

Mbali; what exactly, cause i said she was mooi so what  
didnt i tell you

Me; i dont know

Mbali; you didnt expect her to look like that ne

Me; kind off i mean shes beautiful mbali and its all weird for me

She just raised her eyebrow

Mbali; are you experiencing love at first sight

Me: \*laughing \* no , maybe I dont know. I dont even know how I feel you know that type of shit does not happen to me just listen to me im already talking about feelings

Mbali; \*laughing\* i think im going to love amahle

Me; its not funny mbali

Mbali; it is to me

We arrived at primi and walked in. They walked us to our table and we sat. We ordered our food and just enjoyed each others company.

Deon; so are you excited to move here

Amahle; too be honest nah, i loved the cape still do just dont have a choice

Themba; but you will love it here

Amahle; maybe

Me; after your mum died only lived with your dad

Amahle; yeah

Me; im sorry about your loss

Amahle; its cool i prefer not talking about it though  
I nodded my head

Mbali; last night was epic

Me; \*laughing\* i was so drunk

Mbali; who did you even fuck

Me; \*laughing\* i dont think i fucked anyone i was too  
drunk mbali

Mbali; you should leave this bitch you know

Deon; candice?

Mbali; yes like i dont like this girl

Me; i know that

Amahle; so they know you fucking them both

I turned my head to her and just nodded my head

Amahle; yho i would not stand for that

Shane; \*laughing\* why??

Amahle; cause its either you with me or not, if you want  
to fuck other girls leave me in peace

Me; you have a bf

Amahle; i did

Deon; you did???

Amahle; we broke up before i came here

Themba; and you cool with it

Amahle; yeah it would have not work, long distance and he had priorities

Me: priorities?

Amahle: reputation he was a....

I looked at her with anger in my eyes

Amahle; \*laughing\* what???

Me; you were a .... Gf

Amahle; yes he was really nice not a fucker like you

Me; good thing me and you wont date

Amahle; great thing

## INSERT #17

After our lunch we went to a pub and got ourselves drunk  
thats how much we liked to have fun. Later that night .  
Amahle was dancing and i went to her stood behind her  
and whispered to her ear

Me; can we talk

She moved my hand from her waist to the front of her stomach and that turned me on. She said nothing and just

began moving , her ass , her waist it was sexy as fuck.  
She turned to look at me and came straight to my face , i  
could smell her minty breath

Amahle; about what?

Before i could answer she turned again, dancing and  
moving her assets to my D. I was getting a hard on so i  
just grabbed her wrist and pulled her away from the  
crowd

We went from a distance and i pinned her to the wall she  
breathed out loudly and bit her lower lip

Me; dont do that

Amahle; do what?

And she bit her lip again. I closed my eyes and slowly  
opened them and she was just staring at me

Me; i want to do this so much

I held her cheek

Amahle; why

Me; you beautiful

Amahle; and so other billion of girls

Me; but out of all those girls i just want to kiss you

Amahle....

I leaned in for a kiss as my lips were about to touch hers  
she looked on the side and i buried my head on the side  
of her neck

Me; just let me please

Amahle; then you go fuck candice tomorrow

Me; ....

Amahle; mbali must be looking for me , can you move

I covered my face with my hands and moved out of her  
way and she walked away

I went back to deon and dorian

Deon; what was that

Me; what was what?

Dorian; you leaving with amahle

Me; i just wanted to ask how she knew my tattoos

They both looked at me

Me; what

Deon; nothing

Me; good

Mbali; \*laughing\* can we go now, im really drunk and im  
tired

Me; wheres amahle

Mbali; she was talking to some guy she should be here

Me; go call her we leaving

Mbali; ohk

We took our things and headed to the car , dorian was with me and shane , deon with the girls and themba alone

I woke up the next morning really tired. Went downstairs and masesi was not there she was only coming back in 2 weeks time. I made myself something to eat and sat at the lounge watching tv more like the tv was watching me. I went to rinse my bowl and as i was about to take a shower it was candice but i was not in the mood to talk to her so i just left it and went to take a shower

Then just chilled later that day went to bed. Next morning was just the same that afternoon helen called me and i went to her crib. We went to get food, then got a bit naughty then went home. The following day got together with candice and she was irritating me in everything thing she does so i just left early than usual.

Few days passed i have not seen mbali or amahle since the day i tried making a move on amahle and i thought i would get over it but nah fam. This girl was on my head most of the time. So i called mbali

Mbali; ntwana

Me; sure ntwana ugrand ( you Ohk?)

Mbali; ngi mnandi wena( im Ohk you?)

Me; ngi sharp (good) where you at?

Mbali; home want to pick me up \*laughing\* or us

Me; \*laughing\* manje why did you laugh

Mbali; never mind that

Me; and yes i wanted to pick you up

Mbali; well im going out with some guy today but amahle will be home so you can pick her up

Me; which guy

Mbali; guy dre a guy

Me; mbali

Mbali; \*laughing\* i met some guy at the pub and we have been talking so he wanted us to go today dad

Me; hmmmm ohk call me if you need anything

Mbali; will do so will you pick up amahle

Me; ask her if she wants to come with me to lunch if not then i wont

Mbali; just come pick her up, she should expect you when

Me; \*laughing\* 12

Mbali; ohk

I went to bath and wore black jeans, black top, black shoes and black cap. Took my things and left i arrived at mbali crib and after 5 minutes she appeared and she looked beautiful. She was olive green pants, white top the sleeves went down her shoulders and adidas stan smith her hair was curled and was wearing makeup she was beautiful no lie. She opened the door

## INSERT #18

Amahle; hey

Me; hi

She got in and closed the door

Me; belt

She tied the belt i started the engine and drove off

Amahle; so where are we going

Me; im not sure yet

Amahle; so where are you driving too

Me; im not sure

Amahle; andre!

Me; \*laughing\* just relax , so who is mbali out with

Amahle; she asked me not to say

Me; ohk , you look beautiful

Amahle; thank you, you not bad yourself

Me; amahle

Amahle; hmmmm

Me; would you... Nah nvm

Amahle; no talk

Me; just leave it

Amahle; why do you have to fuck 2 girls

Me; i dont know its just me

She just looked out of the window

Me; but i ended it

She turned and looked at me but i had to lie so it will improve my chances with her

Amahle; what?

Me; i ended it

Amahle; why

Me; i dont know

We got to this restaurant and we got in. Sat down , the lady took our order

Amahle; please give me ribs, with fries not too crispy please , greek salad and strawberry daiquiri

Me; \*laughing\* il have the same with beer

Lady; which one sir

Me; heineken

Lady; ohk

She left

Amahle; tell me about your family

Me; i dont like talking about my family

She raised her eyebrows and was fiddling with her fingers. After a minute of silence

Me ;my father died a few years ago

She looked up at me

Me; then my mother just went crazy after that i mean crazy, shes currently in a mental hospital but shes

recovering . I have a baby sister \*laughing\* just trouble and im sure you know dorian my older brother

Amahle; do you usually see her

Me; no , i dont like it i feel like i hate her

Amahle; but why, its not like she killed your dad

Me; well after my dad she did some fucked up shit to me and dorian and we had to do some crazy things after that i never got myself to forgive her

Amahle; so you have not made up with her

Me; no and i dont want to

Amahle; my mum died when i was going to grade 8 she was really sick but always hid it from me. You know till this day i just wish i could have died rather than her , i wish i could have felt the pain she was feeling i would do anything andre anything to see her or just to talk to her.

Me; im sorry about that

Amahle; dont feel sorry for me , i cant do anything for my mum but you still have your mum andre , yes she probably did some fucked up things because she lost the one person she loved , she could never see him again or touch him and kiss him and you expected her to act as if nothing happened

Me; no...

She cut me off

Amahle; no im still talking she made a mistake yes but dont punish her forever she loves you and you still have her do you have any idea how many people would love to be in your shoes just to be with their mother even if their behind bars or on a mental hospital but they will be happy because they still have that one woman who will do anything for them and you just spitting on that, thats just disgusting

Me; im not its just not as easy as you make it sound to be amahle and im sorry you feel that way or i look like i dont appreciate what i have but sometimes its not easy to just forgive and forget

Amahle; ohk dre

I tilted my head on the side to get a clear view of her face

Me; you mad at me?

She looked up

Amahle; I dont know

Me: please dont be mad I don't think I can stand it

Amahle: ohk im not mad

Me; ohk now your turn

Amahle; well i told you about my mum. After my mum died it was just me and my dad i mean it was just us. My

dad never got the strength to fall in love again. Well this year mxm i mean last year he was going to this event i wanted to go with him like always you know but this time he insisted i go out with my friends cause i would be bored. You want to know whats weird

Me; yeah

Amahle; wherever my dad was invited for an event he will always go with me , i mean always go with me even if he knew it was going to be boring he would take me with so he would not be bored and i will be there with him \* she paused\*....but that day he was like no baby go out , im going alone so i did \*she held back her tears\* i went out with my friends andre and had the time of my life with my friends while my dad was dying a slow painful death

She began crying and that just broke me. I was shaking i dont even know why

Amahle; while i was in that club around 3am i got a call cause it was loud i had to take it outside so i did . They asked me to come immediately home and that moment my stomach began tying in knots i felt sick. I got home and there were police, my grandparents. When i went in my grandmother was crying , my dad was not there and i knew something bad had happened after that my grandmother began talking but i could not hear what she was saying

Me; at all

Amahle; at all it was as if i just went deaf and then i dont remember what happened. Later that day everyone was there and they talked to me again this time i heard " your father was hit by a truck and died on the spot "it was so bad andre that they could not get him out off the car they had to cut through The car

She just covered her face with her hands and i was freaking out , i was even scared to comfort her

## INSERT #19

After an emotional moment. We enjoyed our lunch and just spoke about a whole lot of things she was free and so was i. After our lunch took our things and left

Me; i enjoyed this

Amahle; enjoyed what actually

Me; your company and lunch

Amahle; are you flirting with me

'me;\*laughing\* i just said i enjoyed your company relax

Amahle; \*laughing\* whatever

Me; should i take you homE

Amahle; did you have anything else planned

Me; no

Amahle; ohk you can

Me; or

Amahle; or???

Me; or we go chill at my place

Amahle; im not going to have sex with you

Me; i did not ask you too

Amahle; ohk lets go

We went back to the car and drove back to my place and walked in

Amahle; ohk so tell me how is it , you own such a house

Me; cause i work

Amahle; what do you really do andre

Me; i work amahle

Amahle; what kind of a job

Me; im a paramedic

Amahle; \*laughing\* with your salary you got this

Me; yes

She just looked at me, raising her eyebrow

Me; what

Amahle; you lying andre

Me; why would i lie

Amahle; cause you ashamed of the truth now what do you really do

Me; \*laughing\* i steal cars, do fraud , drugs and a whole lot of things

Amahle; \*laughing\* no really what do you do

Me;.....

Her face just instantly changed , she looked scared and i hated that she suddenly had fear

Me; \*laughing\* you should have seen your face wooo amahle

I walked to the kitchen

Amahle; geez dont scare me like that

Me; why were you scared

Amahle; why would i not be scared thats the question you should be asking so tell me the truth

Me; my fathers will

Amahle; oh thats nice and you bought this place

Me; yes

Lying to her was turning into something i was getting good at

Amahle; how old are you

Me; 22

Amahle; \*laughing\* you are such a liar

Me; do i look old

Amahle; no but

Me; but what

Amahle; you are a gang leader who is 22???? And like you have this house and expensive cars you drive that you always change

Me; i was arrested at a young age and i told you that the materialistic things were bought by my dads money

Amahle; mmmm ohk

Me; how old are you

Amahle ; 20

I raised my eyebrow

Amahle; eish im 19 turning 20 this year are you turning 22

Me; no , 23

Amahle; ohk so

Me; \*laughing\* so ini amahle

Amahle; candice and helen

Me; do you always ask too many questions

Amahle; yes i need to know who im dealing with

Me; ohk what about them

Amahle; are you dating them

me; do you know you have asked me that question more than once and no im not dating them we just have fun

Amahle; thats disgusting

Me; ohk miss goody , you have probably slept with a few guys yourself , and only difference with you and me is you use the term " we in a relationship"

Amahle; one i have not slept with anyone

Me; and that will make you a virgin which you not

Amahle; what you trying to say

Me; you dont look like a virgin

Amahle; how does a virgin look

She was becoming serious, so i lifted my head to get a clear view of her face

Me; wait you a really a virgin

Amahle; how does a virgin look

Me; \*laughing\* you a virgin.

Amahle ; i asked you a question

Me; most virgins i know are too goody man , i mean they think they know all of that and dont party and stuff actually you are all off that

Amahle; thats bullshit

Me; i know. So you a virgin

Amahle; why does that amuse you

Me; cause you a virgin , i mean , you a third year student , you beautiful, you in varsity and im sure there are boys drooling over you and now im sure that your bf dumped you not because you were leaving but because you were starving him

amahle; I was not dumped

me; then what happened

amahle; long story

me; does that long story have anything to do with sex

amahle;.....

me; \*laughing\* you were starving the nigga but you did good I hate that bitch

Amahle; not all of us are like your ratchet hoes that open their legs just to make you please you

Me; at least they know the greatest thing ever

Amahle; and do you know being a virgin is the greatest thing ever

Me; whats great about that

Amahle; we dont have regrets for sleeping with assholes like yourself

Me; and do you know what you missing out

Amahle; no and i dont want to know

Me; il tell you anyway

She tried getting up from the couch but i held her back and she missed her footing causing her to fall i laughed and she looked pissed she tried to get up but i pulled her down before she could and sat on top of her. I held her hands above her head and she tried moving but i held her down good

Amahle; get off me

Me; can you relax, i just want you to listen to what you missing out on

Amahle; as long as you dont kiss me

Me; you not all of that

Amahle; i know i am and i know you want to kiss me more than anything, you want to kiss me more than you want to fuck your girls

Me;\*laughing\* just shut up

She pouted

Me; just picture me kissing you, we both naked , not rushing anywhere just a slow kiss , biting your lower lip and pulling it while your tongue makes friends with my tongue

She closed her eyes and i whispered to her ear

Me; moving my kisses to your neck and you let out a slight moan ,you can feel my hot breath on your neck and you get wet with each and every kiss i leave on your neck. Moving my left hand down your breast, stomach and to your centre, your wet, dripping wet and ii rub my finger to your clit, it feels so good to you that you have not felt something pleasurable like this before, then i slowly move the tip of my d to your clit not entering you making you feel what you about to enjoy and finally going inside of you, you feel it in your inside its painful but you want it

She breathed out loudly

Me; i slowly go in and you hold my back tight a part of you wants me to stop but another part of you doesnt so you do not let me stop. I go in and out off you, your juices all on my d and you feel my d inside of you, your stomach your chest where do you feel it

Amahle;....

Me; amahle where do you feel it

Amahle; \*breathing heavily\* my chest

Me; exactly and my pace increases i pick you up and pin you to the wall and you whisper o my ear " make me cum baby, make me cum" i go in faster and deeper and the harder you scratch and you feel something build inside of you , its coming in so close you dont know what it is, it feels so good but you scared of what will happen next and i push in the last inch of my d , you gasp for air, your toes curl and you cum baby , you cum

## INSERT #20

Me; you hungry?

Amahle; ....

I peaked at her on the floor , her eyes were still closed

Me; \*shouting \* AMAHLE !!!

She opened her eyes

Me; thats what you missing, now are you hungry

Amahle; you are such an ass and no, take me home

Me; \*laughing\* you want to go home now

Amahle; \*shouting\* YES

Me; ohk relax

I took my car keys and we left

Amahle; thats what you do to girls

Me; do what?

amahle; that andre , what you told me

Me; \*laughing\* seems like what i told you fucked up your mind

Amahle; mxm

Me; you will find out not with me but with the guy you will love

Amahle; ohk

We arrived at mbali place

Amahle; thanks for today ohk , lunch

Me; sure, we should do it again

Amahle; yeah only next time we not going to your place

Me; \*laughing\* its still too early to say

She went out and closed the door

I drove back home and just sat on the carpet thinking about a whole lot of things like how i wanted to be with this girl but i could not. I made myself something to eat, watched tv and went to bed

2 months passed , i was busy as ever, amahle was back at school and i hardly saw her i didnt have her numbers so it was hard to contact her and thought it was for the best

The squad was still close as ever before , mbali was doing her last year and we gave her the money we promised her. I was still going out with candice and helen not dating though. Woke up one morning it was a Friday , went to the bathroom cleaned myself up. Wore a black nike sweater , white nike cap, dark blue jeans and white all star. Took everything i will need and headed to the warehouse

Themba; sure ntwana

Me; sure ntwana , baphi labantu ( where are these people )

Themba; kunezinto abayo zi tshuna ( they going to do a few things)

Me; oh , underground

Themba; ahh kunaley ntwana ezi spana lapha vele ( just the boys that work there)

Me; ohk , beka ke vandag si on uyazi angithi ( so you know today we on right )

Themba; sure, uvaya noban ( yes who are you going with)

Me; no shane so nina nilungise everything ne ( just shane as for you guys you just need to prepare for everything ohk )

Themba; sure enyuku for that batch ( ohk and the money for that batch )

Me; khululeka ingenile , mele ngiyi fake ksasa kini ( relax I got it. I will put your share on your accounts tomorrow)

Themba; ohk

We talked about business for a while and the guys came back

Later that night i had a job , took everything i will need and left, got to the car i wanted , shane took control off the car we came with. I went to the driveway. Did everything i needed to do and got in. Things had to be done fast , i drove off with the car shane following me after a few minutes of slow driving cause we didnt want to bring any attention to us. The alarm company went crazy , shane went the opposite way and so did i

I was flying 180 and i was not even worried. The alarm company and 2 police cars were behind me. I went all type of ways but i could not lose them. My phone rang

Me; im sorry i cant talk

Girl; oh sorry

## INSERT #21

Me; amahle???

Girl; yeah , but you busy so will talk later

Me; no mama , talk to me , i didnt know you had my numbers

Amahle; i didnt , i stole them from mbali phone

Me; \*laughing\* why

Amahle; where are you?

Me; why?

Amahle; its seems like you driving and the are sirens background are you talking while you taking a patient to hospital

Me; \*laughing\* no , hold on

I put the phone on the seat and had to make a turn that will determine my faith

Me; you were saying

Amahle; you seem really busy

Me;im not what you doing

Amahle; just sitting , im bored

Me; wheres mbali

Amahle; shes out

Me; want me to pick you up

Amahle; yes please

Me; il pick you up at 3

Amahle; haaaa andre 3am whats the use that time

Me; im still going to pick you up

Amahle; ohk

Me; wlet me call you after an hour

Amahle; ohk

I hung up and concentrated on what i was doing after a while i finally lost them and went straight to the warehouse where they were waiting for me

Removing everything i mean everything , the doors, bumper, engine, wheels everything. I took my phone and headed out the time was exactly 2am, i called amahle

Amahle; mmmm

Me; hell no wake up mama

Amahle; no

Me; im coming to pick you up , get ready

Amahle; ohk just hurry up

Me; ohk

I took my car and headed out and to my surprise the was  
a roadblock

Office; good morning

Me; hi, is there a problem

Officer; no , we just looking for a car

Me; oh ohk

Officer; this is your car?

Me; \*raising my eyebrow\* yes

Office; its a quiet expensive one

Me; i know a mil and half

Office; did you steal it

Me; would i be driving it like this if i stole it

He looked at me

Officer; you look familiar

Me; i always get that, im rushing somewhere can i leave

Officer; where

Me; my gf , should i tell you more

Officer; you may go

I started the engine and drove off to mbali crib. I parked outside the gate and called amahle

Amahle; im coming

I hung up

She appeared from the house looking beautiful , she was wearing shorts , vest and slippers and a gown untied with a bag on her hand, she opened the gate and got in

Me; you look beautiful

Amahle; \*laughing\* i feel so bad, you look all dressed and im wearing pjs

Me; i was working

Amahle; this time

Me; yes you hungry

Amahle; yeah kind off want mcdonald

Me; ohk , lets get it

We drove to the 24 hr drive tru ordered mc feast and drinks and left for my place

Me; you sleeping over right

Amahle; yeah its already morning so, not the same bed

Me; \*laughing\* will see

We got to my place and she walked in first , she went up and i sat on the couch with my fries and she came down and cuddled next to me i was happy as fuck , i wrapped my other arm around her and we watched movies

Me; hows school

Amahle; hectic babe its just too much

"babe" i got lost in my thoughts

Amahle; what?

Me; nothing anyway it will be fine ey as time goes by

Amahle; i hope so , so hows the not fucking life

Me; \*laughing\* its ohk

She just smiled and it was hard for me

I leaned in for a kiss and our lips touched, she kissed me back, her lips were soooooo soft i grabbed her face and deepened the kiss , my tongue asked for entrance and she granted it. I pulled her to me and she sat on top of me and i just got a hard on , i picked her up, and she locked her ankles around my waist and walked upstairs to my bedroom. I slowly laid her on the bed , i held her thigh so tight and grinded her she let out a moan. I broke the kiss and looked down on her , she opened her big beautiful eyes

Amahle; whats wrong

Me; nothing i just cant have sex with you

Amahle; why, am i not your type

Me; im way out of your league mama , you beautiful, you smart i mean you everything a guy wants

Amahle; so?

I just laid my head down and whispered to her ear

Me; i dont want to hurt you , i really dont want to hurt you

She put his hand on my head, brushing it

Amahle; you wont dre

Me; i will and i dont want you to hate me

## INSERT #22

Woke up the next morning , checked on my left and amahle was sleeping , her shorts revealing her butt cheeks, on the side of her body , her breast on the side view, she was facing me, and her hair was all over the place she was sexy as fuck. I walked to the kitchen and got us food and walked up

Me; nana.... Nana

Amahle; mmmm

Me; wake up

I removed the hair from her face and she slowly opened her eyes and smiled

Me; \*smiling\* wake up

She covered her face , i removed her hands and she shook her head

I tried kissing her but she covered her mouth

Me; \*laughing\* you dont want to kiss me

She shook her head , she got out off bed and headed to the bathroom i just laughed

She walked back in

Amahle; morning

Me; morning, can you talk now

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah

She sat next to me and i wrapped my arm around her and we ate. My phone rang

Me; sure

Shane; hey man

Me; sure ntwana (yes boy)

Shane; all done

Me; \*laughing\* are you for real

Shane; not all done but almost , uzozwakala lah ( are you coming here )

Me; hold on... When do you want to go home

Amahle; later on today

Me; no ntwana (no boy ) i wont come

Shane; hehhh unobani lapho ( who are you with )

Me; piss off

I hung up

Amahle; your zulu is really good

Me; my father mother is zulu so im half zulu

Amahle; do you like me dre

I looked at her

Me; yeah a lot

Amahle; so why ha... \*she paused\* na never mind

Me; no talk to me

Amahle; nah just leave it

Me; ohk , tomorrow you going to school?

Amahle; yes eish

Me; what time will you get out

Amahle;im not sure want to pick me up

Me; yeah

Amahle; \*laughing\* are you in love with me already

Me; you want to or not

Amahle; please do

Me; ohk i will , you must tell me when will you leave ohk

Amahle; ohk i really like you

Me;....

Amahle; yho ohk

Me; mama listen i like you too , its just you want a relationship i dont

Amahle; why not dre

Me; im not into relationships

Amahle; why dre

Me;\*shouting\*i dont want to be like my mother!

Amahle; ah...

Me; im so sorry i snapped at you nana , im really sorry

Amahle; you afraid that you will end up like your mother

Me; yes ohk i just cant

She held my cheek

Amahle; you wont come on andre, not everyone who falls inloves faces tragedy like your mum

Me; im going to take a shower

Amahle; you such a coward

I turned from the bathroom door and faced her

Me; what?

she jumped from the bed walking towards me poking me

Amahle; you are such a coward

Me; watch how you talk amahle

Amahle; \*shouting\* NO , you act all strong but you not i was so stupid falling for you, theres no such thing as that you just want an excuse to fuck around and you using your mum you piece of shit

She tried walking away but i grabbed her wrist and pinned her to the wall

Amahle; you hurting me

Me; talk to me like that ever again, im going to kill you

Amahle; \*she hardened her face\* you a piece of shit

I would have done something to her but i could not, she was feisty and that turned me on like crazy i just looked at her with hunger in my eyes

Amahle; are you for real?

Me; what?

Amahle; im being serious here and you look like you ready to rip my clothes off you such bore nxa

She got away from my grip and went downstairs

## INSERT #23

After my long shower, i went out and just wrapped a towel around my towel. I went downstairs lol and she was sitting on the couch , with her bag next to her

Amahle; take me home

Me; what you going to eat

Amahle; i said take me home

Me; i said what you going to eat

Amahle;....

Me; fine starve yourself

I walked upstairs and dressed up, just wore sweatpants, white top and slippers and went downstairs and she was eating

Me; so you eating alone

Amahle; .....

Me; \*laughing\* fine be like that

I sat on the couch watching tv and she walked upstairs with her bag after a while. I went up and knocked on bathroom door

Amahle; what?

Me; can i come in

Amahle; no

Me; amahle please

Amahle; get in andre

I opened the door and she was inside the tub , with bubbles all over her hair tied up

Her legs covering her breasts

I leaned on the tub

Me; im sorry

She looked at me

Me; im really sorry mama, maybe you right but like i dont want to hurt you which is why im avoiding all of this

Amahle; what is it, that you avoiding, i slept in your bed last night, im inside your tub you \*poking me \* you kissed me last night but you dont want to be with me

I held my head

Me; what is it with you and dating

Amahle; i dont want you to play with me dre , i want a real thing

Me; well i cant give you that

Amahle; then get the fuck out of my face

I stood up and left

She finally left the tub and wore a short dress with slippers and headed out. I followed her and she was sitting inside my car, i took my car keys and drove her home. When we arrived at her place. She took her bag , opened the door, slammed it shut and walked in and i just drove off

## #AMAHLE

I was pissed and also wanted to cry, i was holding my tears back so hard. I took a deep breath and opened the door mbali was in the kitchen (mbali parents left for a week to go to durban so it was just us 2 )

Mbali; i want to know everything

Me; about what

Mbali; where you come from

Me; i was out with a friend

She turned to face me

Me; what?

Mbali; a coloured friend

Me; huh

Mbali; i saw andre car

Me; yeah i was out with andre

Mbali; what are you two doing

Me; nothing, can i go sleep now

Mbali; good , dont even fall for dre amahle thats a warning lala cause if you do you will constantly cry

I just ignored her went to my bedroom and just threw myself on the bed and zoned off quickly cause i cried

After a few hours, woke up and went to the lounge mbali was on the phone. I made myself a cup of coffee and joined her

Mbali; ready to talk

Me; about what

Mbali; you and andre

Me; we just had a moment thing mbali thats all,its never going to happen again

Mbali; you fucked ?

Me; no come on now

Mbali; oh ohk , you ohk

I nodded my head

Mbali; andre is not the person to fall in love with ,hope you know that

I just ignored her statement

Me; so you and deon

Mbali; \*laughing\* my baby

Me; \*laughing\* why are you 2 still a secret

Mbali; cause we dont want people in our business especially andre

Me; \*smiling\* you look really happy

Mbali; you have no idea sweety i feel like screaming to the world and let them know how happy i am

Me; \*laughing\*yho ai wena inkulu indaba yakho ( theres something bigger than what you telling me )

Mbali; ai suka, nawe mele uthole eouti manje amahle ( whatever , you must also get yourself a bf)

Me; mayingeza ( if he comes )

Mbali; ayeza wuwe nje ongafuni abantwana babantu (they do come its just you, who does not want other kids )

Me; sama type wami (they not my types)

Mbali; yini etype yakho ( whats your type?)

Me; \*laughing\* angazi mara abana that thing engi attractayo ( i dont know but they dont have that thing that attracts me)

Mbali; mara andre has it ( but andre has it)

Me; yhoooo, we not talking about andre

Mbali; ohk ngyolala mina (im going to sleep mina)

Me; goodnight

After eating, i washed the dishes then headed to bed

Next morning, made myself breakfast, ate, took a bath, just wore a swimsuit, open back, denim shorts, white cap with white all star, took my bag and left got to school and most of the day i was busy at the lab around 4 my last class ended i packed my stuff and checked my phone

Mbali; hope you have your key , i wont be back till late

Andre; i dont break my promises , im outside your school, first entrance

I just smiled and walked to the first entrance. I walked out and it was a white beemer " TURNER 3 GP". He was leaning against the passenger door, looking down on his phone, he made heads turn and i knew that he was my

type. I walked towards him, he lifted his head up and turned to the door, he opened the door. I got in and he closed it and also got in. I looked outside of the window

## INSERT #24

Me; what you want to eat?

Amahle; anything you want to eat

She was looking outside the entire time. I drove to debonairs and we walked in together

Me; pick

I said that looking down to my phone

Amahle; please give us triple deck , meaty double cheese

Lady; ohk

I leaned on the door frame and she went to sit on one of the chairs available i got on whatsapp

helen; will i see you today

Me; you might

helene; ohk i really miss you

Me; where are you

helen; i just left work

Me; ohk

Kim; andre please i really want this tekkie

Me; will talk about it kim

Kim; ohk

While busy on my phone , i heard amahle laugh, i moved my eyes to her and she was laughing with some guy

Amahle; \*laughing\* maybe

I walked up to her

Me; lets go

Amahle; where, they have not call our order

Guy; are you going with him

Amahle; yeah , so il call you ohk

Guy \*smiling\* please do lovy

And before i could murder someone they called our order, she took it and we went back to the car and the was just silence

Me; how many tattoos do you have

Amahle; 4

I saw her tattoos when she slept over but never got a chance to ask her about them , that was on her back in the middle cause her top was open

Me; the one at the back what does it mean

Amahle; my parents and grandparents names, birthday and date of death except for my grandpaarents

Me; others

Amahle; foot its a quote" he walks with me" , above my left breast "queen", wrist its just a bow

I pulled over on the side

Me; can we sort this out

Amahle; theres nothing to sort out

Me; i like you, is that not enough

Amahle; no , now drive

Me; im sorry ohk, im sorry for giving you the wrong impression that the is a chance we might date im sorry. I dont deserve you

Amahle; yes you dont

Me; i know but can you at least be my friend then come on i care about you

Amahle; not enough to be with me

Me; yeah im sorry nana

Amahle; ohk \*holding back her tears\*i get it \*she faked a smile\*

Me; im sorry

Amahle; dont be, its ohk im fine

She looked outside

Me; am...

Amahle; i want to pee andre

I started the car and she was looking outside the entire time. I stopped at a garage and she rushed out of the car and i just knew i fucked up. I waited for her maybe 10minutes or more. I went out and headed to the direction of the toilet

She was leaning on the wall crying

Me; nana

Amahle; \*crying\* dont touch me please

Me; amahle

She just pushed me away with her hand

Amahle; im fine ohk , just go wait in the car

Me; mama im sorry

Amahle; just leave it ohk , lets go \*she wiped her tears with the tissue she was carrying\*

Me; no lets talk

Amahle; no

She walked passed me and stood outside the car, i opened and she got in

Me; amahle

Amahle; \*smiling\* im fine andre, im really fine can you take me home

Me; ohk

## INSERT #25

I went to the warehouse and my new baby was all set looking all beautiful and royal blue

Me; done

Dorian; done man \*smiling\* shes a beauty , if i had the money for her i would buy her now

Me; keep saving up , you might be lucky

Dorian; mxm so when are they getting her

Me; Wednesday

Themba; the documents

Me; all set , i will bring them here tomorrow , when i get back from work

Shane; manje ubuya vah kanti (where do you come from)

Me; ayi funi wena leyo ( that does not concern you)

Shane; \*laughing\* uno girl ne omusha ( you have a new girl ne )

Me; ini? (what?)

Shane; no man like we dont see you that much this days

Dorian; who you sleeping with now

Me; no one , now get the fuck out of my business

They raised they hands up in defeat

Me; now can we talk money

Deon; yes please

We sat down and talked. After a few hours i left for home, made myself something to eat and went to bed

The next morning prepared for work and went downstairs

Me; hi ma

Masesi; hey baby

Me; you good ma

Masesi; im good baby, heres your breakfast

I sat down and dug in

Masesi; get going

Me; yes ma, see you later ohk

Masesi; ohk baby

She kissed my cheek and i left. Arrived at work checked in and nomonde was there ( my colleague who is constantly flirting with me )

Me; hey mama

Nomonde; hey babe, you good

Me; yes you

Nomonde; im good just tired

Me;what were you doing

Nomonde; things

Me; what things?

Nomonde; \*laughing\* that does not concern you

I raised my eyebrow

Nomonde; i was with someone

Me; hmmmm

Nomonde; you jealous

Me; no lovy , control your clit

Nomonde; yho wena , voetsek

It was a busy day after a busy day, i knocked off, checked out , went home to collect the documents of the car and

went to the warehouse the boys were not there but other boys that work for me. I dropped them off and went back home. Masesi had already prepared dinner for me so i just ate and went to bed

My days were always the same , same routine each and every day, wake up, go to work , sometimes come straight home other times go to the warehouse. Few days passed , Saturday the squad was going to a club i dont even know if i wanted amahle to be there. I picked up helen and we headed to braamfontein.

The guys were all there and the queen of the guys

Me; hey

Mbali; hey papi

We hugged

Helen; its been a while , come here

Mbali; \*laughing\* yeah where have you been vele

Helen; just been busy

Me; wheres your cousin

Mbali; shes studying

Me; ohk , lets get drinks

Deon; a bottle of course

Me; make them 2 i intend to get drunk

I just wanted to forget about the drama that happened in the past few days

Dorian; you ohk man

Me; yeah

They got us drinks and we sat around one table

Me; so im going to the cape, next weekend

Shane; you going alone

Me; yeah man, i need to sort out some things that side and talk to some people

Dorian; about what dre

Me; \*laughing\* things whats wrong will all of you

Deon; il go with you

Me; fine, will go the together , we leave Thursday

Deon; cool

Themba; but the business that side is running smooth right

Me; thats what i hope to hear when i get there, i think someone is fucking with me or my business that side

Dorian; thats why you want to go there

Me; yeah

Mbali; dont go do some gang shit that side

Me; its my duty

Mbali; then you get arrested

Me; \*laughing\* have i ever

Mbali; yes what you mean, you have been arrested

Me; \*laughing\* fine , il try not to get caught if i have to do anything ohk

Mbali; ohk

Helen ; you always busy

Me; can we just have fun geez guys

Helen; yes i agree with you baby \*kissing me \*

We had the time of our life once again, partied , drank and got drunk. I got myself so drunk i could not drive. I eventually got home , shane drived. Me and helen went to my bedroom she wanted to get a bit frisky but i was fucked. So i just zoned off. Next morning, woke up to morning sex, masesi prepared breakfast for us , we ate and just enjoyed each other company around 6 i took her back home and went straight home

## INSERT #26

The rest of the week passed by so fast , Thursday prepared to leave for the cape, deon came to my place and we left around 7. we drove to the cape and arrived Friday at my apartment where one of my other closest friends lived

Me; hey man

Adel; hey man, you good

Me; im good man

Deon; what has been happening

Adel; nothing, let me get this girl out

He disappeared to the hallway after a few minutes , he came down with a girl she was ok

Her; hi

Us; hey

Her; you will call me

Adel; yes

The girl left

Me; who was that

Adel; some girl so whats new

Deon; no shit man , hows the business

Adel; the truth not so good man

Me; tell me everything

Adel; there are some new people on this business

Me; you telling me , my business is running slow because of some new people

Adel; yeah man

Me; dont fuck with me adel, who the fuck am i , no we and you threatened by a newbie who is not shit

Adel; theres nothing we could do without your help

Me; my help? You want me to spoon feed you , now and show you what to do

Adel;....

Me; talk

Adel; i dont know what you want me to say man

Me; i want you to be real with me , you cant handle kids now you need my help

Adel; these people \*he paused\*

Me; you know what, fuck it never mind man il sort this out on my own

Adel; cool

Me; im leaving , you coming man

Deon; yeah lets go

We all left and went to see the guys we were in the gang with. I still kept in contact with them. We arrived to this house was more like a brothel

Girl 1 ; turner

Me; hey sweety

I kissed her cheek

Guy; \*shouting\* turner

Me; hey man

I walked to the lounge and the guys there werent crazy.  
We talked about a whole lot of things

Marlene; hows jozi man

Me; its great man

Marlene was a big dog in jail, he has been out for a while  
but its no difference

Marlene; you know theres a girl of mine that moved there

Me; \*laughing\* girl wait , you have a girl

Marlene; not my girl but she was my friend, now i call her  
my girl and she knows that

Me; so why dont you contact her

Marlene; i dont have a phone man, but she will be here  
june as she told me

Me; hmmm and how are you

Marlene; im good man just tough sometimes but im good

Me; ohk man

Marlene; and business that side, you still fucking girls

Me; great man , what you mean fucking girls

Marlene; you know you love fucking girls

Me; \*laughing\* yeah i am but now it almost ended. Some girl came into my life

Marlene; so?

Me; it didnt work out man, you know im not into this relationship shit

Marlene; thats fucked up

Me; yeah and this girl man she was different. She even knew about my tattoos

Marlene; What??

Me; yeah , i mean she knew what they meant

Marlene; who is this girl turner

Me; dont worry shes no threat

Marlene; ohk be careful who you fuck

Me; \*laughing\* whatever man

Later that day , we had a couple of drinks, smoked and then went back to my place and just slept. Next day went to the warehouse were all my dealing took place

Them; turner

Me; guys

malik; whats up man

Me; i should be asking you that guys, lets all seat

They came to me

Me; what the fuck is going on here

Them;...

Me; \*shouting\* dont fuck with me , you understand me , dont fuck with me

## INSERT #27

Monday i was back home. I slept the whole day cause Tuesday i was going to work.

3months passed it was june. Mbali was on her holidays and amahle but she left for capetown. Business was going great including at the cape money was coming in and coming in hard. Woke up one Saturday and just went downstairs

Me; hi ma

Masesi; hey baby, wheres your girl

Me; \*laughing\* shes still sleeping

Masesi; you need to stop this andre , or you will get sick

Me; sick?

Masesi; yebo hiv baby

Me; no mama, i protect myself i always play it safe

Masesi; good , cause you cant trust other girls

Me; i know mama, stop worrying

Masesi; ohk , when was the last time you saw kimberley

Me; its been a while

She raised her eyebrow

Me; \*laughing\* il contact her i swear

Masesi; good

Candice; morning

Me; morning

She kissed my cheek

Masesi; yebo

Candice; coffee with 2 sugars

Me; please candice

Candice; why should i say please its her job

I banged the table and pointed at her

Me; please candice

Candice; please can i have coffee

Masesi just shook her head and left

Candice; whats with you

Me; as long as you in this house you will respect that woman

Candice; ohk so what are we doing today

Me; what do you want to do

Candice; lets go watch a movie

Me; ohk we ....

My phone rang

Me; hold on...bubu

Mbali; bubu where are you

Me; im at home

Mbali; we want to go out , you on

Me;no

Mbali; what?

Me; im going out with candice right now

Mbali; are you ditching us for your hoe

Me; \*laughing\* dont be mean

Mbali; whatever and so you know amahle is back bye

Before i could say anything she just hung up . I laughed

Candice; whats up

Me; nothing, lets go take a shower

After our breakfast we walked upstairs took a long shower  
i mean long shower and finally went out

I just wore jeans, sweater, black sneakers , cap and  
candice was looking beautiful and sexy too. I took my car  
keys and we left. Got to the mall she chose the movie and  
i just sat there movies werent my thing so i just got busy  
with my phone

Me; will amahle really be with you

Mbali; yes, now stop texting me and get busy with your  
hoe

Me; lol why are you punishing me like this

Mbali; im not i just cant believe you chose not to go with  
us

Me; cause i wanted to spend time with my girl

Mbali; you spelled hoe wrong

Me;mbali!!! Il see you guys later tonight

Me; hi

Amahle.....

She didnt reply but she was online

Me; so you dont talk to me anymore

Amahle.....

I just logged off and watched the movie

After 2 and half hours, we left and went to get something to eat

Candice; andre

Me; yeah

Candice; do you love me

Me; what?

Candice; never mind

Me; ohk

I was glad she did not go that far with that conversation

Me; ready to go

Candice; yes are we going to your place

Me; no, we meeting my friends at some pub

Candice; i dont like that hoe

Me; which hoe now

Candice; mbali i think she likes you

Me; shes not a hoe , come on

Candice; whatever and i dont want to hang out with her

Me; well let me send you home

Candice; no, fine andre lets go

We got in the car and drove to the pub Where The squad was at.

## INSERT #28

I looked for familiar faces I walked up to them and it was dorian, themba, deon, shane , jerome, mbali and amahle. I have not seen amahle since our encounter and she looked beautiful she was wearing a black short dress, heels and hair tied up

Me : hey

Them: hey

Mbali : I thought you were not coming

Me : I thought the very same thing

Mbali : Candice

Candice : mbali

Deon : calm down girls, calm down

Dorian and amahle both got up and left I looked at mbali

mbali : \*laughing\* what??? The girl needs to get laid and since you only bring tears its better if she moves on

Me : she told you that

Mbali :she didn't have too I saw it with my own eyes

Me : mba.....

She lifted her hand up to my face and got her drink

Candice :want to dance?

Me : let me get myself something to drink first

I got myself a drink and danced with candice, even though my head was not there. I got drunk so fast. I got up and went to the toilet and when I came back shit was going down

Mbali :\* shouting\* DONT FUCK WITH ME BITCH, IL FUCK YOU UP NOU

Candice : \* shouting back\* TRY IT BITCH, TRY IT \* clapping her hands\*

I just sat on the couch and watched I was too drunk too get involved

Mbali : YOU SUCH A HOE AND ANDRE DOESN'T EVEN LOVE YOU

me : hold up , dont get me involved

Mbali : STAY THE FUCK OUT OFF THIS

I raised my hands in defeat

Candice : YOU JUST A JEALOUS BITCH CAUSE YOU WANT HIM

mbali : HIM? WHY THE HELL WOULD I WANT SOMEONE THAT I WONT MEAN SHIT TO THEM BUT IL JUST BE THEY HOE JUST LIKE YOU HIS HOE

I tried to talk but themba just placed his hand over my mouth and pushed me back cause I was so drunk it was easy for me to fall back

candice : YES AND YOU WILL NEVER GET HIM

Dorian and amahle showed up, amahle rushed to mbali holding her back

Mbali : YOU STUPID BITCH, HIS PROBABLY FUCKING YOU BUT IMAGINING HER

after that statement candice jumped to mbali attacking her then it was just chaos,I was just out off it, themba pulled me back I was such a burden cause I was all over the place bouncers came in separating them and

eventually threw us all out. Even though we were outside they continued fighting.

Me: \*laughing\* why they fighting?

Themba : \*laughing\* you so annoying when you drunk?

I just left them there and I walked to my car got in and fell asleep on the steering wheel. After a few minutes, opened the door and just threw up thats how drunk I was

Then blackout....

Woke up the next morning, with the worst headache ever but I was on my bed. I slowly got out off bed and went downstairs candice was watching tv

Me : hey

Candice: .....

I went to the kitchen

Me: hey ma

Masesi : hi baby

Me : whats with her?

Masesi :\*laughing\* I also dont know seems like something happened yesterday

I made myself coffee and went back to the lounge

Me: hi candice

Candice : do you imagine her when you make love to me

Me : imagine who?

Candice: \*shouting\* AMAHLE

I still felt as though I was drunk and now this girl was screaming

Me : number one keep your voice down and watch how you talk to me another thing why the fuck would I imagine amahle

Candice: thats what mbali said

Me : is mbali there when we have sex?

Candice : .....

Me: is mbali there when we fuck candice?

Candice: no

Me: then how the hell would she know what I imagine when we fuck

Candice: ....

Me: you irritating the fuck out off me right now ,and this thing with you and mbali is getting on my nerves you want to act like hooligans fine I dont give a fuck but the minute you walk in my house you will respect me and this house

Candice: but she always provokes m....

Me : I just said I dont give a fuck what happens between you two, you always entertaining each other right so when it backfires you come and complain shit me. When we go out I go out with you not to act like some ratchet cheap bitch that goes around fighting in clubs revealing her shit to everyone . From now on whenever we go out you sit next to me until we leave the club or pub or whatever you represent me and I \*i paused\*you know what I dont fucken care anymore pack your bags im taking you home

Candice: please andre

Me : its sunday you need to go home, im going to work tomorrow if you dont go you will walk home I swear

Candice: ohk

She went upstairs and I ate my breakfast after few minutes she came down with her bag

Candice: im ready

Me: lets go

I grabbed a top and my keys and left. I drove her to her place she got out off the car, closed the door and walked inside. I drove to mbali place, got there and called her

Me: come out

Mbali : yho ohk

She appeared from the house and got in

Mbali: he.....

I cut her off

Me : where do you get off telling candice, I imagine amahle while fucking her

Mbali : \*laughing\* geez you mad

Me : dont piss me off mbali, candice might just be my fuck buddy but you will respect her as much as you respect helen

Mbali : it just slipped ohk

me: I dont give a fuck whether it slipped out or whatever excuse you got to give me I dont give a fuck, stay in your line mbali and I mean it

Mbali: ohk im so....

Me: now get out off my car

Mbali : just like that?

Me : want me to throw a party?

Mbali : whats wrong?

Me: you and Candice you irritate the fuck out of me now go

Mbali: I know its not me and Candice ,now whats wrong

Me : I said get out off my car

She looked at me and slowly opened the door and walked out. I drove straight to my house and just went to bed

Few days passed none interesting happened I kept myself busy with work and avoided everyone and it was for the best cause I was just angry at everyone

## INSERT #28

Woke up one of these days , I had an appointment with kim and my grandmother I just wore casual clothes and left to pick them up

Me : so how are you.2 doing

Ma: good baby hiw about you

Me: im ohk

Ma: hows work?

Me its good ma

Kim:\*laughing\* what work grandma

Me : cut it out

Kim: where is dorian?

Me: I dont know

Kim: but you always together

Me: but I dont live with him

Kim: you have a problem with people

Me : what?

Kim : you heard me

Me: maybe I do

Ma: thats not going to get you anywhere baby

Me : I know but I prefer it that way

We got to some spa place well they got in and I just sat on one off the chairs while they were busy with them

Ma: have you seen your mother?

Me: no

Ma: you need to go and see her, shes getting better

Kim: way better actually maybe next year she might get out

Me: that's not going to happen

Kim: dont be negative

Me: im not she has been there for way too long kim why would she come out now

Kim: I did not say now andre, I said next year

Me: ohk just leave room for disappointments

Kim: I will do no such thing, shes coming out next year

Ma: Kimberley I know baby you want your mother to get out and so do I but andre is right

Kim: ohk grandma il try even though that will be hard

Ma: I know baby

Me: come sleep over at my place today

Kim: are you for real?

Me: yeah

Kim: why?

Me: \*laughing\* cause you my sister

Kim: why? You never ask me to come over

Me: cause I dont feel like going out to get drunk today so you coming or not

Kim: \*laughing\* or maybe its because you have a problem with people

Me: and that so?

Kim: of course I will come, grandma its fine right

Ma: yes baby

After their time, we went to get something to eat and dropped off ma while kim packed her bags then we drove back to my place

Masesi :hi baby

Kim: hi ma how are you

Masesi: im good pumpkin

Kim: you see I came to visit you as I promised

Masesi: good thought you did not love me anymore

Kim: never ever ever

We just laughed

Me: im going to take a shower ohk

Them: ohk

I went up to my bedroom, then hit the shower when I was done I just wore sweatpants, top and slippers went downstairs

Kim: your phone is ringing non stop

Me: dont answer it

Kim: I didnt, you would swear your friends dont have a life when you not there

Me: \*laughing\* mxm so what has been going on

Kim: just school ey I mean grade 10 is no joke andre

I raised my eyebrow

Kim: what? Its not and science is killing me I told grandma and grandpa but they always tell me doing

science will get me far and they pressuring me to carry on doing it while im failing it dre I dont want to repeat a year

Me : should I get you a tutor?

Kim : I dont think it will work

Me: nana come on, we trying if after this it still kills you then il make sure you change your subjects il make sure off that

Kim: really

Me :yes

Kim: ohk but I dont know any tutors so it will be better if you find me one

Me: dont worry I will ohk

Kim: ohk now your turn

Me: well nothing new

Kim: why dont you want to be with your friends and the truth including dorian

Me: I think im in love with someone I think im not saying I a..

She cut me off

Kim: sorry I was not listening, I just heard you say something you wouldn't possibly say so I know my head was just deceiving me what you wanted to tell me

Me :\*laughing\* im serious kim

Kim: if you serious this means I heard you right you in love with someone you!

Me: yes

Kim : this entire thing is confusing , you inlove or think you are so that makes you mad and you taking your frustrations on other people

Me: last time we were together it seemed like her and dorian had something I dont know what and mbali knows I like her and she tells everyone about it she shoves it on everyone face including Candice

Kim: good I dont even like candice

Me: thats not the point now candice has insecurity issues and I dont need that drama and worse thing the girl I might be in love with hates me

Kim: why

Me: well we kind off fell for each other deep in just a few days how crazy is that but you know me and relationships so I told her we would never be an item

Kim: then why would you care if shes with dorian

Me: I don't

She raised her eyebrow

Me: what?

Kim: you mad cause she moved on from you?

Me: I didn't know I just tho....

She cut me off

Kim: you just thought she would wait for you till you ready

\* laughing\* who do you think you are

Me.....

Kim: want a hug?

Me: \*laughing\* no are you crazy

She just came to me and hugged me

Me: did you really have to do that

Kim: yes why dont you just apologise to the girl

Me: then what

Kim: then maybe she will forgive you then you will date

Me: im not too sure about yhat

Kim: which part forgiving you or dating

Me: both

Kim: I guess you need to make up your mind fast before you lose her to dorian if you haven't already

Me: will see man

My phone could not stop ringing

Kim: just switch off your phone cause oviasly they wont stop calling you

Me: yeah

I did just that, me and my baby sister we just watched tv until we both went to bed

## INSERT #30

Next morning washed up then went downstairs. Kim was watching tv

Me: morning

Kim: morning , mama made us breakfast before she left

Me: church?

Kim: you know her

I grabbed my plate and sat next to her and ate

Me: so I have to pickup something today

Kim: so?

Me: I will have to leave you

Kim: no im going with you

Me: ohk

Kim: as long as we won't stay for long

Me: no we wont then will go out

Kim: where

Me: go karting maybe

Kim: I will never say no to that

Me: \*laughing\* that I knew

The intercom rang

Kim: I think we know who is that

Me: should we open

Kim: no

Me: ohk, lets find you a tutor

I grabbed my laptop and we began searching. The people at the gate eventually left we found like 4 places where they taught physics and maths. We eventually agreed on a place which was like 600 a session and monthly 2.2 which was so much better cause she would attend Saturday and sunday and if we paid pair session it would be 4.8

Me: you sure about this

Kim: are you sure about paying this money

Me: of course kim

Kim: then yes

Me: ohk

I registered online and deposited the money and had to register there and give them a proof of payment it was a long procedure but promised her I was going to go tomorrow

Masesi: im back

Kim: how was church

Masesi: good, next time you coming with me

Kim: of course

Masesi: baby there are people for you

Me: deon?

Masesi: no

I got up and went to the gate and it some idiot that wanted business all the time

Me: what do I owe this pleasure

John: turner

Me: john

John: we need to talk

Me: about

John: business let me in

Me: I dont do business with you john

John: you might want to change your mind

Me: I wont, you a greedy ass bitch who is not loyal and cant be trusted and would snitch anytime you see few papers

John: fuck man turner lets do business

Me: get the fuck out off my place and never come back here

John: you will regret chasing me out

I walked back in , the people I did business with I chose them wisely cause I did not want any mistake

Kim: who was that

Me: no one I should get you back home

Kim: aren't I staying over?

Me: aren't school opening tomorrow?

Kim: they are but I cane with my uniform and school bag cause I thought you would drop me off at school

Me: \*laughing\* if I didnt know better I would think you want to move in with me

Kim: thats not a bad idea

Me: no

kim: \*laughing\* come on andre why not

Me: cause when you start living with me, you will begin doing things as you please whilst with grandma and pa you dont

Kim: no I won't

Me: yes you will and why dint you ask dorian

Kim: nah dorian is too perfect

Me: \*laughing \* perfect

Kim: yeah plus his boring

Me: you see what I mean, you want to move in with me cause you dont think im boring

Kim: you should be happy I don't think you boring

Me: just go bath so will leave

We went our separate ways, I went to shower and just wore blue jeans , white top, white cap with black sneakers , left my room and kim was also done. Took my car keys and left. Got to the warehouse and the package I was suppose to pick up was not there , I called themba

Themba : sure boy

Me: wheres the bag

Themba: bag?

Me: Themba bag, bag that has my money

Themba: ohhh dorian has it

Me: why the fuck does dorian have that bag man?

Themba : he sa....

Me: \*shouting\* dont fuck with me did I not say I was coming to pick up that bag today at the warehouse?and who the fuck gave dorian that bag

Themba: we thought you would come out yesterday and and \*stuttering\* sorry boza yami he just took it

Me: where the fuck is he

Themba: I think his place

I hung up went back to the car pisses as hell

Kim: are you ohk

Me: no

Kim: whats wrong? You look like you are ready to kill someone

Me: not now kim ,not now

Kim: ohk but talking helps sometimes

I just looked at her and moved my eyes back to the road, driving to dorian place I was boiling

Kim: why didn't you tell me we going to see dorian?

Me: thats because we not. Im coming stay inside

Kim: what? His my brother you know

Me: kim you will visit him another time just stay inside

Kim: ohk just greet him

Me: ohk

I walked to his apartment and knocked for a while there was no answer, I knocked again and the door opened. I felt as though my eyes were deceiving me...

## INSERT #31

Me: excuse me

I opened the door wide and let myself in

Amahle: hi to you too

Me: who the fuck told you to take that bag

Dorian: wait hold on whats going on man?

I punched the wall

Me: \*shouting\* who the fuck told you to take that bag?

Amahle: can you keep it down

I turned to face her

Me: dont piss me off

Dorian: you dont have to fight heres the bag

He threw it to me and I catched it

Me: if you ever touch my shit again il fuck you up

I walked out off the apartment without even closing the door and got in the car I just lost it. I hit the steering wheel multiple times and kim just looked at me with her eyes wide open the thought off amahle and dorian broke me

Me: \*shouting\* FUCK FUCK FUCK \*heavy sigh\* ready to go

Kim: m m yeah

Me: ohk

I threw the bag at the back and started the car driving off

Kim: want to talk about it

Me: no

Kim: im your sister

Me: dorian is fu...\*i paused\* dorian is sleeping with the girl I told you about

Kim: the one you in love with

Me: was

Kim: you not anymore

Me: no im not

Kim I wonder who you fooling

Me....

Kim: well she stooped low to make you jealous with your own brother

Me: I dont give a fuck on who she fucks

Kim: it did not look that way

Me: kim please

Kim: sorry was just saying, lets just forget about everything and have fun ohk

Me: ohk

We went in that place and just had fun. We made a few friends there natasha hmmmm and her best friend lexi with natasha baby sister who was about Kim age nelly. We got to know each other and exchanged numbers then we drove back home. I went to shower immediately, wrapped a towel around my waist and went through my phone on my bed

Mbali: your moods are annoying so you know

Me: and you the cause off my moods

Mbali: you still mad over that candice shit

Me: yes I am mbali

Dorian: can we talk about what happened man

Me: ohk never take my shit ever again and make it yours  
there we done talking about what happened

Dorian: you acting like a bitch

Me: call it whatever you want to call it

\*\*\*\*\*74: hi its natasha

Me: hey hun , you got home safe

Natasha: yes daddy you

Me: yes baby

Themba: listen man im sorry about the misunderstanding

Me: its cool boy

Amahle: stop acting like a jealous bf

Me: what?

Amahle: stop giving a fuck on who I fuck, you might lose  
people you actually care about because off that

Me: I dont give a fuck on who you fucking

Amahle: good then stop acting like a bitch who they just took candy from in their mouth

Me: I was enjoying the silent game you know

Amahle...

Me: thank you

I got dressed and went downstairs . Masesi was setting the table for us

Me: you not joining us ma?

Masesi: no baby , I want to finish ironing

Kim: you work yourself hard

Masesi: I just like to keep busy

Me: by over working yourself

Masesi: the two of you just leave me alone

She left the lounge

Kim: natasha is beautiful

Me: tell me about it I mean shes....

Kim: hot

Me: \*laughing\* yeah, im going to bed nana you should do the same tomorrow is school

Kim: yeah I'll follow you

Me: wake me up tomorrow when you done with everything ohk

Kim: ohk night

Me: night

I went up to my bedroom and just zoned off. The next morning kim woke me up and I just took a quick shower and left, drove to her school dropped her off then went to that place for extra lessons I paid for everything signed everything that needed to be signed and left she was suppose to be starting with the lessons this coming Saturday

I went to the warehouse sorted out some stuff then went home slept yet again. Days passed non interesting happened it was just the usual me and work all the time. I hung out with the squad not as much anymore

INSERT #32

#AUGUST

it was my birthday month and my birthday was in a week 27/08 I was kind off excited

Deon: so what's up next week

Me: you will be around?

Deon: what you mean its your birthday of course I will be around

Me: oh ohk

Deon: whats up?

Me: who are you dating

His face just changed

Deon: what you mean dating

Me: you always not around, whenever I call you , you always tell me you busy which is why im shocked you will be around on my birthday

Deon: fine im seeing someone

Me: who?

Deon: it does not matter

I raised my eyebrow

Deon: mbali

Me: \*laughing\* no seriously who you dating

Deon....

I laughed out so loud

Me: \*laughing\* you fucking mbali

Deon: im not fucking her respect that I love her

Me: love her \*laughing\* what is this?

Deon: cut it out man

Me: why the fuck did you not tell me this

Deon: cause I was trying to avoid your reaction

Me: laughing fuck! You fucking mbali I cant believe this

Deon: \*laughing\* fuck you man

William: gentleman

Me: mr Williams himself

Williams: mr adams himself

Me: \* laughing\* lets talk

He sat down ,we ordered our lunch and talked about business then just had talks as guys after a while we went our separate ways

The next morning , went downstairs to eat my breakfast and just chilled at home. I called mbali

Mbali: bubu

Me: you such a bitch

Mbali: \*laughing\* what did you hear now?

Me: you sleeping with deon

Mbali....

Me: \*laughing\* its true

Mbali: oh please his hot

Me: why did you not tell me?

Mbali: cause I know how you are yazini just come pick me up

Me: aren't you at school?

Mbali: yeah but im Done

Me: ohk il be there

I hung up and just took my car keys and drove to her school Auckland park. She got in

Me: deons girl

Mbali: \* laughing\* this is why I did not tell you about me and him

Me: how long have you been together?

Mbali: months now, where you going?

Me: we going home

Mbali: no amahle

Me: what about her mbali

Mbali: \*she bit her lip\* we have to pick her up

Me: dorian will pick her up

Mbali no ,now lets go

I turned and headed to her school

Mbali: she is not dating deon

Me: she is, I found her at his apartment one time

Mbali: so you assumed they were dating?

Me: of course and club

Mbali: they not dating man bubu, she would have told me instead shes dating some guy lwandle

Me: she's dating?

Mbali: what did you expect? For her to wait till you decide you ready. You told her you will not date now you jealous she is dating make up your mind bubu man

Me: I dont care

Mbali: good then let her be happy and be happy too go back to doing you and that is fucking

Me: \* laughing\* I love you ne

Mbali: love you more bubu wami

She took out her phone and made a call

Mbali: we outside...you will see... she is coming

Me: ohk

Amahle appeared from the gate she looked breathtaking  
she was wearing torn jeans, pink top and adidas sneakers,  
she walked towards the car and I just looked the other  
way the door opened

Amahlw: hi

Mbali: hey you

I turned to face her

Me: hey smiling

Amahle: you good?

Me: yeah you

Amahle: yeah

Mbali: can we go now?

Me: yeah

Mbali: so what are we doing next week friday

Me: nothing I want to be alone

Mbali: fuck that shit and you know you lying

Me: \* laughing \* I want to piss myself

Amahle: whats happening friday?

Mbali: its the kings birthday of course

Amahle : its your birthday?

Me: yes

Amahle: ahhhhh thats nice you a virgo

Me: you believe in this star shit

Amahle: yeah you dont?

Me: I don't focus much on it won't say I dont believe

Mbali: you coming right?

Amahle: Iwandle is taking me out so I cant

Me: cool

Mbali: oh come on just bring Iwandle with

Amahle: thats fine with you

Me: yeah

Amahle: \*smiling\* oh il tell him

Me: but you better bring a gift

Amahle: laughing what kind of a gift

Me: anything you will think off something, that includes you

Mbali: you know I always get you something so what will change this year

Me: deon

Mbali: \* laughing\* fuck dre

Amahle: \* laughing\* he knows

Me: wait you telling me you all knew except me

Amahle: yeah

Me: fuck I dont believe this

Mbali: im sorry bubu

Me: mxm stick with your sorry

They both laughed

We grabbed lunch ,I dropped them off and went straight home took a long shower then bed

### INSERT #33

Woke up the next morning wore my uniform and headed out, arrived at work checked the roaster and went to my station. to my luck I was only working with the girls only thando and kgomotso

Me: hey girls

Them: hey andre

Me: does this mean im driving?

Thando: hell no , im driving you will be at the back with motso

Me: \*laughing\* no im the guy

Thando: I dont care

I was there for hours and hours we went that busy, they kept talking to me about their bfs and how they suspect they cheating on them and all that type of shit

Me: why dont you just leave?

Kgomotso: I cant dre I love him

Me: then deal with his cheating ass

Kgomotso: I dont want to share him

Me: kgomotso you suspect that his cheating you dont want to leave him and you don't want to accept that fact so...

Kgomotso: I just want him to stop

Me: \*laughing\* he wont sweedy

Thando: he might change if you talk to him

Me: \* laughing\* let me tell you something girls kgomotso you work and make your own cash, you support this broke ass nigga , you fuck, he lives at your place, you cook for him, you probably blow him you do all those things and he cheats on you which means he dont love you

Kgomotso: \* eyes wide open\* what?

Me: let me use myself as an example I love fucking girls and to show my appreciation I spoil them as no tomorrow nabo they not stupid they let me fuck but they know I

treat them good so wena they fuck you yet he dont even treat you good

Kgomotso: .....

Me: I know you don't want to hear this but its true , im a guy if he was really into you I swear baby he wouldn't fuck around he would appreciate every shit you do for him but now his just using you, like you his atm the nigga don't work but he always has cash. He doesn't take you out but you fuck him all the time get his ass out off your place and get you a nice guy you will see the difference

Thando: I dont usually agree with him but kgomotso his right . This guy is just using you

Me: thank you , now that we all agree can we go grab lunch

After I said that kgomotso began crying I just left them there and went to buy food came back and she was calm. We all ate around 8 I checked out and headed home. My food was on the oven , ate, went to bath and went to bed

The next morning ,the usual and headed to work I was on duty with the girls again, well kgomotso said she confronted the guy and chased him out well I just laughed about it, she was down the whole day but she would get

over.it and thank me later. 6 I knocked off, went home took a shower changed to jeans, white and gold tshirt, black jacket took my car keys and left

I arrived at some restaurants and natasha was there she looked beautiful, she was wearing a blue dress with white heels

Me: hey beautiful

Natasha: hey babe

We hugged , I pulled her chair for her she sat down

Me: when did you get here?

Natasha: 10/15 minutes ago

Me: sorry I was late traffic was unbearable

Natasha: its ohk

Me: you look beautiful and sexy

Natasha: \*smiling\* yes I got the reaction I was hoping for

Me: \* laughing\* ready to order?

Natasha: yes

We ordered our food and it came we dug in

Me: so work?

Her: its great I love what I do

Me: what do you do again?

Her: journalist

Me: you always in people's business

Her: I love drama , thats the best nicest way to put it

I just looked at her she was beautiful

Her: smiling what?

Me: so friday is my birthday and me and friends we going out for brunch then later on we hit the club

Her: are you asking me to be your date?

Me: yes mummy

Her I would love to daddy

Me: work?

Her: il have to ask favours from my colleagues

Me: thank you ohk

Natasha: anything for you daddy dre

Me: \* laughing \* where have you been all my life?

Natasha: tell me all about

We enjoyed each other company, we dined and wines around 9 we left.I dropped her off at home and we just sealed it with a kiss. Drove back home and just slept

cause I was exhausted. Saturday morning went out for a jog came back took a shower , later that day left went to pick up kim

Me: hey

She breathed out loudly

Me: \* laughing\* long day?

Kim: you have no idea,school is so Exhausting

Me: but you trying right?

Kim: you know I dont want to waste your money so yes

Me: good I have to pick up something from mbali ohk,  
before I drop you off

Kim: ohk its fine so

Me: so?

Kim: what you doing for your birthday?

Me: il be with mbali,themba, deon and other friends

Kim: oh

Me: what kim?

Kim: I thought we would be together

Me: kim

Kim: no its fine I should have expected it

Me: \* laughing\* you winning ohk

Kim: winning?

Me: yes trying to make me feel bad

Kim: no don't, its cool I will meet you inside

She opened the door and went inside mbali house. I opened my door and followed her

Kim: you really beautiful

Amahle: \*laughing\* thank you, you too

Me: hey amahle , excuse her

Amahle: \*laughing\* its fine

Kim: im kim by the way

Amahle: amahle

Me: mbali cousin and shes my sister

Amahle: really?

Kim: I know he looks nothing like him

Amahle: laughing, you too pretty I dont even see any resemblance

Me: fun is over, where is mbali?

Amahle: out with her man

Kim: mbali is dating

Me: \* laughing\* guess who

Kim: who???

Amahle: stop it you two

Kim: \* laughing\* just tell me, see im even laughing even before telling me

Me: Deon

Kim: \* laughing\* WHAT?? For real

Me: that was my reaction to

Kim: how, how can mbali date deon

Amahle: cause she loves him

Kim: I mean mbali has seen all the things deon does and to date him even after that , too brave

Me: you definitely my sister , we agree on this

Amahle: \* laughing\* mxm , do you want anything to drink?

Kim yes please

Me: where are mbali parents ?

Amahle: work

INSERT #34

Kim: so you studying to be a doctor?

Amahle: yes what do you want to study when you done?

I laughed kim looked at me

Kim: I dont know

Amahle: mara nana? How is that even possible

Kim: I just don't want to be disappointed I dont want to set my mind to something and then get disappointed like how many people do you know who wanted to be doctors and lawyers but are doing marketing

Amahle: you have a point but you have to dream sometimes , set goals

Kim.....

Amahle: like let me say you want to be lawyer right and you know it aint easy you need to reach a particular requirement right

Kim: yeah

Amahle: so if you dream and imagine you will want to live thst life right

Kim: yeah

Amahle: so if you dream and imagine you will want to live that life right

Kim: yeah

Amahle: then you will make sure you reach that target, so you will be able to do law and make your dreams reality

right now it's as if you not living for anything , or you just going to school for fun not to became what you dream off

Kim: ohk you have a point

Amahle: and let's say you dont pass your matric really well but you really want to do law, it does not mean its over you can upgrade your marks go up you do law ,no disappointments there

Kim: you just made me feel like shit

Me: kim

Kim: what?

Amahle: \* laughing\* im sorry but think about it

Kim: thank you

Amahle:: pleasure sweety

Me: ready to go

Kim: no

Me: \*laughing\* we got what we came here for

Amahle: can I go with you then, im really bored

Kim: yes! But where are we going

Me: thats what im asking myself

Amahle: lets go lunch ,my treat

Me: your treat

Amahle: yes

Kim: ohk lets go

We walked out, amahle locked up and we left. We went to spurs and ordered our food and just ate

Kim: so will you be there at dre party

Amahle: yes

Kim: oh ohk

She looked down

Me: kim will you like to go?

She lifted her head up

Kim: really?

Me: oh please you have been wishing for me to ask you that

Kim: maybe

Amahle: \* laughing\* you happy now

Kim: you have no idea, so do you have a bf

Me: kim really

Kim: what I want to know amahle

Amahle: its fine sweety and yes I do have a bf

Kim: you 2 would look good together

Me: no we would not

Kim: you such a hot head

Amahle: \* laughing\* I agree with you on that

Me: really guys stop

Them: \* laughing\* sorry

I just smiled

Amahle: do you have a bf

She looked at me

Amahle : don't worry about him , you talking to me

Kim: maybe

Me: maybe

Kim: \* laughing\* im talking to amahle , stay out off our business

Me: im going to the toilet behave you two

#AMAHLE

Me: now tell me do you?

Kim: yes, matt his great amahle

Me: hmmm look at you blushing

Kim: mxm now tell me about you

Me: what you want to know sweetie?

Kim: one why are you not dating my brother

Me: \*laughing\* I wanted to be his girl so bad but he said he was not ready for a relationship

Kim: he said that

Me: yeah but its cool I understood where he came from

Kim: you really nice

Me: thank you, you too we should hang out sometime

Kim: oh please lets do that

Me: are andre and dorian close?

Kim: yeah or at least I thought so

Me: what you mean?

Kim: they currently fighting over a girl

Me: a girl?

Kim: don't tell andre I told you this no actually never mind

Me: come on please tell me

Kim: he is in love with some girl I mean in love, dre does not do love but somehow he fell for this girl but now the girl hates him cause he hurt her and the other day when dre was fetching his stuff from dorian , he found the girl that he is in love with at doriants apartment and after that the has been tension ever since

Me: he is in love with this girl

Kim: I know you dont want to hear this especially since you like him but yeah but maybe thats the reason he said his not ready to be in a relationship because of this girl, I dont know the girl though but I could tell she meant something to him sorry you have to hear th....

Dre: the line at the guys toilet

Us....

Dre: what were you two talking about?

Us: nothing

Dre: you just spoke at the same time you look scared to see me whats up

Me: nothing just girl stuff

Dre: ohk

I just looked at him, I was with Iwandle but dre I mean He was dre. The tattoos that went up his arms and on his neck , his pink lips , his greenish eyes , his dimples

Kim: \* shouting\* AMAHLE!

I quickly turned to her

Me: hmmm

Kim: you listening?

Me: im sorry I was just thinking

Dre: about?

Me: just stuff

Dre: you sure you ohk

I nodded my head

Kim: I was saying dont ignore me friday

Me: I will never do that sweetie come on

Kim: ohk

Dre: called the waitress ,I paid and we left they dropped me off at home. Mbali mum was back so I just hung out with her

## INSERT #35

The next day was just at home pretty much the whole day. Monday to Thursday was just work, friday morning woke up to tons off messages , answered a few calls and too many people wanted to spend time with me but that day I had plans already. Went to take a shower , came back wrapped the towel around my waist sat on the edge off the bed and my phone immediately rang

Mbali: happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you\* singing\*

Me:\* laughing\* thank you bubu wami

Mbali: I love you ohk

Me: I love you too

I hung up

Well deon,kim, dorian and my grandparents and whole lot off people called. masesi made me the best breakfast and bought me a jacket which I was going to wear today

I went upstairs , styled my hair . Just wore blue ripped jeans, white short sleeved top,Nike cap and nike sneakers with my new black jacket. Took everything I would need to my car and left

Got to my grandparents house and they showered me with gifts including kim but she told me I would open it when I was with my friends, so I did not mind

Me: thank you ma

Grandma: pleasure baby, hold on

Me: what?

Kim: wait

She disappeared on the hallway, after a few minutes she came back and gave me the phone

Me: who is it?

Grandma: talk

Me: helo

Woman: hi baby

Me: mum????

Her: yes , they allowed me to call but I did not know your number happy birthday

Me: you remembered

Her: you my child, enjoy your day and I love you ohk

Me: \* smiling\* I love you too mum

I always had that anger towards my mum but after talking to amahle I just wanted her to be my mother once again

Kim and my grandmother just looked at each other and smiled. Kim wanted to talk to her i I gave her the phone and after a while me and kim left

Kim: im so excited

Me: its my birthday you kniw

Kim: I dont care I cant wait to see amahle

Me: \* laughing\* you like her ne

Kim: so much , if only you were dating her

Me: she's the girl I hurt

Kim: huh??

Me: you remember I told you I was in love with some girl that girl is amahle

She just looked away

Me: what?

She shook her head

Me: kim !

Kim: hmmmm

Me: what did you tell her?

Kim: nothing

Me: you sure?

Kim: yes duhh I didn't know the girl was amahle so why would I tell her anything

Me: good

We arrived at the restaurant. Took my phones and went inside everyone was the including Candice( she had asked me wed about the venue, she had her own car so she insisted on driving there)

Everyone ke loves attention they began singing and stuff , Natasha was wearing denim shorts , white top with a baggy shirt. Amahle was wearing white mini skirt, with a white top that showed off her breast , it was a see tru with high heeled shoes that went up her thighs she was sexy as fuck

Me: hey

Them: hey birthday boy

I hugged all off them

Amahle: happy birthday

Me: thank you

I slowly wrapped my arms around her tiny waist , she came closer , her perfume

Guy: thanks for inviting me

I backed away from amahle and turned to her side

Amahle: this is Iwandle my bf

Me: hey man its cool

I walked away and went to natasha

Me: you look beautiful as always

Natasha: you too daddy, happy birthday

Me: thank you baby

I kissed her

Deon: happy birthday man \*shouting\*

Me: \* laughing\* thank you boy

We all sat down,Natasha came to sit next to me, we ordered our food came and it was just chilled vibes, we were sitting on the balcony

Dorian: you better appreciate my gift man

Me: \*laughing\* it better not be cheap

Dorian: fuck you

Mbali: you never introduced us to her you know

Me: \*laughing\* you so forward guys this is natasha

Mbali: hi Natasha

Natasha: hi all off you

Mbali: so you studying or

Natasha: I work sweety

Mbali opened her eyes wide

She said it silently but I could see her lips move "sweety"

I just laughed

We ordered drinks and just had fun including kim amahle got up to take a call outside

Natasha: I have a gift for you?

Me: \*smiling\* what is it

Natasha: later

Me: you trying to make me get a hard on

Natasha: yes

Me: il be right back

I got up and went to the toilet ,then went out but I bumped into someone

Me : im sorry I did not see you

## INSERT #36

Me: laughing im sorry I honestly did not see you

Amahle: mxm

I helped her up , she dusted herself up even though she was not dirty we stood at the hallway leading to the toilets

Amahle: happy birthday again

Me : thank you

Amahle: I hope you like your gift

Me: what did you get me?

Amahle : \*smiling\* you will see

Me: you look beautiful

She turned around

Amahle: really ?

Me: \* laughing\* yeah

Some lady tried to pass and I just went closer to amahle , my hands on her waist, I could feel her breath on my chest

Amahle: \*breathing heavy\* dreeee

I slid my hand on her cheek and leaned in for a kiss

Amahle: dre don't

Me :why?

Amahle: you need to stop leading me on one minute you want me one minute you dont

Me: birthday kiss?

Amahle: no dre

I stepped back and leaned on the other side off the wall. I just looked at her

Amahle: let me go

Me: wait

Amahle what?

Me: you need to stop punishing me

Amahle: punishing you? Are you crazy

Me: yes you dont want to give me a break you were busy with dorian and now now \*stuttering\*

Amahle: now what?

Me look at you? You revealing your entire body whilst you knew you were going to see me , how the hell am I going to concentrate

Amahle:\* shouting\* what? You really craz.....

I pulled her in for a kiss and she didnt hesitate to kiss me back, she held my top on my waist in a fist pulling me closer to her, I deepened the kiss, moved my hands to her ass and picked her up

She broke the kiss

Amahle: people will pass here

Me: I don't care

Amahle: I do now put me down

I did as the queen requested

Me: why we doing this to each other

Amahle: you doing this to us , for all I know I wouldnt be here with Iwandle but we would be together

Me: I want to try it amahle, with you

Amahle: you want to try what ?

Me: me and you us to be together

Amahle: no dre its too late

She tried to walk away but I pulled her back again

Me: no its \*i paused\*

Some lady passed us

Me: no its not come on amahle you want to be with me as much as I want to be with you

amahle: why now? You only want me when you know you cant have me when im with another guy

Me: please

Amahle: no , you could say this today I break it off with my bf next think you off fucking another girl

I banged the wall

Me: \* shouting\* im fucken in love with you , do you get that I love you fuck man

She just looked at me and I just

left going back to the table everyone was laughing it was as if they did not me and amahle were gone

Me: what is everybody arguing about?

Natasha: \* laughing\* girls and boys

Amahle appeared and she looked weird

Deon: dre come on, girls lie more than boys right

Me: yes I have to agree

Natasha: no we don't come on

Mbali: lets start with you the number off lies you tell people

Me: what about you girls, you lie about everything you just dont lie like us and you think we the worst

Natasha: you lie about other girls

Kim: your feelings

Mbali: and how rich you are

Dorian: \* laughing\* I aint broke so im not going to lie and say im broke

Me: exactly

Themba: but you girls lie about expensive hair, how the fuck can hair cost 4thousand

Deon: no boy you going way far they just liars on their own make up, weave, fake nails all lies and they like to lie about their lifestyle

Themba: yezi yezi I only drink champagne yet they never got even tasted it

Natasha: \* laughing \*oh please thats nothing

I looked at amahle and she also looked at me. We refilled our glasses and dessert the time was past 7

Me: so ready to go

Dorian: nah will leave at 8

Me: ohk you not tired

Kim: \* laughing\* no

Me: \*laughing\* you like things ne

Kim: just like you

natasha: how long have you been together

Amahle: us?

Natasha: yes

Amahle: only a month now ne baby

Lwandle: yes

Natasha: so its still new thats nice

Mbali: yes no cheating and stuff

I moved my eyes to mbali and she looked at me

Dorian: but the first few months of a relationship are always the greatest

Me: not unless you dont love the guy or girl

Amahle: can you guys stop about my relationship

Mbali: sorry baby , we were just talking

Lwandle: come on I love it when the attention is on us

I just looked down

Dorian: Lets hit the club now

Me: good idea and transport

Mbali: can I go with you

Me: sure kim lets go

They got up took my things and headed to my car, everyone entered where they had to go and it was just me, mbali, kim, themba and jerome. We got to the club, I opened my door but mbali pulled me in

Me: what?

Mbali: will find you inside guys

Themba: ohk

Kim left with the guys

Mbali: what the fuck is wrong with you?

Me: what?

Mbali: you and amahle dre I saw you 2

Me....

Mbali: her bf was on the other room and there you were shoving your tongue down her throat

Me: what you want me to say?

Mbali: \*shouting\* what are your intentions ? Are you trying to ruin her relationship

Me: no come on mbali

Mbali :\*shouting\* then what the fuck you doing, amahle is not one off your hoes dre I want you to respect her and thats not what you doing

Me:\* shouting\* I love her ohk , im crazy about her

Mbali ....

Me: yes I do

Mbali: dont fuck with me dre, don't

Me: im not

Mbali: if you fuck up amahle relationship il fuck you up nxa

She opened the door and slammed it

I sat there for a couple off seconds and finally went out, I entered the club and went to join the others. Well we all had fun , drank all types off shit Natasha was enjoying herself so was I, kim was having fun but was watching her very closely. Well the dj sent a birthday shout out and it was fun I guess. I left everyone and went outside cause I needed air....

INSERT #37

I walked around the block

Girl : are you running away?

I turned and it was amahle

Me: hey beautiful

She walked towards me

Me: what you doing here?

Amahle: I wanted to check up on you

Me: come here

I wrapped my arms around her waist and we began walking, her hand around my waist

Me: im going to get into trouble

Amahle: with who? Iwandle is dead

Me :\*laughing\* so you come to me?

Amahle: you know I dont mean it that way

Me: ohk and I mean mbali she was pissed at me

Amahle: why?

Me: she saw us

Amahle: really? Why is she mad she has been pushing this mos

Me: I also dont know, why are you really here?

Amahle: I also dont know

Me: dont tell me that I told you I loved you and you had nothing to say and suddenly you leave your bf and come to me

Amahle: I had something to say but you didnt allow me to talk

Me: ohk talk amahle

Amahle: how will we even do it?

Me: you mean us?

Amahle: yes

Me: will find a way mami I really want this

amahle: you serious this time?

Me: yes but I need us to be together in this

Amahle: same here

She wrapped her arms around my neck

Me: your bf , mbali, the guys, Natasha?

Amahle: will deal with them dont worry I only have to deal with natasha right

Me....

Amahle: you told me you left helen and candice

Me : I I did

Amahle: great so just talk to natasha and il do the same with lwandle

Me: make sure you leave him mami

Amahle: yes

Me: \*laughing\* you my girl now

Amahle: \* laughing\* not yet

Me: Ohk but I am allowed to do this

I leaned in for a kiss and kissed her, she kissed me back, her lips were so soft and there was a taste off alcohol and fruit I dont know whether it was the drink she was drinking or what, the way her lips moved to mine it was like a porn scene , I pulled back cause she was weakening some parts off me. We went back inside and stayed for another hour and finally left for home. The gift Natasha had for me was priceless but I did not allow myself to sleep with her

Next morning walked downstairs and kim was outside

Me: morning

Kim: morning

Me: you ohk?

Kim: yes im still tired though where is natasha?

Me: still sleeping

Kim: ohk

Me: can I ask you something?

Kim: sure

Me: how would you feel about me dating amahle?

She splashed me with water

Me: kim!!

Kim: what dumb question is that you know how I would feel

Me: no its a question

Kim: that you already know the answer to

Me: \* laughing \* Ohk kim let me go check up on natasha

Walked upstairs and she was busy on her phone

Me : morning

Natasha: hi

Me: whats wrong

Natasha: nothing

Me: I can see something is wrong

Natasha: I just feel embarrassed last night or this morning  
I was throwing myself to you but you just blew me off do

you have any idea how humiliating that was, you were the one who was suppose to be trying to score not me

I kneeled in front of her

Me: baby listen last night or this morning I was drunk and I mean drunk and sleeping with you in that state was just not fair to you , im sorry if you felt that way I just want to make it special ohk

She nodded her head

Me: you forgive me?

Natasha: maybe

Me : maybe this will change your mind

I kissed her and she laid on her back, I stood up and got on top off her never breaking the kiss,I lifted the top she was wearing and moved my hand to her thigh, I moved my kisses to her neck she held me tight and let out a slight moan I licked and sucked on her neck and her breathing got heavier. I moved my hand to her center and she opened for me, I rubbed her clit with her underwear and my moves got faster and the louder her moans got and her breathing pace changed. I kissed her not stopping what I was doing

I finally removed the underwear and entered one finger just to tease her and followed with 2 , she got a tight grip

on my back and moaned on my ear I went faster with my fingers inside off her, she opened wider for me, her juices on my fingers, sounds from her inside getting louder, her getting louder , she removed her body from the sheets but I pushed it back and went fast tapping her g spot . Her body, Suddenly shakes uncontrollably , she joined her knees together while realising her loudest moan, she slowly opened her eyes, I removed my fingers and she didn't hesitate licking them. Kissed her forehead and helped her up...

## INSERT #39

Few days passed it was just the usual, work, greatest weekends ever and the squad I was still trying to break things off with candice and helen but it was not that easy especially because I have been with them for a while now but amahle did not know anything about that and I hoped it remained that way till everything was sorted

Woke up Saturday morning and just headed to work, checked in and I was with my guy khaya  
Me: man where the hell have you been?

Khaya:I should be asking you that,nowadays we never on duty together

Me: tell me about it

Khaya: you been good?

Me: yeah man im trying you

Khaya: same here listen up I wanted to talk to you

Me: ohk about?

Khaya: theres some training that will take place in bloemfontein for er 24

Me: thats fucken big

Khaya: I know man and you know what that means

Me \*laughing\* money

Khaya: exactly lets go

Me: eish boy bloem

Khaya: come on man, it does not get bigger than this and will be together the entire time

Me ahhh man I will have to pass ey

Khaya: andre come on

Me: how about if I change my mind I call you

Khaya: thats good with me just don't say no right now

Me: ohk il think about it but im seriously not thinking about it

Khaya: whatever , is money coming in other besigheid

Me: \* laughing\* yeah you?

Khaya: hell yeah man

Me: hows your kid?

Khaya: yho boy my boy is growing up but that bitch man that bitch

Me: \*laughing\* what about her?

Khaya: she is constantly calling me for unnecessary shit, \*imitating her\* khaya the baby wants yoghurt, khaya nappies, khaya nye nye nye

Me: \*laughing\* baby mama drama dog

Khaya: dog that shit is real I never believed people when they talked about that shit but now yhoooio and now ne dog when I bring a girl home, or when I find myself fitness this bitch will just show up unannounced

Me:.ahhhhhh

Khaya: im telling you, she will phone none stop and you know girls who dont have a kids they get irritated fast by the shit this bitch does

Me: you screwed up by getting this girl pregnant

Khaya: I just thought I would marry this girl

Me:\* laughing\* ay voetsek wena( ay piss off)

Sphe opened the door

Sphe: lets go we have a call at ormonde

Khaya started the car And we drove to ormonde it was a house call got to our patient and stabilised them until we arrived at the hospital then we just got busy our last call was off a pregnant woman

Woman :\*screaming\* GET THIS THING OUT OFF ME

me : mummy listen I need you to relax and calm down  
ohk

She breathed in and out slowly

Me:\*smiling\* yes exactly that, ohk just lay down

She smiled back and did what I told her to do, sphe helped out. We went through the whole process and she gave birth to a baby girl, we kept her warm and headed to the hospital, the mother was taken care off , we left around 7 I was tired as hell, drove back home and just went to bed

The next morning was work again and my guy was in again

Sphe: guys

Us:hmmm

Sphe: I need your advice

Me: whats up?

Sphe: so theres this girl right

Khaya: konje you into girls

Sphe: mxm eish so I have a huge crush on her ne but she has a gf

Khaya:number one we guys , how we suppose to help you with guys

Sphe: but she is a butch

Us:\*shouting\* butch???

sphe: yes she is not feminine she is more off a guy

Me:\*laughing\* fuck theres a difference kanti I just thought its girls fucking

Sphe: no now please help me out

Me: laLa I seriously dont even know where to start like shes a girl whether she is a butch she thinks like a girl

Khaya: exactly

Sphe: its funny how you always want my help when it comes to your girls but can't do the same

She opened the door

Me: lala wait il try to help you out ke no will try

Khaya: does that include me?

Me: yes

Khaya: anyway does this girl also like you

Sphe: yes I mean we constantly talking on whatsapp, she calls me sometimes I visit her at her place

Me: so what does she say with her gf

Sphe: nothing they like the perfect couple on Facebook always writing about each other, posting pictures off each other

Khaya: have you fucked this girl

Sphe:...

Us: SPHE!

Sphe : what come on I was tempted we were in that moment

Khaya: she is playing you

Me : yep

Khaya: geez this girl is really a guy

Me: \*laughing\* yhoo dog sphe baby this girl wont break up with her gf their this perfect couple in front off the world so why would she leave that and be with you

Sphe: cause she loves me

Khaya: yho you blind you know that if she loved you, you would be with her and be with you and guess what you still single and this girl is probably with her girl

Me: yes baby unless ke you just want to fuck around

Khaya: yeah and have fun

Sphe: it can be fun at first but I can't do that im old now

Khaya:, then end it

Sphe: ohk I will ke , and you guys what's up

Khaya: its just me ey no girl

Sphe: your baby mama

Khaya: voetsek

Sphe: and you andre

Me: im not sure yet

Khaya: usho kanjani manje dog ( what you mean)

Me: lokho (that)

Khaya: so wena unomuntu ( so you seeing someone)

Me: angazi man ntwana ( I dont know boy) its complicated

Sphe: tell us will be together the whole day

I told them everything, amahle, her bf, Natasha, the girls and us

Khaya: \*laughing\* mara wena ntwana , ay uyilegend ( but then boy you a legend)

Sphe: so do these girls know you fucking all off them

Me: I think so except for Natasha and remember amahle is not with me so I dont fuck her

Khaya: mara wena uzishaye ngo amahle ( but you like amahle)

Me: yeah

Khaya: yin lo girl ufana ne gama lakhe ( does this girl share the same meaning as her name)

Me: \*laughing\* ntwana yhoooooo lo girl ngathi umpopi man ( boy this girl is like a barbie doll ) shes beautiful

Sphe: so you have varsity students and one girl who has her own car and apartment and you want to go for the kids really

Khaya: she has a point boy you know these kids they will be asking you for money for airtime and other shit and dump you for the next guy while this one that works she wants something stable

Me: I get you 2 ne but like I know what I want mina

Sphe: ay ohk we cant disagree with you on that so do what will make you happy

Me: sure

Later that day knocked off and went straight home took a long shower and then went to bed

## INSERT #40

Woke up the next morning I was not working so I was relaxed but I had plans for this days that no one knew about ,ate my breakfast and left I got to the hospital my mum was at and walked in. I signed the register and went to sit on the visiting room I was so scared that was just fiddling with my shirt , my fingers I could not sit still

Woman: andre

I lifted my head up and she could not look more beautiful than this

Me: mum

I got up and hugged her

Mum: im surprised to see you

Me:me too but I miss you

Mum: \*smiling\* I miss you too,how are you

Me: im good

She looked really good, her black hair long as ever, greenish eyes popping out, pink lips she did not look anything like the woman that gave up on life a few years back she looked fine, stable I asked myself why was she still here she looked nothing like the people that were there if it was not for the uniform people would easily mistake her for the doctor

Me: when are you leaving this place

Mum: I should have left a long time go but I insisted I stay so I would make sure I was ok and I did not know where I would go

Me: what? grandma, pa, dorian even me

Mum: I know but I was still trying to figure out everything on my own

Me: you need to leave this place

Mum....

Me: mum

Mum: I want to I miss the freedom , my kids and my family

Me: and we all here I want to make things right ma

Mum....

Me: I know I have not been the best, I disappointed you, turned my back on you when you needed me the most

and I treated you as if you were nothing but now I see things differently , I want to change all off that

She began crying and stood up from the chair. I just walked up to her and hugged her, she returned the hug tighter than me

Mum: im so sorry for the pain iv caused you and I love you baby , I love you so much

Me: I love you too

We talked some more and then I went to talk to the doctors that were treating her. They said she had fully recovered and dont mind if she goes home but if she relapses she should come back immediately and she would be realised friday since they need to sort out her documents and I did not mind to come back on friday to pick her up

Tuesday was just a normal day around 1 went to kim school to pick her up, I waited for her at their gate and I saw her I got out off the car so she will see but but she didn't, she walked to her transport and I followed her

Me: ye

Tickling her

She literally jumped and screamed from the seat

Me: \*laughing\* why you scared

Kim: \*shouting\* andre, you came to pick me up \*with excitement\*

Me: no I have a gf at your school

Kim: what???

Me: yes and im looking at her now lets go

Kim: \*smiling\* mxm bye guys will see you Tomorrow don't miss me too much

Her driver: kusazo thula emotweni injengoba uhamba ( at least it will be quiet since you going)

Kim: wena jeff don't start with me

I left her cause she couldn't stop talking got in my car and she came in

Kim: what do I owe this pleasure

Me: I just missed you

Kim: you missing me thats not possible

Me: \*laughing\* well now you know

Kim: you know you would swear I only have one brother , dorian would never think off picking me up or letting me sleepover

Me: cause he has a life

She punched me

Me: \*laughing\* what you want to eat

Kim: mc`d

Me: ohk

I drove to the nearest mcd we got in and ordered then sat in

Me: so?

Kim: so what?

Me: I have good news for you and everyone else

Kim: which good news , you getting married

Me: like really Kimberley

Kim: \*laughing\* im just joking

Me: mum is getting out

She just froze and looked at me

Me did you hear m....

Before I could finish my sentence she just broke down and I just smiled

Me: baby man

She couldn't even speak and I just let her be while she calmed down

Kim: really andre?

Me: yes im picking her up friday

She just hugged me

Kim: thank you so so much dre I will do whatever you want me to do

Me: really?

She nodded her head

Me: well I think she deserves a welcome home party

Kim: im right on top off it

Me: good now lets go tomorrow im going to Work

Kim: \*smiling\* ohk

She wrapped her arm around my waist and we walked ouy

I dropped her off and told my grandparents they could not be more happy about that and then went home I called amahle

Amahle: papi

Me: mami

Amahle: you good?

Me: im good but I miss you

Amahle: so what you going to do about that

Me: im going to come to your place at 8 and I expect you to come out

Amahle: \*laughing\* ohk il be waiting at 8

Me: and bring me a plate

Amahle: ay andre a plate of what

Me: food I know you eat at 8 so bring me one

Amahle but papi you impossible you know that

Me: just bring it

Amahle: what must I say when they ask me about it

Me: think off something

Amahle: I hate you for this

Me: I know you mean the complete opposite

Amahle: \*laughing \* whatever

I hung up and went to the warehouse

Themba: eh dog ubano lo? ( boy who is this)

I looked around

Shane: ay ntwana angimaxi mina( nahh boy I dont know him )

Me: \*laughing\* are you talking to me?

Deon: uspana la? ( you work here)

Me: piss off you guys

Themba: \*laughing\* we dont know you anymore , we thought maybe you quit

Me: and leave you niggas with my empire I dont think so

Dorian: does that include me

Me: especially you

Dorian: \*laughing\* fuck you man, where have you been?

We hugged

Me: we need to talk

Dorian: am I in trouble

Me: no man lets talk

We walked to where I worked at

Dorian: whats up

Me: mum is coming out Friday

Dorian: what?

Me: yes and we throwing her a welcome home party

Dorian: they called you?

Me: no I went to see her

Dorian: no wait you went to see mum

Me: yes

Dorian: I hope you did not say some fucked up shit to her man

Me: no geez like I said I sorted my shit out and we good and now she's coming out this friday

Dorian: \*smiling\* thats fantastic where will the party be

Me: home

Dorian: definitely

Me: so I dont know what is needed so talk to kim if you want to buy anything

Dorian: ohk, you did a good thing man

Me;I know

## INSERT #41

I called amahle

Me:im on the second street,bring my plate amahle

Amahle: voetsek (piss off)

She hung up I just laughed,I waited for her and she appeared from the corner carrying a plate I just laughed she got in

Me: then the queen listens to her king

Amahle: \*laughing\* idla kune korobela ( eat theres a love potion)

Me: as long as I will look at you I dont care

She laughed , I took my plate and put it on my legs and ate

Amahle: where have you been?

Me: me?

Amahle: yes you

Me: I was at home

Amahle: and you don't call

Me: why must I always call

Amahle: stop lying dre I also call you

I raised my eyebrow

Amahle: \*laughing\* I called you, I called you.....

Me: you., you called me when

Amahle: ohk fine maybe I don't usually call cause you spoiled me

Me: exactly and this was the last time

Amahle: ohk its fine but I will call you

Me: lets see baby, so be my date friday

Amahle: for?

Me: mum is coming back and we throwing her a party

Amahle: ahhhh andre that is amazing thats so great how is kim ?she must be so happy

Me: you have no idea

Amahle: but how are you?

Me: im happy nana im really happy

Amahle: you will make time for her

Me: all the time in the world

Amahle: good

I wiped my hands

Me: thank \*licking mouth\* you

Amahle: you nasty

Me: \*laughing\* who cooked?

Amahle: me

Me: who cooked amahle?

Amahle: \*laughing\* im so offended you know and its me

Me: ay mami let me go

Amahle: ohk il see you Friday

Me: yeah should I pick you up

Amahle: mbali will come so I will come with her

Me: eish I need to tell her

Amahle: ohk

Me: bye amahle

She looked at me and did not move. I leaned to her and opened f the door for her and she still didn't move

Me: il see you friday

Amahle: ah ah ohk

She slowly got out off the car and I just laughed , I got out and stood outside my door

Me: \*Shouting\* amahle

She turned

Me: \*laughing\* come see this

She walked to me and immediately pulled her to me

Amahle: see what?

Me: this

I squeezed her butt , pulled her closer to me and kissed her, she wrapped her arms around my neck and deepened the kiss. I was getting a hard on so I just pulled back

Me: \*laughing\* you need to go

Amahle: \*smiling\* bye dre

Me: bye amahle

I watched her walk in the yard and drove home

Wednesday and Thursday none much happened was just busy at work, friday morning went to the hospital signed

her release forms and took everything she would need, like certain pills if she ever felt depressed or could not sleep. I helped her with her bags and she walked so slow but I just let her enjoy that moment we got inside my car

Me: you ohk?

She nodded her head

Me : mum you do know your house and all off your things are still available and where you left them

She looked at me

Mum: you didn't sell them?

Me: no well we couldn't leave kim alone at the house so she moved in with ma and pa but the house is where you left it , dads cars and yours

Mum: do you think I will be able to live there?

Me: thats your choice to make,ma you need to relax you are fine and you won't relapse you over it Ohk

Mum: yes but I don't want to live alone

Me: well you cant live with me unless you want to see different girls that are naked walking up and down

Mum:\*laughing \*no

Me: so you will have to ask kim which im sure she will say yes

Mum: ohk just girls

Me: \*laughing\* cause me and dorian are pretty much the same and masesi can help you around the house

Mum: \*smiling\* she is coming with me no doubt

Me: \*laughing\* and we both kniw she wont say no

Mum: I would appreciate that

We arrived at the gate, it opened, parked at the driveway and we walked inside. When she opened the door

It was all set, it was beautiful, or entire family was there she was so happy that she cried, everyone ran to her and hugged her, kim and her could not stop crying it was the best view until I saw what soon would be mine I just couldnt remove the smile on my face

Me: hey ladies

Mbali: hey see you lster

She rushed to mymun

Me; you look beautiful

Amahle: thank you \*smiling\* may I just say I thought you were hot but after seeing Your mum you are nothing

I held my chest

Me: that hurts

Amahle: sorry but it is the honest truth

Me: thank you, you should introduce yourself

Amahle: and say what

Me: whatever that will come out off your mouth

Amahle: hi mam im your sons future wife andre to be exact

I screamed

Me: the sound off that woooo

Amahle: \*laughing\* just leave me alone

She pushed me away and walked to mbali

Guy: Turner

I turned annoyed as fuck and it was Jack

Me: what the fuck is wrong with with you?

Jack: what?

Me: nyener nyener, im around my family and you going to call me turner are you crazy

Jack: sorry man I wanted to talk to you

Me: about what?

Jack: remember last year Christmas ,we talked about you helping me out

Me: and after a year you come now?

Jack: I was busy with something

Me: ohk what up man?

Jack: I want to work with you

Me: im going to tell you exactly what I told you last year,  
come see me during the week come monday or tomorrow

Jack: ohk please man

Me: sure man

Mum: andre

Me: hmmmm

Mum: thank you

I hugged her

Me: did you see mbali?

Mum: \* laughing\* she is such a lady

Me: I want you to meet someone

Mum: ohk

I held her hand and we walked to the bedroom I texted  
amahle to meet me there. The door opened

Amahle: this hou.....

She paused and I just laughed

Me: mum this is amahle

Mum: mbali cousin right

Amahle: yes mam

Mum: you dont have to be so formal

Me: mum amahle is my \*I paused\*

She looked at me

Mum: your what?

## INSERT #42

Amahle: his friend

I opened my eyes wide. She looked at us both

Mum: you sure its just friend?

Amahle: yes

Me: \*laughing \* she answered

Mum: nice meeting you amahle again as andre friend

Amahle: \* smiling\* im glad to meet you ma

Mum: let me leave you two

She hugged amahle then left

Me: friend wow

Amahle: what?

Me: nothing

Amahle: you also did not know what to say

Me: I did but you did not want me to say it

Amahle: well it happened and its all in the past

Me: yes

I got up and tried to walk out but she held my wrist I turned to face her

Amahle: you mad?

Me: why would I be mad?

Amahle: I dont know

Me: exactly lets go

We walked out and we all had a good time I did not drink that day had to be sober after a long day mum slept over there and I drove back to my place with everyone else, everyone crashed at my place

The next morning woke up on the sofa I looked up at the kitchen and amahle was wearing my nike top it was long but revealed a lot too, jack was talking to her and it seemed like he was flirting but amahle was not focusing on that. I left them there and went up opened my door and deon was ontop off mbali in my bedroom

Me: \*shouting\* FUCK YOU 2 THIS IS MY BED, WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU

deon: \*laughing\* we not doing anything man relax

He stood up

Me: fuck you are so disgusting

Mbali: why dont you knock

Me: this is my bedroom mine

Amahle: whats going on

I turned and this girl man she was playing with my mind, I saw her downstairs but she looked different now

Amahle: sorry I had to borrow your top

Me: its fine \*smiling\*

Mbali: yeay wena go do whatever you wanted to do

Me: get the fuck out off my business wena

I went to my bedroom and washed up then went downstairs everyone was up

Me: whats for breakfast

Amahle: did you make something

Me: \*laughing\* ohhhh so you going to be like that

Amahle: \*smiling\* maybe

Mbali: I dont like this

We turned and she was sitting on the couch pointing at us

Me: what dont you like?

Mbali: this \* pointing me and amahle\*

Amahle: why do you care,you dont see us complaining about you and deon

Mbali :hehhhh number one deon is my bf, Deon will not fuck different girls every weekend

Deon: babe but they do look good together

Mbali:mmmm

We just laughed and ignored her

We all went outside and ate our breakfast amahle phone rang

Amahle: hey you, im with him, hold on, here

Me: who is it

Amahle: kim

Was kind of surprised

Me: hey

Kim: hey iv been trying to call you and dorian

Me: I dont even know where my phone is

Kim: OHK well me and mum are moving and she asked me to tell you that please all off you come and help us out with everything

Me: hold on... who is rushing home?

They all kept quiet

Me: we need to help kim and my mum move you game?

Mbali: hell yes

Me: ohk tell mum we coming

Kim: ohk bye

I hung up and gave amahle her phone back. After our breakfast we went back to my grandparents house and packed and went to my parents house

Kim: I have not been here for years

My mum opened the door and we went in,everything was still the same

Mum: I never thought I would be back here again

Amahle: this place is beautiful

Mbali: lets go and check out the rest off it

They left and came back soon after that. We got busy and my mum asked for certain things to be thrown away, my dads clothes were still there and his cars , it kind off took me back. After hours of being there I had to throw away some things

Amahle:can I go with you?

Me: lets go

We got inside my car and left

Amahle: why did you lie to me

Me: lie to you??

Amahle: yes

Me: what you on about?

She was sooo calm

Amahle: you said when your father died, they sold his things and thats how you were able to buy your cars and apartment but they all still there including your mums

Me:.....

Amahle: \*shouting\* andre!

Me: fine I lied

Amahle: why

Me: actually I did not lie I said it was a will not my fathers belonging

Amahle: so why did you say you lied

Me: cause you confused me

Amahle: you lying andre

Me: like really we fighting over this why does it matter where I got the money from , I got the cars and place why does it matter where it came from

Amahle:.....

Me: you won't talk now

Amahle: I have nothing to say to you

Me: fine if you want to be like that

I threw everything away and went back , masesi was happy to be back with my mother, we ordered food they delivered it. we all ate as a group and amahle kept her eyes away from me

Mum: thank you all so much

Deon: our pleasure mummy, anything you need just call us

Mum:\*laughing\* ohk deondre

Mbali: so mummy the cars?

Mum: I dont know baby

Dorian: can I have the Beemer

Mum: no

Dorian: come on mum

Mum : you guys have your own cars , think about kim

Kim: will I get one for my birthday

Me: seems that way

Deon: and work?

Mum: I still have a lot to think about to be honest

Me: Michelle was given proxy off everything , she kept everything on the ground but you can get back anytime  
( my father and mother had their own company that dealt with trading exports and imports so when mummy went away daddy most trusted and loyal worker Michelle took control)

Mum: what did you guys sell

Dorian: nothing and we needed your signature to sell certain things another reason we chose not too

Me: your life will be the way it was trust us

Mum: ohk I love all off you

Us: we love you too \*screaming\*

## INSERT #43

I arrived at mbali crib

Mbali: thank you for dropping us off

Me: sure

Amahle opened the door

Me: amahle

she stopped

Me: can we talk?

Mbali: hehhh

Mbali got out and walked in

Me: im sorry ohk

Amahle:...

Me: baby

Amahle: what andre

Me: I said im sorry what you want me to do now

Amahle: I want you to be honest with me

Me: from now on I will never lie to you again

Amahle you promise

Me: yes

Amahle: ohk

Me: you ohk now

She nodded her head

Me: will talk ohk

Amahle: ohk

I drove back home and just went to bed. Sunday morning I woke up in a quiet place no masesi yooooo this was going to be hell trust me ,I made myself breakfast and my phone rang

Me: helly baby

Helen: babe

Me: you ohk

Helen: not good I miss you

Me: really

Helen: yes when will I see you

Me: I dont know cause tomorrow I know you not available

Helen: yes but Saturday

Me: ohk Saturday

Helen: what you doing

Me: mAking breakfast

Helen: where is masesi?

Me: my mum is back and well she moved back with her

Helen: and you did not think to tell me

Me: it slipped my mind,will talk later ohk

Helen : ohk

I ate my breakfast in peace and just went for a swim . It was just a lazy sunday for me

Monday was at the warehouse the whole day, Tuesday went to pick up amahle from school, we went to a park

and chilled there. I laid my head on her legs and we just relaxed

Me: so theres this training that's happening in bloemfontein

Amahle: for?

Me: medics more like studying again actually for better qualifications

Amahle; that's amazing

Me: yeah but its too far

Amahle: will you do it?

Me: well the money will be good, stand a chance off working for er 24 but leaving is another story

Amahle: \*laughing\* you thinking about me

Me: I dont want you to lose focus at school because you can't stop thinking about me

She laughed

Amahle: yeah ne maybe you right I would not be able to focus

Me: nana

Amahle: hmmm

Me: im excited about this

Amahle: you mean us?

Me: yeah

Amahle: not more than me

I sat up straight , sat on off her and kissed her

Amahle: is this allowed

Me: I dont know lets test if its allowed

She just kissed me and kissed her back deepening the kiss. She broke the kiss and laughed

Amahle: geez he cant behave all the time

Me: \*laughing\* lets get you home this is wrong

She laughed so loud

Amahle: sorry bunny

Me: \*laughing\* im dropping you off now, lets go

We packed our things and left dropped her off and went to the warehouse to do a few things then went back home

## INSERT #44

Wednesday headed to work and these days I was lucky I was see always with my boy, we signed the register headed to our baby(ambulance) we would be using

Us: you early?

Sphe: the was no traffic

Me: ohk you good?

Sphe: yes you guys?

Khaya: good manje boy? (So boy?)

Me: ini ( what?)

Khaya: bloem we suppose to be leaving monday

Me: ay boy I cant go

Khaya: you sure?

Me: yeah plus I dont need anymore money

Khaya: eish cool but you know these girls for er

Me: \*laughing \* go boy im ohk

Khaya: Ohk and you?

Sphe: mina ini ( what about me)

Khaya; the girl what happened

Sphe: nowhere

Me: what you mean?

Sphe: I cant leave her ohk we still together

Me: yho ohk

Khaya: you an idiot wena

Sphe: no im not

Khaya: it seems that way mama

Sphe: just leave me alone

Me: ohk

Our day began and it was busy as always after work  
headed to mums place , masesi opened for me

Me: hi ma

Masesi: helo baby

Me: I miss you

Masesi: I knew you would miss me

Me: you have no idea , the girls?

Masesi: your mother's bedroom

Before I could get far ma held my hand

Me: ma

Masesi: thank you baby

Me: for?

Masesi: getting rid off this anger you had in you

Me: \* smiling\* and thank you for everything ma

She smiled and I walked upstairs I slowly opened the door

Kim: yes but his cute

She was sitting in between my mums legs ,while my mum was doing her hair

Mum: the loud ones don't turn out good after school

Kim: the g...

Me: heyyyyy

They turned to the door

Mum: helo baby

Kim: hey

Me: I came to check up on you 2

Kim: and dorian just left like 5/10 minutes ago

Me: we don't trust the 2 of you

Mum: or you just miss us too much

Me: a lil off that

Mum :\*smiling\* you look \*she paused\*

Kim: funny ne

Mum: no he looks good , this uniform suits you well

Me: \*laughing\* thank you mum

Kim: look at the shoes he wears,they so big

Me: im going to kick you with these you idiot, they are a must

My mum just laughed

Mum: well you better eat cause you know there is no food waiting for at home

Me: another reason why I came here

Kim: shame poor soul

Me: mxm

I walked downstairs ,the table was all set, the girls came downstairs and we all ate together around 9 I drove back home. Next morning went to the warehouse

Shane: boza yami

Me: sure boy

Jerome: siya spana today ( we working today)

Me: yebo ( yes)

We all sat around

Me: the batch

Dorian: tomorrow midnight it arrives

Me: the orders

Deon: sold

Me: Stephen?

Dorian: yeah all off them , as for the plant we might need a stand by since its sold out

Me: ohk lets see how many people will want it , I dont want extra stuff

Shane: yebo

Me: ntwana kari ( boy car?)

Themba: \*rubbing his hands\* you know that department I never disappoint

Me: \*laughing\* I know you boy talk to me

Themba: I have 3 gtis 2 black and 1 white, 2 polo vivos silver grey a, 1 velocity and the main course Beemer latest last year model blue

Me: \*laughing\* you not playing with me right

Themba : you know boy I never play this is my speciality

Me: \*pointing at themba\* you make me happy

Themba: \*IAughing\* I make myself happy

Me: shane

Shane: now we talking big money

Us: yhoooooo

Me: just talk

Shane: got ahold off 4 credit cards 1 was 20 stina (thousand), the other 2 it was 40/40 the last one 55

Jerome: cheques scored about 350 all off them

Simphiwe: via tradings well you should know I sent you everything

Me: yeah I got it. Well thats not bad

Dorian: yeah its big man

( themba knew everything about a car so he dealt with car jacking, shane computer genius dealt with making quick transfers from any cards especially credit cards, jerome dealt with anything that needed signatures he had the right tools, deon haha dealt with drugs with the help off dorian, simphiwe tradings anything that needed to be out off the country or I needed out off the country he dealt with that as for me I deal with everything I know every shit and made all of this possible with connections I had )

Deon: the cape

Me: yes the cape?

Dorian: good MAN \*showing both his thumbs\*

I stretched my hands with a big smile on my face

Me: im Happy man you w....

I got cut off

Guy: I know him get the fuck out off my way

Nhlanhla: who the fuck are you vetis

Guy: get me andre

Nhlanhla: get the fuck out off here  
We all got up and went to see who nhlanhla was talking to. When I opened the door I just covered my face.....

## INSERT #45

Me : what are you doing here  
Jack: get the fuck out off my way  
Nhlanhla moved aside  
Jack: I came to talk to you  
Me: we still on about this  
Jack: yes come on  
Dorian: what does jack want?  
Me: he wants to work with us  
Themba: no you cant be thinking off allowing this right  
Me.....  
Dorian: come on andre  
Me: man his got a criminal record, his a drug addict no recovering  
Dorian : you have a criminal record you work  
Me: and I did not get that job alone

Themba: turner you just said recovering , we deal with drugs , he will end up smoking the shit no!

Jack: no I wont

Dorian: shut up \*pointing at him\*

Me: he needs to keep himself busy

Deon: not here

Dorian: man this is not a family business and he will think his special cause his family

I looked at jack

Jack: please man

Themba: fuck no, he doesn't even know shit will get caught cause off him im not willing to go 25 years cause off him hell no

Me: if I give you this job and you screw it up I will kill you man, rather my aunt hates me but I will kill you

Jack: that's all I want a chance

Dorian: when he starts giving you problems dont even complain to us

Me: you better prove them all wrong

Jack: I will I promise you

Nhlanhla: just look at him, people will undermine us when they see us with him

I looked at jack

Me: boy lose all off this tomorrow dress smart man and dont wear a hat rather a cap, cut your hair I dont want you looking like this

He nodded his head

Me: and you will be not be around drugs you get me

Jack: yes

Me: boy teach him everything he needs to know about a car and I mean everything by next month he must know how to steal a car on his own

Dorian: are you fucking kidding me this is your aunts child

Themba: \*laughing\* he is trying to get jack arrested that's it

Me: no im trying to get him smart, will you be able to do it

Jack: if I know the right things yes

themba: theres no way in hell im teaching him anything

Deon: \*imitating him\* if I know the right things

Shane: you can get busted even if you know the right things

Me: dont do this to me

Themba: you owe me big time

Me: il make it worth your time

Dorian: I still think this is crazy

Me: fuck man Jack will be working with us from now on

Deon: ay ke welcome Jack

Nhlanhla: even the name is awful let's stick to J

Me yes j not jack

Jack: j I love it

They all just looked at him and laughed. I left them there

Themba: eh manje zikhaphani ( so whats up?)

Me: ngani ( with?)

Themba: amahle

Me: \*laughing\* ay phuma daar ( forget about that)

Themba: I can see the two of you seems like something is going on

Me: well something is happening but im not sure what it is as yet

Themba: you like her dont you

Me: let me leave you cause you won't stop talking

I walked away and continued with business later that day the guys went to buy food they came back

Shane: ehhhh boy

Me: what?

Shane: you wont believe who we saw

Me: who?

Shane: helen

Me: with who?

Them:

Me: with who?

Nhlanhla: nenyi ibhari yama gold babambene cabanga (some idiot with golds, holding each other just imagine)

Me: yho this girl is trying to fuck with me

Shane: she literally shaked when she saw us

I looked for my phone realised I didn't bring it with me so I continued with the guys work, talk, have a lil laugh and go back to work again

Around 7 I drove to Helen place and me stopping the car ,the tires just screetched. I opened the gate and she came my way

Helen: I know the.....

Before she could say something else I hit her

Me: you trying to test me ne dont fuck with me helen

She held her cheek

Me: sowukhona ukfeba wena , uhlanyiswa yigold ( you know how to be a bitch now, going crazy over gold teeth)

Her mum called her from the inside

Her mum : helen

Me: asambe (lets go)

I walked out

Helen: mama ngiyabuya ( mum im coming)

She followed me I went inside the car and she got in two streets away from her street,I got out off off the car

Me: you all over now, cant keep yourself together

Helen: no.....

Me: voetsek!!! Uzongyenza ebhari wena uwu clever wena eplayer ( piss off, dont make me an idiot, you all smart now you a player)

Helen : I....

She started crying

Me: I fucken told you, I was going to fuck you up if you ever tried to screw me over

I hit her again and She Fell to the ground I didn't even care

Me: dont fuck with me wena

Helen:.....

Me: so where the fuck did you think this will end up

Guy: eh kau yekela lomtwana (eh boy leave the girl alone)

I turned to face this guy

Me: ay wena ungena iyndaba zam ne maid yami manje ( dont try me you interfering between me and my girl)

Guy: ahhhhh manje never urasele lomtwana estradini ( but then you can't be shouting at her like this on the street)

Me: \*laughing\* yazini ntwana ne ngoba engathi uzi thandele zithathele yena ( you know what boy cause it seems like you like her take her)

I walked back inside my car and drove off

I arrived at home and my phone had crazy missed calls and messages from helen but I just checked the ones from amahle

Amahle: iv been trying to call you please call me please

~ ohk since you not calling or answering thought I should let you know I ended it with lwandle im all yours :)  
goodnight

I just smiled at her text and called her

Amahle: ufunu ini (what do you want)

Me: \*laughing\* you mad

Amahle: yes iv been calling you then you say I dont call

Me: sorry mami I left my phone at home and I was at work

Amahle: Ohk did you get my text

Me: yes could not be more happier

Amahle: I hope tomorrow you will be telling me im all yours

Me: yes baby

Amahle: good , im studying can we talk tomorrow

Me: ohk take care ne

Amahle: you too dont think about me too much

Me: \*laughing\* il try not too

I hung up then went to bed

Friday woke up and just made myself something to eat,  
my phone would not stop ringing I called natasha

Natasha: daddy

Me: hey babe

Natasha: I miss you

Me: I need to talk to you

Natasha: oh Ohk meet me after work

Me: where

Natasha: the coffee shop not far from where I work

Me: ohk 2 right

Natasha: yes

I hung up then called amahle

Amahle: Papi

Me: my mami

Amahle: you miss me?

Me: maybe

Amahle: \*laughing\* just admit it

Me: fine I miss you

Amahle: I miss you too but I dont know when I will see you

Me: tomorrow?

Amahle: no not tomorrow im writing next week so id prefer it if I didn't go out

( I was relieved since I knew candice would be there)

Amahle: the following weekend

Me: ohk

## INSERT #46

I went to take a shower and left to meet up with natasha  
I walked inside the coffee shop and she was not there I  
found myself a table and ordered coffee on the go.

Natasha walked in she kissed my cheek

Me: hey you

Natasha: how are you?

Me: im good you

Natasha: nervous

I bit my lip

Her: what's up

Me: let me get straight to the point I....

Her: you want us to break up

( we weren't really breaking up cause we were not dating)

So I just nodded my head and she looked away

Me: babe the whole point off seeing someone is to love  
them but

Her: you love someone else

Me; yeah

Her: amahle?

Me: huh?

She closed her eyes and breathed in

Her: amahle?

Me....

Natasha: when I saw you with her on your birthday I thought you were friends but the way you looked at her, constantly checking on her and when you refused to have sex with me I just knew but I chose to ignore it cause I loved you and thought you cared about me but it was all bullshit \*she banged the table\*

Everyone looked at her and I just covered my face

Me: im sorry thats all I can say

Her: \*smiling\* its fine I guess im happy you told me early

Me: huh?

I was shocked she was angry now smiling

Her: I mean that but nawe ke

Me: what did I do

Her: I have cravings and you didn't even satisfy my cravings

I laughed

Me: I did not want to hurt you

Her: im a big girl sometimes I just need sex and you never gave me that

I looked at her and she bit her lower lip

Me: so what were you thinking

Her: your girl probably thought we were having sex and we never did so you owe me

Me: and how do you intend I pay you

Her: show me a good time

Me: you sure

Her: yes

Come on I would not say no to that and amahle would not find out about it anyway come on. We left she drove with her car and I used mine she followed me behind

I opened the door to my house and we were already kissing and taking each other clothes off,I picked her up and she wrapped her legs around my waist, I walked us to my bedroom and we fucked, she scratched, moaned and cum over and over again after a while of having fun I zoned off. Woke up and natasha was not next to me I wore my boxers and went downstairs

Me: what you doing?

She put my phone on the table

Natasha: I I \*stuttering\* I was calling someone

Me: why you using my phone

Natasha: I dont have airtime so I thought you would not mind

Me: don't touch my phone again especially without consulting me

Natasha: ohk you an animal

I just laughed

Me: what will you eat?

Natasha: you

Me: im serious

Natasha: me too

Around 8 she left, I talked with amahle then went to bed

The next day I hung around at home during the day went to visit my mum she was with masesi only since kim was at school and dorian was suppose to be picking her up. I left when kim arrived and went back to my place I took a long shower and wore a pair off blue jeans, black top with black shoes and took a jacket. I picked up candice and went to the pub where the squad will be at

Mbali: wena kanti( and you?)

Me: what?

Mbali: I will kill you if you playing with my sister dre

Me: im not playing with her I asked her to come out and she said she was busy I brought candice someone we all know

Mbali: and the girl you fucking

Me: just stay out off my business

I went to get myself a drink and went back to our table

Candice: im so happy im with you

Me: I know lala

Girl: dre

I turned and it was helen

Me: what you doing here?

Helen: can I talk to you?

Me: no

Mbali: talk to the girl look at her she is a mess

Me: what did I say to you

She raised her hands in defeat

I stood up and went outside with her

Me: what?

Her: im so sorry dre I dont know what I was thinking im really sorry

Me: dont piss me off wena I hope im never seeing you again

Helen: dre please

Me: \*shouting\* go back to your boy, im done with you keep everything it's all yours

I walked away and she followed me holding my hand

Helen: dre im sorry \*sobbing\* im really sorry

Me: let go off me

She held me tighter

Me: you embarrassing yourself and me get up and hold yourself

Together

Helen: dre I love you

Me: what?

Helen: I love you

Me: but you fuck around

Helen: it was a once off thing, you always fuck different girls but you dont hear me saying its over

Me: you knew what you were getting yourself into when you got with me

Helen: but it was still real

Me: \*laughing\* mama we were never in a relationship do what you want to do and I will to but from now on theres nothing that connects us together

I shook her hand off and walked in

Candice: what was that?

Me: nothing

Candice: Does this mean its just me and you now

Me: im coming ohk

I stood up and went to buy a shooter and came back

Candice: I missed those lips

Me: come here

I held her face and kissed her, she pulled me closer to her and deepened the kiss

Girl: dre \*sobbing\*

I knew it was helen cause I left her crying

Me: wh..... \*I paused\*

INSERT #47

Amahle: \*crying\* never ever come near me again

She threw her phone at me and ran out I checked it out and it was me and natasha in bed " instead off breaking up with me he made love to me, stay away from my man" that was the caption I was dead asleep in the picture,it all came together, Natasha being mad at first and then happy, insisting we have sex ,catching her with my phone and now I had to explain with candice iv never been that scared ever.

I followed her but it was hard to find her at first until I saw her walking to one off those maxi cabs

Me:\*shouting \* AMAHLE!!!

She went in, I rushed to that cab,I opened the door

Me: can we talk please?

Amahle: leave me the fuck alone

She held the door

Me: amahle please

Amahle: \*crying\* dre please leave me alone

Me: please give me 2 minutes plus I have your phone

Amahle: please don't leave

Driver: ohk

She got out off the car I closed the door and she leaned on it

Me: baby please im sorry

Unexpectedly she hit me (slapped me)

Amahle: sorry you want to say sorry thats the only shit you know saying sorry I left the one guy that actually cared for me, for this piece off shit but I dont blame you cause you did not put a gun on my head to do it I blame myself for being stupid and believing your lies I dont know what I ever thought thinking you deserve me you don't deserve any girl in this world

Me: nana be....\* I tried touching her\*

Amahle: DONT TOUCH ME

me: it was a mistake

Amahle: \*shouting\* mistake you slept with natasha and now your tongue is down candice throat and you lied \* punching me on my chest\* you said it was over you lied dre \*crying\* and after them you would have came to me and tell me how much you care about me

Me: but I do

Amahle: FUCK YOU, FUCK YOU NEVER EVER CALL ME AGAIN

she grabbed her phone and opened the door

Amahle: I hope I never see you again, you disgust me

Me: mami please

(Reaching out to her)

Amahle: leave me alone

Me: amahle

She tried to get in but there was no way I was letting her go, I pulled her away from the car and she fought me, kicking we were actually fighting each other, I grabbed her hands and pinned her on the street I didn't even care if there was a car coming people were staring might have thought we were drunk or something I was on top of her, she could not move or hit me cause I was holding down her hands, she was just crying

Me: \*shouting\* im sorry ohk, im sorry

Shouting back and crying

Amahle: GET OFF ME!

Me: I DONT KNOW WHAT I WAS THINKING BUT I MEAN IT WHEN I SAY IM SORRY, IM REALLY SO.....

Amahle: FUCK YOU! You ARE A TRUE DEFINITION OFF A DOG YOU JUST FUCK AROUND DON'T CARE WHO YOU HURT IN THE PROCESS I WAS HAPPY DRE BUT YOU CAME TO ME SELLING ME DREAMS WHY DID YOU EVEN WANT SOMETHING WITH ME IF YOU WERE JUST GOING TO SPIT ON IT

me:.....

Amahle: FUCKEN TALK WHY

me: im s....

Guys: dre!!!!

I turned and the guys were standing on the other side off the street

Mbali: what the fuck do you think you doing get off her

Me: baby im sorry please let me explain everything to you

Amahle: explain what?

Themba: can the 2 off you move you in the middle off the street and everybody is watching

I paid them no attention

Me: Natasha....

Amahle: \*screaming\* I DON'T WANT TO HEAR IT , I DONT WANT TO HEAR ANY SHIT YOU HAVE TO SAY GET OFF ME BEFORE I SCREAM RAPE

I looked at her and I knew I had to fix this

Me: I DONT GIVE A FUCK WHAT YOU SCREAM, SCREAM MURDER WHILE YOU AT IT

I got up and held her wrist walking with her

Mbali: whats going on,what is this

Themba: man stop this stop!

Me: get the fuck out off my business

I was pissed ,amahle was trying to get off my grip but the was no way I was letting her go. I walked to my car but she was fighting me so I just picked her up and I regretted it cause she had a chance to hit me. The guys were also following us it was just chaos

Candice: what the fuck is going on

I literally threw amahle in the backseat off my car she hit her head and would not stop screaming

Mbali: you crazy if you think im going to let You go with her

Me: \*Shouting \* SHUT THE FUCK UP THIS IS BETWEEN ME AND HER NONE OFF YOU SO STAY AWAY UNTIL WE SORT THIS OUT

dorian: you forcing her to go with you

Deon: this is out off control

Me: I DON'T CARE IM NOT GOING TO LOSE THE ONE GIRL I LOVE CAUSE OF SOME HOES AS FOR YOU WHAT WE HAD IS OVER

candice:bwhat?

Amahle opened the door, I closed it and locked my car she just hit the window

Mbali: you crazy

I got on the driver seat

Amahle: \*screaming and crying\* I want to go home dre, I don't want to go with you

Me:.....

Amahle:Dre!!

In less than 20 minutes I was at my place. I pulled her in the house

Me: lets talk

Her:....

Me: I broke up with natasha then sh....

Her: I said I dont want to hear what you have to say

Me: well you will listen to me amahle

Her: no

She got up from the floor and walked to the door , I was getting impatient with her I took out my gun she just froze

Me: sit down and let me explain to you

Tears just went down her face

## INSERT #48

Me: I didn't want to do this but I need you to listen to me

Her:.....

Me : yes I lied about candice and Helen because I wanted to stand a chance to be with you I said its over when it wasn't , but I was going to break it off. that bitch lied I did break up with her

Her: can you put that away, you scaring me

Me: this is the only way you will listen to me so no

Her: did you sleep with her

Me:....

Her: \*screaming\* DID YOU SLEEP WITH HER

Me: yes , yes I slept with her and it did not mean shit. Did I screw up yes but right now the is nothing I can do but say sorry mami

Her: ....

Me: amahle the sooner we fix this , the earlier I can take you home

Her: the is nothing to fix andre, nothing I regret each and every moment I had with you. You disgust me

Me: dont do this

Her: take me home

Me: \*shouting\* PLEASE MAMI IM BEGGING YOU, WE HAVE SOMETHING , SOMETHING YOU WILL NEVER HAVE WITH ANYONE ELSE ,SOMETHING I WILL NEVER HAVE WITH SOMEONE ELSE I LOVE YOU,DON'T DO THIS TO US

the intercom rang. We looked at each other

I went to check and it was the guys I just ignored them

Me: do you love me

Her: no

Me: stop lying to yourself

Themba walked in

Themba: woahhhhhh what's going on

Me: leave

Themba:ntwana this is not the way

Me: I said this is between me and amahle leave themba, tell him to leave

She looked at him

Me: tell him to leave

Her: themba just go

He looked at us both and walked out

Her: I want to go

Me: us?

Her: the is no us you made your choice cause if you really wanted to be with me we wouldn't be here , you want to kill me pull the trigger but im going

She walked out and I just lost it breaking everything that was breakable around me I took my phone and called khaya

Khaya: boy its 4am

Me: boy listen I changed my mind about this thing yase bloem

Khaya: ahhhh ntwana so you call now

Me: we can still go right

Khaya: yeah boy

Me: so when do we leave?

Khaya: monday morning

Me: ohk you will pick me up

Khaya: yhoooo shit will go down

Me: sharp

Themba walked in

Themba: whats going on man, what the fuck is this now you really have anger issues

Me : I dont have time for this lock on your way out  
I went upstairs and drank myself to sleep

Sunday went to the warehouse and told them I was going away but did not tell them where I gave everyone everything to do they needed to do so my business does not go down the drain and left for home ,packed my bags everything then went to bed

Monday morning khaya arrived and we left....

#AMAHLE

I could not think straight or study, I would stare at one sentence on my textbooks for minutes nje, then tears would drop . I would cry till I had a headache

Monday went to school,came back and just laid on my bed

Mbali: hey are you awake?

Me:....

She sat on my bed

Mbali: how you holding up?

Me: im fine

Mbali: you dont look fine

Me: I dont care , please leave I want to study

Mbali: talk to me tu

I tried so hard not to cry but I couldn't hold it back. She hugged me

Mbali: im so sorry I know it hurts im so sorry

Me: he played me

Mbali.....

Me: I know you want to say you warned me

Mbali: lala I was not warning you because I was jealous I was warning you about him cause I know him im sorry he sold you dreams

Me: lies

Mbali: and that but thats who he is, sometimes he just cant help it

Me:I thought he would change mbali I really thought he would

Mbali:....

Me: he made me happy , he made me get excited for the next day or just to see him

Mbali: dont tell me you in love with him

Me: I don't even know if I am

Mbali: well I hope you can move on from this

Me: il try

Days passed I was still feeling like crab dre would not stop calling or texting and that made me more emotional, this whole situation was a distraction I tried so hard to focus in class but it was just too hard

INSERT #49

Monday around 5pm we arrived at bloem, I was tired. We got to this house where all the medics for this company lived actually it was a huge house, we settled in and just took a nap. I woke up around 9 and joined the guys. I tried calling amahle but the was no answer ,I blocked candice cause she was irritating the fuck out off me, I told myself I would deal with the biggest bitch when iv sorted everything off mine. I went at the lounge the guys were watching soccer while the girls were cooking

Samkelo: so you ready for this

Me: what exactly?

Samkelo: the whole process boy

Me: I think so will have to see how things are done this side

Mpendulo: I think I know you somewhere

Khaya: everybody knows the nigga

Me: dont go there boy

Mpendulo: no man, tell me how I know you

Me: il let you figure that out on your own

Lungile: guys are you eating now or later

Us: now

They dished up, we ate and I left them to go to bed. could not stop thinking about amahle the way she was crying I kept tossing and turning I dont even know when I fell asleep

## #OCTOBER

everything was great this side, it was way different to jozi but good different. The way this whole situation with amahle affected me I did not even look at girls, I stayed away from them in a way I

Wished when I go back she would forget everything and we start on a clean slate. If I was not working me and the guys would just buy a bottle and get ourselves drunk

Khaya: boy you good?

Me: yes you

Khaya: im good, so month end we leaving right

Me: nah boy im going to stay here for a while

Khaya: you the one who did not want to leave in the first place

Me: yeah I need fresh air and this place will do it

Khaya:ohk mina im going I miss my boy manje

Me: you really a daddy ne

Khaya: yeah boy I love my kid

Me: thats great boy

We continued talking

## #NOVEMBER

I was still enjoying my stay, bloem girls were crazy over me but I paid them no attention khaya had already left , I was close with the guys and working there was amazing it was not as busy as soweto though. I was not working so I opened my phone, my phone always stayed off I called my mum

Mum:baby

Me: hey mum, how are you?

Mum: im good but I miss you when are you coming back

Kim: is that andre?

Mum: yes baby

Me:I dont know when will I come back mum but I will

Kim: andre

Me: hi nana

Kim:when are you coming back,dorian wants to talk to you

Me: il call him

Kim: you said that the last time and he told me you did not call him

Me:....

Kim: dre

Me: im working nana I cant just leave my job

Kim: working till when

Me: the following year

Kim: this is our first Christmas with mum and you won't be here

Me: and the are more Christmas to come that I will spend with all off you just not this year

Kim: do you have a gf there , the reason you dont want to come back

Me: \*laughing\* no like I said its work and I cant just pack and leave, I have to ask them to transfer me that side and that cant happen in a week or 2

Kim: ohk here's mum

Mum: baby

Me:,mum I need to go now

Mum: ohk I love you ohk

Me: love you too

I hung up

Few more days passed I got voicemails from my biggest clients I called stephen

Stephen: dont piss me off man

Me: \*laughing\* whats up

Stephen: where the hell are you?

Me: whats wrong talk to me

Stephen: I want to personally talk to you, you know I only do business with you

Me: and you know my partner is themba talk to him

Stephen: thats the only person. Iv been talking to man but I need you here

Me: im only coming back the following year man

Stephen: good thing you left your business in good hands

Me: yes so anything you need talk to themba ohk

Stephen:ohk man

I hung up and went to bath then headed to bed

## INSERT#50

### #AMAHLE

A year had already passed it was a new year, I was going to do my fourth year and mbali was due to graduate april. I was in a relationship with this amazing guy brandon he was coloured and cute, mbali was still with Deon.

Everyone has not seen andre or talked to him and I just ignored his calls

The guys decided to take us out for lunch, we went to spurs but they were not there as yet

Mbali: fuck?

Me: what?

Mbali: his phone is still off

Me: deon

Mbali:\*she snapped \* no amahle dre

Me:.....

Mbali: im sorry its just I miss dre ohk we have never been apart for this long and this is driving me crazy , what if something bad happened to him im just edgy im sorry

Me: its fine

The guys came to our table

Them: hey ladies

Us: hey

We made space for them and we finally ordered

Mbali: have you heard from him?

Dorian: no , his phone is off and he only calls my grandparents,mum and kim only

Shane: well at least we know his ohk

Mbali: not really

Themba: you ohk lala?

Me : yeah im fine

Shane: dr amahle

Me: \*laughing\* yes

Shane: when you going back to school?

Me: next month eish

Mbali: im so happy I dont have to stress with all off that now

Deon: my baby is done , oviasly graduation we there

Mbali: of course but dre wont be there it just does not feel right

I just rolled my eyes annoyed

Dorian: he needs to come back now

I just stood up

Themba: where are you going?

Me: im coming

I took my bag and walked to the toilets,I pulled myself together I was just irritated by the whole dre topic all the time dre had to be mentioned and it seemed like they did not even care how I felt , I fixed myself and walked out but themba was standing outside

Me: what you doing here,these are girls toilets

Themba: wanted to check up on you

Me: im fine

He raised his eyebrow

Me....

Themba: listen nana I dont know how you feel but I can imagine how you feel when you hear dre name and it

annoys me that they cant keep his name out off their tongue when you around they not being sensitive about the whole situation

Me: it doesn't matter

Themba: it does the nigga is my best friend, best best friend but im still going to tell him shit when he comes back, but I dont want you to feel like you dont belong with us cause off the whole situation ohk and im going to talk to these idiots

Me: no dont you all have been friends for a long time and i just came along I dont want to make things awkward than they already are, making demands that you dont talk about your friend

Themba: you sure

Me: \*smiling\* yeah dont say anything please

Themba: ohk let me ask you something

Me: ohk

Themba: do you miss him?

Me: lets go before they send a search team for us

I left him there and walked back to our table

Dorian: you ohk?

I nodded my head and we continued with our lunch

The guys dropped us off at home and I just went to my bedroom, I was angry at myself for a lot off things but I managed to sleep, the next day ate breakfast and we cleaned they picked mbali up and I insisted that I wanted to stay behind so they let me. I called my brandon

Brandon: baby

Me: hey babe

Brandon: you good

Me: yes babe where are you?

Brandon: im around your hood, want to see me

Me: I would love to

Brandon: ohk let me get done with this and I will call you when im at your kasi

Me: ohk dont be too late

Brandon:\*laughing \* ohk

I watched tv and around 4 brandom called , I went outside and he was standing 3 houses away. I walked to him then hugged him

Me: hey you

Brandon: hey babe you look so cute

I laughed

Me: thank you, whose car is this

Brandon: abel

Me: \*laughing\* and he actually borrowed you his car

Brandon: \*smiling\* well I had to use your name in order to get it

Me: now I get why he gave you

We went inside the car and went to buy food

Brandon: I missed you

Me: go on \*laughing\*

Brandon: I missed those cute dimples off yours, those beautiful big eyes , this

He planted a kiss on my lips, I let out a slight laugh

Brandon: should I go on

I shook my head and kissed him

Brandon was the type off guy that made me think of Breaking my virginity all the time , I thought about it all the time I could not help it.

Brandon: home visit?

Me: I can try this weekend

Brandon: im leaving this weekend for free state remember

Me: oh yeah , its just for the weekend right

Brandon: missing me already

I punched him

Brandon: \*laughing\* yes my baby just for this weekend if it was possible id take you with me

Me: please do

He laughed

We talked about a whole lot off things then he took me home , I walked in and mbali mum was cooking

Me: hi ma

Ma: hey baby, you back?

Me: yes ma and mbali?

Ma: shes not back yet

Me: let me help you

Ma: do you miss your parents baby

Me: all the time ma , all the time

Ma: but you know they with you right

Me: yes

Ma: I just wonder where mbalis friends get these cars that are so expensive

I looked at the window and the was a white bmw the door was open and mbali leg outside

Me: \*laughing\* I always ask myself that ma , I also dont know ey

Mbali rushed inside

Mbali: im coming

She ran to her bedroom and ran out with a plastic and went out running back to the car

Ma: and they are so young

I just laughed mbali came back and i went to sit with her

Me: and that

Mbali: something that belonged to deon

Me:, mmmmm Ohk

Mbali: what?

Me: nothing, you really love deon ne

Mbali: \*smiling\* yes why

Me: im just asking are you a virgin?

Mbali: \*laughing\* no you know this mos

Me: no I dont who broke it

Mbali: some ex off mine nje wena you are ne

Me: yes

Mbali:.ohk let me go bath

Me: ohk sharp

She left me and went to bath

## INSERT #51

### #AMAHLE

Sitting at home was getting boring each and everyday the  
was nothing to do. Woke up one Wednesday did the usual  
and went to watch tv my phone rang and it was themba

Me: helo bunny

Themba: where are you bunny?

Me: im at home

Themba: ohk im coming to pick you up

Me: for

Themba: aren't you bored

Me: \*laughing\* when will you get here?

Themba: less than 15 minutes

I hung up and went to quickly change ,he called I locked up and went outside, got in the car

Themba: hi my bunny

Me: \*smiling\* you good

Themba: yes lets go

He started the car and drove off

Me: so where are we going?

Themba: I need some company im going to midrand

Me: are you for real?

Themba: yes im meeting someone there

Me: \*laughing\* are you like going to a job interview or something like that

Themba: mxm sometimes you have to dress smart for certain people

Me:hmmmm just look at you top guy

He laughed

Themba: so what you going to eat

Me: I don't know

Themba: but I need a favour

Me: what is it?

Themba: the meeting im going to will only be about half an hour then we can spend time

Me: so in that half an hour I must keep myself busy

Themba: can you do that for me

Me: yeah il see what I can do

Themba: ohk

Me: so how have you been

Themba: via?

Me: anything nje

Themba:.good

Me: what is this meeting about

Themba:..... new client

Me: what do you do again bunny,I forgot

Themba: sales rep

Me: and you recruiting a new client, isnt that too big for your shoes

Themba: more like a test, one who will recruit this guy gets a promotion

Me: oh to?

Themba: key account manager

Me: yho thats big

Themba: yes so I really need this

Me: il wish you all the best

Themba: \*smiling\* you? When do you start with school

Me: 13 February

Themba: ahhhh just in 2 weeks time

Me: yeah and I could not be more happier , its boring at home nothing to do and the tv keeps on repeating movies

Themba: shame you will miss home when you back at school

Me: dont think so

We got to this place it was beautiful , themba went to the underground parking

Themba: ohk keep your phone by you at all times, heres some cash in case you get hungry

It was a stack off hundred rand notes

Me: how much is this?

Themba: 10

Me: \*shouting\* you carry 10 thousand with you

Themba: \*laughing\* long story spoil yourself if you want too cause I dont know when I will be back il call you when im done

Me: ohk

He left the car keys too and went on the elevator

I played music for a while until I got bored, locked the car and went inside the mall I walked around and went inside this shop it had nice clothes yho, I took a top, Jean and pair off sandals that were too cute then my phone rang

Me: hey where are you?

Themba: just left the restaurant, are you still in the car

Me: no im at the shop next to markhams

Themba: ohk il be there

I didn't want to overspend themba money and I just thought these would be nice, I joined the line and this guy started talking to me

Him: so you alone?

Me: no my bf is on his way here

Him: oh your bf but I dont see your bf here

Themba: I dont see why, you should be looking for me in the first place

I let out a slight laugh

Him: im sorry I just thought she was lying

Themba: you didn't actually think as beautiful as she is ,she would be alone right

Before this could get far I was next I pulled themba by the hand and we paid

Themba: there are some thirsty niggas everywhere

Me: \*laughing\* just forget about it thanks for these ohk

Themba: pleasure want to buy some more

Me: no, how did your meeting go

I said that wrapping my arm with his as we were walking you would have swore we were a couple

Themba: good , great actually I think I might have scored

Me: congratulations on that should I start calling you Mr manager

He just laughed

We went to buy good I was craving for fish and chips and that's what I bought, we sat in...

Themba: bunny

Me: hmmmm

Themba: I know you dont want to talk about this but we friends right and friends talk

I looked at him

Themba: did you love dre

Me: do we have to talk about him

Themba: no but I want us to

Me: yes I do

Themba:.....

Me: what?

Themba: I asked you in the past tense and you answered in the present

Me: what?

Themba: I said did you love dre and you said I do, if you didnt love him anymore you would have said I did

Me: mxm thats crazy see why I never want to talk about this

Themba:\*laughing\* ohk ready to go

Me: yes

He bought ice cream and we ate it on our way back I enjoyed his company more than anything

Around 9 I was already at home and brandon asked to see me, I asked mbali mum and went outside

Brandon: hey beautiful

Me: hey you

Brandon:.come here

I went in between his arms I stayed in that position for a while we talked , and he was leaving this weekend I was kind off sad cause I knew if he was leaving besides missing him I would be bored

Lol guys can you be gentle , it seems like you ready to protest. The man himself will be back

INSERT #52

#AMAHLE

January passed by so fast, then it was February , 13 my classes commenced. I was getting close to themba more each day, by every phone call , visit I did not know if i was getting feelings for him or because I was trying to find a way to shut andre feelings

I attended my classes then went to McDonald's, ordered my usual then called themba

Me: bunny

Themba:\*laughing\* my bunny

Me: where are you?

Themba: im going to sort out some things at honey dew

Me: ohk

Themba: \*laughing\* wena ukuphi? (and you, where are you)

Me: mcd next to my school im going home now

Themba: accompany me ke

Me: ohk are you hungry

Themba: you want to buy me food?

Me: you hungry or not

Themba: \*Laughing\* im hungry

Me: ohk il wait for you outside

I hung up then bought him food and waited for him outside after a few minutes I saw his car and walked up to it, got in and the was a girl sitting at the back seat

Themba: bunny this is chelsey bun

Me: ohk

Themba: ntwana this is my bunny

I just laughed at that statement

Her: hey themba bunny

Me: \*laughing\* hey, you good

Her: yes you

Me: all good

I felt kind off bad cause I did not know themba will have company but he didn't seem to care cause he was chowing in front off her

We got to this place and this girl walked in

Me: so who is she

Themba: more like a colleague

Me: ohk

Themba: where is your bf?

Me: his around I should be seeing him this weekend or next week

Themba: I must meet this nigga

Me: no I know how you are, and you won't play mr nice guy with him even though you are mr nice guy

He laughed

Themba: I dont even know how to play chuck Norris

Me: \*laughing\* I dont know about that, maybe when they piss you off all tables turn nje

Themba: mxm who do you think I am

Me: the sweetest guy in the world who would not harm a fly

Themba: exactly

I laughed, Chelsea showed up again and gave themba 2  
nike gym bag that were full

Themba: thank you ohk, and thank the big guy for me

Chelsea: yeah when is turner coming back

Themba: I dont know, tell him he should hear from him  
soon when his around

Chelsea : ohk

Themba started the car and we drove off

Themba: you still full?

Me: yes and im tired now

Themba: shame dont worry im taking you home now

Me: why is it you dont have a gf

Themba:, im too busy for a gf im sure I wouldn't even be  
Able to give the poor girl 5 minutes off my time

Me: woooo ay wena thats no excuse

Themba:....

Me: \*laughing\* what?

I looked up on the road, it was my street but the was a  
black car parked on the gate was not sure if it was home  
or next door, the closer themba got that's when I realised  
it was outside home, themba stopped right behind it

Themba: I guess his back  
I looked at him and back at the black benz that was a beast with the plate ``TURNER 6 GP``

## INSERT #53

#ANDRE

Me: \*laughing\* so why you crying  
Mbali? \*crying\* I just thought you would not come back and you would miss my graduation

Me: come on lala stop crying

She wiped her tears, I looked on my mirror and saw themba car pullover

Me: themba is here for you

Mbali: nah I doubt, I think he is dropping off amahle

Me: why would themba be dropping off amahle

Mbali: they have been close this past few days really close

Me:...

She lifted her head up

Mbali: just friends dre

Me: \*Smiling\* ohk

Mbali: no dre I mean it they just friends themba would not do that knowing what happened last year, don't do anything stupid

Me: I said Ohk why you making this a big deal

Mbali: cause I know you and I know how crazy you can get when you dont get what you want but someone else does

I raised my eyebrow

Mbali: dont kill themba

I checked my mirror. The princess herself walked out, still looking beautiful way more beautiful now, she walked in and closed the gate. Themba car stopped right next to me, I rolled my window down

Themba: look whos back

Me: sure

Themba: we need to talk

Me: not today il come around tomorrow

And he drove off

Mbali: dre!!!

Me:I need to go

Mbali: ohk hope you not going to disappear

Me: don't worry im not going anywhere

Went to my place and I missed this place so much, I just went straight to bed woke up around 9 ordered food, ate and just watched tv then bed again. the next day went to the warehouse

Nhlanhla: ehhh the big man

Me: \*laughing\* sure boy

Everyone came out

Ty: shit is going down now

Me: yho where boy?

Dorian: its about time, what's wrong with you?

Me: you missed me I see

Dorian: fuck you

Shane: mbali will go crazy when she sees you

Me: she was crying I was with her yesterday

Shane: \*laughing\* she was missing you like crazy

Deon: whats up man , what have you been up to

Me: just stuff

Ty: which stuff?

Me: will talk, where is jack?

Dorian: relax we were treating him like a king

Me: I hope so where is he

Deon: his going to pick up somethings

Me: ohk lets talk

They told me everything that has been going on and I mean everything

Ty: wena (you)

Me: mina (me?)

Dorian: yeah we want to know

Me: well I was working

Them: working???

Me: \*laughing\* sure

Shane: but you didn't leave in good terms what happened

Me: uringa ngani( what you talking about?)

Shane: the pub, amahle, you and Candice

Me: forget about that

I stayed with the guys for a while then went home that was my schedule most off the time if im not at work. Im at the warehouse and in a way I liked it that way, I stayed away from girls I mean stayed away I was tired off the drama and the tears and all that other shit so I just stayed away

The next day went to work and knocked off at 5 on my way home mbali called

Me: bubu

Mbali: where are you?

Me: I do have a job you know

Mbali: whatever are you coming out

Me: no

Mbali: dre come on this is the first Saturday since you came back we need to get drunk

Me: will your cousin be there

Mbali: no

Me: ohk which club or pub

She told me, I drove to my place took a hot shower and just wore simple and nice then left. The squad was back together and I was happy to see everyone

Deon: lets get drunk

Me: wont say no to that

Drinks were gathered and we all had fun, mbali wrapped her arm with mine

Mbali: lets go and talk

Me: ohk

We walked out and the were stairs there, we sat on them

Me: you missed me?

She punched me

Mbali: I can't believe you would even ask me that

Me: \*smiling\* I missed you too, when are you graduating

Mbali:, 27

Me: excited

Mbali: \*laughing\* you know I am

I just smiled at her

Mbali: you don't want to see amahle

Me: yeah

Mbali: and there I was thinking you would give me a lame excuse

Me: nahhhh I just want to be straight with you

Mbali: that's hectic

Me: im giving her what she wants,she told me she never wanted to see me again and you want me to be excited for probably getting a chance to see her no, she does not want to see me so I will stay out off her way

Mbali: but you really hurt her dre I mean she was crying none stop

Me: and I apologised the is nothing else I could do

Mbali: ohk so have you found yourself a girl

Me: no and im not looking for one or looking for a fuck buddy for that matter

She looked at me

Me: what?

Mbali: you have changed

Me: just because I dont want a fuck buddy

Mbali: no everything about you, the way you talk you never gave zero fucks but this time around its just on a uncontrollable level that I don't even understand

Me: guess a new place did me good

Mbali: I dont think so

Me: forget that how have you been?

Mbali: good me and deon are great, no more school its fine bubu I can't complain

Me: work?

Mbali: internship starts june

Me: thats nice bubu

Mbali: im glad you back dre

Me: im glad im back mama

Themba: can we talk

I turned and he was standing behind us, mbali took his drink and went inside

## INSERT #54

Me: whats up man

Themba: I should be asking you that

Me....

Themba: I know you want to question me about her  
I took a sip off my drink

Me: why the fuck would I whatever shit that is happening  
between you two that ain't my fucken business

I took my bottle and got up, he held my hand

Me: get the fuck off me

Themba: geez can you relax I just want to talk

Me: I dont want to fucken talk to you

Themba: sh....

Me: out off all the niggas who could have gone so low and  
do that shit and my best friend does that shit to me You!

I tried to walk away but he just pushed me against the  
wall

Themba: \*shouting\* im your fucken best friend, why the  
fuck would I do you like that when I know you crazy  
about her dont be stupid man

Me: \*shouting back\* then what the fuck do you call what you doing I go away and suddenly you moving your way into her , do you have feelings for her

Themba: right now I wish I did, she has made you so weak that you can't think anymore

Me: fuck you

I pushed him away

Themba: you've became a bitch

I quickly turned, pushing him against the wall my arm on his neck

Me: you the bigger bitch here you my boy but I guess I was wrong

Themba: \*smiling\* you my boy two but acting like this I guess I was wrong

I let go off him

Themba: I was keeping a close eye on her, her thoughts and bf

Me: she has a bf

Themba: yeah but I don't know him and it seems like his treating her good like really good

Me: fuck

Themba: his no threat especially if she is still madly in love with you

I looked at him

Themba: \*laughing\* am I still your boy?

I just laughed and we hugged it off

Woke up after the best nights ever with a terrible hangover went downstairs and the guys were there. We made something to eat and just sat around the table

Me: the was a baby that was suppose to arrive, did one of you take it

Deon: yes gave it to mbali

Me: you have it mama

Mbali: yes in my room I kept it safe don't worry

Me: ohk I will pick it up during the week

Mbali: I won't be around dress fitting, shoes and gowns

Me: so when?

Mbali: we can go now

Me: nah

She looked at her watch

Mbali: its 10:30 she is getting ready for church by the time we arrive she will be at church

Me: ohk

Ty: you avoiding hlehle

Me: that does not concern you

I went upstairs and washed up

Me: lets go

Mbali: bye guys

Me: no don't say bye they also leaving

Shane: what?

Me: get out off my house

They dragged their feet but everyone left

Me: what if your mum saw it

Mbali: she would have not hid it where no one would look

Me: you like things yho

Mbali: voetsek im coming ke

Me: ohk

I got out off the car and leaned on the bonnet got busy with my phone

A car stood right in front of me black golf velocity I looked up and the drivers door opened

Guy: turner

Me: \*laughing\* Brandon

Brandon: yeah can't believe you remember me

Me: I find it hard to forget junkies who owed me money

Brandon: iv been clean for years and we settled that

Me: yeah we did, good that shit will destroy you what you doing here?

Brandon: im here to pick up my girl

Me: \*laughing\* your girl?

Brandon: yes am....

Mbali: dre

I turned to face mbali direction and I just smiled,she opened the gate

Mbali: here

Me: thanks , amahle

Amahle:andre

Brandon: why didn't you tell me you know turner

Amahle: turner? \*raising her eyebrow\*

Me: good seeing you again man

Brandon: yes him, and I want to talk to you about some business

She looked at me

Me:im not interested

I looked at amahle then walked to my car

I called mbali

Mbalu: bubu

Me:I thought you said she would not be around

Mbali: she did not go to church I could have not known that

Me: cool

Mbali: wait

Me: what?

Mbali: how do you know her bf

Me: addict I fed drugs to

Mbali: what?

Me: yes

Mbali: yho that's hectic stay away from her

Me: I have no plans off going anywhere near her

Mbali: good

I hung up and drove to my mum's place, masesi was at church I walked in and kim was watching tv

Me: hey

Kim: hey dre

Me: where is mum

Kim: she is outside garden

Me: ohk pre matric and make me something to eat

She laughed, I walked outside to the garden

Me: this is how your sunday usually goes

She turned around looking beautiful as ever

Mum: \*laughing\* helo baby and yes

Me: you ohk?

Mum: im perfect you?

Me: im ohk \*covering my face\*

Mum: what's wrong

Me: a lot of things are going on, I don't think I can handle it now I'm tired, im stressed, im over thinking things and lonely as fu... \*I paused\*

Mum: you have to break it down to me so will understand better

Me: just forget it

Mum: you better start talking or you won't leave

Me: work I have two jobs that keep me busy all the time, I never get a real break just an hour or two breaks then have to move to the next. I am in love with a girl that hates me and the thought off her being with someone else

kills me, I have a group off friends and family but I still feel lonely and all off that is just driving me crazy

Mim: is this girl a...

Me: I dont want to talk about it ma so don't mention anything

Mum: you need to stop ov....

I cut her off again

Me: I just want to sleep you know for the whole day or even 2 days then maybe il be able to think again I feel like im getting weak and I don't get weak

She nodded her head

Mum: im coming

She walked inside and came back again

Mum: here these are sleeping tablets drink them when you getting ready for bed

Me: thanks mum better get going mum: andre

Me: hmm

Mum: you will be ohk right

Me: \*smiling\* I will then I will get back to you

Me: ohk I love you

Me: me too

## INSERT #55

#Amahle

Monday morning went to school attended all my classes then went to get something to eat, sat down and thought about a lot off things for one why I couldn't stop thinking about andre ever since I saw him. I felt like an idiot after all that time after all the tears and here I was thinking about him and even worse I was in a relationship

I took my bag and left catched my bus and walked home and to my surprise mbali was there

Me: hey

Mbali: hey

Me: hi ma

Ma: hey sthandwa

Me: so how did it go

Mbali: just ohk its not ready yet so can't say much

Me: Ohk

Mbali: are you ok?

Me: yes im good

Mbali: you will see your baby today

Me: yes he should be here any minute let me go change

Mbali: ohk

I went to change and waited for Brandon he eventually arrived and I left

Me: hey you \*hugging him\*

Brandon: hey baby

We kissed

Me: so where we going

Brandon: my place will be back

Me: ohk

We drove to eldorado park and walked up to his house. There were a lot of people there and they all stopped doing whatever they were doing and just looked at us I felt kind off awkward

Brandon: relax come here

He took my hand and we walked to the bedroom

Me: who lives here

Brandon: me

Me: those people

Brandon: just friends off mine

Me: ohk

I sat on the bed

Brandon: il go buy us food Ohk

Me; ohk

He left the room and I got busy with my phone

#whatsapp

Me: I think its going to happen

Mbali: lol you going to break

Me: yeah

Mbali: sies nge monday

Me: lol what difference does it make

Mbali: are you at his place?

Me: yeah

Mbali: is it nice and clean

Me: its ohk mbali why does it matter if its nice

Mbali: lol I was just asking

Me: will talk later

Mbali: use protection

Me: fusek

Brandon: I got us dagwood

Me: great

He sat next to me and we ate

Me: who do you live with

Brandon: alone but im never alone

Me: because

Brandon: friends are always here

Me: \*laughing\* ohk

Brandon: I missed you

He held my cheek and pulled me in a kiss, he pulled me closer to him and I sat on top off him, he laid on his back never breaking the kiss. He moved his hands to my butt and squeezed it , he deepened the kiss. He moved his hands inside my top and removed it I broke the kiss so I could remove it

Brandon: you beautiful

I just smiled down on him and kissed him, I removed his top and he flipped me over , he got on top of me and squeezed my breasts and kissed my neck I let out a slight moan and he sucked that was going to leave a mark, he unbuttoned my jeans and slid his hand inside my jeans I gave him entrance and opened my legs wider for him it

felt good I could not help myself he rubbed my center and my eyes rolled at the back off my head....

Someone roughly knocked on the door and I just got out off the zone my eyes were wide open

Brandon: im busy

Guy: man you have to come out here

Brandon:\*shouting\* I said im busy

Guy:abel is fighting and they screwing him up

He quickly got off me, grabbing his shirt

Brandon: im coming

I nodded my head,he left the room. I buttoned my jean ,wore my top and left the room

I went out off the house and stood at the gate maybe 3 houses away from where I was the was a group off guys and suddenly the was just chaos abel was stabbed and they had to rush him to the hospital

Me: you can go baby il be fine

Brandon: you sure you will be ohk alone here

Me: yes now go

He went in and I remained behind, I just sat there I was scared and hoped abel was fine but the problem now was

how was I going to get home. I had no money on me to catch a taxi and mbali phone was off I took my phone and dialled

Me: bunny

Themba: hey bunny

Me: you good

Themba: yes you?

Me: not really where are you?

Themba: work

Me:eish ohk

Themba: no what's up

Me: im kind off stuck at Eldorado park and I can't go home

Themba: what the hell are you doing there

Me: my bf lives here

themba: so where is he

Me: long story can you help me out

Themba: send me the address im on my way

Me: ohk and dont tell anyone about this

Themba: ohk

I hung up and waited for themba after 30minutes or so He called me letting me know he was outside some house not sure if its the one. I peaked on the window and it was him I locked and put it under the carpet , I texted Brandon and told him where he would find it

I walked to the car and got in

themba: so why the hell are you in Eldorado park and this place looks so familiar

Me: my bf lives here

Themba: but where is he?

Me: his best friend got involved in a fight and was I stabbed so they had to rush him to hospital and I insisted I stay behind

Themba: why are you even dating small boys

Me: no I dont

Themba: hmmmm ohk

He started the car and drove off

Me: thank you for picking me up bunny il pay for your patrol

themba: no need I got you bunny

Me: \*smiling\* thank you

Themba: tell me about this guy off yours

Me: what you want to know

Themba: what does he do

Me: he does not work, his hustling

Themba :\*laughing\* that's what he told you

Me: yes and im happy he tries

Themba: paramedic ne hustler hmmm

Me:.....

Themba:\*laughing\* im just joking bunny

Me: is the a problem

Themba: no bunny do what makes you happy

We arrived at my place

Me: thank you again

Themba: anytime sharp

Don't be mad andre is still here and his not going anywhere

INSERT #56

#ANDRE

woke up Tuesday morning feeling so much better the pills made magic, went downstairs to make myself something breakfast and just watched tv then went to take a shower and went to the warehouse

Dorian: \*laughing\* yeah but others are just not worth it as simple as that

Shane: exactly

Themba: sure boy

Me: sure ntwana what's going on

Dorian: we should be asking you that

Me: im great now

Dorian: ohk ready to talk business

Me: take it away

Well the guys kept me updated and told me about a whole lot off things and kept me in the updated

Me: im happy

Dorian: of course the money is good

Me: \*laughing\* al....

My phone rang

Me: hey bubu

Mbali: hey someone wants to talk to you

I got nervous

Me: who?

Mbali: hold on ....helo \*it was a mans voice\*

Me: who is this

Guy: Brandon

Me: what do you want?

Brandon: I wanted you to hear me out

Me: I said no

Deon: who is that?

Brandon: please man, you will like this business im about to let you get on it

Deon: who is that?

Me: Brandon remember the nigga the junkie that owed me money in Eldorado park

Themba: ohhh what does he want

Me: he says he has business for me

Shane: lets hear him out

Me: no! And dude listen I said no

Brandon: cool

Themba: wow you saying no to money, this is ours and I say lets hear him out

I looked at themba

Me: fine come at....

Brandon: thanks man

He hung up

Me: this nigga though

Themba: how did he know where to find mbali

Me: his dating amahle now he thinks we friends

Themba:\*laughing\* Eldorado park , amahle ohhhhhh

Deon: what you on about?

Themba: nothing

After an hour or so Nhlanhla called me and we all went out

Me: get in

Brandon: thanks man

He looked around

Me: focus here

Deon: what's this business ?

Brandon; theres a new drug?

Me:\*laughing\* is this guy for real

Dorian: lets hear him out

Brandon: people are going crazy over it and its going to sell

I raised my eyebrow

Brandon: but you won't get it anywhere

Dorian: and why is that?

Guy Brandon came with: we deal with people who actually make it , they give this stuff to us only

Me: so you made it yourself

Brandon: no africa is where we got it

We all looked at each other

Brandon: every drug addict in the world wants this shit and we want to share this with you

Themba:\*laughing\* so you think you giving us business

Guy: that's cause we are

I laughed

Themba: no im sure you making 2 stina (thousand) a month selling this eh kasi so you need us to sell it so you will get real money right

Brandon: yeah to be honest but we share 75/25

We all laughed

Me: get the fuck out off here

Brandon: come on lets talk as man

Deon: ohk you talk

Guy: it cant be 50/50

Me: why not?

Brandon: come on turner , we bring the product

Me: we bringing the money

Dorian:do you have any idea how much you could possibly get a month , lets say if the product is as good as you make it sound

Brandon: and we have to pay the supplier, bribery in order for it to.actually arrive at mzansi

Me: the first 3 months 75/25

The guys: what?

Shane: come on turner

Me: deal

Brandon: after 3 months

Me: 50/50 will see how good this product off yours is doing if it does not even bring at least 200 a month then it will be 75/25 but 400 up then 50/50

Guy: fuck man that's a lot off money, that's impossible that you would expect that

Jerome; we don't deal with 5 hundred just so you know

Brandon: fuck

Me: If you don't trust this product off yours how the hell must I do business with you, you really wasting my time

Brandon: we do we just didn't think you were talking about that kind of money

Me: then if you didn't expect me to talk about that kind of money you should have not come here

Guy: no we trust it and the deal is on first three months

Me: iv been talking to you this entire time and I don't even know who the fuck you are

Guy: abel we partners

I just looked at him

Me: when can you give me this?

Deon: dre!

Me: what?

Deon: 3 months 3

Me: its a test just relax

Brandon: you will get it next week

Me: next week when Brandon

Brandon: monday

Me: great now one more thing no one Must know about this including your gf

Brandon: Ohk no one will know

Me: good

Themba: while we still on that gf topic what's with you and our girl

We all looked at him

Brandon: we got a good thing going on

Themba: too bad it will end soon

Brandon: huh

Me: listen man what you do aint our business

Dorian: yeah but what he said is only the truth

Brandon: what did he say exactly

Me: forget that

Abel: great now we all happy drinks

Me: we not friends get the fuck out off my place

## INSERT #57

Wednesday went to work and signed in and went to my station

Me: hi

Girl: hi

Me: don't think iv seen you before

Her: first day im unathi

Me: andre

Unathi: nice meeting you andre

Me: same here how old are you?

Unathi: \*laughing\* 20

Me: Bls?

She nodded her head

Unathi: how old are you?

Me: 26

Unathi: 26 you lying

Me: well im not

Unathi: hmmmm you don't look 26

Me: I get that a lot

Our day began and we were not that busy, around 2 we grabbed lunch

Unathi: so tell me about you

Me: what you want to know?

Unathi: have you always wanted to do this

Me: no

Unathi: what did you want to do

Me: I didn't know what I wanted to do until I started doing this then I enjoyed it

Unathi: \*laughing\* oh ohk

Me: did you also want to be medic

Unathi: yeah I love this it just always been in me

Me: interesting

We got back to work and knocked off

Me: you need a ride home

Unathi: you won't kidnap me

Me: \*laughing\* I dont think so

Unathi: ohk I live at naturena

Me: ohk lets go

We walked to my car

Unathi: if being a als gets me this kind of car I might just go back to school

Me: consider that

She gave me directions and we drove to her place

Unathi: thank you

Me: pleasure

Unathi: tomorrow you on

Me: yeah

Unathi : il take you out for lunch just to say thank you

Me: says a 20year old

Unathi: the 26 year old should be happy

I just laughed, she closed the door and I left for home

The next day went to work and unathi took me out for lunch

Unathi: so what's your story

Me: story

Unathi: yes everyone has a story what's yours

Me: \*laughing\* tell me yours first

Unathi: matriculated a year back, parents divorced. My older brother is too busy for everyone, my other brother is ohk we good, relationship always been a sucker. I was raped by my uncle at the age of 10, I almost killed him at the age of 16 but my brother stopped me and finished the job he was sentenced 18 years but only did 7. Was once in hell with some nigga he is the reason I turned out hardcore

Me: wow

Unathi: \*laughing\* shocking right

Me: totally im sorry for what happened was he not arrested

Unathi: its ohk its one wound that has healed, no the nigga bathed me after and told me if I were to tell anyone I would be in trouble im a kid of course im afraid off getting in trouble so I keep quiet

Me: how did you try to kill him

Unathi: stabbed him as im about to finish him off my brother shows up pulls me away and finishes him off

Me:shit

Unathi: yeah

Me: the bf that showed you hell?

Unathi: that guy was crazy a text from another guy all hell will break a loose,I accuse him shit goes down

Me: hectic

Unathi: yeah you know I was blind thought I would not be able to live without him but after a few black eyes I was like im done

Me: you only 20 but you have faced so much trauma

Unathi: i guess some off us have to experience the hardships of life at an early age than others

Me: you \*pointing her\*

Unathi: what?

Me: its like im looking at myself just a younger and you a girl

She laughed

Unathi: now your turn

Me: me! Where do I start

Unathi: beginning

Me: finished school in prison...

Unathi: I said beginning

Me: fine was arrested at the age of 15/14 not sure for arm robbery and gun possession I was still a kid so they sentenced me 3 years but ended up doing one best behavior, just after I turned 16 I knew how to steal a car, operate drugs and sell anything but I was arrested again that was my longest time, I spent a year doing all sorts off shit to build myself a name and my friend then I joined a educational program finished school soon after that joined a firefighter programme as an inmate which I turned to paramedic, during that time I was operating on the inside with my friend themba we were still young but we managed to do a lot off shit including starting a business which began small with selling dagga for the first few months we got a beating off our lives since people who were older than us were covering that department but we got through it, that business grew to something crazy that I was not Even planning by the time i was out I was doing bigger things, had connections everywhere I would say I had become a crime lord at the age off 20 but while I was

arrested my father died and my mum went crazy,  
relationship were never for me but shit happens to all off  
us met a girl, it was deep I mean deep but now im  
forbidden to see her

Unathi: you playing with me right

Me: wish I was

Unathi: you were arrested at 15 or even 14 you aware you  
were never a teen

Me: \*laughing\* yeah I never wanted to be a kid always  
wanted to be e grootman, hung out with people way older  
than me

Unathi: you could have been killed in jail

Me: yeah but I was way to smart for my age

Unathi: hmmmm and I did not find you attractive but  
imagining all off that and a gun involved im feeling some  
sort off way

Me: \*laughing\* behave and what you mean you were not  
attracted to me

Unathi: \*laughing\* I love me some dark chocolate and you  
are just too light for me, if we were ever to date you  
would look more attractive than me and I don't want that

Me: oh wow lala

Unathi: serious sorry

We both laughed

Me: im offended

Unathi: how about best friends

Me: ohk just know someone will fight you though

Unathi: who?

Me: you will meet her someday

Unathi: and im sorry about your dad

Me: its ohk lala

Unathi: one question

Me: ohk

Unathi: race?

Me: :\*laughing\* mixed race

Unathi: real eyes?

Me: yes colour eyes off my mum and im the only one with these colour eyes my brother and sister dark brown

Unathi: wooo and you had to be different

Me: thats how I am

Continued working until we knocked off

Me: want a ride?

Unathi: if it's going to be like this all the time I might as well start paying for patrol

Me: \*laughing\* buddy come on you my best friend right

Unathi: ohk buddy

She opened the door and got in

Me: can we pass by my place first

Unathi: sure

I drove to my place and we walked in

Me: il be right back

Unathi: sure il make myself at home

Me: \*laughing\* ohk

## INSERT #58

I changed and took the bag I needed and went downstairs, she was making food

Me: \*laughing\* I hope you made me something to

Unathi: don't worry here

She gave me a plate it was a sandwich. We sat down and ate together

Unathi: this place

Me: what about it?

Unathi: money you made from crime

I nodded my head

Unathi: car?

Me: yes pretty much everything

Unathi: so the money you earn

Me: food, clothes and alcohol

Unathi: you live the life you know that

Me: a dangerous one I could get arrested anytime

Unathi: but yo.... hold on

She answered her phone

Unathi: hi ma, no im fine, il be a bit late \*laughing\* a friend will drop me off , im ohk night

Me: mummy wants her baby

Unathi:\*laughing\* im a mamas baby what can I say

Me: sies

Unathi: as I was saying dont people suspect all of these your luxuries

Me: of course they do cops , iv had a few irritating cops on my tail but the right connections will get you everywhere the people on my payroll got my back like I

got theirs everyone in this world nana need those couple off thousands extra on the side

Unathi: make me understand

Me: let me give you an easy one the is a cop has a child in varsity thola ukuthi he only earns 7 thousand before deductions he has to pay for groceries, bond, car instalment, few other things and now tuition fees and that's not the only child then I come along offer you 5 thousand no deductions cash just for you to keep my name out off any cops tongue or docket you will say no to that

Unathi: \*laughing\* who the hell are you

Me: \*smiling\* you will find out one day

Unathi: can't wait

She took our plates and rinsed them

Me: ready to go

Unathi: kind off

Me: \*laughing\* are you rushing home

Unathi: not really

Me: then lets go

Unathi: where

Me: you will see how I work and so you know I never did this before I just connected with you

Unathi: are you catching feelings for me mr andre

Me: \*laughing\* lala come on if I wanted to fuck you, we would be naked in my bed right now I told you, you like a girl version of me so I want you to be my buddy

Unathi: wont say no to that

Me: good now lets go

We talked non stop until we arrived at this place, we walked in I went to my usual spot and my business associates were there

Me: gentleman

William: turner

Owen: good to see you as always me: same here

Stephen: im just fascinated by this beauty over here

Me: I might just retire soon and leaving everything to her teaching her the robes

Jake: should we start packing to

Unathi: good evening

William: evening beautiful

Owen: let's get down to business

I put the bag on the table

Stephen: may I?

Owen: sure

He unzipped the bag and turned it upside down I looked at unathi and her eyes were wide open

Me: \*laughing\* relax

She didn't even respond her eyes were glued to the money

William: this is what I love to see

Me: happy

Them: way happy

Stephen: doing business with you is never a disappointment

Me: im glad to hear that cause I have something I want to bring to the table

Jake: the table is all yours

Me: new drug?

Stephen: turner new drug

Me: listen I know you sensitive when it comes to this

William: im listening talk to us

Me: new drug, every non coke addict wants a hit off it

Owen: you not talking about this cheap drugs right

Me: next week Monday im getting it , il give you each a taste off it you test it out with your druggies they love it we talk business

Stephen: we don't give you a cent for the taste right

Me: no so what you say

William: im always ready to make more money so bring it for me if they not interested

Me: gentleman?

Jake: a taste won't be bad

Me: great we would love to eat dinner with you but we already ate

William: drinks won't hurt

Me: up for it

Unathi: yes

They ordered drinks and just had fun , around 10 we packed up and left

Unathi: this brings money

Me: you can say that

Unathi: you love this ne, the power the money

Me: I love it nathi I mean I love it

Unathi: I think I will love being your buddy

Me: same here give me your numbers

She took my phone and saved them

Unathi: Thank you for today

Me: we still going to have a lot off those

Unathi: goodnight turner

Me: \*laughing\* goodnight lala

The next day was not working so was just at home around 2 wore jeans, blue top, white nikes with cap and left went to the warehouse and mbali called

Me: one would swear we dating you constantly calling me not your bf

Mbali: heloooooo there's time for calling my teddy bear and the is time for calling you

Me: \*laughing\* tough guy like deon and his called a teddy bear

Mbali: voetsek where are you?

Me: warehouse

Mbali: want to pick me up

Me: you no longer at school so why would I pick you up

Mbali: im at home bubu

Me: how about I send someone to pick you up

Mbali: no I want you

Me: what difference will it make

Mbalu: I want you

Me: fine im on my way

Mbali: \*laughing\* good

I drove to her place and called her

Me: im outside

She walked out and she looked beautiful

Me: you look beautiful

Mbali: thank you bubu

I started the car and we drove off

Me: you missed me ne

Mbali: maybe

Me: mxm

Mbali: what have you been up to

Me: just work lala all the time

Mbali: girls

Me: nah not right now

Mbali: I knew you changed

Me: that's not a bad thing

Mbali: in your case it is

Me: what do y....

My phone rang

Me: lala

Mbali looked at me

Unathi: how you buddy

Me: Im ohk you?

Unathi: Im good just missed you

Me: you at work?

Unathi: yeah why is it you not in today

Me: you still new there remember

Unathi: mxm some guy is hitting on me

Me: who is that?

Unathi: khaya

Me: \*laughing\* but his your type

Unathi: yeah dark dindi but he talks to much

Me: so

Unathi : ay h....

Mbali: who is that

Unathi: who is that

me: why do you have to be like this I never ask you who you talking to

Me: and lala my best girl friend and im talking to my new best friend

Mbali: new best friend???

Unathi: best friend

Me: you talking at the same time lala hold on...yes my new best friend I work with her unathi

Mbali: why the hell do you need another friend when im here

Me: you will always be my best friend lala but now I have the second one wait....lala remember I told you someone will fight you for being my best friend she's the one im with right now

Unathi: \*laughing\* ohhh

Me: yes how about you meet her saturday

Unathi: Saturday?

Me: yes you working

Unathi: no

Me: perfect il pick you up then

Unathi: ohk talk later

I hung up

Mbali: I can't believe you betrayed me like that

Me: come on lala I did not

Mbali: you even call her with my name

Me: \*laughing\* but all these name belong to you Lala, baby, bubu and that will never change

Mbali....

She just looked outside the window

## INSERT #59

The first weekend passed by so fast , the following week none much happened Brandon and his guys brought the product , I delivered what I promised. Saturday morning went to gym for like 2 hours then went home I just watched tv unathi called

Me: lala

Unathi: buddy, we still on today

Me: yes and yes

Unathi: when will you pick me up

Me: around 6

Unathi: ohk should I bring anything

Me: no lala

Unathi: ohk bye

Me: bye

I went to do my hair, came back around 3 but went to see my grandparents I spent time with them and left around 5, got home took a shower wore all black and left past 6

I drove to unathi place and picked her up she looked beautiful , she was wearing a black mini skirt, white top carrying a white jacket with heels and sneakers I just laughed

She got inside

Me: and that?

Unathi: I dont know where we going so had to carry both

Me:\*laughing\* you will need heels

Unathi: thanks

She got in and we drove off to the club

Me: you have your id

Unathi: yes

Me: you 20 right

Unathi:\*laughing\*yes

Me: ohk

We arrived at the club

Bouncer: turner

Me: hey man, this is my friend

He looked at unathi

Him: id

Unathi showed him he looked at me

Me: \*laughing\* come on shes nearly 23

Him: only cause she is with you

Me: \*laughing\* mbali will be here don't give her any trouble

Bouncer: ey that one

We walked in

Unathi: where else does your name work?

Me: everywhere just don't use it near cops

She laughed, we walked to the table and everyone was there

Me: guys this is unathi

Sandile : helo lo...\*he paused\*

Me: \*laughing\* we not together boy

Sandile: that's the greatest news iv ever heard

Unathi: why

Sandile: cause now I might have a chance

Me: don't push it

Dorian: nice meeting you beautiful

Unathi: same here

Dorian: let me do the honours this is sandile, themba, shane, jerome, jumping jack \*laughing\* nhlanhla and ty

Unathi: nice meeting you all

Them: same here

Dorian: this is not all of us, you will meet the rest when everyone gets here

Unathi: you a big squad

Me: way big

She sat next to me cause she was a bit shy, they got us drinks

Unathi: you don't say you have such hot friends

Me: \*smiling\* you di...

Mbali: hi

I looked up and she was not happy she was with amahle

Me: \*smiling\* hey bubu

She looked at unathi

Unathi: hi

Mbali: helo

I got up and hugged her

Me: be nice

I looked at amahle and she looked so princess like

#amahle

I followed mbali as she led the way, when we got to the sitting place andre was sitting next to this beautiful girl really close he was smiling to her I just got jealous I dont even know why, he greeted mbali and I just stood there

Andre: amahle

Me: andre

He sat down again not even a how are you?

#ANDRE

Me: mbali this is unathi ke

mbali: mmmm

Unathi looked at me

Mbali: so you two are buddy buddy

Me: y....

She cut me off

Unathi: yes we are you got a problem with that

Mbali put down her drink and came closer to her

Mbali: I have a problem with some girl coming up here and want to take my best friend away, I don't know your intentions or what you want but with him I kill

My eyes were wide open

Mbali: come on she's ju...

Unathi: I can talk for myself

Themba: can you stay out off this you always want to meddle in mbali business

I looked at him

Unathi: bitch hold up you dont even know me and you already spitting fire maybe other girls are used to your bullshit act but im not, you want to take it down will take it down but the is no way im going to sit down and listen to you talk shit about me and whether im friends with andre how the hell is that your business or you fucking him. I come from ekasi and I don't want anything from him but seems like you want something why so uptight with something that he has that you have to act like a bitch to keep people away from him and the last thing I would kill if someone comes down at me like you just did

I was just staring at unathi and wondering where the hell did all off that come from. The guys were staring no one

said nothing but we just glued our eyes on mbali and unathi

Mbali: \*laughing\* Bitch you got balls

I just got confused that very moment mbali was laughing and relaxed like was it me who heard all off that or...

Unathi: \*smiling\* I just don't take shit

Mbali: \*smiling\* and you the girl I need besides me

They both laughed and hugged

Themba: wait what the hell is going on

Me: that's exactly what im trying to figure out

mbali: come on guys I always told you if I ever met a girl like me I would fall in love and I think I just did

Deon: you not dumping me right

Me: no baby she is me and im her

Unathi: you got that right

Me: you ohk?

Unathi: \*smiling\* yes im fine , im going to love your friends

Me: and you going to fit ri....

Guy: its so hard to find space here

I looked up and it was a face I did not want to see trust me....

## INSERT #60

Me: what the fuck you doing here?

Amahle: he is with me

Me: do you understand I have a circle that I don't need certain people in it

Amahle: he is my bf and mbali said it was fine

I looked at mbali

Me: you should know better

Mbali: I just tho...

Dorian: his here now , sit down man

Unathi: what's wrong?

Me: don't worry about it

Mbali: so you work together?

Unathi: yes only started 1 week back

Mbali: maybe you were charmed by him ne

Unathi: not at all I also told him I like dark chocolate

Mbali screamed

Mbali: ahhh me too

We all looked at her

Me: the last time I checked this nigga over here is not dark

Mbali: yes I know before deon you all know I never dated someone light

Deon: but I changed all off that

I was feeding myself with alcohol

Sandile: so im your type

Unathi: \*laughing\* angaz ( I don't know)

Brandon: so turner

I looked at him

Brandon: how did you do it

Me: do what?

Brandon: everything that you have, your reputation

Amahle looked confused

I just looked at him and I was getting pissed

Themba: this is not the time to talk about that

Amahle: what exactly?

I just covered my face

Mbali: just leave it lala

Amahle: is the something i don't know

Brandon: you don't know who he is dont you baby, let me tell you

I banged the table, spilling all the drinks on the table

Me: \*shouting\* WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU TRYING TO DO

Brandon: I was just making a conversation

Me: GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY BUSINESS

amahle: \*shouting\* why you getting defensive

Me: \*pointing at amahle\* shut the fuck up

Shane: turner calm down

Brandon: why dont you want her to know what you do or who you really are

Themba: what the fuck is wrong with you, leave this shit im warning you

Me:.....

Dorian: Brandon don't do this

Brandon: no come on everyone in this table knows who he is , she deserves to know and im tired of lying to my girl

Me: I swear to god I will kill you if you tell her anything

Deon: just shut the fuck up man, are you trying to start something

Jack: shit is going to go down

Amahle: what is going on?

Mbali: \*shouting\* I said leave it amahle, what's wrong with you

Deon: everyone calm down you drawing attention to us

me: \*shouting\* I DON'T GIVE A FUCK \*i threw my bottle on the floor\* YOU MAY BE FUCKING HER BUT YOU WILL RESPECT MY BUSINESS

Brandon: you think everyone is so scared off you don't you , I may be doing business with you but I won't allow you to disrespect me in front off my girl

Me : YOU BITCH EVERYONE IS AFRAID OFF ME ITS NOT A RUMOUR BUT FACT

I was fucken drunk and pissed , one off the clubs bouncer came up to me

Bouncer: turner you will have to calm down or I will have to kick you out

Brandon: I will have all the shit you have but one thing I will have and you won't have is her

I took out my gun, pulled the slide back and placed it on the center of his forehead everyone began screaming

"GUN GUN GUN"

Dorian: andre come on man

Themba: dont do this here boy

Me: dont ever try to act smart with me im way smarter than you and you spoke way too soon

I took everything I came with and walked out

I just sat on the driver seat, covering my face trying so hard to calm myself down but I could not

Mbali: you have to calm down

I hit the steering wheel continuously

Me: \*screaming\* how the fuck do you expect me to calm down after that mbali how

Mbali: killing him won't solve anything and I know you thinking it

Me:....

Mbali: you not yourself right now and you drunk , he just pushed the wrong button that ticked you off especially cause he is with amahle you kill for better reasons than this now let me drive

I got out off the driver sest and went to sit at the back, mbali started the car and drove off I was looking outside the window the entire time just thinking

Unathi: who is amahle?

Mbali: my cousin the girl I came with

Unathi: why does she have such an effect with dre

Mbali: they madly in love with one another but timing always bad

Unathi: she must be the one he told me about

Me: im sorry for ruining your night

Unathi turned to the back

Unathi:,you awake

Me: yeah

Unathi: its fine I have had worse nights

Mbali: you need to talk to amahle

Me: no

Mbali: dammit dre you need to sort this out , ask her to be with you I dont care do something im tired off being chased out off a club because of your tantrums they might even ban us now

Me:.....

Mbali: you listening

Me: yes im listening geez

We got to my place and I just went outside sat near the pool and thought about everything that happened then went to bed

The next day the girls were downstairs

Me: morning

Them: morning

Me: when are you going home?

Unathi: I dont know

Mbali: your parents need to start understanding that you will not be sleeping at home most of the time

Unathi: you dont

Mbali: if we ever go out never always sleep here

Unathi: how long you been friends

Me: \*laughing\* yhooo years now , she used to visit me in prison

Mbali: \*laughing\* Saturdays knew had To go to Sun city

Me: have you talked to your sister

Mbali: yes she slept home

Me: ohk

Mbali: you need to talk to her

Me: and I will

Unathi: why dont you just date

Me: its not that easy

Unathi: and there I was thinking you could get any girl you want

Mbali: oh but he can , he used to be fuck buddies with this girl knowing you, you would have hated her

Unathi: really?

Mbali: totally I hated her and she knew and him

Me: oh wow from enemies to best friends

Unathi: piss off so will you talk for me

Mbali: totally

Me: what you talking about?

Mbali: this does not concern you

## INSERT #61

Few days passed, the drug that this idiot gave me was selling

Dorian: why are we still doing business with this idiot

Me: you just said it business we not friends

Themba: his got a point , we can't let anger get in the way of real money

Me: exactly

#whatsapp

Me: can you please come over to my place

Amahle: no

Me: please i want to explain everything and apologise just give me 5 minute

Amahle: il be there at 4

Me: thanks

I finished up work and left , got to my place and tidied the place , she arrived and I let her in. We sat down

Me: amahle listen im sorry , ohk im sorry for what happened im sorry for hurting you im really sorry

Amahle: you so...

Me: can you let me finish

Amahle: ohk

Me: I want to be honest with you, im not the guy you think I am, I do some shit and I know im risking losing you forever this time around by telling you this but I want to be honest with you\*breathing out loud\* I do crime all types off crime

She looked at me, with her big eyes popping out

Me: im part off the biggest gangs in and out off prison you know that but what you don't know is my reputation , I have a reputation that I would die protecting, I kill, I

shoot and stab. The money, the cars and this place because off what I do its my business my baby , I have made myself a name on the streets from a young age and im not known for good things

She kept quiet tears approached her eyes

Me: but what you need to know is I love you and im sorry you can't see that right now

Amahle: I can't believe you \*crying\*

She got up and headed to the door , I ran behind her and closed the door before she could open it I pinned her on the door and I was so close to her

Me: just give us a chance

She shook her head

Me: amahle look at me

Amahle: I want to go

Me: look at me

Amahle: how do you expect me to be with someone who will pull out a gun on me whenever I don't listen to him or to be with someone who makes a life out off crime this is not some sort of movie dre

I laid my head on her shoulder

Me: im only asking for a chance to show you how much I want this, I know im not your dream guy I know but just think about how you feel

Amahle: move away from me

I moved back

Me: just a chance

Amahle: no dre you too much for me I did not ask for this , you lie and now you a criminal no

Me: and I said im sorry but I change who I am this is me

Amahle: well im not sure about you

Me: amahle please

Amahle: no dre

I pushed her against the door and kissed her, I could taste her tears, she kissed me back but pushed me away and left

#AMAHLE

the walk to taxis was the longest and a mess I was crying the entire time I got home and rushed to my bedroom

Mbali: yho will you ever come back happy after talking to dre

I just ignored her

Mbali: tell me everything

Me: he he \*stuttering\*

Mbali: just calm down

I finally pulled myself together and began talking

Me: so he apologised for everything then he told me what he does you knew all along didn't you

Mbali:...

Me: how can you be friends with him mbali he does illegal things

Mbali: his my friend has been yes I was freaked out at first but I managed to live with it but that's not the point here

Me: do all the guys do it

Mbali: yes all of them

Me: and you fine with it, I was made a fool here themba lied to me

Mbali: yes im cool with it and im with deon I love him but it does not mean I have to love what he does you should consider that

Me: I dont think i can

Mbali: do you love dre or not

Me....

Mbali: I know you do for once think about you and your feelings not who they are I dont even know why you acting up brandon probably does the same shit but he will never be like dre and I mean ever , I did not like this idea of you and him but oviasly you love each other try it if it does not work move on geez

She stood up and left. I was so confused that I called dre but the was no answer, after a few seconds my phone rang

Me: hi

Dre:,hey sorry I missed your call

Me: can I come over

Dre:m m m now?

Me: yes

Dre: can I come to you tomorrow

Me: you know what never mind

Dre: no no hold up I mean the are people coming here so I thought you wanted us to be together but please come over please

Me: im on my way

#ANDRE

Some goods were going to be delivered amahle is not a fan of what I do and seeing her such would make things worse for me

Me: amahle is coming over guys so can we not work till she arrives and leaves

Themba: amahle is coming here

me: yeah now stop asking me a lot of question

After an hour or so she arrived I opened up for her

Amahle: hi guys

Them: heyyyy amahle

She looked at them and the bags next to them

Me: can we talk in my room

Amahle: ohk

We walked upstairs, she walked to the sliding door

Amahle: I came back fast didn't I

Me: I thought I was never going to see you again

Amahle: you know whats irritating

She said that turning to look at me

Amahle: you played with me and hurt me so bad, I want to hate you for lying to me, for hurting me but I dont in fact you would swear I fall more and more for you

Me: then lets try it out mami cause im tired of pretending like I don't feel anything for you while im crazy about you

Amahle: I want us to try it out and see what happens if it fails this time around then we just need to forget it

I walked up to her

Me: you serious

She nodded her head

I moved my hand to her face and pulled her in a kiss , she grabbed my shirt on the waist and deepened the kiss, we kissed for a while until I broke the kiss

Me: you have always been mine

She bit her lip

Amahle: but im also someone girl

Me: you will end it right

Amahle: you not sleeping with unathi right

Me: \*laughing\* no I swear the is no girl in my life

Amahle: what about me?

Me: except my princess of course

Amahle: \*smiling\* I need to go, its school tomorrow

Me: I can't accompany you so I will ask the guys ohk

Amahle: ohk

We walked downstairs and the money was all over the table , steel and packets off drugs I looked at amahle and she looked shocked

Me: don't mind this ohk

She nodded her head

Me:ntwana can you take her home

Themba: lets go bunny

Amahle: bye guys

Them: bye mahle/ hlehle

They left

Me: didn't I say wait till she leaves

Dorian: you could have been fucking for all we know

Me: mxm lets get down to this

## INSERT #62

The week none much happened and i did not see amahle. She was busy with school and i was busy with work the whole week. The following week woke up , went to bath then went to the warehouse

Jack; hey man

Me; hey you good

Jack; yeah

Me; you been doing good here , im proud of you

Jack; \*smiling\* thanks man

Me; but can you do it on your own

Jack; i dont think im ready as yet

Me; you will have to be ready sooner or later

I went to the guys

Me; so the pro....

Guy; where the fuck is he? \*shouting\*

Me; who the fuck is that?

brandon appeared from the door

Dorian; you walk in here empty handed you better have it in your car

Brandon; you always wanted my girl didnt you

Me; what you talking about man

Brandon; \*shouting\* AMAHLE!!! I MEAN AMAHLE

Me; what about her ?

Brandon; you know what about her , you always wanted to fuck with her and now she broke it off with me

Themba; its about time

Brandon; just shut the fuck up

Themba; \*laughing\* you mad cause they dumped you

Deon; \*laughing\* come on man where did you think you would end up you and amahle nahhhh bruh

Brandon; you know what i dont even give a fuck a bitch will always be a bitch

Me; talking shit about her wont bring her back man

Brandon; i never gave a fuck about her anyway just wanted to hit it

Shane; \*laughing\* you trying to provoke us man and you hitting the right buttons but we wont give you that

Me; listen man i dont have time for your bullshit , if you mad you mad but shes my girl now and i will kill for her so dont test me another thing iv told you this a thousand times and i hope this time around you hear me we not friends the only time you will come here is when you have the product and come collect your share now get the fuck out

Brandon; enjoy my leftovers

Themba; bye man

He left

They all looked at me

Me; what?

Dorian; you really dating

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Themba; its about time you get your girl

Me; we testing man so will see

Deon; i can see all of you are getting excited but are you aware that this is the first time this guy is in a relationship and he will only fuck her and only her

Shane; fuck, it will be weird seeing you with one girl man

Dorian; im even disgusted by it

Me; \*Laughing\* fuck you guys

Around 2 i called the "PRINCESS"

Me; mami

Amahle; papi

Me; where are you?

amahle; school im going to my last class then home

Me; want me to pick you up

Amahle; you want to pick me up

Me; \*laughing\* why do you always have to answer with a question

Amahle; \*laughing\* just come get me around 3 to 4

Me; ohk mami

I hung up and stayed with the guys past 3 i left and went to pick her up

She walked out of the gate with 2 other girls she looked beautiful and a smile on her face just blew me away. She just smiled when she saw my car and walked to it , waving to the girls

Amahle; what?

me; you look beautiful

Amahle; dont go soft on me \*smiling\*

She leaned in for a kiss and i kissed her

Me; ready to go

Amahle; yep

I started the car and drove off

Me; so your bf visited me today

Amahle; you visited yourself

Me; \*laughing\* your ex mama

Amahle; ohhh what did he say

Me; just a whole bunch of things im just glad its me and you now

Amahle; not more than me papi

## #MARCH

The last week of march amahle went on recess and i couldnt be more happier as i will be spending more time with her

Unathi; can we knock off already

Me; where you rushing too

Unathi; i have a date

Me; \*laughing\* sandile

Unathi; \*blushing\* yes wheres your girl

Me; today was her last day i couldnt be more happier man

Unathi; more time with her

Me; way more time

Unathi phone rang

Unathi; yej wena... Hold up

She made loudspeaker

Mbali; heyy you 2

Me; hey

Mbali; so we decided to go eat out today , spurs pre celebration you know

Unathi; sorry i cant

Mbali; dont even bore me sandile said you had plans well cancel them we all going out

Me; will my girl be there

Mbali; of course so knock off and will meet you at maponya

Unathi; sharp

She hung up. We continued with work around 4 we both knocked off

Me; who should change first

Unathi; you

Me; ohk

I drove to my place and changed to a pair of jeans, black top , black cap and white sneakers. Rushed downstairs and went to unathi place she also changed and came back wearing jeans , white top and white shoes. I drove to maponya and everyone was there already

Me; hey guys... Nana

Amahle; papi

We kissed

I sat next to her

Mbali; can we order now

Deon; please can we order

Me; yes

Our waitress came "lindo". We ordered and our drinks came first

Me; so im with you this whole holidays right

Amahle; yes \*kissing me\*

Dorian; can you guys stop

Amahle; just leave us alone right bubu

I just smiled and looked at her she was so beautiful i think i was whipped

Amahle; papi

Me; hmm

Amahle; i want to take you out

Me; \*laughing\* you want to take me out

Amahle; yes my treat

Me; ohk can i ask for a favour

Amahle ; depends

Me; \*laughing\* come sleep over at my place for like 2 days

Amahle; you do know i need to respects mbali mum right

Me; i know nana

Amahle; i will have to lie

Me; \*laughing\* what will you say

Amahle; \*laughing\* i dont know im not very good with lies

Me; just say they gave you holiday assignment to do , and you doing it with your friend because you need research and its a group thing so all of your group members are sleeping over at your friends place at kibler park

Amahle; \*laughing\* just kiss me

I kissed her

Deon; is this all you do

Me; can you just leave us alone

We ate our food and all just had fun. We paid and left

I pulled mbali behind

Mbali; what?

me; i need a favour

Mbali; what

Me; i need amahle to sleepover at my place for like 2 days so i gave her a story to tell your mum so please let your mum allow her

Mbali; what do i get

Me; anything

Mbali; mmmmm convince deon to actually wear a suit on my graduation party

Me; \*laughing\* what? His not going to do that

Mbali; then you dont get amahle

Me; eish fine il do that

Mbali; good

## INSERT #63

Wednesday morning was woken up by a phone call

Me; hmmm

Amahle; Papi wake up im outside

Me; outside where

Amahle; mxm just get up

I checked the time and it was 6am i went downstairs and opened up for her she was carrying bags

We walked inside i placed the bags on the lounge and we walked upstairs

Me; get undressed so will sleep

She took of her clothes and i just looked on the floor cause the sight of her body woooooo

She got inside the blankets and cuddled next to each other

Me; where did you say you were going

Amahle; mbali mum leaves early so i figured i should too

Me; \*smiling\* you missed me that much

Amahle; no just your dimples

Me; mxm close your eyes

Amahle; you first

I closed my eyes and eventually zoned off

Woke up later that morning , looked on my left and she looked sexy as fuck , she was laying on her stomach , she had removed her bra and the view of her breast on the side was perfect, the blanket only covered her butt and her whole back was visible. She was sexy that i was just staring

She turned and faced me

Amahle; you drooling

Me; \*laughing\* morning

I kissed her forehead

Amahle; i needed that so much

Me; kiss or to rest

Amahle; \*smiling\* both now turn so i will get up

Me; why

Amahle; im not wearing a bra now turn

Me; \*laughing\* why did you take it off

Amahle; you have no idea how painful this is

Me; a bra is painful

Amahle; yes and irritating

Me; \*laughing\* i did not expect that

Amahle; dre turn

Me; fine

I looked away

Me; is it clear

Amahle; yes

I turned and she was wearing my top

Me; so what am i suppose to wear

Amahle; come on this is the closest thing next to me  
cause i wont wear a bra, you have too many shirts so  
please

Me; \*laughing\* what you want for breakfast

Amahle; lets go check

we went to the bathroom first and went downstairs

Amahle; i dont know what you want but im having toast

Me; kellogs will do

She gave me a bowl while she did her toast and applied only butter with a cup of coffee. We sat on the lounge

Me; nana do you miss your parents

She nodded her head cause her mouth was full

Me; your grandparents?

Amahle; yep \*popping the p\*

Me; but you never visit them

Amahle; \*laughing\* i dont have money to go to cape

I raised my eyebrow

Amahle; fine , its just i feel like old wounds will be open

Me; nana come on they are your grandparents

Amahle; yes then when i see them il just see my mum and dad and il start crying each and every day i dont want that papi

Me; i get that you scared but you punishing them , they lost their son and daughter in law now they slowly using their grandchild not fair babe

Amahle; papi

Me; im just saying now kiss me

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

I got on top off her and kissed her she just laughed during the kiss

Amahle; \*laughing\* dre stop

Me; no

She laughed even louder and i just looked at her i was falling deep for this girl

Me; your birthday is in 2 months time ne

Amahle; yep 1st may

Me; that will be on a Sunday

Amahle; planning to do something for me

Me; \*laughing\* no

Amahle; mxm well maybe i could go to my grandparents

Me; thats more like it

Amahle; but i wont see you baby

Me; haha il be with you dont worry

Amahle; you will come with me

Me; yes , but while you with your grandparents i will be doing my stuff

Amahle; ohk

She sat on top of me

Me; engathi you want to get naughty nje

Amahle; \*laughing\* no i just want to look at my babies face

Me; you make me happy you know that

Amahle; i do?

Me; yeah i just didnt think it would be like this you know

Amahle; like this

She planted a kiss

Me; and that

I pulled her in for a kiss and just kissed her she kissed me back and i deepened the kiss , i held her thighs and pulled her to my D. She moaned during the kiss and i continued kissing her she ran out off breath and broke it and just laid her head on my neck

Me; you ohk ?

She stayed silent and she realised i could not see her. She whispered to my ear

Amahle; yes

Me; can i ask you something ?

She looked at me

Amahle; yes

Me; no dont look at me when i ask you this

She laid her head on my shoulder again, my hands on her butt

Me; did you break your virginity

Amahle; yeah

Me.....

Amahle; dre

Me; its ohk i guess i knew it was going to happen

Amahle; would you prefer you have done it

Me; it doesnt matter

She looked at me

Amahle; it does to me

Me; well yeah , make you feel things you never felt before

Amahle; \*laughing\* im just joking , i wanted too but it never happened

Me; you rushing into it

Amahle; no, maybe im not sure sometimes i feel like an idiot when people talk about sex and i have nothing to say i want to feel it, the way you made me feel and what i was missing out but then again im like dont rush it, it will happen

Me; exactly and i wont rush you

I kissed her

Amahle; but now im scared with you especially

Me; \*laughing\* why with me

\*she pointed down at my boxers i laughed so loud

Me; nana you have not even seen it

Amahle; i felt it

Me; \*laughing\* that why you made that sound when we kissed

She nodded her head

Me; you wi... \*i paused\* let me stop before i say something that will scare you even more

Amahle; maybe its for the best

## INSERT #64

We cuddled on the couch pretty much the whole day talking about anything and everything. Around 7 pm

Me; want to go out and grab dinner?

Amahle; no will cook

Me; will

Amahle; yes now get up

I got up and we headed to the kitchen

Amahle; what do you know how to cook ?

Me; everything

Amahle; perfect, il do this and you will do that

Me; ohk

She cooked the meat, pumpkin while i did the rice and gravy

Amahle; how is your mum?

Me; shes good nana i mean she wants to get back on being in charge off the business

Amahle; your business

Me; \*laughing\* no nana family business, exports and imports trading and investments and its legal

Amahle; it was your parents

Me; more like my fathers cause my mum had her own career but the was a time they ran it together so we could not let it go into the ground we gave a reliable person proxy off it

Amahle; thats sweet

Me; \*laughing\* thats sweet

She punched me

Amahle; ungazongphaphela ( don't be forward)

Me; askies ke (I'm sorry) kiss me

Amahle; why would i

Me; cause you love me

She looked at me and said nothing

Me; i me...

She cut me off

Amahle; do i really?

Me; yes or you dont

She wrapped her arms around my neck

Amahle; i think i do

Me; well I don't think I know I do love you

Amahle; \*smiling\* i love you more

Me; serious

Amahle; yes

I lifted her up and she wrapped her legs around my waist

Amahle; am i heavy?

Me; no

Amahle; \*laughing\* you lying dre

Me; \*laughing\* will you ever agree with me like ever

Amahle; i will one day but right now you lying

Me; ohk nana get down ke

Amahle; \*laughing\* i knew it im heavy

Me; you not heavy for me but since it wont end then fine  
you heavy

Amahle; mxm

We continued cooking after an hour or 2 we were done

Me; you taking a shower with me

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

Me; come on why not

Amahle; no dre, then you will get turned on when i say no  
it will be like I'm being funny

Me; \*laughing\* i might get a hard on but we wont do  
anything

Amahle; serious

Me; yeah

We walked upstairs and opened water for us she poured  
the bubble and there were bubbles like hell

Amahle; get in first

Me; \*laughing\* if i get in first i will see you naked and  
thats what you avoiding right

Amahle; ohk you got a point leave il let you know when to  
come in

Me; ohk

I left the room after a couple of minutes

Amahle; come in

I opened the door and she was inside the tub , bubbles all around her

Me; now close your eyes

She did as i told her and i went in. She was sitting on the other end of the tub and i was on the other end of tub. I stretched my legs to the side of her body and she laid her feet on my stomach. She had to comment on my d cause her legs could feel it

Me; you have cute toes

Amahle; would you lick them

Me; why would i do that

Amahle; come on you said they are cute

Me; so i must lick them

Amahle; maybe they taste as good as they look

Me; \*laughing\* your toes are not made off candy mami

Amahle; you don't know that

I licked all ten of them and she could not stop laughing

Me; amahle

amahle;hmmm

Me; i love you

Amahle; \*smiling\* i love you too

Me; ready to get out

Amahle; yes now turn

I just closed my eyes and she got out off the water and i followed her. we didn't even bath we just sat in the water

Walked to my bedroom well i just wore my boxers and went downstairs and put on a movie for us . She came down and dished up for us. We ate while watching the movie, cuddled and went to bed.

Next day she was not next to me i got out off bed and went to look for her but she was swimming

Me; morning

Amahle; morning baby

Me; toast?

Amahle; will you do it

Me; why am i asking

Amahle; well in that case please

Me; ohk

I made her toast and i made my self cereal. She came in dripping wet and hugged me now i was wet. We ate our breakfast and the guys came

Dorian; hmmmm its nice over here

Me; what up man

Dorian; can we stop talking about business for once....

Beautiful

Amahle; hi dorian

Themba; look at you looking all se....

He paused cause he saw me looking at him

Amahle; \*laughing\* looking all what

Themba; never mind

Me; so what brings you here

Deon; we came to check up on you

Amahle; or us?

Me; thank you baby , you came to spy on us ne

Dorian; well we had to come see you two

Amahle : \*laughing\* let me go get dressed

She went up

Me; talk to me

Dorian; fara

Me; what does he want now

Deon; his back to doing his fucked up things now ,  
disturbing our distributors

Me; cant you get someone to handle him

Themba; boy you know you the only one who can handle  
him

Me; but i cant leave and amahle is only going tomorrow

Themba; so what must we do cause the nigga is making  
the business slow

Me; come on guys handle him

Dorian; cant you leave for like 2 hours or 1 while we stay  
with amahle and then we dont have to worry about him

Me; im not sure

Themba; come on boy

Me; let me go talk to her and you i need to talk to you

Deon ; about what

Me; im coming

I walked upstairs and she.....

INSERT #65

She was holding my gun

Me; can you put that down

Amahle; have you killed someone with it

Me; nana please put it down

Amahle; have you

Me; i will tell you when you put that down

She slowly put it on the bed and i grabbed it , removing her prints everywhere

Amahle; i was making the bed and when i removed the pillows it was under your pillow

Me; i know it was just dont touch it ever again ohk

Amahle; why do you sleep with it

Me; i will tell you everything when i come back , the guys will stay with you im going out for an hour or 2

Amahle; then you will tell me everything

I nodded my head

I quickly took a shower and wore sweatpants with a black top and left

#AMAHLE

I went downstairs and the guys were watching tv

Dorian; you ohk?

Me; yeah

Deon; come join us

I joined them on the sofa

Deon; so what did you 2 get up too

Me; where did dre go?

Themba; he will be back soon

Me; do you all make a living through this

Deon; through what

Me; crime

They kept quiet

Me; dre told me

Dorian; dre told you what we do

Me; well kind off , he told me he does not make money legally and some other stuff

Deon; well yeah he was right

Me; has dre ever killed someone

They kept quiet again

Dorian; mama why dont you ask dre all of this when he comes back

Me; i was hoping you would tell me we are friends after all right

Themba; mama listen we are friends but there are certain things you should not know and certain things that dre should tell you and certain things we can tell you

Me; oh

Them; yes

Me; what are things that you can tell me

Themba; we care about you

I just laughed

Dorian; so dont stress about all the other things ohk

Me; ohk i wont so im going to bath ne

Them; ohk

I walked upstairs and bathed and just remained in the water for a while. After a while i went out and took out the clothes i was going to wear. I took my phone and sat on the other side of bed on the floor and dialled my grandmothers number

It ringed but no answer , i tried it again but still nothing and i just jumped into conclusions i got so scared and tried it again but i was lucky this time

Grandma; \*coughing\* baby

Me; hi ma

Grandma; how are you baby

Me; im good ma i just miss you

Grandma; besengithi usikohliwe (i thought you forgot about us)

Me; never gogo nawe uyazi ( never ma and you know that)

Grandma; manje uzoza nini baby ngapha we miss you ( so when are you coming this side baby we miss you)

Me; i miss you too so much and i was thinking of coming there on my birthday

She sounded so excited

Grandma; sivele sajabula ukuzwa lokho (we are so happy to hear that)

Me; \*laughing\* uphi pa ( where is pa)

Grandma; nangula (his here)

Me; hi pa

Grandad ; helo my angel

Me; you ohk?

Grandad; yes baby im fine how are you?

I nodded my head and remembered they cant see me

Me; yes pa the khuse`s are treating me really good but i miss home. I miss you all including daddy and mummy

Grandma; i know its not easy baby , for us too but try your best ohk

Me; ohk so what you going to buy for me for my birthday

They both laughed

Grandad; just get here and you will see

Me; so you wont mind if i bring a friend

Grandma; khuse daughter

Me; mmmm i can also come with her but im not talking about mbali but a friend of mine

Grandma; umkhwenyana? ( son in law)

I laughed so loud

Me; nina niyamufuna umkhwenyana ( do you want a son in law)

Grandad; mina ngizomdonora nje klaar ( the only thing i will do is beat him up finish)

Grandma; ai suka man and baby siyamfuna (we want him)

Me; \*laughing\* ay mama azangengithi umkhwenyana ( no ma i didnt say im bringing you guys a son in law)

Grandad; uyabo azange athi umkhwenyana ( you see she never said son in law)

Me; and i didnt even say umfana ( i didnt even say it was a boy)

Grandma; intombazane ( its a girl)

Me; no

Grandma; baby kanti umfana noma intombazane ( baby is it boy or girl?)

Me; umfana ( boy)

Grandad; sobona kuthi uzolalaphi ngoba not lah... ( will have to see where he will sleep cause not here)

I just laughed so loud and a phone rang but it was not mine i turned and dre was just standing there i blushed when i saw him and he smiled

Me; ngyanithanda ne ( i love you ohk)

Them; nathi syakthanda baby ( we love you too baby)

Me; ngizonifonela futhi ende nibambe ama phone ( il call you again and please answer your phone)

Grandma; if isesandleni (if its in my hand)

Me; ay ma it must always be with you

Grandma; ohk baby bye

Me; bye

I hung up

Dre; so im not the future husband \*holding his chest\*

Me; \*laughing\* my grandfather said uzokdonora you wanted me to say , his coming with me

Dre; he said that

Me; yes

Dre; eish that means il always be the friend

I just laughed and hugged him

Me; when did you get back

Dre; not so long ago you missed me

Me; maybe

Dre; really

Me; yes

Dre; ohk show me how much you missed

I tried to kiss him but he shook his head

Me; \*laughing\* how

he pointed at the towel i just laughed and turned away but he held my wrist and pulled me so close to him, his arm on my waist

Dre; should i take it off

Me; \*laughing\* you want to

He held it

Me; \*laughing\* dre

Dre; should i take it off yes or no

Me; no

Dre; ohk lets go out

Me; where too?

dre ; maybe movie then dinner

Me; ohk let me get dressed

Dre; im going to bath while you dress up ke

Me; ohk have the guys left

Dre; yes

INSERT #65 ( BONUS - JUST TO SHOW YOU MY APPRECIATION)

I walked out off the shower dripping wet, towel wrapped around my waist. Amahle was sitting on the other side off the bed i caught her drooling over me on the mirror i stared at her and she wasnt even aware i was looking at her

me; should i take it off \*smiling\*

she looked away

amahle; let me leave you  
me; no dont finish up with what you were doing  
Amahle ; you sure i dont want to see your thing  
i just laughed and said nothing  
I took the clothes i was going to wear and got dressed  
Amahle ; can i turn  
me; im done  
she turned and she looked really good, she was my baby  
after all  
Amahle ; you look good  
Me ; not as much as you  
Amahle ; of course  
i laughed and walked up to her  
Me ; you my girl you know that  
Amahle ; remind me that im your girl  
i kissed her and she kissed me back. I held her thighs and  
picked her up, she wrapped her legs around my waist and  
i slowly laid her on the bed , i broke the kiss and sucked  
the side off her neck i knew what my intention was off  
doing that i kissed her again and whispered to her ear so  
soft  
Me ; \*slowly and soo soft\* you my girl

I kissed her again and slowly broke the kiss, i looked down on her and her lips were still pouty

me; lets go

i got off her , turned and she was still in that position

me; \*laughing\* you need to stop doing that now get up

She slowly got up and walked to the mirror

Amahle ; dre!

Me ; hmmmm

amahle ; i have a hickey

I stood behind her

Me ; i know i did it

Amahle ; why?

Me ; you said i must remind you who`s girl you are i did with this so you will never forget

Amahle ; \*laughing\* thank you very much

Me ; can we go now

Amahle ; yes

We walked out off the bedroom and headed to my car.

Got in and i drove off. We arrived and headed to the movie theatre. We stood at the line until it was time for us

and we were helped by a young lady she was beautiful  
and she could not remove her eyes from me

Me ; so you ok with this one

Her eyes were on the girl that was helping us out

Amahle ; yes

She didnt remove her eyes off her

Me ; ok will watch this one

Amahle ; i thought this only happened in movies

Me ; what?

amahle;....

Me ; mama

Amahle ; nothing

She gave us our tickets and we went to the snack station

Amahle ; i thought it was only in movies were other girls  
would drool over guys and the gf would not even be  
noticed

Me ; \*laughing\* they were drooling over me

Amahle ; as if you didnt even notice

Me ; i didnt cause my eyes were on you

Amahle ; \*smiling\* they better

I tried to kiss her but she just covered my face with her hand

Me ; you not going to kiss me

Amahle; no

Me ; i bet she would love to kiss me

Amahle ; \*laughing\* dre i will kill you

I raised my hands up.

We bought our snacks and watched the movie we would be watching after 2 hours it was over and we went to grab something to eat. Around 9 we drove back to my place and talked like always

The next day was woken up by my babies breakfast she left around 5pm. I went to the warehouse where the guys were at

Me; hey wheres deon

Shane; underground

I went there

Me; hey man

Deon'; sure boy, no put this with this \*talking to the other guys\*

Me; i need to talk to you

He turned and focussed on me

Deon; whats up

Me; i need you to wear a suit for mbali graduation party

Deon; \*laughing so loud\* what?

Me; please man

Deon; \*laughing\* fuck no and i told her what im telling you right now i aint wearing any suit

Me; she did me a huge favour in return for that

Deon; thats your business that does not concern me

Me; please man

Deon; what did she do for you

Me; she is the reason i spent 3 days with amahle

Deon; you the one who gained here and i have to look hideous in a suit no!

Me; what you want man name it

Deon; \*laughing\* why you even doing this you got what you wanted and its not like mbali will turn back time and take amahle away from you , you dont have to return the favour anymore

Me; ohk you got a point

Deon; exactly you the suit, tux kind off guy not me man  
which is why i never attend any meetings with you

Me; ai cool

## #AMAHLE

I walked inside the house cause he dropped me off at the corner

Me; helo everybody \*smiling\*

Mbali mum; helo baby, awusajabulanga ( You look happy )

Me; eish ma owazi yazi ( you have no idea ma)

Mbali mum; nifunde kanjan (how did you study)

Me; kahle ma siyicedile lento besiyoyenza ngyabonga for kungivumela ( good ma we finished what we were doing thank you for allowing me)

Mbali mum; anytime baby with anything that concerns school work

Me; yes ma umbali?

Mbali mum; since ahambe ngaboma 2 (she left around 2)

Me; ohk

Mbali mum; Monday ubuyela eskolweni ne ( Monday you going back to school right)

Me; eish ma cabanga ibreak ye viki ( yes ma just imagine ,  
a break for only a week)

Mbali mum; mele nifunde (you must study)

Me; yes ma

I went to put my bags in my room and went back again to  
talk to her

Me; ma nge birthday yami bengifuna kuya kugogo ( ma  
on my birthday i wanted to go see my granny)

Mbali mum; ahhhh bantu bakukhumble ( they must miss  
you so bad)

Me; kakhulu,( too much) i was talking to them yesterday  
and they were very excited to hear i might be coming that  
side for my birthday

Mbali mum; mina baby im ohk with it il give you money  
for transport

Me; no need ma

Mbali; no baby you also my child so i have to take care of  
you

I just smiled to her and went to my bedroom to take a  
nap

Girl; wake up

Me; hmmmm

Her; wake up

I slowly opened my eyes and it was mbali i just smiled

Mbali; he gave it to you so good you even sleeping

Me; voetsek what if your mum hears us

Mbali; dont worry she wont so tell me everything

Me; like what

Mbali; did he pop the cherry

Me; \*laughing\* no

Mbali; you spent 3 days together 3 and you didnt have sex  
what the hell were you busy with

Me; talking getting to know each other

Mbali; and he didnt mind

Me; no he didnt

Mbali; oh yes he did we talking about andre here

Me; he did not so just leave it

mbali; ohk but you enjoyed

Me; too much listen dont you want to go to capetown with  
me on my birthday

Mbali; why are you even asking me that

Me; \*laughing\* cause i want to know

Mbali; of course i do

Me; great

Mbali; serious we going

Me; yes lets go and eat

We went to eat, washed the dishes and then went to bed

INSERT #66

#AMAHLE

Saturday morning woke up and did my bed. Then went to make myself a cup of coffee then sat at the lounge. Mbali joined me and just watched tv. Then we began cleaning while her mum was busy with curtains and her dad was washing the car. After cleaning we went to bath and just stayed at home the whole day. Around 5 we began cooking and by 8 we were done. Around 10 we were all seating on the lounge watching tv and my phone rang

Me; helo

Dre; my beautiful queen

Me; \*smiling\* you ohk

Dre; maybe

Me; what does that mean

Dre; it means if you get out , you will find me outside and when i see you i will be good

Me; \*laughing\* this time

Dre; mama please i miss you

Me; hold on.... Ma no baba can i please go see my friend outside

Mbali dad; angithandi ama ntombazane aphuma ngaleskhathi amahle ( i dont like it when girls go out this time amahle)

Mbali dad was strict i mean strict and mbali was able to go most of the time and get back the next day is because he is constantly not at home. His job requires him to travel and sometimes he wont be home for like 3 months so when he was around mbali sat still at home

Me; ngyazi baba sokuthi uphuma kude ngizobe ngila egatini ( i know baba its just they live really far il just be here at the gate)

Mbali dad; hamba ( go)

I smiled and mbali got up

Mbali dad; manje wena uyaphi ( so where do you think you going)

Mbali; ngiyamukhapha baba ( im accompanying her )

Mbali dad; umngani wakho ori oka amahle( is she your friend or amahle friend)

Mbali; ngyamazi nami ( i also know her)

Mbali dad; anibeni neorder ( have order the 2 off you)

Mbali followed me and we walked to the gate i got in but didnt close my door cause mbali was sitting on the pavement

andre was laughing

Me; what?

dre; ibani ne order ( have order!)

Mbali; how did you know that?

He looked at me

Me; \*laughing\* you didnt hung up dre

Dre; you said hold on not hung up

Me; mxm \*laughing\* you annoying yazi

Dre; so im guessing the big guy is home

Mbali; yho ntwana like we in jail right now

Dre; ay that means i wont see you for a while

Me; yeah

Dre; you wish , im going to see you everyday

Me; ; of course you will

Mbali; eish let me go guys i love you ne

Us; we love you too

She closed the door and walked back in

Dre; and how you my mami

Me; good papi you?

Dre; im good now

I placed my legs on his and he locked the door

Me; are you trying to ignore certain questions

Dre; what you mean

Me; you said we would talk about you having a gun under your pillow

Dre; well i forgot and you should have reminded me

Me; well i remember

Dre; shoot with the questions ke mami

Me; have you killed someone

Dre; wait do i have to be honest or be honest to protect you

Me; i want you to tell me the truth

Dre; and you wont storm out off here and be mad at me or dump me

Me; mmmmm \*she paused\*

Dre; fuck that im not telling you shit

Me; im sorry i was just thinking and yes i wont

Dre; your feeling wont change

Me; no papi

Dre; ohk ask ke

Me; have you killed someone

Dre; yeah

Me;..... \* i breathed in and out\*

Dre; you ohk

Me; yes why do you do this

Dre; the way i make money?

Me; yes

Dre; i always wanted to make quick cash , from the time i was still young and now it has become really easy for me and in a weird way i love it

Me; the gun

Dre; i sleep with it cause years back some guys i dont know how but everything has a way came into my house and attacked me since from then i sleep with it under my pillow so what ever happens im protected

Me; and what abo...

Dre; 3 questions a day and you done for the day

Me; but you didnt tell me that

Dre; im telling you know . When will you get back from church

Me; around 1

Dre; i cant see you tomorrow but Monday i will pick you up

Me; you sure

Dre; yes kiss me so i will leave

Me; please

He just kissed me and i kissed him back. His lips were so soft

Dre; i dont have to ask my girl to kiss me

Me; whatever bye papi

Dre; goodnight mami

Me; i love you ohk

Dre; i love you too mami

Walked back in and they were still watching tv i said my goodnight and went to my room. Dre called me to let me know he arrived then i slept. Sunday just went to church came back cooked and got busy with my books. The

whole week dre picked me up but i did not spend much time with him cause i was studying most off the time. I called and we would talk over the phone sometimes he would come and see me and i would spare just an hour or more

## #ANDRE

It was already april and mbali graduation day well only her family could go to school. The brunch was already set up mbali had a theme , girls dresses and guys suits i was still trying to convince deon, i took my car keys and headed to his place

Me; \*laughing\* man please dont do this

Deon; well you look good

Me; and you will look good as me , if you do this

Deon; nahhh man

Me; do you have any idea how happy mbali will be if you show up in a suit not this and consider this mbali family will be there , they will want us to marry mbali not you cause you wearing jeans

Deon; no

Me; il give you extra 15 if you wear it

Deon; \*laughing\* how desperate can you be

Me; im really desperate man , i dont want to disappoint her , i promised her this

Deon; i want 15 in my account

Me; cool

He went up and went to change and showed up in navy blue tux , this idiot looked way better looking in a tux than a pair off jeans but he was against it, he took everything he will need and we left. After few minutes off arriving in the venue mbali showed up and her face when he saw deon priceless

Me; come here

She walked in between my arms

Me; congratulations my lala, i love you ohk

She got teary

Mbali; love you too

Me; you see what i did for you

Mbali; \*laughing\* thank you, he wont stop fiddling

We both laughed, i handed her gift, speeches were said, tears shed it was really nice no lie and we all had fun,we got mbali so drunk that she blacked out

29 we were leaving for the cape, i took my bags and headed to the car , then picked up themba and shane and

met up with deon, dorian and jack. We headed to the girls house

Me; go in, they know you as mbali bf

Deon; dont be like that

Themba; well one off us has to go in we cant end up here

Me; yes boy go in

Deon; fine

He walked in

## INSERT #67

I got out off the car as they walked out carrying bags

Dre; sawbona ma ( hi ma)

Mbali mum; yes andre, take care of my girls drive slow  
you understand me

me; yes mam

I placed their bags on the boot and said our goodbye and left. She sat on the front seat cause i was driving

Me; and you had to wear pjs

Amahle ; i wanted to be warm so please tu

Themba; \*laughing\* you look cute in your pjs

I looked at him on the mirror  
The car i was driving it was me, amahle, themba , and shane other car mbali, deon, dorian and jack  
Amahle ; so what snacks did you bring guys  
Shane gave her the pnp plastic and it was just sweets  
Shane; or you want crisps  
Amahle ; yes doritos..  
Me ; sweet chilli  
Amahle; \*laughing\* you forward cause you know me ne  
Me; i have too  
Themba; so the both of you are serious ne  
Amahle ; yes arent we baby  
I just laughed  
Amahle ; so what did you guys get me for my birthday  
Shane; ay manje nawe your birthday on workers day  
Amahle ; manje (so?)  
Themba; its a slow down man workers day on the other hand its your birthday  
Amahle ; woooo its not my fault my mother gave birth to me that day  
Themba; nana do you have a picture of your mother

Amahle ; yeah

Themba; can i see it

Me ; why you never showed me

Amahle ; you never asked

She went through her phone and gave it themba

Themba; this is your mum

Shane; let me see

He gave shane

Amahle ; yes

Shane; fuck she is beautiful

Me ; let me see

He took the phone then looked at me

Me ; this is your mum

Amahle ; \*laughing\* yes

Me ; she looks young and beautiful fuck you look like your mum

Themba; his right ma you look like her fuck your mum  
eshisa

Amahle voetsek

Shane; your dad was lucky man , she looks like a model  
phela

Amahle ; thank you guys now stop it tu

I looked at her cause she got teary

Me ; its ok to cry you know

Amahle not in front of you

Themba; come on we your family you can cry

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

She ate my chips while we were talking about a whole lot of things she eventually fell asleep

Themba; but boy to be honest you really love mahle ne

Me; way too much

Shane; so you serious this time around

Me; yeah im way deep with her

Themba; marriage

Me; \*laughing\* tsek ntwana, im pulling over your turn to drive

Themba; yibeke esidini ( put it on the side)

I pulled over and got out off the car. Went to amahle side and removed the belt, picked her up and laid her on the backseat, shane moved to the front seat and themba drove. Her head was on my legs. I opened the window and smoked cause i was craving so bad.

Shane; so they know we coming that side

Me; yeah i let them know and marlene is happy as fuck

A phone rang

Me; whos phone is that

Themba; r kelly definitely not mine is it not mama phone

Shane took it on the dashboard

Me; who is it?

shane looked at me

Me; who is it?

Shane; brandon

Me; give it to me

He handed it to me. I answered it but said nothing

Brandon; baby thanks for taking my call please i miss you

Me; i thought you were only using her

Brandon; who the fuck is this

Me; the nigga she is fucking with

Brandon; i want to talk to amahle

Me; talk to me il pass on the message

Brandon; im going to take each and every shit you have ,  
your name, your reputation, your business and most  
importantly im going to have my girl back

I held the speaker

Me; ntwana stop the car

Themba; yini( what?)

Me; stop the car

He stopped, i removed amahle from my lap and got off the car

Me; il fuck you up man , dont fucken mess with me you want to try your chance try it and see where you end up but one thing i can tell you is you will end up 6 feet underground before the end of this year. Dont forget who the fuck i am i aint no bitch you want a fight il give you one but just know i never lose i dont have what i have on my body for show off i stand with what they mean and if you want to take me on \*shouting\* YOU GOT A FIGHT WITH ME THEN AND KNOW YOU WILL NEVER FUCK WITH HER AS LONG AS I BREATH BEFORE YOU CAN FUCK WITH HER I WILL BE SIX FEET UNDERGROUND

Brandon; its on

Me; fuck you

I hung up and went back to the car

Shane; whats wrong man

Me; im going to kill brandon

Themba; you sure you want to do this

Me; more than anything this guy wants to get on my bad side and get me to tick and his winning im going to give him what he wants

Shane; think about amahle before you do anything

Me; im doing this for amahle

Themba; does she want that

Me; i dont fucken care \*shouting\*

Amahle; hmmmm

sHe turned from my lap

Me; \*whispering\* im going to take on this guy so dont even try to stop me

Shane; ohk man

We drove for another hour. Amahle woke up. She stretched and just smiled when she looked at me

Me; were you dreaming about me

Amahle; no

She kissed me

Me; you ohk

I brushed her hair

She nodded her head

Themba; its about time you wake up

Amahle; just leave me alone

She placed her legs on top off mine , and wrapped her arm with mine and got so close to me that i did not mind

Amahle; how long have we been on the road

Me; 7 hours

Amahle; and mbali

Me; im not even sure where they are but if they have a problem they will call us

Amahle; ohk i really need the toilet please get in on this garage

Themba; you lucky cause i was going in vele

We drove in, she rushed out with her pjs

Me; im going to buy us food

Shane; ohk

I got out off the car and walked in , it was steers i bought everyone something to eat and walked out, she was standing with the guys

Me; here

Amahle; thank you papi

Themba; \*imitating her \* thank you papi

Amahle; jealous cause you not someone papi

Themba; eish thinking about it , i think i am

I just laughed , shane took over me and mami sat at the back again

## INSERT #68

After eating she cuddled next to me and began talking with the guys but they were boring us. I pulled her in for a kiss and she kissed me back. I deepened the kiss and it got heated " sit on top off me" i whispered to her ear and then she sat on top off me.

Themba; you 2 better not be fucking

we ignored them, I held the behind of her neck and brought her closer to me. She was moaning between the kiss and i moved her head to the left and licked her neck she moaned

Shane; no guys , its not just you here

I kissed her back on the lips and she broke the kiss and laid her head on my shoulder

Me; we not fucking , just focus on the road

After i said that she kissed me again and i just smiled " relax" i whispered to her ear cause what i was about to do might freak her out. I moved my hand inside her pjs and she held my shirt tight in a fist. I moved my hand to her underwear and rubbed her clit with her underwear , she

held me even more tighter " dre" she said that slowly with her breathing getting heavy

Me; ntwana ncela uvule ivolume ( boy please turn on the volume )

thembA; \*laughing\* ay ntwana never sise karini ( no way boy we in the car)

Me; ay man asi... ( no man we.....)

Amahle turned and moved her body to the front seat and set the volume to max. I just laughed and she was back in the position she was in. She kissed me again and i did what i was doing earlier i rubbed her clit with her underwear and her grip got tighter , with my other hand i covered her mouth not too be loud and she was moaning and biting my hand but i did not remove it. I moved her underwear to the side and she was wet . She looked at me and i just kissed her so she would lose focus. And she did her arms around my head and i inserted 1 finger inside off her she breathed in loudly and moved her head to my shoulders i could feel her lips on my shoulders and i went in and out with it, she bit my shoulder i increased the pace and inserted 2 that drove her crazy she pushed her head back biting her lower lip i loved the look on her face she went back to the position she was in laid her head on my shoulder , She moaned on my shoulder and bit my shoulder till i felt she had enough. I kissed her and i think we both zoned off

I was woken up by the sun shining towards my eyes. I slowly opened them and amahle was still on top of me sleeping. We had parked on a garage and themba and shane were sleeping

Me; shawty.... Shawty

Amahle; hmm

Me; i need you to wake up

She opened her eyes and got off me. I got off the car i went to take a piss and when i came back they were all up

Me; where is deon and them

Themba; i dont even know call em

I called deon

Me; man

Deon; sure

Me; where are you?

Deon; where are you guys

Me; 2 hours away

Deon; ohk same here

Me; ohk will meet when we arrive

Deon; ohk

I hung up and we got in. Went to the driver seat and sat with shane while themba was at the back with amahle amahle; can we arrive already like i want to see myself bath

Themba; i want to get drunk

amahle; you drink a lot that pretty face will go away before you reach 30

Themba; just imagine this face are you crazy

amahle; \*laughing\* that face !

After 2 hours we finally arrived and went to my apartment . We walked up the stairs

amahle; who lives here

me; me

amahle; when dre

me; \*laughing\* its my place but one of my guys lives here

aMahle; hmmmm

i knocked, then themba then shane

amahle; was that really necessary

Shane; yes

As she was about to talk, the door opened and the girl only had underwear on no bra her breast were up for

show. I looked at amahle and i just laughed because she was looking at me some kind off way

Girl; \*biting her lip\* turner and the jozi squad

Themba; hehhh siyi jozi squad abanyi abantu abalana ( wow we the jozi squad how fucked up can people from here be)

I pushed the door to the side and let myself in. I walked upstairs and this nigga was fucking on my bed

Me; what the fuck do you think you doing in my fucken bed you will wash these sheets

He quickly got off the girl

Adel; turner

Me; im tired of you making this place a brothel, you will take all your hoes out, you will change my sheets then clean this damn bedroom you fucken disgusting

I walked downstairs and my baby looked so cute in her pjs i just smiled and walked up to her

Me; they all leaving dont worry

Amahle; im never allowing you to come this side alone

Adel came downstairs with sheets on one hand and his girls following her. He got rid of everyone and cleaned up the place. Amahle went to take a shower

Adel; and who is that

Me; none of your damn business, will be here for a while  
keep your hoes away

Themba; and keep your eyes away from her

Adel; whats up with this girl are you making money off  
her why you protecting her

Shane; just listen to those instructions

After a few minutes deon, dorian, mbali and jack arrived  
and everyone was happy to see one another amahle came  
downstairs while mbali went to bath and she looked  
beautiful as always

Me; you look beautiful

Amahle; thank you

We kissed

Adel; no fucken way

Themba; what?

He was looking at amahle as if she was the last supper

Adel; she is turners girl \*pointing at amahle\*

Us....

Adel; you protective off her, you did not want me to talk  
about her or even look at her, you dont want people to  
know your girl she has got to be your girl and you just

kissed and you dont want any hoes \*shouting\* she is your girl \*covering his mouth\*

Amahle; \*whispering\* is he crazy

Me; \*laughing\* i think he is

Adel; am i right ?

Themba; you just talking shit

Adel; whatever come on guys im on your team , i just want to know

Dorian; so you will tell the entire world and they end up coming for her, now stop talking about this shit

Adel; ohk

## #AMAHLE

When mbali was done they dropped us off at my grandparents house

Mbali; this house is big and beautiful

Me; thank you

We walked in and my grandfather was outside immediately when he saw me he got off from his chair and came to me i hugged him and i suddenly began crying dont even know why. My grandma came out off the house and rushed to me, my grandfather hugged mbali while i hugged my grandmother

Ma; come on in girls

The aroma of freshly baked scones hit my nostrils hard

Me; you baked ma

Ma; of course i did , i know you love my scones

Me; you know me too well

Ma; look at you khuse baby all grown up

Mbali; \*smiling\* thank you gogo

Ma; you both take after me growing up to be beautiful  
girls like i was

Me; \*laughing\* ay mama ao

We walked to our room will be sleeping on separate  
rooms but next door to each other

Mbali; im going to enjoy my holiday here

Me; \*laughing\* same here

## INSERT # 69

Around 9 i called mami cause i wanted her to meet some  
people

Amahle ; papi

Me; mami

Amahle ; where are you

Me; coming to fetch you

Amahle; where too?

Me ; theres someone i want you to meet

Amahle ; oh ohk

Me; will your grandparents allow you to leave

Amahle ; yes

Me ; ohk will be there in 15 get ready no mbali

I hung up and sorted a few other thing i had already bathed , then we left to pick up the girls , got there and i called her to come out , they got in and i drove off

Amahle; so where are we going

Me; how are your grandparents

Amahle; \*laughing\* they good and happy to see us ,you should meet them

Me ; no thank you

Amahle; why not

Me; i just feel like they will tell me im not good enough for their daughter and i cant face that

Amahle; they would never say that

Me; never

Amahle; yes never

We got to marlene house and walked in

Mbali; this place is scary as fuck

Dorian; \*laughing\* wow you actually scared off something

Me; im also shocked to hear that

Mbali; voetsek

I just opened the door, passed the kitchen and headed to the lounge where the whole crew was there it was a full house

When we appeared from the lounge , marlene just smiled as if the was no tomorrow i think that was the first time ever since iv known this guy smile like that, he stood up and he was starring at ma, i looked at mama and she had the same facial expression actually everyone there

Me; am i missing something

Godfather; look at you

Amahle; \*smiling\* no look at you !

They hugged and suddenly everyone there stood up to hug her

Guy 1; the queen is back to her palace

Amahle; \*laughing\* i told you i was going to come back

Guy 3; its good to have the queen back

Guy 2; and she still looks breath taking

Girl; i never thought id see you ever again mahle

Amahle; eish i know its been a while

It looked like they knew her and i was just standing there confused as fuck , and it was not just me

Themba; can we just stop for a moment and try to process this

Marlene; i cant believe you here

Amahle ; i cant believe im seeing you, iv missed you so much

she hugged him again

Guy 2; you still look good

Amahle; \*smiling\* thank you biggie

Guy 2; so why did it take the queen a year before she came back or still running away from someone

I raised my eyebrow

Guy 1; does orlando know you here

Amahle; no he does not know and dont let that change

Girl2 ; that nigga is always stalking your house, im sure he already knows you here

Me ; wait can someone tell me whats going on?

Deon; please someone talk  
She sat next to marlene  
Marlene; no you tell me how you know my girl  
Us; your girl??

Amahle laughed

Amahle; before jozi these guys were my buddies my body guards my everything until i moved, mbali you remember when i told you about the godfather and i said to you if i ever was to meet andre i would ask him

She nodded her head

Amahle ; and you remember when i knew what your tattoos meant

Me ; \*laughing\* marlene

Amahle; yes and i told you my ex bf was a .... Name orlando

I covered my face

Dorian; so you all know each other

Amahle ; yes

Marlene; but how do you know each other

I looked at amahle

Me ; she is the girl im always telling you about

Marlene laughed

Marlene ; she is the girl you crazy for

Me ; yeah

Marlene; what did you do to my boy

Amahle ; \*laughing\* nothing

Guy 3; this is some weird shit but also trouble

Mbali; trouble?

Marlene; im afraid so

Amahle ; well let me guess orlando right

Guy 1; thats right

Marlene; orlando wont be glad to know you 2 are fucking with each other as for you what were you thinking getting involved with him knowing what he was knowing very well that orlando and him can take each others heads off

Amahle; i never thought we would come to the cape

Marlene; you shitting with me right

Me; come on man thats unnecessary

Marlene; no , she knows better than this i taught her better than this didnt i

Amahle;.....

Themba; you telling her shit for something that was out off her hands

Marlene; when did you know what he has , before or after you started fucking

Me; no man thats enough

Marlene; im talking to her stay out off this

Me; fuck no

Themba; thats one shit we cant do

I had a lot off respect for marlene but with my mami i was willing to lose all off that

Amahle; papi its fine

Marlene; she said its fine now when did you know?

Amahle; before

Guy 3; mahle no , you caused trouble for yourself you know that now

Me; as long as im around she will be fine so why dont all off you stay the fuck out off my relationship with her , if orlando wants to stir up trouble il sort it out

Marlene; see what you did his ready to sort it out , he kills him and he starts a war for us killing more people when the was just peace

Amahle ; can you give me a break i heard you ohk

Me; i wont stand for this marlene

Deon; you being rather rude to her

Marlene; \*laughing\* wow you have turned all my boys weak just look at them , they look like they ready to kill me

Amahle;.....

Guy 1; mahle

Amahle....

Guy 2; mahle talk to us

Amahle; hmmmm

Guy 1; listen just forget about it ohk , he missed you thats why his acting like this but you also know this was not the way especially dating someone like turner knowing who is still crazy about you

Amahle; yeah and im sorry for that but i wont apologise for falling in love with him

Me; yes

Marlene; i dont know who changed you or him

Amahle; dont be like that

Marlene; like what mahle

Amahle; the way you are cant you just be happy for me

Marlene; im happy for you baby, but im just afraid that this \*pointing at me and amahle\* will cause trouble for the 2 gangs thats all im saying

Me; and like i said il sort out the problem

Guy 2; but this looks real

Girl; way too real man

#AMAHLE

We hang out there for a while and later that day. Dropped us off home and i just went to bed halfway through my sleep. I had a weird dream someone was calling me

Guy; amahle

Me;....

Guy; amahle

I slowly opened my eyes and i quickly jumped and almost screamed if he didnt hold my mouth for me to keep quiet

Guy; dont scream please

I just looked at him with my eyes wide open, i was half naked and he was in my bedroom

Guy; i will remove my hands please just dont scream

INSERT #70

#AMAHLE

Me: What are you doing here, how did you even get in here

Guy; come on you know i know how to get in your window

Me; that was because we were dating you cant just use my window to get into my grandparents house

Guy; i had to see you

Me; how did you even know i was back

Guy; word gets out fast

Me; orlando get out

Guy; i just want to talk to you

Me; no

Guy; please i just want to apologise to you

Me; for what or for fucking my best friend, i will never ever forgive you for that EVER

Him; please keep your voice down before you wake up anyone

Me; get out before i scream

Him; im sorry ohk, im sorry for fucking her but it was just a fuck but you know i loved you

Me; oh wow so you sleep with my closest friend and you supposedly love me whats wrong with you

Him; whats wrong with you, whats this shit i hear you seeing turner

Me; turner?

Him; dont even lie to me

Me; so what if i am?

Him; how can you betray me like this ? You seeing that nigga when you know our history why you acting like a cheap bi.....

I raised my hand up to slap him but he held my hand

Me; get out off my room

Him; im sorry for calling you a bitch but you cant be dating both sides amahle one moment you with us one moment you with them

Me; what is happening in my life does not concern you

Him; it concerns me if you fucking with that bitch

me; you really crazy dude

him; watch it amahle

Me; or what? You have hit me before nothing new there

Him; why you doing this

Me; doing what?

Him; why you seeing him ? Im sure you nothing but his bitch

Me; his nothing like you and which is why im going to appreciate every shit he does for me

Him; but he will never love you like i did

Me; you love me ,you !\*poking him\* you didnt even come to me when my father died and say something you didnt

Him ; how could i , you were still angry at me for what happened

Me; not even a text " sorry amahle about your father " i loved you so much and opened to you about everything i was always there for you gave you my shoulder to cry on when shit went down for you, i was there for you when you had nothing and i helped you out but you just spit on my face

He held my hands

Me; dont touch me

He removed them

Him; but you also would not stop hanging out with those

.....

Me; and i told you i met them before you and i wont stop my friendship with them because of your history and they were there for me. I had about 5 shoulders to cry on and they supported me something that you failed

Him; amahle i have changed just give us a chance

Me; no , im with someone so much better than you and i would be stupid to get back with you

He looked at me and he was pissed

Me; now get out i never want to see you again

He pushed me to the bed and i fell on my back he sat on top off me and held my hands above my head cause i was fighting him. He looked at me and at my breast

Him; you were mine first and theres no way in hell a .... Will take what belongs to me

Me; get off me

Him; i will kill this bf of yours then you will cry on my shoulder you mine baby

He squeezed my chin and kissed me but i kept turning my head

Orlando; happy birthday my angel

He got off me and left after that i couldnt even sleep anymore

Next morning woke up and went to the kitchen my grandma was holding a cake , pa a paper bag and mbali

Them; happy birthday to you , happy birthday to you \*singing\*

Me; thank you guys

I hugged them all and cut my cake. We sat on the lounge  
and i cut my cake

Me; thank you so much i hugged them all must i open  
them now or

Pa; anytime baby

Mbali; when im not around

Me; \*laughing\* im always with you mos

Mbali; you will make a plan

I just laughed

Ma; you look tired kodwa baby

Me; didnt get much sleep ma

Pa; whats wrong or you were too excited

Me; nothing wrong maybe that was the case

They laughed

My phone rang and i just smiled cause it was dre

Me; papa

He began singing and the were other voices so i figured it  
was the guys i just laughed

Me; thank you guys i love you so much

Themba; how old are you now

Me; 21

Dorian; 2 first on the way

I just laughed

Dre; happy birthday mami

Me; thank you baby

Dre; so am i seeing you today cause i know our celebration is happening when we go back to jozi

Me; \*laughing\* yes it is and i hope so

Dre; how about we all go to lunch today and your family

Me; they would love that

Dre; ohk will pick you up at 12

Me; ohk

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

I hung up

Me; so guys they picking us up for lunch at 12 ohk so get ready

Pa; who?

Me; a friend of mine pa

I kissed him on the cheek and went to put the dishes on the sink it was still early

Me; im going out guys ohk

Ma; where

Me; il be back ma

I think they figured where i was going ,i left mbali behind and took my grandfathers car

I went to my parents grave , they were next to each other. It was clean so i figured these 2 came and cleaned it up. I sat on top of them and i just cried

Me; i miss you so much guys , i think about you everyday \*smiling\* i hope you singing for me up there \* i let out a slight laugh\* i can already hear you bass dad and mums angelic voice haha. Im doing really good at school yazi, im trying my best i made 2 friends aminah and nokwanda they really nice. Finance is very tight i cant afford to lose my bursary in a couple of years i will be dr amahle or dr adams \* i laughed\* im just joking but i am seeing this guy his name is andre he will be meeting pa today if pa likes him then i know you would have liked him to dad and mum i know you would have loved him, dont complain dad he is very sweet and i really love him i wish he met you i know you would have also liked him. Ma and pa were so happy to see me , i was so scared to visit them because off certain memories but im over that i really love you guys and i will never stop loving you, i hope you also

good and proud off me i have to go now i love you so much \* i held back my tears \*

I walked back to my grandfathers car , someone tapped my shoulder and i quickly turned

Me; like really are you stalking me

Him; i wanted to check up on you

Me; just leave me alone

I opened my door

Him; im sorry you have to spend your birthday like this

Me; as if you care, leave my door orlando

Him; will you ever forgive me

Me; no

Him; do you understand that i love you though

Me;....

Him; and i should have moved on but because i love you i cant we belong tog....

My phone rang and it was dre

Him; leave it, im sorry for the pain iv caused you ohk

Me; ohk i need to go

Him; will we ever talk again

Me; no, stay away from my windows and me

I closed the door and left i arrived at my house and dre  
car was outside. I ran inside and everyone was ready

Me; im so sorry , let me take a quick shower

I ran upstairs and took a quick shower as i was about to  
look for clothes i realised there were flowers on the bed,  
with a white dress , and nude shoes i just looked at it. I  
walked downstairs with my towel

Me; is that for me?

Dre; \*smiling\* yes now go get dressed

I hugged him even though i wanted to kiss him

Me; thank you so much baby

Dre; pleasure mami

Pa; hmmmm friend

I just laughed and walked to my room again and changed  
and i looked beautiful mbali definitely knew about this ,the  
shoe fit like a glove , and the dress was perfect it was an  
A line short dress. I walked back to them and they couldnt  
remove their eyes

Me; how do i look

Pa; beautiful, like the princess you are

Me; thank you pa

I hugged them and we walked out dre was on the phone outside. He turned and his eyes were enough to tell me what he was thinking

Me; how do i look

Twirling

Dre; you look beautiful

Me; thank you

Dre; may we

Me; yes

I sat at the back with mbali, and ma, while dre sat with my grandfather

## INSERT #71

Mami grandfather; so what do you andre

Me ; m m \*stuttering\* i im a paramedic sir

Iv never been so nervous in my life

Mami grandfather; thats nice, where did you grow up

Me; i my parents were from johannesburg , but the was a time when we came here for a year in my teen years but we went back in less than 2years

Mami grandfather; my daughter is beautiful isnt she

i fiddled with my top

Me; y yes sir

Mami grandfather; and wha.....

Mami grandmother; no no no thats enough , look at the poor boy his sweating

Amahle and mbali laughed

Mami grandfather; i want to know him

Mami grandmother; but you making him uncomfortable

Mami grandfather; dont you want to know the boy that is busy with our child

Mami grandmother; i do but not when he is uncomfortable

Mami grandfather; you lucky

Amahle and mbali laughed even louder. We arrived at the restaurant and we walked in. Amahle held my hand and i smiled until i got a death stare by pa i just let it go. We walked to our table where the guys were at. We sat down

Amahle; guys these are my grandparents... Ma and pa this is themba, shane, dorian, deon and jack

Mami grandfather; good day guys

Them; yes sir

Mami grandmother; helo babies

Them; hi mam

All the guys were so formal

Mami grandfather; if anything happens to my children i will kill you all one by one

Them;.....

Amahle; \*laughing\* pa you scaring them

Mami grandfather; thats what im trying to do

We just laughed

We had our lunch and everyone loosened up. The girls were talking with their grandmother while we talked to their grandfather

Themba; but sir thats not the point

Mami grandfather; what you mean everything one says is a point

Me; \*laughing\* what i can say is , we need change and things will never change because people are afraid off change

Mami grandfather; well i agree with you , everybody is afraid of change because they dont know what is going to come out off that

Themba; and look where it got us because people are afraid of change

Dorian; sir i just think elders just like yourself need to forget about the past and try to move on, this thing off going back and forth aint going to work

Mami grandfather; the.....

Group ; happy birthday to you \*singing\*

I looked up and it was the restaurants staff, holding a cake singing , i had planned that before we arrived here ,miss party looked up ,laughed and just covered her face

They sang and we stood up singing with them , the guys got up to kiss amahle and she received gifts from each and every one of them she was so excited

Amahle ; thank you so much guys

Me; and this is from me happy birthday mami

sHe kissed me on the cheek

Amahle; thank you baby

Themba; so are we doing 21st this year

Amahle; \*laughing\* maybe

Mami grandmother; you have to do it baby , your father wanted you to have it

Amahle; will see ma , i dont know

Mami grandfather; you are doing it

Amahle; \*laughing\* pa we on a tough budget

Mami grandmother; what? Your fathers and mothers inheritance

Amahle; they have not given it in, they said they need to do some research and investigation and see if dads death was not suicide

Me; what?

Mami grandfather; what?

Amahle; yes its procedure at least thats what they said

Mami grandmother; baby its almost 2 years and your mothers was an investment why they also keeping that

Amahle; they said they will only take it out , with the rest of it all of it at once

Mami grandfather; thats bullshit that is your money

Mami grandfather was a hardcore guy , looking at him i could see he was some gangster in his days

Amahle; theres nothing i can do pa

Me; actually there is

Amahle; babe the isnt

Mami grandfather; what can we do ?

Me ; my mum can help you out

Amahle; she can

Me; yes she was a lawyer but i think she can still help you out

Mami grandfather; please talk to her

Amahle; its not necessary ohk

Mami grandfather; it is, when you take so long to claim it you will end up getting only 100 thousand rand when its not even half of what your parents saved for you

Amahle; fine can we talk about something else

We talked about something else and were there for hours later that evening they dropped us off

Amahle ; arent you coming

Mami grandfather; il be right there want to talk to your friend

Amahle; \*laughing\* ohk

She walked in

I was ready to shit my pants when he said i want to talk to your friend

Him; lets walk

Me; ohk sir

I locked the car and we walked

Him; so my daughter

Me; she is....

He cut me off

Him; are you seeing her and you better be honest with me

Me; yes i am sir

Him; i have 2 girls in my life boy only 2 my wife and her  
and if anything happens to her or you make her cry like  
the last guy i will kill you and i swear

Me; yes sir totally understand and i would never hurt her

Him; you love her

Me; yes i do i really love her

He stopped and looked at me

Him; what are you?

Me;.....

I looked down cause i knew what he meant by that

Him; want me to guess

Me; im a .....

Him; hmmmm does she know that

Me; yes sir

Him; you better protect her and keep her away from that  
life i dont want her to get hurt , and if you feel this might  
hurt her or what you do , better leave her now but if you  
willing to protect her do just that, she has been hurt so

many times and she does not need that pain again im not near her when she is in jhb so be there for her and i can see she loves you dont play with that

I nodded my head

Him; \*laughing\* im done playing the hard grandfather , you can relax

I laughed

Him; take care of her ohk

Me; i will do just that

Him; so where did you meet her?

Me; \*smiling\* she was with mbali at a party and when i first saw her i was just taken away

Him; just dont get her pregnant theres still a lot for her to do

Me; i dont plan to sir

Him; and just know you better pay for her lobola before you live with her

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

Him; you better get going before it gets too late

Me; can i borrow amahle for just another hour sir

Him; you pushing it now

Me; \*smiling\* im sorry just 1

Him; ohk let me call her for you

I was so excited to hear that. She walked out and she looked beautiful. She walked towards me and wrapped her arms around me

Amahle; did he give you a hard time

Me; yes

Amahle; im sorry papi

I just kissed her

Me; i love you ohk

Amahle; i love you too

We got inside the car

Me; so where were you earlier today

Amahle; went to the cemetery

Me; im sorry baby

Amahle; its ohk baby

I took out my gun from under my seat and pointed it to her direction

INSERT #72

Amahle; what are you doing

Me;...

I pushed her back and she looked outside the window . I opened her window

Him; this is cosy

Amahle; what the fuck is wrong with you like really

Me; orlando

Him; turner

Me; what can i do for you

Him; i came to see my girl

Me; \*laughing\* you trying to fuck with me ne

Him; put that away i just want to talk

Me; i have nothing to talk to you about

Amahle; orlando just leave

Him; ohk i will for you sweedy

He brushed her cheek and i lost my cool i got out off the car and grabbed his top and pushed him to the car

Amahle; dre please his not worth it

Me; dont fuck with me

Him; as long as you fucking with my girl i will fuck with you

I hit him on the face with my elbow

Me; you lucky cause i respect her house

Him; fuck that

I went back in and he left. Amahle left and i drove to my place

Dorian; whats up

Me; nothing

Deon; you look pissed

Me; \*shouting\* why the fuck do i have to fight for everything i want cant for once just get everything easy

Them;....

Me; fucken everything i have to kill for

Themba; man what you on about

Me;\*shouting\* orlando

Deon; kusukile lokho (its on )

Me; i have to fight for her with brandon and now this bitch nigga orlando

Dorian; you love her right, then you have to fight for her

Shane; and the best thing she loves you not this other niggas

Me; its just fucked up man

Deon; so you want to leave it

Me; no way il be crazy

Themba; then we have your back

Me; im going to sleep man

Dorian; dre

Me; what?

Dorian; she is worth it man

I didnt reply just went to my room and slept

Next day woke up and packed everything of mine we were leaving later today. I took my phone and i had like 8 missed calls from shawty so i called her back

Me; nana

Her; babakhe

Me; slept early yesterday

Her; i thought you were mad at me

Me; no baby im ohk

Her; before we go can we go somewhere today

Me; where

Her; il tell you when you get here

Me; will be there in the afternoon

Her; ohk, dre!

Me; mami

Her; i love you ohk

Me; i know that and i love you too

Her; ohk see you around 1

Me; ohk

I washed up and went downstairs , i made myself bread and sat down with the guys

Deon; you feeling better

Me; sure

Themba; we all good this side ne, i checked on with the guys and everything is in order

Me; and the clients are happy

Themba; as always

Me; what i want to hear so amahle wants us to go somewhere today will pick her up and you will get mbali right

Deon; yes and have a lil bit of fun

We just laughed

I went to bath and just wore jeans, black top , black sneakers and cap and left. Took amahle and she insisted to drive

Me; i have never seen you drive and suddenly i must trust you

Amahle; just relax i can drive

Me; ohk

She started the car and drove off

Me; why you never told me this

Amahle; you never asked

Me; never ever am i driving again

Amahle; shame

We drove for a while

Me; where we going

Amahle; one place i love the most

We arrived at this house and she opened the gate, the gate opened and she drove in. The house was huge and it was white all over, she parked on the driveway , took a blanket with a basket at the backseat and we walked in

Me; whose house is this

Amahle; just come

She took out keys and opened the door we walked in and it was beautiful and quiet

Amahle; this is where i used to live

Me; what?

Amahle; yeah after my father death only stayed here for a week and went to live with my grandparents house cause i was not allowed to stay alone at that time

Me; this is beautiful you didnt sell it

Amahle; well i thought they would cause i thought my father was still paying for it but he finished paying it and it belonged to us not the bank anymore so when they asked us if we selling my grandfather said we shouldnt cause i might live here when im old enough and have my own family and i was glad cause i have a lot of memories here

Me; so no one lives here right now

Amahle; no but i was thinking of renting it out and make some money you know but i dont want my parents scent to disappear cause i feel like its all i have right now

Me; may i

Me; sure

We walked upstairs

Amahle; this was my parents room

Me; beautiful and big

Amahle; yeah mummy design and this was my room

Me; \*smiling\* how is it your room is bigger than your parents

amahle; my dad felt i was still young and would want a lot of things in my room rather than them so they made my room a bit big

Me; spoilt brat

Amahle; i was the only child so please

We walked around and it was a emotional for her but i was there for her, we placed the blanket on the lounge and it was our mini picnic

Me; amahle

Amahle; hmmmm

Me; what happened between you and orlando

Amahle ; long story nana

Me; will be here for a while

Amahle; we started dating while i was still in high school, everything was perfect between us except for 2 things sex and marlene those 2 were the only issues we had i was not ready for sex and he did not want me to hang out with the guys, it was a normal relationship we would have fights but we would get back up and be fine , the was a time when it got physical i mean really physical before i

came to jozi before my father died he had sex with my best friend chrissy and that was the end off us

Me; you knew what he was

Amahle; i knew everything about him cause whenever he had nothing he would come crying to me and i would do anything to make sure his ohk , give him money and other things

Me; you know his a gangster right, criminal

She nodded her head

Me; what i dont get is , the way you reacted to me when you found out what i did for a living while you just got out off a relationship with someone who does things like me

Amahle; i was just mad that i liked you so much and you doing the things orlando did, it would mean im going back to that kind off relationship that i did not want anymore and its not the same thing i had no issue with you being in a gang cause i knew my ex was once in a gang orlando did petty crime and sold drugs pills and mandrax not half off the things you do, you actually kill people...

Me; woahhhhh

Amahle; let me finish you and orlando are not the same it may look the same but its not you way more hardcore than him and you know that and it scared the shit out off me ever since i dated orlando not once have i seen his

gun or him use it against me i dont even think he has one  
and guess what you did

Me; im sorry about that i just lost control that time

Amahle; i know so just think about how i felt when you  
told me what you really do , i was scared for my life

Me; totally get it and i will never do anything to hurt you ,  
i really do mean it when i say i love you

Amahle; and i love you so much more

We shared a kiss then packed up i drove us back ,  
dropped her off and went back to my place i wanted her  
to spend time with her grandparents

Around 8 me and the guys we were all packed , and went  
to pick up the girls said my goodbye to her grandparents  
and the way we came is how we drove back me with my  
girl and themba and shane. Deon with mbali, dorian, and  
jack

Themba; i enjoyed this trip

Amahle; not just you trust me

Shane; i think we all did , your grandparents are cool

Me; yho ntwana that day on her birthday , he asks to  
talk to me

Themba; the madala (the old man)

Amahle; \*laughing\* what did he say vele

Me; sure ntwana i was ready to piss myself he just tell me he wants nothing to happen to mami all those type off things then he looks at me and is like what are you?

Themba; you fucken lying

Me; boy why would i lie

Themba; athini (what did he say)

Me; he just told me to protect baby and never fuck her over

Shane; so did you tell him what you are

Me; yes what was i going to say

Amahle; good thing he knows

Me; but your grandfather i think he was a gangster in his old days

Amahle; \*laughing\* no way i doubt he was , thinking about it its crazy theres no way

Me ; il ask him that

Amahle; mxm thanks guys ne for my gifts

Them; pleasure

Me; have you opened them

Amahle; yes and i love each and every one off them

## INSERT #73

#AMAHLE

After hours of driving . Dre changed with shane and we sat at the back

Dre; remind me to talk to my mum ohk

Me; are we still going to do that

Dre; yes , your pa asked me and right now i dont want to disappoint him

Me; ohk fine thank you

Dre; anything for you

Themba; so love you seriously not doing e 21st

Me; i dont know , i want it but then again im like no

Shane; no you must do it

Me; i have to talk to mbali parents first

Dre; im sure they will say yes

Me; maybe

I laid my head on dre legs and eventually fell asleep

I woke up and we were at bloemfontein and the time was 4 am , dre was sleeping as well as themba and shane was the one driving

Me; when did you 2 change

Shane; not so long ago, you awake

Me; yeah

I took out my phone but nobody was online

Me; so tell me about you

Shane; what you want to know mama

Me; where you originally from, your parents, do you have siblings, do you want to get married , do you like what you do

Shane; born and raised in jhb i moved so many times so i dont know any specific place... No i dont have any siblings and my dad i dont know him and my mum died of aids. I think i do want to get married if it means getting something close to what you and dre have. I love what i do i mean love

Me; im sorry about your mum

Shane; its ohk accepted it and moved on

Me; do you ever miss her

Shane; yeah i do but i try not to think about it all the time

Me; how whenever im alone i just think about the death of my parents

Shane; which is why im never alone im always with these guys or girls

Me; \*laughing\* ohk maybe you have a point and what you mean what dre and i have

Shane; the way you 2 are around each other sometimes you look like best friends, and sometimes lovers thats something real

Me; \*smiling\* i guess you right but sometimes im scared you know

Shane; of what

Me; that i might lose him, that a girl way better looking than me might just take him and he will forget everything we ever had

Shane; this guy is crazy about you trust me when i say that im with him most of the time, he does not even look at girls anymore , if themba was awake you would have asked him

Me; \*laughing\* you lying

Shane; im telling you and one time we were like dude its ohk to look as long as you dont touch but nothing

Me; thank you

Shane; for

Me; making me trust myself

Shane; funny how you scared of how another girl looks  
but they all intimidated by you

Me; \*laughing\* i dont think so

Me and shane just talked around 6 we entered soweto

Me; im craving amagwinya

Shane; will we find a shop open this time

Me; lets look

We drove through dk then orlando. We stopped at some  
place and i walked out

Me; helo ma

Woman; yes girl

Me; do you have fatcakes

Woman; im still making them baby

Me; ohk i will wait for them

Woman; ohk

Me; il be in that car

Woman; ohk

I went back to the car and dre and themba were awake

Me; wakey wakey

Dre; \*laughing\* come here

I went closer to him and kissed him

Shane; they have them

me; they only doing them now and i said we would wait

Themba; eish plus im hungry

Mbali called me and i told them where we were after few minutes A car parked behind us and it was deon

Mbali; and why did you stop here

Me; buying fatcakes

Dre; let me get some air

He got out off the car and girls there were just staring at us but like everyone was staring at us including the guys. That place got more and more full and the more eyes were on us

Woman; baby come

Me; ohk ma can you please me 32 fatcakes

In the line;ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh \*shouting\*

They were complaining

Her; \*laughing\* yho baby ohk

She gave me 20 and had to do amanye people then complained like hell but i just left them after a couple of minutes she gave me another 12

Me; guys what do you want

They all came to where i was leaving the car unattended

Me; mama please give me isnoek fish , 2special and 2cheese

Dre; il have 4 special, 2 cheese , 2 snoek fish and 2 white liver

Deon; snoek fish with 4 white livers and 2 special

People were complaining but we didnt even mind them we were paying after all

Mbali; 3 cheese and 2 special

Dorian; 4 of everything white liver , cheese and 1 snoek fish

Themba; mama give me 2 off everything

Shane; snoek fish, ne special ne cheese 2 2

Jack; 2 cheese, 2 special, 3 white liver and snoek fish

Girl; yho singivele ngizihambele umuntu uvukele amahala la (let me just go i woke up early for nothing)

Girl 2; typical rich kids where do they come from

Mbali was about to say something but i pulled her hand,  
We took our stuff and divided it everyone had 4 fatcakes  
each. We drove to dre place

We arrived in an hour and went to seat on the lounge , i  
made them coffee and tea and we all ate. After eating we  
talked for a while and we all went to sleep i dont know  
about others but i slept with dre on his bed

Woke up in the afternoon and woke dre up, we went  
downstairs and we just chilled with the guys. I went to  
bath with mbali when we were done they dropped us off  
home

Mbali parents wanted to know everything and we told  
them about our trip and they were just happy we were  
safe at home.me and mbali were so tired we just ate  
supper and went to bed. Next day woke up and went to  
school took the bus home dre was busy and could not pick  
me up but i was cool with it either way.

Got home and got busy with school work my phone rang  
and it was an unknown

Me; helo

Woman; helo amahle this is andre mother

Me; oh mrs adams

Dre ma; yes sweetie dre came to talk to me this morning and told me everything

Me; dre and my grandfather are making this a huge issue and i told them its procedure

Dre ma; actually baby im glad dre talked to me and for the first 2 months its procedure not 2 years

Me; oh

Dre; mum yes so i would appreciate it if you would come and see me and we talk about it in person

Me; i can make it tomorrow around 2 cause my classes end at 1

Dre mum; perfect and bring any documents you have , emails or sms

Me; will do

I texted dre and thanked him and carried on with work

Next day went to school and around 1 took a taxi to dre home, i knew the place i just wished i remembered it. As i was walking i was looking at each and every house so i wont pass it , it was just me on the road suburbs everyday life ke,i finally found it i walked to her house

Woman; helo

Me; hi, im here to see mrs adams

Woman; amahle

Me; yes

Woman; ohk il open for you

The gate opened and i walked in

Woman; sawbona girl ( helo girl)

Me; yebo ma unjani ( yes ma how are you)

Her; ngyaphila wena unjani (im fine andyou how are you?)

Me; ngyaphila ma (im good)

Her; awusemhle ( you beautiful)

Me; \*smiling\* ngyabonga ma (Thank you ma)

Her; walk that way you will find her outside

Me; thank you ma

I walked outside and she was sitting next to the pool she looked like a goddess, long black hair, perfect skin tone , she was wearing shorts and top with sandals

Me; hi mam

Mrs adams; hi baby, sit down

I sat opposite her

Me; thank you for seeing me

Mrs adams; its only a pleasure , how was school

Me; hectic as always

She laughed

Mrs adams; that feeling i know so andre told me something

Me; \*smiling\* something like

Mrs adams; that i might just be looking at my future daughter in law

I just laughed

Me; i think id rather not get into that

Mrs adams; ohk baby so tell me everything then

I told her everything about what the policies told me and a whole lot of things she also explained to me a few things and she said she was going to file it and she will let me know how things will go.

We ate lunch together and dre came to pick me up and he dropped me off at home.

## INSERT #74

I had made plans for me and mami more like her birthday special since we were not together that day, i dressed up clean, pair of blue jeans, white nikes, white top and black jacket with black cap , drove to her place and called her

she walked out wearing black jeans, black top and black long jacket with black nikes with a small bag she looked beautiful, she got in

Amahle; hey baby

Me; hey mami

We kissed started the car and drove off , got to a restaurant. Stephen my client had restaurants all over jozi , and they were a cover up for him for the money he made illegally

Amahle; this place is beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* come on

We walked in and headed to the vip area which was all set up balloons, gift bags. Amahle turned to me

Me; surprise

Amahle; i cant believe you did this

Me; anything for you

I pulled a chair for her and sat down. Well we wined and dined.

Me; \*laughing\* you so beautifu....

Stephen; may i disturb

We turned to the door and it was stephen, i got up and hugged him

Me; hey man

Stephen; mr turner.... hi beautiful

Amahle; \*smiling\* hi

Stephen; hope everything is good and the food

Amahle; the food amazing

Me; definitely

Stephen; well let me not disturb enjoy the rest off your night

waved goodbye, we enjoyed ourselves for a couple more hours and left.

Me; which movie

Amahle; anything baby

We finally picked one and watched the movie but it was boring us she decided to sit on top off me

#AMAHLE

I sat on top of him, my arms wrapped around his neck

Me; im so happy im with you

Dre; i just want you too finish with school this is too much now

Me; il try to make more time for us ohk

Dre; please mami even if its 15 minutes its fine

Me; i will

I kissed him and he kissed me back and i did not want to stop , he asked for entrance with his tongue and i granted it to him, our tongues met together , he pulled my bottom lip and that made me want him even more , he deepened the kiss sliding his tongue between my lips , he squeezed my butt and pulled me closer to his D and it was hard.

The kiss got heated and my breathing was fast so was his. He stood up and picked me up, my legs wrapped around his waist, he placed me on the kitchen counter, i pulled his top up and threw it on the floor i ran my nails on his chest , i pushed my head back and he kissed my neck i got a tight grip on his back and whispered to his ear "make love to me" ( i was not sure about what i just said , whether i really wanted it but the way i felt i really really wanted him) he broke the kiss and looked at me

Dre; you sure

I nodded my head

I pulled him in a kiss again he picked me up again and we walked to the bedroom without breaking the kiss

We walked in his bedroom and he laid me so slow on his bed that had his scent . My heart was beating so fast i was scared was i really doing this ?

He was on top off me , he put his arm around my waist pushing my pants out of the bed i stepped out off them. He ran a finger up one warm thigh then the other i hissed softly and put my hands on his shoulders

I kissed his neck , licked and kissed and this weakened some parts of him, he took off my top leaving me with just my underwear and bra , his breathing changed just by the sight of my body , he flipped me over and now i was on top of him , he kissed my neck and i pushed my head back while biting my lower lip , he unclipped my bra and removed the bra and my underwear. He was seeing me naked this has not happened before. He changed positions again and he planted kisses from my breast to my neck i gasped and moaned cause of the kisses on my neck , i could feel i was getting wet. I leaned against him , against his chest and wrapped my arms around him. He moved his hand to my thighs and eased my knees apart , his fingers drifted over my clit a gasp left my throat , i kept on gasping as he gazed into my eyes and continued rubbing my clit . I was wet and it was easy for him to enter me . He used 1 finger and inserted it inside of me a slight moan escaped my lips that brought such pleasure to my body

He kissed me long and deep and made use of my tongue. He broke the kiss and took off his pants he was sexy as fuck, his body, the ink on his chest and arms and almost on his neck. I bit my lip and he smiled down at me but i was covering my boobs so he would not see. He removed my hands " you beautiful dont hide that from me" he kissed me again and this time he carefully repositioned my legs and pulled me to him , he was kneeling on the floor. I closed my legs but he opened them and kissed my V. He licked my clit my eyes were rolling at the back of my head, holding the sheets into fists he began slowly my breathing got louder and he went faster and my moans got more loud, he inserted two fingers inside of me while licking my clit , i could not breath, my body went up from the sheets and back , i buried my head on the side and held down to his head. I screamed for pleasure and he picked up the pace. I held his head and pulled him to me and just kissed him i felt like i could not breath

, He repositioned my legs , drawing them around his waist as he stood up, i locked my ankles together. Using his hands he guided himself inside of me. It was not even inside of me as yet but i pulled back , my eyes were shut

Dre; mama look at me

He held my face

Dre; mama please

I slowly opened my eyes

Dre; i want you to look at me ohk

I nodded my head

Dre; i wont hurt you , il be gentle as possible ohk

I nodded my head again

He guided himself again and began a gentle push it was painful and i tried to close my eyes " look at me" i did as he asked " i lovee you" he said that pushing himself inside of me , he removed his d and tried it again

He gave a gentle push i was very tight that his d would not even go in and the painful it got. He tried it again and it went in my mouth was wide open, it was painful as fuck , he removed it and did it again , he locked our hands together i moaned at the presence of his D he pushed a lil more and began to enter me slowly, so slowly . I gave little cries but it was so painful tears began to run down my face and when he saw i was crying just stopped

Dre; im sorry mama

Me; dont stop

Dre; you crying

Me; please dont stop

Dre; you sure

Me; yeah

I pulled his arms and went with a slow pace again , i pulled his arms urging him to go faster but he just went slow, the muscles of his arm shivering , he pulled my leg up and took another inch of me , moaning so loud , a gasp followed by a moan my nails dug deep into his back , losing his breath he held on tight to my body, his body getting faster and harder by the minute, cries getting louder and i could feel something building inside of me . My moans filled the bedroom so as his groans I cried out as he went deeper and faster unable to get a word out off my mouth cause of my breathing ,his body pressing me to the bed , he pulled out , his D was so wet when he pushed back in it was a smooth glide. He pushed his D with sudden strength and that brought so much pleasure and pain, it was way more painful now i wanted him to stop. I heard him groan " dre its painful stop" were the only words that i could say he went in faster and i felt as if i was just going to blow up , he pulled out and i joined my knees together holding my V and shaking i let out the loudest moan that i had in me , he cum on the sheets letting out the loudest groan . I looked up at the ceiling and he looked at me and he realised i was crying as tears ran down my face....

INSERT #75

#AMAHLE

He wiped my tears with his hand and kissed me and whispered to my ear "im sorry i didnt stop". I did not know how to feel i never felt so much pleasure and pain at the same time , dre buried his head next to my face and no one said anything we just sat in silence for a few minutes until he got up

Dre; you want anything

I shook my head

He got up and went to the bathroom and came back with his wash cloth, he kissed me while wiping my V

Dre; im sorry and i really really love you

It was as if i could not speak anymore i wanted to reply him but did not know what to say. So i got up and took a towel that was next to the bed and the sheets were bright red , i was kind off embarrassed and just went to the toilet, i peed and realised i was still bleeding i just covered my face. I got up

Me; can you get me my phone

Dre; sure, you ohk

I nodded my head

He left the room and came back with my phone gave it to me and i texted mbali

Me; where are you

Mbali; home

Me; mbali it happened with me and dre but im still bleeding

Mbali; lol what, you slept with him

Me; mbali please tu

Mbali; its normal man ,babe it should stop just take a shower byt the time you get out will stop

Me; ohk talk later

I went out and dre looked stressed as fuck , he was sitting on the edge of the bed , the sheets had been changed and his hands on his face

Me; dre

He quickly lifted his head up

Me; you ohk

Dre; i should be asking you that

Me; i love you ohk

He smiled and walked up to me , that was the only way i could make him feel unstressed and he look relived to hear that

Dre; i love you so much more

He kissed me and i kissed him back

Me; im still bleeding so i wanted to bath

Dre; ohk want anything

Me; sit with me

Dre; \*smiling\* ohk

I opened my bath water and went in , dre was sitting on the floor

Me; will it always be painful

Dre; no your first time is always painful , can i smoke in here

Me; ohk

He opened the drawer and took out a box and a lighter and took one cigarette

Dre; i thought you were ready to leave me

Me; \*laughing\* i was just embarrassed

He looked at me

Dre; of what

Me; you know what

Dre; you my girl , im your man what happened is between us so no need to be embarrassed

Me; easy for you to say you a guy

Dre; it doesnt mean anything mama

Me; ohk but i dont regret it

Dre; and thats all i needed to hear

Me; when did you start smoking

Dre; when i was 10

Me; \*laughing\* papa stop with the lies

Dre; im not lying mama , i used to pick up stompies then i never stopped

Me; sies

Dre; but you would not even say i smoke, my lips are not dark, i never smell off a cigarette and non off my clothes have cigarette burns

Me; ohk you got a point

Dre; i always have a point

Me; mxm

He turned and looked at me

Dre; you are a lot of things you know that

Me; meaning

Dre; you sexy, you beautiful and you cute how do you do that

I just laughed

Dre; you really sexy i mean

He bit his lip and looked at the water

Me \*laughing\* stop

Dre; no, im trying to compliment my woman you mine ohk

Me; all yours

Dre; cant you sleep over

Me; you cant live without me now

Dre; yes mama i cant

Me; \*laughing\* mxm and i cant i still need to respect  
mbali house

Dre; but tomorrow im with you ne

Me; yes

I got out off the water and headed to the bedroom

Me; il wash the sheets

Dre; they already washed so dont worry about that

Me; ohk

I took my bra but he took it from me and dragged me  
inside the blankets , we cuddled

Dre; your hair is a mess

Me; and you had to tell me that

Dre; \*laughing\* you should be happy im telling you that ,  
not someone else

Me; i look like a mess and you sexy as fuck

Dre; im sexy? \*he smirked\*

Me; \*laughing\* yes very sexy \* i bit my lip\*

Dre; you want this

Me; maybe

Dre; yes or no

Me; yes

Before i could say anything else he laughed , got on top off me, and kissed me i kissed him back but his phone rang we didnt pay any attention to it

Me; just answer it

Dre; no kiss me

Me; answer your phone

Dre; ohk

He got off me and grabbed his jeans on the floor , he looked at the screen and back at me

Me; what?

Dre; im not going to answer it

Me; answer it andre

He put it down and tried to kiss me but i pushed him away got on top off him and reached for his phone

Dre; \*laughing\* this is crazy

I took the phone and checked the missed call and it was "natasha"

Me; \* shouting\* NATASHA REALLY

I hit him with the phone on his chest and got off him

Dre; you dont trust me do you

Me; leave me alone dre

I took my underwear but he grabbed it from my hand and threw it near the door

Dre; you dont trust me do you

Me;...

Dre; like really mama you think i would cheat on you, i dont believe you dont trust me

Me; \*shouting\* IF I DIDNT TRUST YOU, WOULD I HAVE SLEPT WITH YOU NO

Dre; then why you mad

Me; im mad cause your bitches are still calling you

Dre; theres nothing i can do about that , they have my numbers you dont see me calling them

His phone rang

Me; your bitch is calling you

I took the blanket and threw it to him and it covered him,  
i took my underwear and walked out

Dre; mama come on

Me; leave me alone dre

Dre; so you going to leave

Me; YES

He held my wrist and pulled me to him. My arms on his  
chest

Dre; stop this ohk

Me; no

I tried to get free but he held me so tight

Me; let go of me

Dre; no

He pinned me to the wall and i dropped my clothes , he  
held my hands above my head

Dre; you my girl and im your boy , if you will constantly  
get mad if bitches as you said call me , we wont last  
mama i love you do you understand that and right now i  
want to fuck you , so you will get rid of that attitude of  
yours and allow me to make my woman happy

I bit my lip and could not say anything after that

He picked me up and he kissed my neck and i pushed my head back , he entered me " i wont be gentle with you" was the last thing he said before fucking my brains out after we both cum, we were sitting on the hallway naked

## INSERT #76

#AMAHLE

Around 9 dre dropped me off and i walked in.

Mbali; and she comes home

Me; \*laughing\* ay man mbali

Mbali mum; leave her baby how did you go and the bags

Me; good ma , more gifts from my friends

Mbali; they love you ne

I just laughed

Mbali; lets go baby, ma you will be ohk

Mbali mum; yes dont worry

We went to my room

Mbali; i want to know everything

Me; the is nothing to tell

Mbali; dont start with me

Me; fine it happened unexpectedly one moment we were just joking around watching movies then boom

Mbali; was it painful

Me; yhoooo mbali i literally cried , i mean cried and he stopped but i was like no just continue

Mbali; how big was it

Me; mbali!

Mbali; ay never mind it will be weird looking at him after you tell me

Me; \*Laughing\* it couldnt go in, thats what i can tell you

Mbali; what?

Me; yeah \*covering my face\* my still pains , it burns that how painful it was

Mbali; wait his D is big

I nodded my head

Mbali; fuck did you use protection?

Me....

Mbali; amahle!!!

Me; it just happened i was in the moment

Mbali; i cant believe you can be so irresponsible what if he left his soldiers

Me; i dont think so

Mbali; geez girl that is so unlike you

She left and came back

Mbali; here

me; morning after pills

Mbali; yes

Me; why you have these

Mbali; i do have sex and i have not began preventing and sometimes me and deon forget a condom and sometime i dont let him go when we doing it so these are for that here take them

Me; thank you

Mbali; i hope this is the last time

I nodded my head

Me; yes now lets stop talking about it

Mbali; i cant believe you broke it

Me; and i dont even regret it

Mbali; thats perfect lets go eat

We went to eat and i just went to bed. Next morning i went to church around 1 came back and deon car was outside and they were fighting cause mbali was outside shouting deon inside

Mbali; you full of shit you know that, get out off here and i never want to see you again

I dont know what deon said

Mbali; what? Fuck you ohk

Deon;....

Mbali; are you fucken hig....

Me; hi

Mbali; i will kill you dont even fu...

She didnt even notice i was there so i just walked in

Me; hi ma

Mbali mum; helo baby

Me; did you see whats happening outside

Mbali mum; yeah they have been there for a while now

Me; what happened

Mbali mum; i dont know what mbali saw in these things off yours on her phone she called deondre then tables turned

Me; will just have to hear from her

Mbali mum; how was church

Me; it was great ma september is the start of the conference

Mbali mum; wooo we must fix ourselves

I just laughed and went to change to something more comfortable ,took my phone and called the " king"

Dre; mami

Me; papi i miss you

Dre; il be seeing you in an hour

Me; ohk and mbali is fighting with deon

Dre; \*laughing\* why

Me; i have no idea baby

Dre; ai il see you around 2 ohk

Me; ohk papi

Dre; dont eat

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

I went to help mbali mum prepare lunch and dre arrived , he called me outside and the 2 were still on it , i dont even think they saw dre. I walked up to him and he wrapped his hands around me

Dre; this is bad

Me; tell me about it

Dre; i got us bunny chows i was craving for it

Me; ohk

We went inside the car and drove to the nearest park we just opened our door but didnt get out and chowed on our food

Dre; you slept ohk

Me; yeah you

Dre; i couldnt sleep

Me; why

Dre; the moment i closed my eyes i saw what happened earlier that day and it just fucked up my mind and made me smile and i could not stop thinking about you

Me; dre we didnt even use protection

Dre; im aware off that and only realised that later and that wont happen again

Me; it shouldnt mbali gave me morning after pills

Dre; you took them

Me; yes baby today

Dre; i know its still early but would you prevent its so much better than having to worry about buying those pills

Me; il think about it

Dre; ohk you sexy thing

Me; \*smiling\* come here

I kissed him and he deepened the kiss

Me; the are people here

Dre; and we inside the car

I just laughed and pulled away

Dre; when are you starting with your exams

Me; june

Dre; next month

Me; yeah

Dre; please study

Me; i am studying bubu but it means i wont see you as much

Dre; it doesnt matter i just dont want you to fail

Me; and i wont

Dre; il be busy this week so i wont be able to pick you up

Me; its ohk cause il be spending more time in the library

Dre; stay away from varsity boys

Me; why would i even go near them when this is all mine

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you

He took me home and deon had left , i got in and went to mbali room

Me; so what happened

Mbali; deon is \*she paused\* I'm done

Me; what happened

Mbali ; look at this

I took her phone and it was a picture of deon and some girl "great day i had with the king"

Me; ehhh

Mbali; \*crying\* his fucking with me amahle

Me; was he cheating?

mbali; yeah but he says no

Me; maybe his right come on mbali , deon would never cheat on you

Mbali; then what is this

Me; this girl tagged him but deon didnt even like it or comment

Mbali; i dont care

Me; ohk im really sorry

Mbali; im going to sleep, night

Me; night

I went to eat and went to bed

INSERT 77

#ANDRE

Woke up Monday morning and headed to work and i was with unathi and khaya i signed in and headed to them

Me; talk about a wrong combination

Unathi; its about time, i have not been in with you for a while

Me; eish but i see you most of the time

Khaya; why is it that i have known you for a while but im not part of your squad but she is

Me; \*laughing\* cause you dont want too be part of my squad

Khaya; i have never said that

Unathi; ay you so jealous cause im in the squad you also want to

Khaya; vele (yes)

Me; ay boy forget about that how you been

Khaya; ngi mnandi ntwana ( good boy )

Me; baby mama?

Khaya; ahhhhh dont even ask me about that girl and you wheres your fitness but then your girl

Me; what about her

Khaya; shes fucken mooi , fitness

Me; ai piss off ao

Khaya; \*laughing\* you love her ne

Me; too much boy

Unathi; a dr and a paramedic cute ncoooo

I just laughed

Unathi; and what is wrong with deon

Me; with

Unathi; mbali his cheating on mbali

Me; what? Nah i know my boy his not

Unathi; he is and we have proof

Me; you have proof which proof exactly

Unathi; wait

She took out her phone, went through it and gave it to me

Me; so?

Unathi; his cheating look at this

Me; i only see a picture, with a caption and this means deon is cheating

Khaya; let me see ntwana

I gave it to him

Khaya; this is cheating?

Unathi; yes

We just laughed

Khaya; you girls are crazy

Me; they not even kissing or doing anything like that and he is cheating wow

Unathi; why is he having great days with other girls instead off his girl

Me; \*laughing\* thats bullshit

Unathi; well lets see you do it and see if amahle will be cool with that

Me; no

Unathi; why not

Me; cause cause \*stuttering\*

Unathi; cause you know its cheating

Me; no and i wont do it cause she is crazy and i dont want her murdering some girl for something thats not even there

Khaaya; but on the real this is not cheating yazi, like you girls turn everything into cheating, we look its cheating,

we touch its cheating we take pictures its also cheating  
you would swear you actually want us to cheat and us ke  
we will and will show you what cheating is

Me; could have not said it better ntwana

Unathi; ai voetsek leave me alone

We went to grab something for lunch and we sat in silence everyone got busy with their phones and i just went through amahle page on facebook. Was kind of jealous of the wall posts mostly guys and i mean guys and a few girls and pictures she was tagged in this girl was beautiful , her dimples when she smiled. My phone rang and it was her i just smiled at the screen

Amahle; punka

Me; \*laughing\* mami

Amahle; i miss you

Me; fly over

Amahle; then people will know my secret you know i cant do that daylight

I just laughed so loud

Me; now i miss you

Amahle; good you at work

Me; yes shawty ,are your classes over

Amahle; yeah im on m..... \* it made a funny sound\* ouch  
\*shouting\*

Me; are you ohk?

Guy; im sorry

Amahle; ahhhh no it fine

Guy; you sure

Me; shawty!!

Amahle; yes... Punka

Me; what was that?

Amahle; some guy bumped into me eish and my shoulder hurts

Me; where are you

Amahle; im on my way to mcdonalds

Me; and you alone

Amahle; \*laughing\* yes you want to reveal your secret and come protect me

Me; \*smiling\* if i have too then i will fly over

Amahle; \*laughing\* im ohk dont worry... Hold on....  
\*laughing\* no im cool

Guy; but then why you always doing this

Amahle; im coming will talk when im done

Guy; sure

Amahle; punka

Me; are there no girls there

Amahle; \*laughing\* no that was some guy i know from around here

Me; watch yourself

Amahle; i smell jealous as far as you are

Me; shame my baby, listen call me if you need anything i have a call i need to attend

Amahle; ohk i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

I hung up

Khaya; i love you too \*laughing\*

Me; i need to tell my girl ntwana , something you dont know

Khaya; ay fokof

We arrived and it was a accident involving a bike, looked more like a suicide to me we waited for forensic and they declared him dead . Then attended other calls. Around 8 we knocked off and just went home, took a long shower

when i got out i had missed calls from my "mami" i called her back

Me; mami

Amahle; punka why didnt you answer your phone

Me; i was taking a shower

Amahle; eish i wanted you to watch something on tv but its over now

Me; \*laughing\* thats why you called me

Amahle; yes you would have loved it i know

Me; what was it about

Amahle; whats the point of telling you know, cause you wont see it

Me; \*laughing\* you just missed me just say it

Amahle; whatever so i talked to mbali parents and they didnt agree

Me; with what?

Amahle; 21st party

Me; what???

Amahle; yeah but its cool punka

Me; but why

Amahle; they didnt say much but i guess they did not want to spend money for a child that was not theirs they

just said they never did a 21st party for mbali so it wont be fair on her and what will the neighbours say if they throw a party for someone else and not start with their child

Me; they said that

Amahle; yeah but im fine with it anyway i was not in it for this party vele

Me; mami you sure they said that

Amahle; yes now lets leave it

Me; we can do it at my place

Amahle; no i dont want it punka listen im going to bed ohk

Me; ohk i love you ohk

Amahle; love you more night punka

Me; night mami

## INSERT #78

### #ANDRE

Next morning prepared for work but i was bothered by what amahle said , mbali never wanted a 21st that i knew but why would they punish amahle for that. I know she

said she did not want it but she sounded hurt over the phone and i was not happy about that. Got to work and got busy till it was time too knock off. I knocked off and went to the warehouse

Themba; going or coming from

Me; coming from

Dorian; you good man

Me; im good what happening

Deon; we just preparing the man over here , his ready to shit his pants

Me; \*laughing\* you ohk man

Jack; yeah im fine

Me; you only doing this Saturday why you scared as if you doing it tonight

Jack; just scared what if i get caught

Me; you not taught by amateurs so you wont have to worry about that unless you one

Jack; yeah i know

Me; did they dump you?

Deon; \*laughing\* me what? Thats my girl man

Me; \*laughing\* ay ohk man so talk to me what happening

Themba; besides the fact that its jacks week , theres nothing else we can say

Jack; you freaking me out even more

Dorian; we dont work with fear man

Me; \*laughing\* come on jack make us proud

Deon phone rang

Me; and dont screw this up

Deon; hold on... Ohk its on speaker

We all looked at him and it was mbali on the phone

Mbali; hey guys

Us; hey man

Mbali; listen i need to talk to you about something

Me; i also need to talk to you about something

Mbali; ohk what is it

Me; your parents didnt agree for amahle to have her 21st  
why

Themba; hahhhh what? Why not?

Dorian; why not?

Me; because mbali did not have one

Deon; but baby you never even wanted a 21st

Mbali; can i talk now

Themba; and you better have a valid reason for this bullshit

Mbali; i do... My parents want to throw her a surprise 21st party

Us; ohhhhhh

Mbali; yesss idiots so when she asked they made up some lame excuse and amahle bought it which is good for us but we hoping it does not send her to depression

Me; \*laughing\* thats even better

Mbali; of course it is, so now guys will need you too contribute all out with this , we dont want her to forget this and she is one person that deserves this after everything she has been through

Me; im definitely in

Dorina; we all in , so where can we meet to discuss all of this

Mbali; il be around tomorrow and my mum too , so come tomorrow morning cause she will be at school and will talk about it

Deon; perfect will be there

Mbali; bye guys and i love you ohk

Us; we love you too

Jack; she is going to freak

Me; i doubt she will even expect it man i mean the way she was so sad over the phone yesterday

Themba; we need to get her friends and grandparents that will blow her away

Dorian; cant wait for it already

Went home, shower then went to bed, next morning was woken up by mami call

Me; my mami

Amahle; my papi

Me; \*laughing\* did you really have to wake me up

Amahle; yes guess who i saw today

Me; who?

Amahle; papi i said guess she was obsessed with you

Me; \*laughing\* i dont even want to know anymore

Amahle; \*laughing\* why you scared

Me; im just scared of you

Amahle \*Laughing\* mxm i miss you punka when will i see you

Me; Saturday

Amahle; its Wednesday today

Me; \*laughing\* so

Amahle; is there someone that's keeping you company  
that is making you not miss me

Me; yhoooooooo il be there today at 10 fine with you

Amahle; haha perfect with me

Me; need to get ready

Amahle; ohk talk later

Me; bye mami

Amahle; bye papi

I went to take a shower and just wore a pair of jeans , top with all star, took my cap and left too pick up the guys then we drove off to mbali house, arrived and we walked in. Greeted mbali mum while she prepared something for us

Mbali mum; ohk firstly thank you for agreeing to help , it means a lot to me and i know it will mean a lot to her

Dorian; we just glad to help ma, she deserves this so much

Her; yes so lets make this beautiful for her, so will need a dj, deco, food

Deon; drinks, stretch tent

Mbali; yes and all of those things

Me; we cant talk about all of that not knowing the date as yet

Her; thats what we were still discussing

Mbali; cause its june now, we dont want it too be cold or rainy

Me; lets do it 31 july, most off the time its hot that time even though its not spring or summer but its usually has the perfect weather

Her; and it will be on a Saturday im ohk with it cause we must not make it too further apart from her birthday cause its almost 2 months

Dorian; ohk then its 31 july

Mbali wrote it down

We discussed everything and we were to cover certain things if it was up to me i would have paid for everything but i could not

Mbali; ohk thats it, i will steal contacts from her phone and invite friends from her school

Deon; guys we need to keep this to ourselves please no mistakes

Dorian; especially someone who is always with her

Me; \*laughing\* i wont say anything

Mbali mum; yes please babies

Us; ohk

Mbali mum will be taking care of deco, while dorian will have to buy the groceries . I was too take care of the alcohol and meat , themba dj, deon stretch tent , her grandparents were too take care off any minor things everything was sorted. Mbali had to take care of amahle that day, making her beautiful meaning she had to buy her something to wear on that day. We ate lunch there and later that day went home.

I called amahle and told her i didnt cook so she just said i must come over, drove to mbali house and parked a few houses away , i always did that. She walked out off the gate carrying a plate and got in

Amahle; i risked my meat just know that

Me; \*laughing\* lets share ke

Amahle; ohk

I dug in and so did she

Me; so you ohk about this birthday thing

Amahle; yeah i guess i understand

Me; i love you ohk

Amahle; \*smiling\* i know that

Me; Saturday we going out

Amahle; yes of course we are, feel like getting drunk

Me; i cant believe you just said that

Amahle; what i need to get freaky sometimes

We talked about random things, looked at people on the street, she took pictures and i mean pictures and all off them i was just looking at her. After a while she had to leave, she took the plate and walked back in and i went home

## INSERT #79

### #AMAHLE

Saturday was just another day during the day me and mbali were just bored

Mbali; lets go buy ama kota

Me; ohk

We locked up and left

Me; so you and deon are good now

Mbali; yeah we good but if he repeats shit like that im going to leave his ass

Me; but he wouldnt cheat on you, i mean that guy loves you

Mbali; \*smiling\* you would think i bewitched him ne

Me; vele ( yes)

Guy; hey ladies

Mbali; what do you want

Brandon; thats being rude mbali come on

Mbali; mxm asambe amahle (mxm lets go amahle)

We passed him but he followed us

Brandon; i miss you amahle, you just dumped me with no reason at all me and you were good

Me; what are you trying to do brandon

Brandon; im trying to get my baby back

Me; im not your baby, iv moved on do the same

Mbali; you heard her

Brandon; stay out off this bitch

Me; dont you dare talk to her like that who the fuck do you think you are cause you the one who is acting like a lil bitch here

Brandon; what?

He got so mad

Me; you heard me now stop acting like a lil bitch begging me to take you back i dont even know what i saw in you you path.....

I slowly turned to face him , my hand on my cheek

Mbali; you bitch

Mbali tried fighting him but he just held her hands

Me; you just hit me

Someguy; what do you thinking you doing , how can you hit a girl

Brandon; fuck you this is between us

Mbali; turner is going to kill you

Brandon; you disrespect me like that ever again, i will hit you harder

Guy; get the fuck outta here

Guy 2; dont come here with your tendencies

He walked away and tears began building up

Guy 2; you ohk baby, im really sorry

Me; i i im fine dankie ne

Guy2; eouti yakho leya ( thats your bf)

I shook my head

Guy; amanye ama outi acwele ngama simba ( some guys are full off shit you know)

Mbali; baby dre has to know about this

Me; \*shouting\* NO

Mbali; what?

Me; you cant tell dre about this and i mean you cant tell dre about this mbali, you know what he is capable off

Mbali;....

Me; mbali

Mbali; fine i wont say

We walked back home and prepared ourselves for today deon was coming to pick us up in a few

Me; is it visible

Mbali; dre is going to see this mark on your face

Me; mbali please help me out here , can you see it

Mbali; apply a lil more off the foundation

I did just that

Mbali; i dont know why you think andre does not deserve to know that some idiot hit his girl

Me; its for the best and now?

Mbali; so much better

I dressed up and we waited to get picked up. Around 8 deon arrived and i just looked outside the window

Deon; mama you ohk

Me;....

Mbali; amahle

Me; hmmmm

Mbali; deon is talking to you

Me; you saying

Deon; are you ohk?

i nodded my head

Mbali; baby can we ask you something

I looked at mbali

Deon; sure

Mbali; so you remember tsholo right

Deon; i think so

Mbali; yeah some guy hit her ne but not her bf dont you think she should tell her bf

Deon went silent and looked at me on the mirror

Deon; who hit you mama

Me; what ? Me no

Mbali; i said tsholo

Deon; you no longer friends with tsholo why would she tell you that and iv seen a lot of movies with this kind of scene right now, now amahle who hit you

Mbali; brandon

Me; MBALI!!

Deon pulled over on the road and lighted the light

Deon; what????

me; ....

Mbali; cause she does not want to talk i will.. He came to us and amahle began telling him shit then he slapped her so hard baby i mean she had to use 50 layers of makeup to hide the mark he left and he does not want to tell dre

Deon; we telling dre

Me; no, are you 2 crazy you off all people should know what dre will do , this never happened , you cant tell dre

Deon; no im not hiding this from him no way dre needs to know and that guy just disrespected dre in so many ways im telling dre

Me; dre will kill him then i wont be able to sleep at night cause his blood will be on my hands. Are you trying to make me live with guilt for the rest off my life, iv been through a lot of shit and i do not need this on my shoulders please guys just forget about it please

Mbali ; fine

Deon; mama you asking a lot

Me; please deon please

Deon; fine but im not comfortable with this just know that

Me; thank you

He started the car and we drove off again. We arrived at this restaurant and we walked out. Everyone was there already i looked for dre and he was laughing so loud with dorian and he immediately smiled when he saw me i just faked a smile and went to sit next to him

Dre; you look beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* thank you punka , you not bad yourself

Dre; i love you

Me; love you too

I kissed him

Dorian; ohk guys, we celebrating jack

Mbali; why

Jack; i stole my first car today and i did not get caught

We all laughed

Dre; i told you, you were going to do this

Jack; i was shaking for like an hour while doing this

Deon; and it went so smooth welcome to the team boy

Jack; what i thought i was on the team

Dorina; not really you were on a trial but you proved yourself so you got the permanent position now

Jack; thanks guys

dre; no drugs for you

He just laughed

#ANDRE

my phone beeped and it was a message from deon

Deon; man i need to talk to you its about amahle just dont tell her anything

Me; whats up

Deon; will talk

Me; ohk

I just figured it was about the party we ordered our food , ate and hit the club

Me; im going out to smoke il be right back ohk

Amahle; ohk

I went out and lighted my cig

Me; hey man

Deon; we need talk

Me; ohk you look stressed

Deon; this is serious man

Me; ohk whats wrong

Deon; brandon hit amahle

I just laughed

Me; mxm fuck you man thats not funny

Deon; im not playing dre

I turned to face him

Me; what?

Deon; yeah apparently she was telling him shit and he hit her and she has a mark on her face that she is hiding from you but she asked me not to say cause she knew you would kill him so she can not know i tell you which means you cant confront her

It was as if i did not hear anything that deon just said

Me; brandon hit my girl

Deon;...

i punched the window that was next to me and it just broke

Me; \*shouting\* why the fuck dont i know this

Deon; man you need to calm down

Me; calm down , you want me to calm down are you fucken crazy

Deon; amahle can not know about this dre or she will freak she is already scared on how you will react if you find out and her seeing you like this it will break her

Me; im going to kill him

Deon; you cant kill him let me make something clear to you, what we going to do right now is walk back in there and act as normal as possible and tomorrow we going to sort this bitch out without the girls knowing and you cant kill him cause you do that she will know and it might be too much for her to handle

Me; he hit my girl man

I was breaking down the thought off that in my head

deon; lets sort this out tomorrow, get yourself together i will be inside

After a while outside i walked back inside and everyone was having fun

Amahle; you have been gone for a while

Me; yeah didnt want to come in smel...

Amahle; you bleeding

I looked at my hand , took the cloth on the table and just covered it

Me; \*smiling\* im fine

Amahle; dre

Me; huh

Amahle; you ohk

Me; yes shawty , now can we have fun

Amahle; yes

I tried to have fun but it was so hard for me. We left around 3 am and went to my place and i just went to bed. The next morning amahle was not next to me , i walked to the bathroom and the door was locked

Me; mami

Amahle; baby wait

Me; what? Why is this door locked

Amahle; hold on

She finally opened the door and i walked inside she was busy on the mirror

Me; why did you lock

Amahle; i didnt even realise i locked

After using the toilet i flushed, washed my hands and walked to her. I stood behind her and she just covered her face with her hair

Me; do you have any idea how sexy you are

I said that, moving the hair to one side to kiss her neck

Amahle; im really hungry babe

Me; me too for you

Amahle; dre im not in the mood

I moved it to the other side , cause the was no mark on her face and immediately when i moved the hair to the left side she was literally red , and it was visible cause she was light

Me; whats this

Amahle; i i \*stuttering\* i think its an allergy

Me; like this

Amahle; yes

She removed my hands and moved me out off the way , when she left the bathroom i just wanted to break something but i did not want her to suspect anything

Me; so what do you want to eat

Amahle; anything

Me; oh and you should get that checked out

I walked downstairs i was fuming and the guys were downstairs

Dorian; whats up with you

Me; nothing

Them; oh kay

## INSERT #80

Dorian; what happened to you ?

Amahle; nothing

Dorian; that does not look like nothing

Themba; did something happen between you guys

Me; you mean did i hit her?

Amahle; no! no we didnt fight i think its an allergy

Themba; that does not look like an allergy

Amahle; well it is

Themba; yho ohk

Amahle; im sorry i really want to go home

Mbali; yeah its best we go home

Deon; il drop you off ohk

Amahle; ohk

They packed their things and i accompanied her to the car

Me; you will be ohk right

She nodded her head

Me; i love you

Amahle; love you too

They left and i walked back inside

Dorian; i cant believe you hit her , why ?

Me; i didnt hit her man dont you think you would have heard her scream if i hit her

Themba; but on the real that does not look like an allergy

Me; cause its not , brandon hit her

Them; WHAT???

Me; yeah and i dont want to know why but im going to kill that guy

Dorian; she told you that

Me; no she does not want me to know , when i asked her about the mark she said it was an allergy but deon told me that it was brandon

Themba; we going now to this bitch

Me; we have to wait for deon

I went up and went to change and went back downstairs , deon arrived after a few minutes

Themba; we know what happened to amahle

Deon; we need to find this guy

Me; his obviously at his crib

Deon; but man you cant kill this guy cause if amahle finds out that you killed him it might be the end of you two

Themba; im sorry but it wont be as easy as you make it sound that guy is disrespecting us now

Me; lets go

We drove too eldorado park and i didnt even bring my gun along cause i knew if i did i was going to kill him. I took my baseball bat and we opened the first gate. Themba was also carrying a bat and he immediately broke the house windows , neighbours were looking at us and people ran out off the house

Brandon; what the fuck is go... \*he paused\*

He tried to punch me but i swung the bat to him his friends came onto me but my guys had my back i pulled him outside off his house i still respected his place and kept hitting him, kicking him over and over again and people were just watching no one wanted to get involved, i did not care how bad i was hurting him then cops showed up , well one pulled me away and i dropped the bat that was covered in blood

Me; \*shouting\* YOU FUCKEN HIT MY GIRL AGAIN IM GOING TO KILL YOU BITCH DONT TRY ME

Officer; we taking you in, young man assault case will be opened

Me; LEAVE ME THE FUCK ALONE

And he just cuffed me and looking at brandon he looked dead, the was blood all over him and he was just laying there on the street, people were out off their yards and they pushed me inside the van i felt relieved in a way.

We got to the police station and i just covered my face as i was sitting on the bench the guys arrived

Themba; man...

Officer; wait young man , who said you can come in here

Themba; what?

officer; mind the way you speak with me and you not allowed in here, your friend will be sleeping here and a assault case will be open

I just let out a slight laugh

Officer; you think this is funny , wait till you inside and lets see if you can fight your way out

I looked at themba and we both just smiled

Themba; ntwana look il see you later ohk

Me; sure boy \*smiling\*

He left and just looked at him after he was done filling in the documents i went to the holding cells

Lol well i did sleep there but by 8 i was walking out off the police station

Me; my head hurts

Deon; sorry you had to sleep there couldnt get a hold of this guy

Me; where was he

Deon; dont even know, only got him this morning here

Me; thanks man

I opened the paper bag and it was just a burger and fries

Me; so update

Deon; well he is not dead but fuck man i mean you did damage , lost teeth he is fucked

Me; \*smiling\* now i just need to see my girl my phone

Deon; dashboard

I took it and dialled her number

Amahle; papi

Me; mami

Amahle; how are you

Me; i miss you

Amahle; \*laughing\* me too my baby

Me; what time do your classes end

Amahle; around 4

Me; where are you now

Amahle; about to catch the bus

Me; ohk il pick you up at 4

Amahle; ohk

Me; how is the allergy

Amahle; mmm so much better its not even there anymore

Me; ohk talk later

I hung up

Deon; why you pulling her leg

Me; cause i want her to be honest with me

Deon; trust me with this she wont be , lets just hope she does not find out what you did to brandon

Me; i didnt kill him that should make her sleep

Deon; cant take you home now

Me why not

Deon; i have to drop off mbali at work

Me; ohk

We drove to mbali house and picked her up, i sat at the back

'mbali; well you look like shit

Deon; he slept at the police station

Mbali; \*Laughing\* what did you do

Me; brandon

Mbali; andre!!

Me; i didnt kill him

Mbali; good so he told you

Me; i cant believe you didnt tell me

Mbali ; amahle made me promise

Me; well good thing he told me

Mbali; im sorry

Me; what exactly happened

Mbali; well brandon came over to us as we were going to buy food he started begging amahle to take her back and he called me a bitch

Deon; what?

mbali; yes then amahle was like dont call her that and she began telling him shit on how he is acting like a lil bitch

begging her and she has moved on and how pathetic he is  
then he hit her

Me; that nigga is lucky i didnt kill him like seriously

Deon; and his lucky i didnt touch him

Mbali; well good thing its behind us now

Deon; yeah

Mbali; bye guys

Us; \*laughing\* bye miss independent

Mbali; vele

We laughed and she walked to the building . Deon  
dropped me off at my place

I set my alarm for 3 and just slept. Woke up around 2 and  
went to bath wore a pair of dark blue jean, maron top,  
grey cap and black nikes and left to pick up amahle. I told  
her where she will find me and around 16;15 she got  
inside the car

## INSERT #81

She kissed me and i just held her face and kissed her back

Me; you missed me that much

Amahle; maybe \*smiling\*

Me; you know you did

I started the car

Amahle; wait im craving for emc flurry lets go buy it to that mcdonald

Me; ohk

Switched off the car and got out off the car, she came to me and i pulled her closer to me and wrapped my arm around her and walked to mcd. Well girls tend to stare sometimes i dont even understand why . We walked inside the mcd and it was full mostly it was students

Me; im hungry now

Amahle; \*laughing\* no the plan was to buy ice cream

Me; \*laughing\* you really expect us to walk out off here with only ice cream

She nodded her head

Me; no way , if you dont want food then fine but im buying it

Amahle; how is it that you eat so much but you never gain weight

Me; cause i gym

Amahle; \*laughing\* punka you dont gym

Me; \*laughing\* what you trying to say

Amahle; nothing \*smiling\* cause i mean you sexy as fuck

I laughed so loud

Me; didnt think you had that side in you

Amahle; only with yo...

Girl; hi what would you like to have

Me; please give me mc feast a large meal with mcflurry  
oreo

Amahle; il have the same

Me; \*laughing\* ohh look who is ordering food

Amahle; leave me in peace

Girl ; \*smiling\* is that all

Amahle; yes

She gave us our slip and went to the other side. While my girl was around me, her arms around my waist and head on my chest thats how she wanted girls to know i was taken and my arms were around her neck

Amahle; dre

Me; hmmmm

Amahle; dont freak out ohk

Me; ohk

Amahle; this is it for me i mean i dont want anyone else but you

Me; how romantic are you, saying that in a crowded mcd , not looking at me in the eyes

Amahle; \*laughing\* im serious

Me; look at me

She lifted her head up to look at me

Me; this is it for me too im done with my old ways but i just want you

She tip toed and kissed me , then we collected our order and walked back to the car

My phone rang and it was nhlanhla

Me; ntwana

Nhlanhla; sure , you have to get here

Me; whats up

Nhlanhla; there are some mix ups with everything here and i cant get a hold of the guys

Me; im on my way

I hung up

Me; shawty will have to pass somewhere first

Amahle; ohk everything ohk

Me; i hope so

I drove to the warehouse

Amahle; what is this place

Me; dont worry about that

Got out off the car and so did she

Me; whats up

Nhlanhla looked at amahle

Me; talk to me ntwana

Nhlanhla; well the guy from vereeniging came right to collect his polo

Me; so? I told you he would come

Nhlanhla; i know problem is , its not in the basement

Me; what?

Nhanhla; its not there, silver grey polo not there man only the white and black one

Me; wait boy how can it not be there, it was there like the beginning off this week

I was panicking

Nhlanhla; lets go check it out

Amahle followed us and we checked the basement , the 3rd floor it was not there

Me; fuck this guy gave me a full payment this can not happen

Amahle; these are yours?

Me; no mami, they have their owners i just get them for them

I called themba and it just went straight to voicemail

Me; shawty i need to take you home

Amahle; but you needed here

Me; the quicker i drop you off the quicker i will be able to come back

Amahle; how about one off the guys drops me off cause you seem really stressed

Me; you wont mind

Amahle; no at all punka

Me; boy please call one off the guys

He went to call sandile and they left

Me; who the fuck would take that car

Nhlanhla; at this point i dont even know man

Me; oviasly this person took it at night

Nhlanhla; where no one will see them

Me; im fucked man i mean im fucked

I was there for another hour and the guys came

Me; dont fuck with me all of you

Dorian; what up now

Me; where the fuck have you been

Themba; m m we went to grab something to eat

Me; and your phones

Deon; whats up man? Like you acting like i dont even know

Me; well guy from vereening came to collect his car and guess what its not fucken there

Dorian; what? Its there

Me; go point it out man

They all went to the basement

Themba; this is crazy it was there

Me; \*shouting\* WELL ITS NOT FUCKEN THERE IS IT AND I WANT TO KNOW WHERE THE FUCK IT IS

Deon; so if its not there no man

Me; yho you all pissing me off now , you saw that the car is not there and you keep reminding me off that shit

Dorian; we need solutions and fast

Themba; where are we going to get a silver grey polo right now

Me; i would think it was brandon but he is not capable of such

Deon; this person knew about this deal

Me; yeah there were better cars they would have took so why would they take that one

Dorian; i hate to say this but this person is within us

Me; question is who the fuck is it

#AMAHLE

Got home and just went to my bedroom was full so i just began studying around 11 went to bath then went straight to bed. Next day called dre but his phone was on voicemail arrived at school and it was the usual

"Your bf is going to regret what he did" i checked the number but i did not recognise it so i called it

Me; helo

Guy; what do you want bitch

Me; who is this

Guy; what the fuck do you want

Me; i want to know who is this geez you dont have to be rude

Guy; its abel

Me; so what you talking about abel insulting me and talking about my bf

Abel; your bf will regret what he did to brandon just know that nxa

And he hung up

What was this guy talking about i tried dre phone again and it just went straight to voicemail. Attended all my lectures and finally went home i was stressed about what abel said so decided to call him back

INSERT 82

#AMAHLE

It rang for a while with no answer i tried it again

Guy; what do you want?

me; what you doing with brandons phone

Guy; cause i have it

Me; can i talk to him

Abel; you cant

Me; what you mean i cant

Abel ; i mean exactly that, his at the hospital and im at home

Me; what?

Abel; yebo his at the hospital

Me; can you please give me the details i want to go and see him

Abel; so you will finish him off

Me; no come on abel i know you hate me right now but i had nothing to do with whatever that happened to brandon now please

Abel; fine

He gave me the details and i had to leave school early tomorrow

Next morning went to school and skipped the rest of my class in order to go to bara arrived around 3 and went to the ward. I asked the nurse where i could find brandon and they showed me and my eyes were wide open. There was abel there and they both looked at me. Brandon looked terrible i mean both eyes were swollen , lips were cut, the was a bandage over his head. He couldnt even speak properly but i could hear him

Brandon; go

Me; brandon please

Brandon; i said go

Me; im sorry this happened to you but i did not tell andre you hit me, in fact i should be glad this happened to you after you hit me but here i am feeling sorry for you cause thats how stupid i am

Brandon; dont lie , this is because of you

Me; me?? I didnt tell him

Brandon; well he knew get out

Me; you know what here i am feeling sorry for you and you still act like this. Funny how you quick to hit a girl but you cant fight a guy nxa

I walked out off the ward and went to get a taxi. Kept thinking who could have told brandon and it had to be deon i mean they are best friends got home made myself something to eat then went to take a nap

Girl; amahle

Me; hmmmm

I slowly opened my eyes and it was mbali

Girl; your man is outside athi his been trying to get a hold off you

Me; i dont want to see him

Mbali; what? Why

Me; did you tell dre about brandon

Mbali; no you asked me not too mos

Me; you sure

Mbali; yes

Me; hmmmm

Mbali; what happened

Me; brandon happened i saw him today and mbali it looked like he was attacked by a mob and not just dre he blames me for it and his friends

Mbali; wait how did you see brandon

Me; i went to see him

Mbali; why??? Are you crazy

Me; i had to see him

Mbali; do you still love this guy or what? How can you go see someone who treated you like that

Me; no i dont love him and his friend told me how hurt he was and i was confused on what would hurt him until i found out it was dre

Mbali; you know what just go see your man

Me; i just said i dont want to see him

Mbali; so you want me to go and tell him that

Me; yes

Mbali; hmmmm wena ay you asking for trouble

She left and i just got naked to change to my pjs when  
the was a knock on the door

Guy; amahle!!!

Me; what?

Dre; ini? ( what?)

Me; what do you want dre

Mbali mum; umsindo owani ( whats the noise about)

Dre; im sorry ma i wanted to talk with amahle

Mbali mum; amahle?

Me; im coming ma

I quickly changed to pjs and walked out dre was not there

Mbali mum; his outside

I opened the door and walked to the gate and he was  
leaning on the car

Me; ufunu ini ( what do you want)

Dre; whats up with you?

me; you

Dre; what? Im sorry my phone was off was really busy with work

Me; its not about that

Dre; then what is it about

Me; you hit brandon

Dre;....

Me; what is wrong with you

Dre; what is wrong with you, lying to me

Me; cause i knew what you were going to do and now you did do it

Dre; i came all the way from my place to argue about some low life with my girl dont piss me off amahle

Me; mxm just leave

I turned and walked away

Dre; so you telling me i should have done nothing to a guy that hit you, pretended as if nothing happened , while he hurt you and i should just forget about it. Well thats not me amahle i fight and protect whats mine and if you have a problem with th...

I cut him off, turned and walked to his direction

Me; you could have killed him , did you see what you did to him

Dre; \*shouting\* i dont give a fuck how bad i hurt him , he hurt you and that was enough reason for me to kill him but i didnt

Me;...

Dre; listen im sorry but you need to understand that i love you amahle and you \* he paused \* its like you have made me weak , when deon told me brandon hit you i freaked i mean he hurt my queen and im suppose to pretend as if shit like that didnt happen fuck no Il always be like this with you and i mean always cause i love you im sorry for how things are

I walked up to him

Dre; im sorry i know how sensitive you can be

Me; im also sorry for lying to you and freaking out

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too punka

He pulled me in a hug and i hugged him so tight

Dre; \*laughing\* geez you stubborn woman

me; mxm kiss me \*pouting\*

He kissed me and i quickly broke it

Me; did you find the car?

Dre; jack decided to take it for a spin, he was not aware the car was already sold

Me; \*laughing\* shame

He pulled me in for a kiss again

Me; need to go and study

Dre; ohk see you?

Me; mmmmm Friday punka i have to study

Dre; ohk kiss me for the rest off this week

Me; haha no

I got away from his grip and tried to run but he reached me before i could get to the gate and kissed me i kissed him back and i didnt want to break it but he did and he left

Few days passed and it was july me and dre were great i mean i love this guy. They were acting really funny though. I wrote my exams and went on holiday and was with dre most off the time.

Dre; mami i need to go

Me; where

Dre; mm i need to sort out some things

Me; can i go with you

Dre; no

Me; why not

Dre; you just cant you will be bored cause i will be too busy to give you my full attention

Me; il be way bored if i remain behind, no one is home

Dre; mami

Me; what are you hiding andre

Dre; \*Laughing\* what could i possibly be hiding mami

Me; so why dont you want to leave with me

Dre; fine lets go

Me; you think il say no, hell no we going

Dre; \*laughing\* so go and lock the house

Me; andre if you leave as i going inside im never talking to you again

Dre; \*laughing\* you want to leave with the keys

Me; yes

Dre; here

I took them and ran to the house, locked and came back

Me; thank you \*handing him his keys\*

He just laughed

INSERT #83

## #ANDRE

I had to meet with one off my friend for amahle party but her insisting on going with me just trouble so i dialled his number

Me; hey

Kgontsi; hey where are you

Kgontsi was an events planner if im saying that right , wedding , party anything you wanted done he was the guy for it , he was also gay

Me; im on my way but ... Shawty you want anything to eat

Amahle; nah im ohk

I did that to signal to kgontsi that i was travelling with her

Kgonsti; is that miss party

Me; yeah man like eish

Kgontsi; mara wena you such a bore ey what am i going to do now

Me; i dont know

Kgonsti; ay ohk see you when you get here

Me; sharp

I hung up and drove to where i was told i must come, it was deco mbali mum could not make it so she asked me to go with kgontsi since i introduced them to him

Me; lets go

Amahle; where are we

Me; im also not sure, one off my friends asked me to come here

Amahle; ohk

We walked in and it was beautiful the deco

Kgontsi; heyyyyy

I turned around and it was him

Me; hey man... This is amahle my girl mami kgontsi he has a crush on me

Amahle laughed

Amahle; should i feel threatened

Kgontsi; let me say dont leave me alone with him or you will find yourself singel

Amahle; noted

Kgontsi; good thing theres two girls here, need your help

Me; ohk shoot

Kgontsi; so i need to choose the perfect deco for my cousin , you know her birthday is in 2 months time and this must be sorted

Amahle; all of these are beautiful

Woman; can i show you my top 3 but it will cost you

Kgontsi; money is not a problem with my cousins bf

Me; yes

We walked outside and geez it was beautiful , you would think it was for a wedding not a 21st.

Woman; so between this 3 you will have to choose

Kgontsi; so?

Me; what do you think babe

Amahle; they all beautiful but this yho this. I would have this for my wedding or party

Kgontsi; they all come with these chairs right

Woman; yes

Kgontsi; ohk

Amahle; but whats the occasion

Kgontsi; baby shower and a party

Amahle; the theme

Kgontsi; well the colours that will be used are white and powder blue

Amahle; \*laughing\* ahhhh i love those colours

I just looked the other way

Kgontsi; yeah my cousin is having a boy so

Amahle; makes perfect sense

Me; can we choose this thing and leave

Kgontsi; will choose this one

I looked at kgontsi cause she chose the one that amahle didnt choose and i thought it would be best if he chose the one amahle chose cause she liked it. We did a few other things and the were some things amahle couldnt see so we left and went to my place

Amahle; that was fun

Me; glad you enjoyed

Amahle; so what were you hiding from me

Me; i told you i was not hiding anything

Amahle; and you said you would be with the guys

Me; i cancelled them cause i knew i was with you

Amahle; hmmmm

Me; \*Laughing\* yes

Amahle; im coming ohk

Me; ohk

She went upstairs and i carried on watching tv after a while she came back and kneeled in front off me her hands on my knees

Amahle; allow me to do this

I looked at her i was still confused

Me; ohhh kay

She kissed me and i kissed her back she was still on her knees , he held my pants and pulled them down i stood up and she removed them and my underwear. I sat again and i laid back i couldnt believe she was going to do this but way more important i was excited as fuck. She planted kissed on my d and she did magic. My eyes rolled at the back off my head i let out moans, she moaned while she sucked she did it perfectly no teeth, but more tongue i held her head and wrapped her hair around my hand my breathing getting louder , and she made eyes contact, she looked at me straight in the eyes as she sucked. She went fast and faster and i finally cum on her mouth , she looked at me and swallowed it i was just staring i mean where did this girl come from.

I pulled her up and kissed her , lifted her up and laid her on the sofa , i removed her clothes and just left her naked , i pushed her up and she leaned her head on the couch arm rest. I kissed her belly, and legs and slowly parted them i kissed the side of each leg and looked at her she was biting her lower lip, looking at me, i smiled and went down on her, sucked, licked and fingered , she was dripping wet, her moans filled the lounge. She held my head down and i didnt back down just deepened the sucking , my thumb and tongue on her clit and two fingers inside off her

Her; dre \*breathing out aloud \* dreeeeee

I played with my fingers around her g spot for the last time and her body got up from the couch , she squirted , her body was shaking , her eyes closed and her breath just ran out and i smiled this was a first i kissed her and she was so drained she couldnt even kiss me i laid in between her legs , my head on her shoulder , she pulled me for a kiss , i directed my d to her entrance

Amahle; protection

Me; eish im coming

I quickly stood up to go to my bedroom as i walked up stairs the buzz rang. We looked at each other i went went to the screen and it was my mum talk about bad timing

Me; shawty its my mum

She quickly got up from the couch and just panicked

Me; \*laughing\* why you panicking

Amahle; i dont even know, the couch is wet

Me; dont worry about that il get a towel.... Mum il let you in

Mummy; ohk

I buzzed her in, amahle rushed upstairs and covered the couch with the towel, i got dressed and tidied up the place

Mummy; you take an hour to open up for someone

Me; im sorry i was sleeping

Mummy; its ohk baby

We hugged and amahle came downstairs and my mum looked at me and smiled

Mummy; helo baby

Amahle ; hi ma \*smiling\*

Mummy; you look good

Amahle; not as good as you

Mummy; \*smiling\* did i disturb you 2

Us; no, no you didnt

Mummy; oh kay thought i should take you out for lunch so can i

Me; mami

Amahle; im not dressed accordingly

Me; what ? You look beautiful

Amahle; of course you going to say that

Mummy; \*laughing\* his right you look beautiful

Amahle; ohk

Me; mum can you give us 5 minutes

Mummy; ohk

I pulled her upstairs and got to my bedroom, closed the door and i pinned her to the door, and kissed her

Me; im not done with you

Amahle; \*smiling\*and im glad you not done with me

She opened the door and went downstairs i just smiled and followed her. She wanted to sit at the back but my mum forced her to sit in front while i sat at the back.

Mummy; i was going to tell you that in 30 days you will receive everything of your parents , they promised that in 30 days and since you the only beneficiary you get everything

Amahle; oh my i dont even know what to say

Mummy; you dont have to say anything

Amahle; thank you so much ma, i mean thank you

Mummy; thank you i didnt even think i still had it in me to stand in front off a judge

Me; its good to have you back

Mummy; \*smiling\* thank you baby

Amahle; so you thinking of going back to law

Mummy; i will still practise it but im focussing on the business right now

Amahle; thats really amazing

We got to the restaurant and they showed us our table, we ordered , it arrived and we dug in

Mummy; so?

Me; so?

Mummy; tell me about this union

Amahle laughed

Me; let me speak for myself ohk

Amahle; why for yourself

Me; \*laughing\* ay im speaking for myself ma im crazy about her i mean shes the first girl iv literally fallen in love with

She smiled

Mummy; \*smiling\* you look so good together

Me; \*laughing\* oh really

Mummy; yes really i really love this , this is beautiful

Amahle; thank you

## INSERT # 84

After our lunch we dropped off amahle

Mummy; so she is still unaware of the party

Me; yes and today i had to go to the deco with her cause  
she refused to stay behind

Mummy; how did that go

Me; she didnt suspect a thing let me call kgontsi

It rang and he answered

Kgontsi; hey you

Me; hey lovy

Kgontsi; wooo you good

Me; \*laughing\* yeah listen up, why did you chose that  
deco when she loved that one

Kgontsi; so she would not suspect a thing and she would  
be surprised that day dont worry i called that lady and  
said we changed our mind and we wanted the one she  
chose

Me; you smart

Kgontsi; i know

Me; mxm

I hung up

Mummy; everything is still fine

Me; yeah, hows kim

Mum; shes great , shes also doing great at school

Me; she still attends

Mum; yes every weekend

Me; \*laughing\* so unlike her

Mum; you and dorian are ohk?

me; yes we good, cant complain

Mum'; and his gf

Me; \*laughing\* he does not have a gf , still plays with girls

Mum; at least one of you grew up

Me; im sure if it was not amahle then i would still be fuc...

\*i paused\* playing around

She laughed

Me; how about you?

Mum; im ohk baby taking it one step at a time

Me; you look really good, have you been to dads grave

Mum; yeah more than once

Me; does it bring any closure

Mum; yeah but reality too

Me; you will get through it ohk

Mum; with my family next to me so have you decided on what you will buy for amahle

Me; no yhoooo i cant find the perfect gift mum, and next week its the party

Mum; just let it be an expensive gift

Me; \*laughing\* thanks for being no help mum

She dropped me off at my place , i cooked when i was done went to take a shower then went to eat

Tv was boring , so took out my laptop and got busy with it made final touch ups with the party. The rest of the week passed by so fast. Friday the 30 july woke up very early , made myself breakfast and went to take a shower i was meeting with the guys. Wore my nike grey shorts, white top and all star. The party was set to start at 4-5. went to dorian place

Me; hey man

Dorian; hey man

We hugged, walked to the lounge and the guys were there drinking

Me; its not even 12 yet

Themba; fuck that

I took a bottle and sat down with them

Deon; so we all set for tomorrow

Themba; yeah but how will she leave the house

Deon; mbali said she will go with her to one off the malls , do their hair, and all those things, then watch a movie that will end around 4 then i will pick them up, we drive to their place and boom surprise

Me; its a solid plan but will be already at her house right

Deon; yes cause they will need help

Themba; that means we have to go with our over rolls ne

Me; sure and what time will these people arrive

Deon; the deco people will be there by 2 thats what they said, dj around 3 to have enough time to set up and stuff

Me; so when we go to sort out everything will leave with the alcohol right

Themba; we must not forget to buy the ice

Me; and that

Deon; ntwana via the cake

Me; all sorted they will deliver it at my place and i will come with it

Shane; fuck everything is in order mos

Me; yeah cause her grandparents are arriving today but they will be sleeping at mbali mum sister place

Themba; she will be so excited

Dorian; so does this make you mr party

Me; \*laughing\* ai fokof wena ( piss off)

They all laughed

Dorian; who would have thought

Me; \*laughing\* im not

Dorian; so who is it

Me; no one

Dorian; who will be sitting with her

Me; she will be sitting alone

Deon; thats how they planned it via deco

My phone rang and it was the queen herself

Me; mami

Amahle; \*laughing\* punka so you wont believe what happened to me today

Me; \*laughing\* what

Amahle; so i was studying with my friend today at her place right and we could not go to the library because she had to look after her gran i was at central when we were done i had to walk alone cause she could not leave the house , then 3 boys come from behind me right looking like those nyaope boys and i realise they were going to take my phone me so i started walking faster and they run after me shouting heyy hey hey and i just run so i bump to this old man and im like they trying to rob me, the guys stand in front of me and they like your friend sent us to you cause you forgot your book and she could not leave cause of her gran

Me; \*laughing\* how embarrassing is that, why were you scared

Amahle; ehhhh my phone

Me; \*laughing\* so what did you say were running from

Amahle; them

I laughed even louder

Amahle; dont laugh punka ehh

Me; \*laughing\* wherever they are they think you crazy

Amahle; whatever i miss you where are you

Me; im with the guys , where are you now

Amahle; on a taxi going home

Me; \*laughing\* wait you laughing like this and telling me this while you in a taxi

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah i couldnt wait till i got home to tell you this

Me; now people in that taxi think you crazy

Amahle; its just me \*whispering\* the driver think he has a crush on me

Me; \*laughing\* why

Amahle; tell you when i get off so i had to call you cause \*whispering\* he couldnt stop talking

Me; yhooo mama im coming to see you today ne , i miss you now and your crazy self

Amahle; please come plus im alone, mbali and ma said they would be back late

Me; and her dad

Amahle; only coming back around 8

Me; ohk im on my way right now

Amahle; ohk for sure will get there before you

Me; if you get there before me, you must buy us food i will do the same

Amahle; ohk see you in a few

Me; sharp

Amahle; i love you

Me; \*laughing\* you saying that to spite the driver ne

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; guys need to go

Deon; miss party

Me; only her i miss my girl

Dorian; never thought i would see this day

Themba; yho ntwana as in ever

Me; fuck you , will meet later on if not tomorrow morning right

Them; yeah

Took my car keys and another bottle ye heinekein and drove to her place as i was about to dial her number to check if she has arrived she appeared holding 2 takeaways . She opened the door and got in

Amahle; you eat everything right

Me; yeah

Amahle; ohk this is yours

Me; whats in yours

Amahle; theres no egg

Me; ohk

She kissed me

Amahle; hey

Me; \*smiling\* hey mami

Amahle; ehhhh the driver

Me; \*laughing\* what did he say

Amahle; he kept talking about how he was going to marry me and that he loves me, how he is rich cause of the taxi business even after i said i love you he was like sizothanda nawe sonke ( we will all love you)

I laughed so loud

Me; are you for real

Amahle; yeah punka yho shame that guy never ever will i go in his taxi again

Me; i should tattoo your forehead now

Amahle; write what

Me; forget or get killed

She laughed

Amahle; mxm

We ate our food and just remained in the car

We talked about random things

Me; i need the toilet

Amahle; ay punka

Me; what? Must i pee on myself

Amahle; let go

We got out off the car and went inside used the bathroom and got out and she was standing on the hallway i stood opposite her and we just looked at each other

Amahle; you make me happy

Me; really?

Amahle; yeah really hap p p y \*stuttering\*

sHe stuttered as i walked up to her, her body was against mine

Me; tell me how happy i make you

I kissed her neck , she squeezed my arms " how happy do i make you" said that in between the kiss , she let out a moan

Amahle; so happy that i only think about you

'she said that in between loud breaths

I squeezed her butt and lifted her up , she wrapped her legs around my waist. Her back on the wall i moved her head to the side and kissed her neck again.

Me; how do you want me to make you happy

Amahle; touch me

I tightened the grip on her thigh , she kissed me but i broke it

Me; carry on

She smiled , i unbuttoned her jean with one hand , she looked at me " carry on what do you want me to do" , i inserted my hand inside her underwear. She let out a moan "the way your fingers move on my clit" she said , i made circular movements on her clit . She moaned and tightened the grip on my back " how fast your fingers moved" i moved my fingers faster , she breathed in loud as if she was choking , her nails dug to my back " baby talk to me" she couldnt speak

Amahle; dre \* her breath was running but still breathing fast \* slow down

Me; slow down?

she shook her head, i inserted 2 fingers in and she gasped for air. I bit my lip and looked at her. She moaned and suddenly the was the sound off a key entering the door hole

Mbali; i wonder bakuphi

Me and amahle looked at each other , i put her down and we rushed to her room. She fixed herself up and i could not help but laugh

Amahle; go to the toilet and pretend as if you were in the toilet

Me; fine

Went to the toilet

Amahle; hey

Mbali; ao ukhona ( oh you here)

Amahle; yes just got in, dre wanted etoilet uphi umama ( wheres ma?)

Mbali; usaye ku mngani wakhe ( shes gone to her friend)

I just flushed and went out , mbali looked at me and back at amahle

Mbali; where you 2...

Me; \*laughing\* wow that means we get dressed fast ne

Mbali; ohk you got a point, you good

Me; im good bubu wena

Mbali; im good bubu just tired eish

Amahle; thought you were only coming back later on today

Mbali; yeah but we were able to finish things fast

Me; let me go before your mum arrives

Amahle; let me walk you

I walked out with amahle . She looked pissed

Me; \*laughing\* i love you mami

Amahle; \*smiling\* ay punka

Me; what? Its not my fault people keep interrupting us

Amahle; ay we should get our own place

Me; yes mami il see you when i see you

Amahle; tomorrow

Me; tomorrow?

Amahle; eish never mind , mbali is taking me out so i will either see you tomorrow later on or Sunday

Me; ohk i love you ohk

Amahle; love you too

## INSERT #85

#AMAHLE

Woke up Saturday morning missing my baby, if it was not for mbali i would be with him. Did my chores and went to

look for something to wear. Took out my black jean, black long sleeve top, black nikes with a black cap i was happy i was going to change this hair yho. Mbali took a bath first , mbali mum was really excited dont even know why after mbali went to bath , wore the clothes i took out, applied a bit off makeup , took my bag and mbali was done. Said our goodbye and left

Me; is it me or ma is happy today

Mbali; i also noticed wonder why ey

Me; yeah anyway never told you this, i did everything that you taught me

Mbali; \*laughing\* with dre

I nodded my head

Mbali; did he cum

Me; \*laughing\* yeah and swallowed it

Mbali; im sure he was turned on ne

Me; yhooo i just saw in his eyes he couldnt believe , thanks for teaching me such

Mbaki; \*laughing\* its so weird that i taught you how to blow your bf

Me; ai suka this guy is making me love sex

Mbali; you not the only one deon yeses

We just laughed about it, got to the salon

Mbali; what do you want to do

Me; just straight weave

Lady; ohk

They did my hair while doing my nails i loved them way more than the hair lol. When we were done it was mbali treat but when she paid it was not her card. We walked out

Me; whos card is that

Mbali; which one

Me; the one you paid with

Mbali; oh it belongs to deon

Me; the wife

Mbali; yes he must spoil me lets watch this one

Me; ohk

The movie was really nice when it was done we walked out

Me; im hungry yho

Mbali; siyodla endlini ( will eat home)

Me; \*laughing\* what? Mbali no

Mbali; deon is on the way to pick us up

Me; without eating

Mbali; yes nana we already spent too much plus food

Me; il pay with my own money

Mbali; ahh uyabo its deon lets go

Me; you and your bf are boring

We walked out

Me; where is he

Mbali; i dont know

Me; ay maybe his not even here

Mbali; yeses you grumpy when you hungry ne

Me; voetsek

Deon car parked in front off us and i sat at the back

Deon; mama why you angry

Me; can we pass by e drive thru

Deon; no mama need to drop you off , me and mbali have plans

Me; i just want dre, i never starve when im with him

They both laughed

Few street from my place, deon stopped the car.

Me; what now?

Deon; are you always this grumpy when you hungry

Mbali; \*laughing\* thats exactly what i said

Deon; does dre know you get like this

Me; \*laughing\* ohk why are we stopping

Mbali; i have a surprise for you

Me; ohk

Mbali; but i need you to cover your eyes

Me; what ?

Mbali; yes, here

Me; \*laughing\* isnt this ma`s thing, the one she sleeps with

Mbali; yes i stole it she wont find out about it

Me; no \*laughing\*

Deon; baby we need to go

Mbali; you see mahle we need to go so if i give you the gift we can go

Me; fine bring it

I took the eye cover thing and putted it on

Me; this is making me look stupid

Deon; who will see you besides us

The car started and it finally stopped we were obviously at home

Mbali; dont take it off il help you get off

Me; ohk hold my hand

She held my hand and we got out.

Me; please let it be a puppy mbali

Mbali; puppy?

Me; yes

Mbali; no its not a puppy geez im afraid of dogs why would i buy you one

Me; ohk ke can i remove this now

Mbali; wait

Me; mbali

Mbali; \*laughing\* fine stop complaining open

I removed the cover

SURPRISE!!!!!!! I just froze there my friends jumped on me , people were screaming i looked around and it looked planned everything my grandparents were there other family members, tears began building up

Ma; happy 21st birthday baby

Me; ma ma ma \*stuttering\*

Pa; this is all for you

I just hugged them and went to hug mbali mum and dad

Me; thank you so much ma no baba

I was just crying couldnt even hold back my tears,  
everyone came to hug me wishing me a happy birthday  
mbali pulled me inside the house we went to my bedroom  
where the was a girl in my room, and a beautiful dress on  
my bed with a jumpsuit.

Girl; hey can you sit down for me

I looked at mbali

Mbali; i know you like doing your makeup , not today

Me; can i take a quick shower

Girl; sure

I rushed to the bathroom and in less than 10 minutes i  
was out, wrapped a towel around me and she did my  
makeup. And my bedroom door opened

Dre; hey you\* smiling\*

me; cant believe you hid this from me

Dre; had no choice, listen il see you later ohk

Me; what? Where you going

Dre; i have to go and change mami

He was in those over roll pants, all star and just a black top. He looked good in anything

Me; but its too far

Dre; i will be back in less than an hour

Me; ohk

He kissed me and i kissed him back

Dre; love you ohk

Me; love you more

She carried on with the makeup , then my hair , then got dressed i was in love with the dress yho. I was so scared to leave the room but i finally did on the lounge my entire family was thee. Some i knew and some i didnt.

After a while we moved to the tent , my grandparents had their speech, mbali parents , friends from school, mbali, themba and dorian and it was time for dre but nothing.

Themba was the mc

Themba; \*laughing\* boy where are you

Me; \*laughing\* did he run away to avoid this

Dre; no

He appeared from the large crowd and my smile just grew big

Dre; well this is a huge crows... You all look beautiful but she takes the cup

They laughed

Dre; please excuse me with these speech things i dont usually do them and i didnt get the time to practise it so forgive me if I'm horrible first time i met miss party was a year back if im not mistaken at a party yho majita (guys) just imagine you getting drunk and she appears , i didnt know what to think i just got sober and i think i fell in love with her that very moment, my mami i would do anything to make you happy cause thats how much i love you , i love how sensitive you are but at the same time mean

Me; haaaa

The guys; yessss

I laughed

Dre; happy birthday baby , this is not me but i got out off my comfort zone for you, happy 21st birthday i love you so much

Tried holding back my tears but it was just a fail. After speeches opened a few of my gifts then it was time to eat.

Pa; are you happy

Me; \*smiling\* yes that speech was beautiful

Pa; good cause i practised it for a whole month

Me; pa

Pa; im joking it came from the heart, your parents would be so proud of you , you know that

Me; you think so

Pa; i know so, they with us here baby

Me; thank you pa

Kissed him on the cheek then hugged him. I had to repeat myself cause i was hungry and it all came back to me , the deco , the hair, mbali not making us eat anything, mbali questions on daily basis. Ma excitement this morning

Aminah; hey babe

I hugged her and nokwanda

Me; hey im so happy you here

Aminah; the guys here may i just say

Me; hot?

Aminah; not the right word

I laughed

Me; thank you guys

Nokwanda; you have no idea how hard it was for us to keep this a secret

Me; well thank you for trying guys

I talked to a few off my friends then went to change to the jumpsuit that was a V and my boobs were perfect. Walked up to dre, tapped his shoulder , he turned. Kissed him

Dre; enjoying your birthday

Me; loving my birthday

Dre; you look so sexy

Me; \*laughing\* pa wants to talk to you

Dre; what did i do

Me; i dont know

Went to dance with my friends, dre came back and we all had fun. Never had so much fun in my life...

INSERT # 86

#ANDRE

Later that night not sure what time it was a lot off people were drunk including mami grandfather he knew how to have fun most off the elders were indoors while we were sitting outside them dancing and i was keeping a close eye on my woman

Themba; boy

Me; hmm

Themba; look at you, you fucken drunk

Me; mxm whats up

Themba; so brandon is out

Me; so?

Themba; im just not comfortable with that

Me; what you mean

Themba; what if he comes here and ruin things for mami

Me; then it will prove to me how stupid he is that idiot wouldnt even come here even if they paid him and if he does shit will go down

Themba; im sure you dont want amahle grandfather to disapprove

Me; it wont get to that relax and enjoy the party , he thought i had become weak but i showed him what i was still capable off so he wont even try and test me

Themba; ohk let me go get me a mami

Me; \*laughing\* go boy

Dorian was all over mami friend. My baby came to me

Amahle; did i tell you i love you

I shook my head

Amahle; i love you, i love you, i love you i love you \* she was saying that so fast\*

Me; i love you when you drunk

She held her chest , her eyes wide open

Amahle; when im sober you dont

Me; i love you sober and drunk

Amahle; \*whispering\* when will we have sex

I laughed

Me; you such an animal these days

Amahle; your animal

She was so drunk and in a way it was attractive to me, i kissed her , she pulled my jeans and i broke it

Me; lets go

She smirked and i just laughed. Picked her up and walked to her bedroom the room was filled with gift bags i placed her inside the blankets

Amahle; i dont want to sleep

Me; who said we sleeping

I kissed her then broke the kiss i wasnt going to do anything with her in that condition beside that knowing her family is on the next room, i slept next to her she was in between my arms and soon fell asleep, mbali barged in

Mbali; come now

I removed amahle and walked outside. People were standing at the gate

Mbali mum; kodwa yini ( but whats wrong) why do you have to ruin something beautiful

I walked out and dorian was fighting with some guy i dont even know why

Me; why arent you stopping this

Themba; this is out off my hands and deon said the same thing

I pulled dorian away

Me; what the fuck do you think you doing

This guy threw a punch and i moved punching dorian, as he was about to throw it back i stood in the way and this idiot hit me in the nose the guy dorian was fighting with stopped fighting, my nose began bleeding and themba pulled dorian away, mbali rushed to me

Mbali; that was a mistake look up

Dorian; im sorry man, that was not meant for you

Me;....

Dorian; dre i said im sorry

Deon; dre!

Mbali mum came to me

Mbali mum; are you ohk baby

Me; yes ma im fine

Mbali; take this

She gave me her top and i cleaned myself up then went to sit were i was sitting

Jack; you ohk

Me; yes boy

Jack; you dont look ohk

Nhlanhla; yeah

Me; his just lucky i have too much respect for amahle family and mbali and amahle home cause if i didnt \* i paused\* lets just get drunk

And thats exactly what happened

## #AMAHLE

Woke up the next morning with a terrible headache lifted up my head. And my room was just filled with gift bags everywhere i mean i just smiled the thought off so many presents , made me so happy. The were people talking on the other room was still wearing a jumpsuit, got up and went to the other room. Ma was drinking tea i kissed her and pa

Me; morning to you 2

Them; morning baby

Me; morning ma

Mbali mum; birthday girl

I just laughed and greeted everyone else. OtherS were washing the dishes and tidying things up

Went outside and it was just elders, asked one off my cousin simphiwe

Me; hey did you see the guy i was with last night

Simphiwe; coloured guy

Me; yeah

Simphiwe; they slept on one off the rooms

Me; ohk thank you

Walked up to one off the room and when i opened...

The guys were all sleeping dorian, dre, themba, shane, deon , nhlanhla and jack i tip toed to dre and got on top off him

Me; \*whispering\* baby i miss you

He smiled and slowly opened his eyes

Dre; im drunk and you sitting on top of me , i will throw up \*whispering\*

i got off him and laughed , he made space for me and i squeezed myself in between him and themba

We whispered

Me; what happened to your nose, did you fight

Dre; no its nothing

Me; it does not look like nothing

Dre; im fine dont worry about it

Me; who were you fighting with

Dre; i was not fighting mami, i was stopping a fight thats all

Me; who was fighting

Dre; lets not talk about it cause it just pissed me off

Me; ohk i missed you

Dre; missed you too , had fun

I nodded

Dre; you looked beautiful, still do

Me; \*laughing\* you looked good too punka

Dre; i got you something , its not big or expensive or anything like that

Me; ohk

Dre; eish never mind i think il have to think off something else

Me; no i want whatever you have right now

Dre; its in the car

Me; well arent we going to get it

Dre; not now what if someone walks in here

Me; they wont

Themba; mmmmmm

Themba turned , me and dre just remained silent and looked at him

Me; \*laughing\* themba is cute when his sleeping

Dre; \*laughing\* what , look at him

Me; take a pic

He reached for his jeans and took out his phone. He took the pic and themba was fast asleep. Then we took pictures together. Then we both zoned off again woke up yet again and everyone was awake in that room

Themba; did we have sex

I punched him

Me; \*laughing\* my bf is next to you

Themba; or should i say 3some

Me; voetsek

Dorian; when did miss party arrive

Me; you didnt hear me

Shane; nope

Deon; couldnt stay away from us

Me; \*laughing\* i missed my baby not you guys

Dorian; but on the real were you surprised

Me; definitely i mean it was the last thing on my mind ...

Thank you guys ohk like really thank you

Them; pleasure/ anytime/ love you

Me; love you too not more than my baby kodwa

Dre; of course you dont

Dorian; can we talk man

The guys;.....

Dre; i dont have time for your shit

Me; whats going on

Dre; nothing

He got on top off me and kissed me

Themba ; ma \*shouting\* engathi nento mele uyibone la (ma theres something you need to come and see)

We just laughed , he got off me and i left them

My aunt; ntombazane can i talk to you

Me; ohk

We walked away from the house and we sat on one off the chairs that were outside

My aunt was my fathers sister, she never liked me or my mother, and when my mum died she was happy she could not even hide it. I hated her most off the time and when my father died, she didnt even care how i felt or what will happen to me. I didnt hate her anymore but i did not consider her family hope you understand what i mean

My aunt; angazi ngicalephi mahle ( i dont know where to start mahle)

I just looked at her

My aunt; im sorry baby i am really really sorry for everything. I acted like a child instead of being an adult and it hurts me that i can not take back the time and fix things. Im not asking you to forgive me i just want you to know how sorry i am for the pain iv caused you and your parents an...

Dre; amahle!!

I turned and dre appeared , he noticed me and this woman in front off me were crying. He tried to come closer but i just raised my hand for him not to come any further. He turned back

My aunt; i failed your mother and your father and im trying so hard not to fail you i have already failed you by leaving you i cant do it again \*sobbing\* im not asking for much i just want us too be a family cause we have each other right now

Me; i have abo ncane ( i have mbali mum)

Aunt; i know that i just want to be involved in your life thats all sweetie. Im really sorry

Me; what you trying to do , what do you want

Her; nothing

Me; nothing\* shouting\* nothing after all this years , after all the tears , after all the hurtful words, after abandoning me , after telling my mum how bad of witch she is and bewitching my father and you tell me you want us to be a family right now after everything you put my parents through and all you have to say is sorry

Mbali mum, and 2 of my family members walked out and the guys cause i was crying and shouting

Mbali mum; baby whats wrong

Me; its nothing ma \*wiping my tears\*

My aunt; im really sorry amahle

I just walked away with mbali mum

I went to cuddle next to my grandmother

Ma; whats wrong

Me; nothing ma

Ma; you crying baby

Me; thuli wants us to be a family again after everything  
ma

Ma; she is your aunt baby and my daughter

Me; no she is not, i wish you didnt have to leave

Ma; \*laughing\* let me kidnap you

I laughed

Me; wow ma kidnap your child

Ma; yes

Me;i love you so much ma and pa

Ma; we love you so much more baby, more than anything  
in this world

Dre; ma we need more plastic bags

Heard him from the kitchen

Ma; your bf

Me; \*laughing\* you know his voice

Ma; of course, its hard to forget

Me; \*laughing\* was pa like this when you were young

She laughed

Dre; wooooooooo they still breast feeding you

Ma; umtanami andre lo ( this my baby andre)

Dre laughed

Me; tell him ma

He took out his phone and then the was a flash

Me; \*laughing\* you taking a picture

Dre; yes you both look beautiful

Ma; let me fix myself

She fixed her wig, and we all laughed

Ma; ohk im ready

Dre took a plenty off pics, mbali, aminah and nokwanda joined the picture and other family members and a simple picture of me and my gran turned to a family picture , and dre the photographer lol

Dre; no thats enough i have work outside

Aminah; can we borrow your phone

Dre; you have phones

Nokwanda; iphones take better pictures than our phones and non of us use iphone

Dre; fine here \*throwing it\*

Us; thank you!

After our photoshoot. We tided around the house, aminah was flirting with dorian while nokwanda was flirting with nhlanhla. We washed the dishes, people for the deco and tent arrived took it. After hours off cleaning we sat outside.

Deon; so all of you are future doctors

Aminah; yes

Dorian; call me a doctor \*singing\*

We all laughed

Dorian; so baby have you dated a black guy before

Themba; you talking about me right

Dorian; \*Laughing\* im black dude

Nhlanhla; not really boy

Aminah; \*laughing\* yes i have

Me; are you really flirting in front of us

Dorian; you the last person to talk

I laughed

Dre; i ran out off smokes fuck

Dorian; and im all out

dre; I don't want your shit man

themba; bo...

Dre; lets go mami

Me; ohk

I stood up

Me; you will be ohk

Nokwanda; yeah

We walked up the streets

Dre; i want you to talk to me

Me; oh about?

Dre; what happened

Me; can we not talk about this you should be telling me  
whats up with you and dorian

Dre; no you were crying mami and I will tell you  
everything with dorian not now

Me; its just

He wrapped his arm around my shoulder and pulled me  
closer to him

Dre; talk to me

Me; that was my dads big sister , she hated my mum punka i mean hated her and she didnt even get to know her my mother didnt even do anything to her but she hated her, always told my mum how she bewitched my father in making her love him even after my mum died she was happy encouraging my father to be with people who actually care about him. After my father died, day off the funeral, she packed some of my dads things and my mothers and left with them didnt even care if i was ohk , if i will be taken care off , who will be left behind with me nothing

INSERT #87

#AMAHLE

Dre; thats fucked up

Me; \*wiping my tears\* i know and now she wants us to be a family whats that

He looked at me and wiped my tears away

Dre; im sorry ohk, im sorry for all the pain baby if i could i would take it all away

I hugged him

Me; i know you would

Dre; but mami listen to me  
Broke the hug and looked at him  
Dre; you remember what you told me about my mother  
Me;....

Dre; when i was angry with her, you said family is very important and the are many people who wish to have what we have. Your aunt is trying to make amends with you and fix her past mistakes

Me; dont start with me andre, your situation is different from mine

Dre; no its not, you are family and we talking about family

Me; this woman could be after my parents money

Dre; we both know nobody knows about your money as yet

Me; \*shouting\* i said leave it im not going to play happy family with a woman that disrespected my mother

Dre; you should practise what you preach

Me; go alone

I turned and walked away , he held my hand  
Dre; you mad at me for telling you the truth  
Me; leave me alone

Dre; no , you making a scene talk to me

Me; you the one who is making a scene leave me alone

Dre; fine im sorry for what i said ohk never again

Me; \*crying\* leave me alone

Dre; \*shouting\* no whats wrong with you

Me; who do you think you, to tell me i must reconcile with that woman

Dre; do you think your mother would want you to be hating on this woman this much

Me; you know nothing about my mother

Dre; you right i dont but if she was anything like you i would know she wouldnt want you to be like this. Your parents are gone mama and the people you have are those people inside that house and you turning your back on them you will have no one. Whether you like it or not the blood that runs through your veins runs through her veins

Me; don....

Dre; im talking you will listen to me

Me;....

Dre; family is the only thing that you need and for your sake i hope you fix things with her, everything that happened in the past is in the past yes it was fucked up i

get that and im sorry for that but its in the past she is trying to make things right and just remember she has to live with the guilt of knowing that she accused and said some shitty things to your mother while she was innocent and now she cant take them back. Thats enough punishment im not forcing you to make things right with her all im saying is when i get married to you. I want your family next to you not some people will buy to play your family

I got away from his grip and walked back home

I passed my friends and the guys and walked inside " whats happening/ she looks mad/ wheres dre/" were the things i heard as i walked inside. Passed everyone in the lounge and went to my room. Where my cousin baby was sleeping so i slowly closed the door and just sat behind the door and cried, i was not crying because of what dre said i was missing my parents and i was missing them really bad. I just wanted to hear their voices see them touch them i wanted to be with my parents i didnt care how i just wanted to be with them.

Girl; sisi

I lifted up my head and realised i woke her up

Me; askies baby (im sorry baby)

Her; ukhalelani (why you crying)

I couldnt even say why, just buried my head on my thighs  
she got out off bed and rubbed my back

Her; sorry, ungakhali , shhhh ungakhali ( dont cry, dont cry)

People behind the door; amahle/ whats wrong/ amahle/ open

Refilwe; uyakhala (she is crying)

I just laughed and looked at her

Mbali; babe yini? (whats wrong)

I heard my grandfather talk

Pa; hlehle vula (hlehle open up)

I got away from the door and just threw myself on the bed

He got in and closed the door, refilwe refused to leave me alone

Pa; ubani okukhalisayo ( who is making you cry)

Me; no one i miss umama no baba

He just looked down

Me; \*crying \* i miss them so much pa, i want them here its so hard pa i know everyone is trying to make me happy and i appreciate it especially uncane (mbali mum) , she took me in but i want my mum , i want my dad i want to receive calls from them. I try so hard to pretend as if they

still alive sometime so i wont have to cry but sometime my plan does not work...

Refilwe was still rubbing my back

Me; why didnt i leave with him pa, why \*crying\* i mean if i left with him that day then i would not be feeling this pain i would be happy with him and ma. I just want them pa i dont want anything but them \*sobbing \* please take this pain away please

Pa; wish i could baby , more than anything i wish i could take that pain away and bring it to myself

He pulled me in a hug and i just cried to him. The door opened...

## #ANDRE

I opened the door to her room and she was crying to her grandfather, the way she cried it hurt me so much as if i was being stabbed and it hurt to know i was responsible for that, her grandfather turned and looked at me i turned away but he signed for me not to go. I stood at the door , she then calmed down

Her grandfather; never wish anything like that ever again , cause if you left with your father where would me and ma be right now, where would he be \*pointing at me\*

Amahle looked at me with those beautiful big teary eyes off hers

Him; im so sorry you have to feel this way baby if i could i would take your pain away believe me i would but i believe only you can . You way strong and this pain shall pass ohk

She nodded her head

Him; i love you ohk

She smiled and hugged him again

Him; now wipe those tears , if you need me il be outside ohk

Amahle; ohk

He kissed her forehead and left

Me; im sorry for everything i said

She just walked up to me and hugged me and i returned the hug

Girl; askies ne (im sorry ne)

Amahle; \*smiling\* sengi ryt baby (im ohk now baby)

Girl; ohk

Me; im sorry

Amahle; its not that , just missed my parents

I held her face and kissed her

Girl; wooooo niyacabuzana (wooo you kissing)

Me and amahle just laughed

Me; lets go

Amahle; where

Me; outside

Amahle ; im hungry

Me; they made us food

Amahle; ohk

Me; amahle

She turned

Amahle; hmmmmm

Me; baby i really love you

Amahle; \*smiling\* not as much as me

Monday morning deon came to pick me up

Deon; lets go

Me; its still early

Deon; im going to pick up mbali and we always go with  
amahle thought you might want to see your baby

Me; \*laughing\* lets go

Washed up and we left

Deon; so?

Me; so?

Deon; you and dorian , you making this a huge deal it was a mistake

Me; cool

Deon; i can see its not cool

Me; just leave that il sort out my issues with deon and not you

Deon; ohk

We drove to their place, got there , deon called mbali. My baby walked out and got inside the car

Amahle ; \*laughing\* what you doing here?

Me ; thought i should drop off my shawty today

Amahlee; \*laughing\* mxm ... Hey deondre

Deon; hi amahle

Amahle ; \*laughing\* full name basis

Deon; exactly

She laughed, and cuddled next to me , mbali rushed out off the gate and got in

Deon; dont blame me if you arrive late

Mbali; whatever, bubu

Me ; hey bubu

Mbali; didnt think you were capable of waking up so early

Me ; im not , he came and picked me up

Mbali; should have known

Mbali talked with her man and i talked with my baby

Me ; when are your grandparents leaving

Amahle ; the following week please thank your mum for  
me and kim for coming ohk

Me; why dont you do it yourself

Amahle;....

Me ; \*laughing\* what? Why dont you

Amahle ; how?

Me ; what time do your classes end

Amahle ; wait

She went through her bag and took out her timetable

Me ; let me see

i took her time table and looked at it for a while

Me ; baby like wena what are you really studying

Amahle ; im doing my bachelor of medicine and bachelor  
of surgery

Deon; what?

Amahle ; ai focus on the road

Me; so its 2 degrees

amahle; no one its called the MBBCh

Me ; but this year is your last year right

Amahle ; i wish i still have 2 more years two complete

Deon; what?

Amahle ; \*laughing\* yes wait you thought this year was my last year

Us; yes

Amahle ; \*laughing\* no its a 6 year degree and im on my fourth year this year

Me; yoooooooo

Amahle ; \*laughing\* i cant believe you thought this year was my last year

Me; but sometimes you tell me you were at a hospital for rotations something like that, those are usually done when you about to graduate

Amahle; yeah we sometimes go to various hospitals for morning rotations those are just procedures

Deon; fuck you will learn for 6 years

Amahle ; years and a few more years after that

Me ; \*laughing\* you love books baby yho

Amahle ; mxm

They dropped me off at school, kissed my baby and attended my lectures. Around 2 i was done, met up with dre and went to her mums place. Greeted her and mam masesi, thanked her for everything then we left. Dre dropped me off and i walked in. Kissed my gran on the cheek then pa

Me afternoon

Them; hey baby

Me; how was your day

Ma; it was good baby yours

Me; it was great was so excited to know i will be coming home to you 2

They both laughed

Me; let me go put this down

Went to my room, left my laptop and books and went back whenever i would meet with dre we always bought food so i was full , i made them food and began cooking , my gran insisted i go study and leave the pots she will carry on i didnt want to but she forced me. Went to my room and studied till late

## INSERT # 88

Around 11 ma came in

Ma; do you always study this late

Me; yes ma

Ma; here eat something

Me; thank you

Placed my covers on the side and she sat on the bed with me

Ma; i dont even understand a thing in this

Me; trust me ma you dont even want to know what it means

She laughed

Me; how are you mama, health wise

Ma; im good baby dont worry about me

Me; i have too

Ma; i dont want you too

Me; i know but i cant help it

Ma; how is your bf

Me; \*laughing\* my bf?

Ma; andre adams

I laughed

Me; his good ma , we both good

Ma; you really love each other dont you

Me; so much ma he makes me forget about my worries ,  
he understands me

Ma; it makes me happy to see you this happy baby

I kissed her

Me; and makes me happy to see you this happy before  
you go back lets go out Saturday ,

Ma'; your treat

Me; \*laughing\* yes my treat ma

Ma; ohk baby \*she took my plate\* go to sleep you have  
been studying way too hard

Me; 5 more minute

Ma; ohk 5

She kissed my cheek and left my room

#ANDRE

Woke up Tuesday morning , and prepared for work. Was just a long day was in with people i didnt even know so kept my earphones on at all times. Didnt even communicate with them. After work headed to the

warehouse then home that was my routine for the rest off the week , only got to talk to mami via the phone was tired to travel and she was busy studying but she informed me that Saturday he was taking me out with her grandparents since they are leaving

Saturday drove to the mall we were suppose to meet at i called her

Me; hey where are you

Amahle; near game

Me; ohk

I walked to game and greeted her grandparents. We walked to spurs, i sat with amahle. We ordered our food and we dug in, we all talked about everything and anything. Laughs surrounded the table , jokes, memories, amahle took a dozen off pictures. Had one off the best days ever and i was happy to see amahle so happy with them. Around 8 i dropped them at home if it was up to me i wanted to take amahle home and get a lil naughty but had to respect her grandfather. Got home and just went bed cause i was exhausted

Woke Sunday morning was still sleepy and my eyes were half open, prepared for work and i was there till 6 i hated

working on sundays i mean hated working on sundays.  
Got home and just went to bed. Monday was woken up by  
a phone call

Me; helo

Mum; helo baby open up

Me; huh

Mum; we outside open up

Me; how did you know i was home

Mum; i know everything

Me; fine im on my way

I went to brush my teeth and went downstairs, went down with my boxers and no top on after all it was my mum. I waited for her to show up and she was with masesi and some lady

I sat on the counter

Masesi; hi baby

Me; hi ma

Mummy; baby

Me; hi ma

Lady; buti

Me; hi

Mummy; have you eaten

Me; mum i just woke up

Masesi; can you make us something to eat

Lady; ohk

Me; woahhhhhh , you come with someone i dont even know and she is making us food whats happening

Masesi; since i left i figured you are starving yourself, so i go to church with her she does not work and she said she would settle for anything as long she earns something

Me; so you have already hired her

Mummy; yes

Me; what? She will be with me most off the time i think i was suppose to make that decision

Mummy; its not late, ntombi come sit with us

We all went to the lounge

Mummy; you can interview her

I looked at her . She was just staring at me or my chest im not sure. So i went to get a top to wear

Me; how old are you

Her; 26

Me; can you cook

Her; yes

Me; do you have a bf

Them; andre!!!

Me; what? Im the employer

Her; \*blushing\* no

Me; this is not going to work ma

Mummy; what because she does not have a bf

Me; yes

Masesi; thats crazy andre

Me; do you think im attractive

Them; andre !!!!

Me; let her answer geez this is my interview

Her; well you are goodlooking but i will not make a move on you

Me; ohk i have a gf ne , so if she comes i ask of you to treat her with respect and i have certain things in this house that i dont want your hands in. My friends constantly come here for certain things whatever you see here , you dont tell the outside world do you understand me

She nodded her head

Masesi; sisi unga thathi okungabanga okwakho siyezwana ( sisi dont take anything that does not belong to you)

Her; yes

M3e; ohk will see guess she can come but weekends you not in ohk unless im working

Her; so you will tell me when you off

Me; yes i will give you my off duty schedule

Her; ohk ngyabonga (thank you)

Me; yebo are you starting today

Her; if thats ohk with you

Masesi; and time

Her; what time can you get here

Mummy; its too far for her to travel , why does she not stay at masesi room

Me; mum we still trying this out

Mummy; what, even dorian helper stays with her

Me; and he has known her for a while

Masesi; but baby your mum has a point

Me; yho fine

She smiled and i just looked at her

Me; but not today right, today she is going home she can come next week

Her; thats fine with me

Mummy; all sorted now i dont have to worry about you

Me; yeah i need to leave though right now

Her; il start with everything

Me; ohk

I wasnt comfortable with leaving her in my room, i dont like people in my private space and knowing she would be in my bedroom did not sit well with me at all but i had to give it a try i did need help around though. Mum and masesi left went to take a shower then wore black jeans, and black top with black shoes and cap, went downstairs and she was at the kitchen

Me; so your name is ntombi?

her; yes yours

Me; dre

Her; as in dr dre \*laughing\*

i turned and looked at her

Her; im sorry

Me; \*laughing\* its cool , you have jokes i see

Her; i try so how old are you

Me; 28

Her;hmmmmm

I lied cause i dont like people knowing my age cause i feel they will disrespect me

Her; what do you do

Me; work

My phone rung

Me; sure , ngise ndlini ( im home) , boy bengiphuma mara  
( i was about to leave though ), eish sure woza ke ( well come), sharp

I hung up

Her; you can speak and understand zulu

Me; yes

Her; but your mum is white

Me; and my grandmother is zulu

Her; interesting

Me; you ask a lot of questions

Her; sorry

I called my baby i missed her so much

Me; mami

Amahle; punka

Me; i miss you

Amahle; miss you more baby im seeing you this week right

Me; definitely wi....

\*screaming\* i turned and look at ntombi, i covered my phone speaker

Me; what?

ntombi; im sorry i almost slipped

Me; be careful

Went upstairs and closed the door

Amahle; who was that

Me; who is who

Amahle; \*shouting\* the girl that just screamed dre

Me; she...

Amahle; where are you?

Me; \*laughing\* you think im cheating

Amahle....

Me; mami !!!

amahle; i did not say that

Me; thats what you implying

Amahle; why you picking a fight \*she paused\* yes im right behind you....

Me; where are you

Amahle; im at school where are you

Me; im at home

Amahle; with a girl

Me; you dont trust me do you

Amahle ; what? Why you making this about me? Why is a girl at your house

Me; come see for yourself

Amahle; fuck you dre , nxa fuck you

She hung up

## INSERT #89

I tried calling her but it just went to voicemail. My bedroom door opened

Themba; who is that?

Me; my new helper

Themba; ehhh shes hot

Me; and im in trouble with amahle

Themba; for her

Me; yeah

Themba; yeah shes hot and stuff but she has nothing on mama

Me; she has not seen her, she just heard her scream

Themba; from what

Me; ay ntwana im not there

Themba; \*laughing\* what am i suppose to think

Me; just call her with your phone

He took out his phone ,

Themba; mama listen/ no/ ai / eish mama/ ay ntwana mih

I took the phone

Me; im not cheating on you

Aamhle; then open

Me; open what

Amahle; the gate

Me; \*laughing\* wait you outside my house

Themba ran outside, i followed him, ntombi was nowhere to be seen checked the monitor and she was not there

Me; you not outside mos

Amahle; never said i was , dre i want my gift i was going to come pick it up but i dont want to disturb you

Me; what game you playing

Amahle; who is the girl

Me; my new helper

Amahle; hmmmm

Me; you dont believe me

Amahle; didnt say that

Me; call my mum and ask her then and come get your gift

Amahle; talk later

She hung up

Me; i never know what she is thinking you know

Themba; amahle?

Me; yeah she drives me crazy sometimes

Themba; package of being in a relationship man what did you get her

Me; \*laughing\* i wont tell you that

Themba; hao yini

Me; its not big

Themba; what is it?

Me; a key to my place just to show her how committed i am

Themba; \*smiling\* but boy you love mami ne i mean love her, i wouldnt do that shit for any girl

Me; too much boy i mean she makes me a fool in our world you see like between us i wouldnt mind going down on my knees for her boy thats how weak i feel at times when im with her

He tapped my shoulders

Themba; dont think i want to feel like that

Me; in a way its a great feeling

Themba; you making me want to consider dating

Me; \*laughing\* try it. lets get down to business man

We sat at the lounge

Themba; so we have a problem

Me; ohk

Themba; brandons drug is wanted man i mean they want it

Me; so whats the plan

Themba; cant help but not think about what he did to mama but again it brought in a lot off money i mean a lot

Me; amahle will freak if he finds out we working with him

Themba; so you thinking of working with him again

Me; its just sometimes business is business and other times personal shit is personal

Themba; so we deal with business and business only

Me; \*laughing\* what do you think

Themba; i dont know man cause i want us to get back in business with him just for the drug but again this nigga will disrespects us

Me; thats another thing

Themba; i have a plan

Me; oh kay

Themba; lets get back in business with him and find out where he gets this drug when we find that out, we go to that supplier personally then we wont have to deal with brandon anymore

Me; well that can work

Themba; yeah so should i contact him or

Me; lets leave together

Themba; ohk

Ntombi appeared

Me; where have you been

Ntombi; busy with the other rooms

Me; ohk listen im going out, if you hungry you can make yourself food , il be back before you leave, dont call your friends over ne

Ntombi; ohk

Themba; bye sweet cakes

Ntombi; ai suka

Me and themba laughed

We used his car and headed to eldorado park , we parked outside the gate for a while and thought about the decision we were about to make

Themba; i know we not going to fight but we cant walk in there , unarmed

Me; we have too , lets go

Themba; sometimes i dont like going with you cause you act like you have 9 lives

Me; fuck you \*laughing\* lets go

We walked out and walked in and by the time we reached the door, the guys there were standing at the door, steel, okap

Themba; told you shit like this will go down

Me; wheres brandon

Guy; get the fuck out off here

Me; i dont have time for this bullshit, you want to fight come but i want to talk to brandon

Me and themba walked in and they did nothing just like i expected. Brandon was sitting on the couch with a gun on his legs, its been a while since our encounter but it looked like it was just yesterday

Me; man we need to talk

Brandon; no i need to kill you thats what

Me; listen i dont have time for your bitching tendencies

Themba; and right now looks like you fucken need us

Brandon; what the fuck do you want

Themba; business

Brandon; \*laughing\* so you need me now

Themba; bitch get the fuck out off here , we dont need you and you know that shit

Brandon; then why you here

Me; you know what lets go man

Themba; nxa fuck this shit

We stood up

Brandon; fine lets talk

Themba; you really do act like a bitch dont you

Brandon; fuck you man

Me; when can you get the drug

Brandon; this weekend latest Monday

Themba; about how much

Brandon; like the last time, can cost about 650 k

Me; perfect

Brandon; my share

Me; lets see how it sells then will talk , dont act like you  
dont know this

Brandon; fine, dont fuck me up

Themba; you already fucked up

Me; lets go man , will expect your delivery sometime this  
weekend or Monday

Brandon; sure

Me; and get your dogs some leashes , they need to learn  
to respect

Me and themba got up and left

Themba; that nigga wants to be us man especially you

Me; his crazy, he will have to go through everything i went  
through

Themba; man to think where we come from

Me; \*laughing\* right now its funny but that time it wasnt

Themba; fucked man leeuwkop

Me; \*laughing\* my father freaked out

Themba; yhoooo the timer he tried all his connections but they were like they are not going anywhere

We laughed about it

Me; we must keep it like this man

Themba; you know that the only way will survive man

Me; yeah

We went to his place and took some things then left for the warehouse

Dorina; so nice to be you parading everywhere, you should have been here hours ago

Me; i know i was already on my way out, when themba showed up

Dorian; what up

Themba; was just a problem we were able to sort out in a few minutes

Dorian; good , cause we have bigger problems

Me; whats wrong

Dorian; car we were suppose to get this weekend , was nowhere to be seen until i was able to find out the owner was involved in a car accident

Me; no

Dorian; yes, you know what this means

Me; finding another car like that wont be that easy,  
tracking it and getting all the needed documents will be  
even more harder

Dorian; thats right, i dont have a plan whats yours

Themba; what was it again

Dorian; latest mercedes model, less than 100 000 km  
white

Themba; fuck thats like a new car where are we going to  
find that car with less than 100 000 km

Me; have no idea, too think that car was perfect fuck that  
owner i really dont know man

Dorian; well i was thinking of something

Me; what

Dorian; one in the basement

Me; no no no , that one is totally out

Themba; dorian has a point, we cant get the car that we  
want right now with just 3 days of preparing but we can  
replace the one in the basement

Me; i said no

Themba; man you know we cant lose in this money that was going to get in with this car because you dont want to bring in that car

Me; fuck man you asking a lot

Dorian; will replace it in a month time man, we need that car

Me; are the document here

Dorian; yeah everything is ready with that car

Me; fuck cant believe you making me let her go

Dorian; for a better one maybe

Me; this is the better one

Themba; fuck that shit, we selling her

It was just me , dorian and themba at the warehouse. We did what we had to do, then went to grab something to eat.

Themba; so have you called the white girl

Dorian; aminah?

themba; yeah

Dorian; \*laughing\* yeah and we have talked too , shes a nice girl thats looking for a nice fuck

We all laughed

Dorian; but shes cool ey not like typical Caucasians we know

Me; i dont think its a good idea man to fuck her

Them; why not

Me; you fuck her, you leave her, she confronts amahle about it, after all you considered amahle friend. They fight , friendship ends

Dorian; ....

Themba; well he has a point

Dorian; yeah and thats some frustrating shit

Me; yeah sorry man

Dorian; as much as i would love to fuck but cant risk ending a friendship

Me; \*laughing\* wow you got a heart

Themba; the adams brothers have hearts

Dorian; i hope you know that you also included in that

Me; \*laughing\* exactly

INSERT #90

Rest of the week i was working, amahle eventually began missing me and we were ohk again lol. Ntombi was still

helping me around but she was only moving in the following week and i was not comfortable with it at all but had to trust her. Brandon delivered the supplies to themba on Friday cause i was at work. Later on Friday went back home took a shower and wore my pair of blue jeans, white top, black jacket, black sneakers and cap. Took my thing and left. Went to this club at braamfontein and by the time i got there the squad was there with my queen

Me; hey beautiful

Amahle; hey baby

We kissed, greeted the rest off them and got myself a drink, the was a lady that looked after us for the night when ever we needed drinks and stuff and i loved that about the club instead off actually going to the bar.

Unathi; can we all get drunk please

Mbali; can never say no to that

Everybody took a shoot and the party began

Around am we decided to hit the road and so we wont have to worry on did they get home safe and avoid being caught drinking and driving we all drove to my place to accommodate ourselves and it was the biggest place for everyone to sleep at. I was a kind of person that would get drunk but never get really drunk dont know if you

understand what i mean, whatever happens around me i can see it and im able to do things but im drunk lol

Mami walked upstairs while i remained with the guys downstairs

Me; im going to bed guys

Deon; bye man

I walked upstairs and she was taking off her shoes i just wanted her right then, i locked the door and kneeled in front off her and removed the hair away from her eyes

Me; i love you

Amahle; \*laughing\* you drunk

Me; not too drunk to say i love you

Amahle; i love you too

After i said that i kissed her, she immediately kissed me back and pushed her on her back. i got on top off her not putting too much weight on to her , i balanced with my hands" move up" i said in between the kiss

she moved her body up the bed so her legs wont hang , she opened her legs for me and i was laying in between her legs. She removed my top and threw it on the floor and began unbuttoning my jeans, she pushed them off with her legs and i was now naked, i flipped her over and

she was now on top. i removed her top while kissing her breast, i unclipped her bra and planted kisses to her neck and breast. she let out a slight moan and i did not stop while i removed her skirt, she helped me with it. she kissed my neck, i grabbed her waist so tight and she must have realised that spot weakened some parts off me cause she continued, kissing, sucking and licking, i had a tight grip on her waist and thigh and my breathing changed. she grinded me we were both naked . I tried to make direction for my D but she did not let me she kept teasing me. She grinded me moving up and down and making circular movement to my D AND B and it drove me crazy i let out groans and moans. She stood up and i made my way inside off her the presence of my D made her run out off her breath she began at a slow pace up and down and slightly bouncing on my D , i held her waist controlling her what to do and which pace but she did her own thing. Her pace increased faster and faster, and the louder she got and the louder our breathing got. I pounded her hard and fast she was literally screaming, and holding me down tight i moaned she was getting weak but i was not yet done with her i held her hands behind her back and pounded her so fast and hard she let out the loudest moan her body was shaking while grabbing hold to my body. Our moans both filled the room. I flipped her over and got on top off her. I kissed her and slowly entered her , i lifted her left leg and

entered her , i joined our hands together and i pleased my woman i just went faster and harder, our breathing getting louder, gasping for air, our moans filled the room and we both reached the climax and zoned off

Next morning woke up and went downstairs , went to wash up and went downstairs the was themba, nhlanhla , unathi, jack and dorian

Me; hi guys

They all just looked at me

Me; whats up?

Themba; i envy you man like really

Me; what you talking about

Jack; the way amahle calls out your name

I laughed so loud and threw the pillow that was next to me to him

I stood up and went to the kitchen i sat at the kitchen counter, mbali was next to the stove with deon and ntombi

Me; hey whats for breakfast

Mbali; dont ask us that, geez you and your gf

Me; this is my house and my mami we can be loud

Amahle; morning

Me; \*smiling\* morning mami

I got off the counter and just wrapped my arms around her, mbali and deon looked at her

Amahle; no like really whats going on

Me ; what you mean

Amahle ; they all looking at me some funny way even at the lounge

Me ; \*laughing\* they just wish they were you yesterday

Amahle ; huh?

## INSERT #91

Me ; \*laughing\* well they heard us yesterday, you moaning and screaming my name

Amahle; \*laughing\* i was not that loud

Mbali; actually you were

Amahle; voetsek wena

Me ; \*laughing\* dont mind them this is our place we can be as loud as we want and this is ntombi my new helper around the house

Amahle ; hi

Ntombi; helo

She seemed really nice , all smiles

Amahle ; amahle

ntombir; ntombi

Amahle; nice meeting you

Ntombi ; nami futhi ( same here)

She turned to me again

Amahle ; was i really loud

I picked her up she locked her ankles around me

Me ; they crazy , you were not loud

Amahle ; but you were

Me;\*laughing\* cant believe you just said that kiss me

Amahle; no

Me; kiss me

Amahle; no

I placed her on the kitchen counter and held her face to my face and kissed her she just laughed through out the kiss

Mbali; woo but then you two

She broke the kiss then hugged me We all moved to the lounge

Amahle; let me get something clear i was not that loud

They all laughed

Themba; actually you were

Amahle; whatever i can be as loud i want

Me ; thats right mami

I took my plate and we dug in ate our breakfast

Unathi; how long have you 2 been together now

I looked at her

Amahle; dont look at me

Mbali; \*laughing\* if im right 5 months

Us ; for real?

Mbali; yeah cause by my graduation you were already seeing each other

Amahle; yes that means this month it will be 6 months

Me ; fuck !

Themba; fuck you been sleeping with her and only her for 6 months

Me ; didnt think it was possible

She punched me

Me; and i love it

she kissed me

Jack; do you two ever stop

Us; no

Jack; mxm

After eating our breakfast amahle took the dishes to the kitchen

Deon; boy how did that deal go

Me; im still trying to seal that deal, that guy doesnt want to give it at my price and im not willing to settle for less

Unathi; and what is that ?

Me; a car , some guys are sting with their money but always want nice things like how do you expect to look expensive but dont want take out your money

Sandile; like you

Me; ai boy get your facts straight, when i want something i dont mind spending thousands

Deon; well that nigga needs to forget we not settle.....

Mami sat next to me

Amahle; how old are you

Me; what?

Amahle; how old are you?

Me; whats going on

Amahle; are you 8 years older than me

Me ; \*laughing\* can we talk about this another time

Amahle; no

Me ; well im not

Amahle; hmmm

Me ; yes lets go take a shower

Dre ; ohk

We left them there and went to the shower i explained everything to me and she just let it go, we got naughty in the shower and finally went out. she wore my top with my gym tights and went downstairs only to find everyone swimming

Themba pushed mami in the water after a while we were all swimming

Dorian; plans for today

Amahle ; well was thinking of something

Them; oh kay

Amahle ; \*laughing\* its a good plan

Deon; talk mama

Amahle ; lets go to orlando towers

Unathi; definitely

Amahle ; yeah paintballing will be fun

Themba; \*laughing\* yes never could say no to guns

Me; so we on

Us; yes

We dried ourselves up and left , drove to orlando towers

Guy; ohk teams

Unathi; would have been great if there were more girls

Deon; just choose one guy cause we eight

Me; wait lets talk about it

Whispering

Unathi; lets take dorian

Mbali; what about jack

Me; yes jack

Unathi; ohk jack

Them ; you done

Me; yes we want jack

Them; eyyyy jack girls want you

We laughed

He moved to their side and had to wear something over his clothes

Guy; ohk there are 4 rounds when one of you give up you just raise your hand and will escort you out , each round ends in 30 minutes

Us; ohk

They gave us those paintball guns and filled them in me and themba began shooting one another

Mbali; guys no

Us,; ohk lets start

We went to the battleground and it began, the balls hurt like hell, i did a lot off shooting and only to one person After about 3 hours or so we were done, the girls hair was blue, orange, green and yellow guys hair same. We went to grab something to eat then we dropped unathi off then it was mami and mbali

#AMAHLE

Me; that hurt but was also fun

Mbali; yho when it hit my thigh yeses

Me; im tired so im going to bed ohk

Mbali; not as yet

Me; what

Mbali; is sex with dre good as it sounded

Me; \*laughing\* WHAT?

Mbali; come on im sure even unathi is thinking about it , i mean you sounded so

She looked lost from her thoughts

Me; how

Mbali; like they were fucking you good

Me; \*laughing\* this is weird mbali

Mbali; i know ey never mind

Me; gladly you cooking this week right

Mbali; yeah kodwa next week its you

Me; i know wake me up around 8

Mbali; ohk

I eventually woke up , went through my books, went to eat then it was time for bed. Woke up the next morning and prepared for school. Attended my classes then went to the cafeteria

Nokwanda; hey babe

Me; hey where do you come from

Nokwanda computer lab , eish

Me; \*laughing\* where is aminah

Nokwanda; not sure im so tired from everything ey

Me; \*laughing\* tell me about it

Nokwanda; where your hot boyfie

Me; \*smiling\* his around was with him yesterday and you

Nokwanda; it was just a fling ey

Me; really , you looked really close

Nokwanda; yeah guess we were both attracted to each other just on your birthday

Me; nothing happened though right

Nokwanda; nah just kissing thats all

Me; good it would have been so awkward if you, you know

Nokwanda; \*laughing\* that i know

Aminah; iv been looking everywhere for you too

Us; sorry

Aminah; you good girls

Me; yes you babe

Aminah; yes is it me or the exchange students are super hot

Me; its not you , have one in my class from angola  
wooooooo

Nokwanda; i think i know him, tall, bald

Me; yes

Nokwanda; his yummy and dark

We laughed

## INSERT # 92

I got off the rea vaya and began my walk home ,  
searched my bag and my earphones werents there and i  
remembered aminah had them and i knew she didnt  
remind me because she wanted to leave with them kind  
off got annoyed and they were not even mine they  
belonged to dre. Anyway i walked back home and a car  
was driving so slow next to me i turned to look and it was  
like 3 guys 2 at the front and one at the back they were  
driving a VR6 lol mbali loved this car i was a 325 girl and  
we always argued which one was the best.

Guy; that looks heavy

Me; what?

Guy on the passenger seat; your bag

Me; im used to it

Driver; you beautiful

I raised my eyebrow and they laughed

guy on the passenger seat; why have we not seen you before

Me; you know everyone

Them; yes

Me; well ke it means you wrong ,cause i live here

Driver; bu....

Me; like can you please go, you bringing attention to me, neighbours are watching and the last thing i want is for neighbours to tell my mum im buys with boys that have cars

Suddenly the car passed me in such speed and i was happy only to realise he swerved it to my side and the driver got out i just froze there , the guy was hot yhooooo i mean this guy fuck

He was chocolate or coffee colour , tall, a bit buffed, his body structure the way he walked , the gap in between his legs, he was wearing tight sweat pants and a white top that revealed his muscles like mmmm, his arms were

covered in ink. He was wearing a cap with pierced ears. I was staring

He tilted his head

Him; walking wont bring as much attention right

I nodded my head, he smiled and his teeth were so white , he gave me smile on the side that revealed his UL gold tooth and it made him even more attractive why was i feeling this way

Him; usharp ( you good)

Me; yeah

He stretched his hand

Him; major

Me; major?

Him; nickname

Me; whats your real name

He leaned in, and i went back

Him; relax, we still on the first name basis im not ready to shove my tongue down your throat

Me; \*laughing\* oh sorry

He leaned in again and whispered to my ear

Him; mjkjfnmbfk

Me; \*laughing\* what?

Him; minehle

I looked at him

Him'; i know what was my mum thinking

Me; \*laughing\* come on i think i might name my son after you

Him; dont play with me

Me; so let me get this straight, your real name is minehle but you call yourself major so people dont know you have a girl name

Him; geez did you have to make it worse and say girl name

I covered my mouth

Me; \*laughing\* sorry

Him; you beautiful and have dimples wow

Me; i need to go

Him; come on you know my biggest secret can i get your name

Me; amahle

He screamed

Him; ohhhhhh and her name is beautiful too

I punched him

Me; uya rasa ( you making noise)

Him; you punched me on the heart

Me; sorry minenhle

Him; can i ask for a fav

Me; depends

Him; please

Me; ohk

Him; let me walk you and hold your bag

I looked at him , and he looked at me

Me; dont look at me like that

Him; pleaseee

Me; fine , here

I handed him my bag and we passed his friends inside the car

Him; so ugeleza vah ( where do you study)

Me; wits

Him; yho what do they say again

He snapped his fingers trying to remember something

Me; ini (what)

Him \*he snapped again\* witsie

I laughed so loud

Me; yeah that what they say , how would you know that

Him; i know everything mama

Me; then google would have suit you best instead of major

Him; \*laughing\* sense of humour hmmm

Me; mxm

Him; so iyiphi ibari ezongkhaba ke since ngihamba nawe ( so which fool will kick me for walking with you)

Minehle was hot guys i mean this guy i dont know what i was doing i wanted to say i had a bf but again i was like nah dont say it

Me; the is someone who will kick you trust me

Him; yhoooo ngithukile ( yhooo im scared )

Me; oh wow thats how you look when you scared

He smiled and his smile killed me 10\* more

Me; no man \* i shook my head\*

Him; whats up

Me; i have a bf

Him; \*smiling\* oh really

Me; yes so nothing is going to happen

He raised his hands in defeat

Him; im not expecting anything but being friends when you need a shoulder to cry on is not wrong

Me; i guess

Him; let me give you my numbers you will decide if you want to call or not

Me; ohk

I took them and we carried on walking , about 3 houses from home a benz passed us and it was deon i closed my eyes

Me; thanks , can i have my bag

He went back

Him; why the sudden rush

Me; please im begging you my bag

He looked at the benz that had stopped, i turned and the driver door opened and deon walked out

Him; \*laughing\* your man

Me; no

Him; so why do you look nervous

Me; im not my bag

Him; no, im going to walk you to your gate to make sure you safe

Me; minehle please tu

I looked at deon and he was leaning on the car and major just walked to the car i followed him

Me; hey

Deon just looked at me and back at minehle

Him; sure

Deon; sure

The passenger door opened and mbali got out

Me; thanks ne

Him; \*smiling\* sure

Deon; ungavaya ( you can go )

Him; askies ( sorry)

Deon; ngithi.... ( i said...)

Me; major thanks again

Him; sure buddy , my friend future gf

And he just had to say that then he walked away

Me; you back early

Mbali; yeah im not feeling well

Mbali walked to the gate and i follwed her but deon held my wrist

Me; huh

Deon; who was that

Me; a guy that was trying his luck with me

Deon; hmmmm

Me; yes you going to report to dre now , cause i am attractive and i do attract people even dre knows people will try their luck

Deon; i know

Me; greet him for me

And i walked in

I went inside mbali room

Me; you dont look good

Mbali; i dont feel good, who was that his hot

Me; you sick but you still see people who are hot

Mbali; i dont but the guy i saw him

Me; he was just walking me home

Mbali; ohk

Me; want anything

Mbali; no babe let me sleep

Me; ohk

I kissed her forehead and left

I studied till i fell asleep

## INSERT # 93

Next day was just the usual and didnt come across major.  
I got home and just studied around 10 dre called

Me; punka

Dre; im outside

And he hung up i just scratched my head annoyed, took  
my gown and went out. he was smoking

Me; i will suffocate inside

Dre; you wont die get in

I did as told, we sat in silence

Me; i missed you

He turned to face me and he blew the smoke in my face ,  
i closed my eyes

Me; ohk thank you for that

Dre; who were you with yesterday

Me; is deon serious

Dre; who were you with amahle \*inhaling\*

Me; a guy that asked to walk me

Dre; and you agreed

Me; he didnt give me much choice

Dre; was he carrying a gun

Me; n....

Dre; did he threaten you

Me; n...

He cut me off again

Dre; so how come you didnt have a choice

Me; dre come on

Dre; what? \*smiling\* im just trying to understand

Me; are you seriously jealous over a guy i barely know

Dre; im not jealous

Me; then why you acting like this

He hit the steering wheel

Dre; it just pisses me off on why you dont respect me that much to say no to some thirsty nigga that wants to get in your pants then it pleases you sooo much that you have to brag about it to my boy how boys lust after you

Me;.....

Dre; get the fuck out off my car

Me; this is crazy, are you high?

Dre; get the fuck out off my car amahle

Me; you are an idiot you know

I got out off the car

Me; thank you, thank you so much for giving me reason to call that guy thank you honey nxa

I slammed the door and roughly opened the gate it made so much noise i locked it and walked inside, ate my food and did not even let him distract me i studied then went to bed

Next day was just school during my lunch time i called major

Major; talk to me clever

Me; sho clever

He laughed

Me; clever you talking to amahle

Major; i think i knew that already clever , uvah? (where are you)

Me; school

Major; shame you miss me

Me; no clever why would i even miss you

Major; cause you know im cute clever

Me; \*laughing\* uyaphapha ne ( you forward)

Major; ngifana nawe ( just like you) will i see you today

Me; are you around

Major; for you sure

Me; il let you know but you got me in trouble

Major; so that was your bf

Me; no, my sister bf who is my bf best friend

Major; ehhh friends dating sisters abo cheese

Me; \*laughing\* why

Major; i see the kid is driving a machine

Me; dont you think maybe its his mums or dad

Major; you called out for his name and i noticed the plate was written that

Me; well yeah

Major; ohhh so you like cheese boys

Me; no it just happened i only met him like last year

Major; oh so which machine does your boy drive

Me; \*laughing\* he doesnt have a car

Major; lies dont suit you, maybe you turned ugly nje

Me; voetsek (piss off) my airtime is over

Major; ohk hung up

Me; sharp

He said nothing and i hung up but seconds after he called back

Me; ao

Major; hao you said you didnt have a airtime and i did

Me ; \*laughing\* so wont your girl be mad at me

Major; i dont have one

Me; why

Major; girls trouble

Me; \*laughing\* why you saying girls

Major; ao are you a guy

Me; but then why are you like this

Major; \*laughing\* plus i just like having fun

Me; wow why am i not surprised

Major; nothing is more great like fucking clever yhooooo

Me; you sound so thirsty

Major; mina, never baby i just had fun manje

Me; \*laughing\* we were talking for like 25 minutes now

Major; baby say hi to my buddy

Girl; hi buddy

I laughed so loud that people in the cafeteria looked at me and i pulled myself together

Girl; yho she just laughed at me

Me; no im sorry hi

Girl; you good

Me; im ohk you

Girl; just ohk

Major; believe me now

Me; no, you could be at a shop for all i knew

Major; want me to send you my naked pic

Me; \*laughing\* i believe you

Major; good

Me; im going to class can we talk later

Major; ohk tell me when you around where we first met

Me; ohk sharp

Major; bye buddy

Me; bye buddy

I hung up

Went to the rest off my classes then went to the rea vaya station, when i was at uj my phone rang and luckily cause i was sitting down i was able to answer and it was andre

Me; andre

Dre; where are you

Me; in a bus

Dre; get off

Me; what?

Dre; i said get off and tell me where you are

I didnt feel like screaming over the phone especially cause i was in a crowded bus, i got off the nearest stop at helen joseph hospital and told him where i was. I walked out and just stood at the poles i was frustrated yho and a car appeared making some kind of noise well it passed me and i just looked at it, i knew it was turners cause of the plate i didnt even call him , my phone rang

Dre; where the fuck are you

Me; you looking for someone kodwa you speed , how did you think you will see me

I could hear him breath out loudly over the phone

Dre; amahle where are you

Me; \*shouting\* at the entrance of the gate

Dre; im going to kill you wena

He hung up

## INSERT #94

#AMAHLE

I thought about going back to the station after that comment because dre was crazy, he was on the other road making a u turn. He stood right in front off me and i got in he said nothing and at noordgesig , he stopped the car and turned to me

Dre; uzonya wena yezwa ( you will shit yourself )

Me; what

He lifted his hand up and i flinched

Dre; amahle im not your friend

Me; \*shouting\* what do you want from me dre, what do you want from me , iv done nothing but good to you but you just spit on my face

Dre; i want fucken respect from you

Me; i dont respect you

Dre; ay wena you want me to repeat myself

Me; you see what i mean you rude

Dre; hehhh look at you

Me; voetsek

I opened the door and stood on the road

Dre; get in the fucken car amahle

Me; no

He laughed

Me; why are we fighting dre, yeh why... We fighting cause i was with a guy... We fighting as you say i dont respect you

Dre; mina im not fighting

Me; hmm

Dre; get in the car

Me; no im tired of you and your moods

Dre; \*shouting\* GET IN THE FUCKEN CAR MAN \* his index finger on my face

People were now looking at us, neighbours

Me; no

Dre; il \* he paused \*

Me; you will what hit me

Dre; \*laughing\* you think i will feel guilty for what you just said , il beat your ass up here in front off this people cause you think i wont because of them

Me;...

Dre; get in the fucken car

I stood there, my phone rang i reached for it and it was major before i could reject the call dre grabbed my phone from my hand and answered it, i went up to him to try and hold it

Dre; sure....

He looked at me , hung up and placed it on his back jean  
Dre; get in the fucken car before i embarrass you in front off these people

I slowly walked to the car and he followed me , he joined the freeway and i knew i was going to be killed

We got to his place and he slammed the door i sat inside the car and dre appeared with a belt i immediately screamed he opened my door and i jumped to his seat , he was on one side and i was on the other side

Me; \*screaming\* dre im sorry, dre please

He ignored me and moved the other side i also moved

Me; dre pleaseeee

Dre; talk the way you were talking amahle, fuck you dre, what? Talk the bullshit you were talking

Me; \*crying\* dre im sorry please

Dre; .....

Me; dre please

Dre; dont piss me off come here

I shook my head

Dre; get in the car

Me; you wont hit me

Dre; im taking you home amahle

Me; ohk throw the belt to me

Dre; what?

Me; throw the belt that way i know you wont hit me

He threw it to me and got inside the car and i slowly went in, he locked the door and hit me with his hand on my body and in a way it was painful i was screaming and kicking, he took the belt cause i dropped it and as he was tying it around his hand i jumped to the back and tried to open the door but it was locked he just hit me with it i screamed and i did the unthinkable i hit the window so hard and it broke now my upper body was outside and he was hitting my back

He got out off the car cause i fell i was still on the floor

Dre; and this is for breaking my window

The belt on my thighs yooooooooo

Dre; dont fuck with me you even gave that nigga your numbers to show how you disrespect me

Me;.....

He took out my phone and threw it to the ground with so much strength i knew it had broke even before i saw the screen

Dre; no girl off mine will bitch around nxa

He walked in and i just sat there and cried my eyes out i dont even know how long i was there until a car drove up the driveway i didnt even lift my head up

Dre; take her home

Themba; man what happened

Dre; she broke my fucken window and shes entertaining some kids

Themba; mama

Me;....

He kneeled in front off me

Dre; dont fuck with me wena, go home

I slowly stood up and took my bags from his car and took my phone that was on the ground the was no sort off hope for it , i just cried some more, i got in themba car and he came in

Themba; mama what happened

I said nothing

Themba; i can buy you a new phone

I shook my head

Themba; mama talk to me

Me; i dont want to talk themba

Themba; ohk

We arrived home and i just walked inside, my shirt was torn on my waist because off the glass i went to bath. I wore jeans cause my legs had marks , white top and slippers and walked out. I walked to the street where me and major met i was angry so dont blame me i could not phone him cause this idiot broke my phone, and he was not there. I decided to take a walk and the second street from where i was i saw his car.

I walked to it and the was no one inside so i walked inside thats how desperate i was. The door was open then i knocked

People; come in

walked in and major was sitting on the couch with some guy he screamed when he saw me

Me; \*laughing\* can we talk

major; no we can not talk im leaving with you

He got up

Guy; ntwana manners who is the beautiful girl

Major; shes my buddy amahle

Them; hi amahle

Even the girls were nice was not used to that

I just smiled and greeted them back

Girl; come join us before you leave

Me; ohk

I went to sit next to her

Girl; wine, juice, whisky, beer

Me; \*laughing\* juice

She got up and came back with a glass i hung out with em  
and finally major called me out and we went outside

Me; where we going

Major; lets go

Me; ohk

Major; so what happened to you \*pointing at my arms\*

Me; dont want to talk about it

Major; where you in a fight

Me;...

Major; lovy and who was the guy that answered your  
phone

I looked at him

Major; i told you this \*tapping his shoulder \* is yours

Me; \*laughing\* i dont know you too well to talk about this

Major; sometimes its best to talk with a stranger cause they wont judge you

Me; my bf hit me

Major; what

Me; yeah its nothing though

Major; look at that

Me; never mind

Major; why

Me; his crazy can we talk about something else

Major; no now talk

Me; fine

I told him everything

Major; im sorry im the reason for this

Me; its not your fault

We got to the shop and he bought a box of cigarettes and we walked back , his arm was around me, we walked back to the house and his friends were really cool ey. Around 6 they all accompanied me home and deon was parked

outside with mbali he was coming to drop off mbali off  
and luckily it was a group of us and girls were also there

Mbali; hey you

Me; hey

Mbali; hi

Greeting the people i was with

Them; hey

Deon; helo amahle

I just looked at him nje

Me; ohk let me get the stick il be right back

Mbali; what happened to your arms

Me; will talk later

I ran inside and took the usb and ran out again i gave  
thandeka cause she wanted it

Her; thank you babe il bring it tomorrow ne

Me; sharp

Major; bye buddy \*smiling\*

Me; bye buddy

And i walked inside again, went to my room and took a  
look at my legs and my entire body nje i was bruised

Mbali walked in my room

Mbali; what the hell was that

Me; huh

Mbali; deon why were you so rude to him

Me; your bf should mind his own business , his the reason why im like this

Mbali; dre hit you

I held back my tears

Me; yes mbali iv been through this with orlando im not going back there with dre Im done with your friends and im done with dre!

## INSERT #95

### #ANDRE

Following day had to go to work i used my other car since i could not go to work with a broken window, i was in with unathi

Unathi; hey

Me; hey lala usharp

Unathi; yeah im good

My phone rang and it was mbali

Me; lala

Mbali; why did you hit her

Me; ask her

Mbali; well shes not talking to me

Me; \*laughing\* for what, your sister is full off drama ne

Mbali; well i dont blame her i asked what she did because you hit her

Me; shes mad cause you asked her that, shes mad cause she know the shit she did

Mbali; you dont understand i said that in a mean way

Me; you did good by asking her cause i would not hit her for no reason at all

Mbali; dre she is bruised

Me; and i dont give a fuck , maybe now she will stop acting like cheap bitch

Mbali; control yourself

Me; mbali why did you call me im at work

Mbali; control your temper when it comes to my sister i dont need my sister with blue eyes

Me; sharp

I hung up

Unathi; you hit amahle

Me; not you also

Unathi; why the hell would you do that

Me; i dont have time for this tu

I knocked off early , went home took my car and went to fix my window which cost me thousands then bought her a phone, i gave it to deon to give mbali then she will give amahle.

When i got home from the warehouse i got a call from mbali

Me; sure

Mbali; an iphone really

Me; just give her tu

Mbali; shes not even here

I checked the time

Me; its 9 pm mbali where is she

Mbali; i dont know

Me; mbali

Mbali; yeyy they picked her up , the people he has been with and she left

Me; \*laughing\* umtana kini (your sibling) is testing me ne

Mbali; just let it go dre

Me; i must suppose to let it go, my girl is out with some kids who knows doing what and i must let it go hay wena mbali dont annoy me

Mbali; she said you done

I laughed so loud

Me; cool ntwana

Mbali; i know its not cool but then again i dont care

I hung up , i tried calling her but i remembered she had no phone

Saturday morning i had meeting with stephen , i walked in where we were suppose to meet and he was not there yet. I ordered myself something to drink and 5 minutes he was there

Stephen; sorry im late

Me; its ohk

He ordered a drink

Me; ohk talk to me

Stephen; i need a car from you

Me; ohk

Stephen; i know the guy, i did research on him and his clean nothing that has to do with law

Me; ohk money

Stephen; his not loaded but he took a loan to have this

Me; what does he want

Stephen; polo vivo white or silver grey

Me; ohk you know how much i charge that right

Stephen; yes i told him

Me when does he needs it

Stephen; not in a rush but not too late

Me; ohk il get down on it

Stephen; now im all out man

Me; with

Stephen; my junkies need a hit

Me; il sort that out for you, il see you Monday

Stephen; sorted

We talked some more , ordered lunch then left it was already late. Quickly changed to something comfortable , deon picked me up and we drove to mbali place. Deon called her and after a few minutes mbali appeared and got in

Me; where is she

Mbali; she is just annoyed by me, she does not listen to me and does not want to go

Me; shes getting on my nerves now

Mbali; lets go she said she was not going

I opened my door and went in. I knocked and she answered

Her; come in

I opened the door

Me; hi ma

Mbali mum responded from the lounge, she was in her pjs

Dre; why arent you dressed

Me; cause im not going anywhere

I brushed my moustache

Me; i m...

Amahle; please leave

Me; what

Dre; leave

Me; fine

#AMAHLE

Next morning woke up, dressed up and went to church its been a while after 3 hours caught a taxi and went home and mbali " friends " were outside. I walked past them all,

dre tried to grab my hand but shouted before he could  
"DONT TOUCH ME" then walked inside

Me; helo ma

Mbali mum; helo baby, how was church

Me; good ma its been a while

Mbali mum; next week we going together

Me; \*smiling\* let me go change so i will help you

Mbali mum; no dont baby

Me; im going to study then

Mbali mum; amahle you only slept this morning get some  
fresh air

I laughed

Went to change into a long dress, wore all star , breathed  
in loudly and out and walked out. Opened the gate and i  
walked out and the devil had to follow me

Dre; im not touching you

Me;.....

Dre; baby please take the phone, i know i broke yours but  
please

I just kept quiet you would have sworn i was walking  
alone, i passed 2 street and went up the street and to my  
luck major car was parked outside

Dre; i aint going to say sorry if thats what you expecting from me

Me; \*shouting\* thandeka

Dre; who you calling, whose house is this

Me; THANDEKA!!!!

She walked out , looking beautiful as ever, dre looked at her and back at me

Dre; amahle

Thandeka; hey \*smiling\* why you didnt get in

Me; wanted to make sure

Thandeka; and who is this \*biting her lower lip\*

Me; nobody

I walked towards thandeka and he grabbed my hand

Me; LEAVE ME ALONE, ME AND YOU WE DONE . DONE!

Thandeka eyes were wide open and there were people peaking on the window

Thandeka; babe

Me; lets go

I reached for her hand and she gave it to me

Dre; you getting out off line

I walked in the house

Thandeka; and that

Me; thats the guy

Thandeka; fuck his hot

Me; and an abuser

I went to join them on the lounge

Thando; who were you shouting at the gate

Thandeka; her hot bitter ex

Me; babe

Thandeka; sorry

Other were sitting on the floor, others on the couch and other on the sofa arm rest i loved this group so much like they were honestly free with each other

Thando; and you mama

Me; yho i dont even know , i dont think iv done anything dangerous in my life

Major; what?

Me; \*laughing\* yes

Nelly; why you scared

Me; no i just dont know what i could possibly do that would be dangerous

We talked some more and i was forgetting my worries

## INSERT #96

#AMAHLE

I was laughing my ass out , when people just barged in. I covered my face

Dre kneeled in front me

Dre; listen to me and listen to me good , your play time is over iv had enough shit coming from you enough amahle and i wont tolerate this anymore

Bare in mind, this guy is holding a baseball bat, its on my face

Major; this is so unnecessary

Dre looked at me then turned to major

Major; you come here and just barge in believe me i have great respect for you and your name but this is our place and you cant do as you please

Dre stood up

Me; dre stop

He looked at me

Dre; your new bf

Me; no now stop

Major; no mama im cool

Dre; \*smiling\* no mama im cool

He looked at me again

Dre; amahle

Me; just leave dre

Dre; asambe (lets go)

Me; no

Major; mama you not going anywhere

Major was making things worse nje and i dont think he was aware

Dre; you fucking her?

Major; what?

Dre; A R E Y O U F U C K I N G H E R \*he said that emphasizing every word\*

Major; why does it matter

Dre was about to punch him if i was right

Me; dre i will leave with you \*my eyes were closed\*

I slowly opened them

Dre; huh

Me; lets go.... Bye guys

I walked out , opened the gate and walked ahead

Dre; im tired of your games

Me;.....

Dre; fucken talk to me

Me; i have nothing to say to you, me and you are done  
why dont you get that

Dre; you going to throw away everything that we have

Me; you did that \*pointing at him \* you did that by laying  
your hands on me i will never ever forgive you for that  
ever

Dre; what you want me to do

Me; nothing i want nothing from you cause you have done  
enough

Dre; oh so you use me then we done

Me; \*shouting\* use you, use you

Dre;....

Me; not once in my life have i asked you for money ,  
everything that you did was something you wanted to do ,  
the phone i didnt ask for it, everything i did not. I never  
even cared about your money

Dre; amahle please im begging you

Me; we done dre, done  
I walked inside my house

#ANDRE

I have never ever felt like that before those words we done. We done. We done. We done were just on my mind. I got on the passenger seat and handed dorian the keys. They said bye to mbali and drove off

Themba; are you really over?

They all looked at me but i couldnt even speak i did not know what to say . I was deep in my thoughts. I could not lose her, she is the only person who kept me sane, if i lose her i literally lose everything

Then i lost it i mean lost it, i hit the dashboard with my fist until i bled but i didnt even care

Dorian; man stop

he pulled me back

Dorian; this wont help you right now , you need to get your shit together

Me; shut the fuck up!

Themba; man his ju....

Me; \*shouting\* all of you shut the fuck up , cause you dont know shit

They kept quiet, they dropped me off and i just walked upstairs and drank myself to sleep

#AMAHLE

Monday morning woke up for school and when i was at mcdonalds i bought myself tickets for me to go the cape but now had to ask mbali mum if i could leave for the weekend. Around 5 left for home me and mbali we were not talking. I knocked at mbali mum bedroom

Her; come in

I walked in

Me; hi ma

Her; hey baby

Me; i was hoping i could talk to you

Her; sure baby come sit here

She tapped the side off the bed and i joined her

Her; whats wrong

Me; nothing is wrong wanted to ask you something

Her; ohk

Me; can i go see my grandparents this weekend

Her; of course baby, wo you going with

Me; ngiy1 ma

Her; everything ohk

I nodded my head

Her; ohk its fine with me il give you money for transport

Me; dont worry about that ma i already bought myself a ticked

Her; you should have asked me

Me; i didnt want to bother

Her; \*smiling\* never

Me; ma please dont tell mbali

Her; hao why

Me; i just dont want her to tell abo andre at least when im back i can tell her

Her; ohk baby

I kissed her goodnight and went to my room

Rest of the week was just school, then study immediately when i got back from school Friday, packed my things and called a taxi no one was home, i locked and left, got to the airport and did everything within a few hours i was at capetown. Took a taxi and it dropped me off at my grandparents they were sooo happy to see and so was i. Slept around 9

Saturday woke up to a spotless house , cooked breakfast  
wooooo sat down opposite them and dug in

Ma; here baby for time being

Me; thank you ma

It was a small nyana phone shame those hundred bucks one. I had no one to call and the one person i wanted to call didnt have their numbers. After eating went to take a shower then went to see marlene

Marlene; the queen is back

I smiled

Me; hey papa

I sat next to him, the guys came and where happy to see me. I stayed there for hours and hours around 10 a phone rang

Me; whose phone is that

Marlene; its mine

Me; \*laughing\* since when you h....

Marlene; helo

Me; have a phone

He looked at me and smiled

Marlene; yes that her

My smile just went away , i grabbed the phone and hung up

Me; never ever tell that nigga anything about me

Brad; trouble in paradise

Me; voetsek

The phone rang again

Me; dont even talk about me

Marlene; yeah man... She does not want me to talk about her.... Cool man... So will you tell me whats up

Me; nothing i also want to apologise for whatever trouble i may caused

Marlene; its ohk baby its all forgotten

Me; ohk

They walked me home which was a distant but didnt feel it with them

Sunday went to my old church with ma, then my parents grave , then our house then home. Monday morning caught a flight back and was already late for my classes but i managed to arrive there. Attended it then went straight home to take a nap. Woke up ate in silence with mbali and her mum then washed the dished then went to

bed. Tuesday same old same old. Wednesday met up with major and the guys and gave them my new numbers

Thandeka; here

Me; what is this

Thandeka; your invitation

Me; for?

thando; gala dinner , she hosts it everywhere

I opened it and it was for this week

Me; this Saturday

Thandeka; yes sorry for telling you late

Me; so what do i wear

Thandeka; formal pretend like you will be walking into a red carpet just look glam

Me; but why gala dinner

Major; the only time we can act rich

I laughed

Me; where am i going to find a dress

Nelisiwe; you can wear any dress i always wear my matric dance dress

Me; mine is back at the cape

Thandeka; i can borrow you one

Me; dont worry il find something

Major; you are my date right

Me; \*laughing\* yes

They accompanied me home, i went to ma and asked for my cousins mum numbers then i called them

Her; helo

Me; hi ma you talking to amahle

Her; ao helo girl how are you

Me; im good ma can i please talk to lindo

Her; ohk.... LINDO

I waited for a couple of seconds then she answered

Me; hey

Lindo; hey amahle

Me; babe i need a favour

Lindo; ohk

Me; do you still have your gown from last year matric dance

Lindo; \*laughing\* yes

Me; can i hire it for the night please

Lindo; \*laughing\* you family when do you need it

Me; as in this week

Lindo; can you come tomorrow ke and see if it fits

Me; yho baby thank you so much

Lindo; pleasure where you going ?

Me; \*laughing\* il tell you tomorrow

Lindo; \*laughing\* ohk il sms you my numbers

Me; thank you

Lindo was my only and last chance i was not worried about the upper body problem was the lower body, i had hips and an ass so nje eish. Thursday went to school came back and it fitted me perfectly. Friday was just boring Saturday around 6 i put on make up and mbali barged in my room

Mbali; hav.... Where you going

Me; that does not concern you

Mbali; how long are we going to carry on with this

Me; what do you want mbali

Mbali; my sister back

Me; well you lost her the day you decided it was right off her to get beaten , please leave im trying to get ready

sHe looked at me soo hurt and closed the door, when i was done with my make up and hair i put on the dress i

mean the curves and the booty, it was royal blue and an open back with heels, took a clutch bag and admired myself until major called me

Him; you may come out my queen

I laughed hung up and went to say goodbye, their mouth dropped including mbali and i knew she was going to tell dre about this, i walked out and when major looked at me i mean he was taken back , he rushed to open the gate for me and i just laughed and the worse possible thing ever 3 cars parked behind major and i knew it was them

Major; \*smiling\* ready to go

Me; yep

Dre got out off his car and looked at me actually all the guys they were drooling

Major opened the door for me and dre freaked

Dre; amahle

But the guys held him back i got inside the car and major drove off

Major; when were you going to tell me

Me; what

Major; that you turners girl

## INSERT #97

Well the venue was perfect, deco everyone looked so different all the guys were formal and the girls, with dresses that had tails it was a beautiful event. There was even a competition best dressed and others I won best dressed, a crown and a belt I just laughed about it. It was really really fun around 11 they drove me off and when he parked there was dre car

Major; I don't want to lie I want something more from you than just being friends but I still value my life , and this guy seems like he is ready to kill

I hugged him

Me; call me when you get home

Major; I will clever

I laughed and walked out he drove off and the drivers door opened , dre walked out I stood at the gate. He walked to me

Me; aren't you suppose to be getting drunk

Dre; how could I possibly have fun, when I'm so close to losing my woman

Me; dre you m

He cut me off

Dre; listen to me ne iv apologised to you for what i did but what i wont do is keep on apologising begging you as if i cheated or something like that cause the way i see it , you the one who should be running after me not the way its happening at this very moment, you want to run around with some nigga sharp do what you want to do but manje you will not run after that nigga while you still my girl , you have already disrespected me too much and in front off my friends but i wont let you disrespect my name cause right now you titled as " turners girl" so i dont need no boys running to me telling me how they busy with my girl , you want to be all over with some niggas that want a quick fuck ohk then end it with me stop this drama off yours we done , i want you to tell me straight now andre me and you are no longer together do what you want to do and il do the same and trust me il respect your decision il do what i used to do before you and i wont have a problem with that

Those words cut way deep. I just looked at him

Dre; so what will it be

Me; \*crying\* you broke my phone dre that had my mums and fathers pictures how am i suppose to remember them now. You hit me dre, you hurt me dre and never in my life have i seen my father lay his hands on my mum but you hit me then treated me like trash and worse you said i was using you

Dre; iv already apologised for that as for the reminder you had off your parents im sorry and im going to try and fix that

Me; how do i forget all off that

He came so close to me i could smell him , i had forgot his scent and it was coming back to me now

Dre; i didnt wait for you , so that me and you can go back again and start arguing i came here to give you what you want but i need you to confirm it for me

Me ; i listened to you can you listen to me now

He backed away and leaned on his car

Me; i get it ohk , i get it i was not suppose to entertain major, or maybe give him my numbers and im sorry for that especially since i was the one who was insecure but dre you had no right what so ever to hit me at all and the most fucked up thing about this is when brandon hit me you went crazy but at the end off the day you were the one again to hit me like what is that you protect me from other people but you dont protect me from yourself i dont need a guy in my life who will hit me i dont, iv been through that and it was hell and even though i love you so much , i wanted to be done with you for what you did i did not even think twice cause i did not want to go back where i came from. Yes i said we were done but fact is i really love you , your pride though

Dre; what you saying

Me; im saying you hit me again im done and im not turning back

Dre;.....

Me; i aint confirming anything cause im still your girl

Dre; lets go

He said that opening the passenger door , i walked slowly to him and got in he looked at me and i just pulled him in a kiss i broke it and he closed my door and got in in his car and drove to his place he stripped me out off the dress picked me up and placed me on the glass table leaning on the wall, i undressed him and he pinned me to the wall, my front facing the wall, he untied the weave and it just went down my back , he grabbed it and entered me from the behind

Woke up the next morning and dre was in between my legs i brushed his hair

Dre; no shit like that ever again ohk

Me; i love you

He lifted his head to look at me

Dre; the way i love you it scares the shit out off me

Me;...

Dre; im really sorry babe just you can be stubborn nawe

Me; \*smiling\* im also sorry ohk

He kissed me and i kissed him back

Dre; so can i ask you something

Me; sure

Dre; did something happen between you and that guy

I looked at him

Me; i was hurt but i wouldnt do that, nothing happened i just made friends

Dre; and where were you today

Me; \*laughing\* gala dinner it was so amazing

Dre; gala dinner

He looked confused

Me; \*laughing\* yeah they acted like they were rich and you could just be someone you always picture in your head

Dre looked confused

Me; you wont get it and wena where were you suppose to be

Dre; senaone

Me; hmmmm

Dre; \*laughing\* what?  
me; i didnt say anything you really heavy now get off me  
Dre; no

I kissed him then he flipped me over broke the kiss and walked naked to the bathroom while he was just staring. I did my business then went back he was leaning on the headboard

Dre; would you do more tattoos

Me; i would just dont know where

I sat on top off him , he moved his hands at the back off his head and just looked at me , i mean he had the best view

Dre; \*biting his lip\* how lucky can i get

Me; mxm

I punched him

Dre; you have cute breasts

Me; \*laughing\* dre are you serious, you have seen me naked before

Dre; so

He held them and i bit my lip

Dre; you even have a black spot under one , you knew it

Me; yes

Dre; come closer

I got closer to him

Dre; i really really lov....

Guy; dre ar.....

The door opened , dre flipped me over so so so quick he  
got on top off me

Dre; get the fuck out

shane; im so so...

Dre; get out man!

He banged the door and i just laughed so loud

Me; that was so funny, the way you tried to hid me  
\*laughing\*

Dre; \*laughing\* dont want the guys to know how my  
woman looks naked

Me; do you think he saw though

Dre; only your sexy legs and probably your back

Me; why dont your friends ever knock

Dre; they probably thought i was alone cause off last night

Me; well get down there before one off them comes up  
again

Dre; il be back

He kissed me and left

#ANDRE

I went downstairs

shane; fuck amahle is sexy as fuck

I appeared from the hallway

Me; talk about her like that and im going to kill you boy ,  
dont piss me off

shane; didnt mean it that way

Me; then how did you mean it

Shane; sorry man

Me; whats up?

Themba; morrison

Me; what about morrison

Themba; he wants to talk to you

Me; you know about what?

Themba; something about new business

Me; where are the others

Themba; they all fucked it just me and this idiot over here

Me; man im working this entire week

Themba; weekend

Me; this guy has not timing , wanted to do something with mami, have not been with her for a while

Themba; how about later after work you see him

Me; ohk i can work with that you coming with me right

Themba; sure il let you know today

Me; sure

Themba; lets go.. Boy will talk ke

Me; sure

They got up and walked out

Themba; his drunk man , dont mind what he said ohk

Me; \*laughing\*cool

Themba; \*laughing\* greet amahle for me

Me; will do ntwana

He got in the car and left and yes themba was the only one who had the key to my house even my brother didnt have it or deon.

I ran upstairs opened the door and my view was beautiful , she was busy with my phone, laying on her stomach her butt looking sexy as fuck, her hair all over the place.

Me; finding any interesting

Her; yes actually

Me; whats that

Her; you take pictures off me when im sleeping

Me; \*laughing\* yeah im obsessed with you cant help it at times

sHe faced the phone to me

Me; are you taking a picture off me

Her; \*singing\* take it off , take it off , take it off, take it off

I laughed so loud. Then i held my boxers. She screamed

Her; take it off , take it off

I slightly pushed them down and she went crazy, and laughing

Me; come help me take it off

Her; come here

I walked up to her , she put the phone on the side , and pulled me in kiss, i kissed her back and got on top off her , she pushed my boxers down and i got off them. I kissed her neck and she let out a slight moan , pulling me closer to her body , i moved my kisses down to her breast, stomach, thighs i looked at her and she bit her lower lip. I kissed both off her thighs " open for me mami " she did as daddy told her. I moved my tongue on her clit , i licked and sucked it , she tasted so good i could hear her moan

and calling my name " dree dree mmmmm baby" then i slided 2 fingers inside off her , her body got up from the sheet but i pushed it back and just made my woman happy , my tongue was making magic with her clit and my fingers inside off her making friends with her g spot. I moved my hands faster and the faster they went the louder she got and suddenly her body began shaking i was happy with my work , i kissed it for the final time and went up to kiss her she looked so pleased i kissed her , took a wrapper on the drawer even though she was seeing my doctor now with prevention just safety precautions and positioned my D on her entrance , i slowly entered her and she closed her eyes

Me; you so tight

Her; dont be gentle

I kissed her neck and tried it again and he held me so tight as i entered her , i moved her legs to my waist and

And began with a slow pace " dre i said dont be gentle " my queen knew what she wanted and i would not take that away from her, i didnt make love to her but i fucked her, and she screamed her lungs out , the deeper i went the deeper the scratch on my back, she kissed my neck and that weakened some parts off me but i just went deeper, and i was so close to reaching my climax i tried to pull out but she locked her legs with mine, and her grip

got tighter and i just cum I groaned as i pushed the last inch and she gasped for air

## INSERT # 98

Well using the wrapper was just a waste since it burst. I zoned off

Amahle ; punka wake up

Me ; hmmmm

Amahle; i need to go , its already dark

I slowly opened my eyes

me; sleep over mami please

Amahle; id love too but i cant now get up

We both got dressed but she wore my gym tights and sweater she said she was not going to wear a dress and heels, i also wore sweat pants and sweater and we left. I dropped her off and went home it was already late so i just went to bed. Monday morning prepared for work, then rushed home to meet morrison

Themba; lets go man

Me; im done

We rushed out and headed to where we were suppose to meet him

Me; mr morrison

Morrison; the big guys

We sat down

Morrison; would you like anything its on me

I looked at themba

Themba; well dinner would do

Morrison; perfect

We ordered and our food and drinks arrived

Me; i here you got new business for us

Morrison; you could say that

Me; not very convincing

Morrison; well im still trying to sort things out

Me; ohk talk to me

Morrison; girls

Themba; girls

Me; how are girls suppose to be my business

He raised his eyebrow

Me; ohh

Themba looked at me

Me; girlssss like girlsss

Themba; ohhhh

Morrison; yes

Me; selling off girls

He nodded his head

Morrison; that could bring us millions

Me; mo.....

Themba; cut me off

Themba; we aint interested and you too should not be interested in such bullshit , man if you agree to this im taking my money and never looking back

Me; im with you boy i have morals man even though i love money

Morrison; dont turn me down man , i need you for this operation to run

Themba; you mean you need our connections so you wont get caught

Morrison;....

Me; pull out off this shit morrison if i dont support it that should tell you something stick to something that will you make you sleep at night , and remember you have a niece

I took out cash and paid for our dinner

Themba; think clean

We got up and left him there

Themba; this guy

Me; boy i wouldnt do that shit even if they paid me to do it

Themba; its fucken disgusting , people are desperate for money nowadays man

Me; that i know

Themba; so you and amahle are good now

Me; that my mami boy and nothing is going to change that, she has no future without me

Themba; she???

Me; we both have no future with each other

Themba; are you already going on one knee

Me; \*laughing\* fuck off man

He dropped me off and i went to bed since i was waking up tomorrow

Next morning went downstairs and my breakfast was ready for me

Me; morning ntombi

Ntombi; hi andre

Me; how was church Sunday

She looked at me

Me; im trying to make a conversation

Ntombi; it was nice, always nice

Me; so why dont you get a bf at church

Ntombi; hao dre i cant just go up to a guy and ask them to be my bf i have to wait for them to come to me

Me; oh so the is a guy

Ntombi; maybe

Me; is he the reason you always go to church and never miss it once

Ntombi; yeah

Me; so you going to church for your god or for the guy

Ntombi; what kind off question is that

Me; \*laughing\* im just asking

I took my car keys

Me; see you later

Ntombi; mxm bye

Me; bye ntombi

Drove to work and went to my base few minutes mbali called me

Me; bubu wami

Amahle; papi

Me; mami

Amahle; yes mami

Me; where are you ?I really miss you

Amahle; home not more than me and i wont see you this week right

Me; yes mami but next week im all yours

Amahle; even weekend

Me; 7 days on, 7 days off baby

Amahle; well thats bad

Me; i know but il make it up to you

Amahle; ohk i wanted to talk to you about something

Me; ohk talk to me

Amahle; i made friends papi

Me; oh kay

Amahle; yes major and them

Me; is major the guy that was hitting on you

Amahle;.....

Me; dont tell me you expect me to be cool with you hanging out with a guy that imagines you naked

Amahle; no he doesn't care and it's not just him there are also girls

Me; why do you even need more friends we're here, the guys and unathi

Amahle; I know but I feel like I need friends of my own, the guys are mbali friends not mine

Me; why you pushing yourself on the side line as if you nothing

Amahle; I'm not I'm just saying I want friends of my own who will side with me cause whatever happens between me and you it does not affect only you and me but all of us

Me; it was a once off thing what's up now

Amahle; papi please I don't want to argue over something as stupid as this, I have made friends and I'm just asking you to accept them as my friends, even though I will constantly be with you guys

Me;....

Amahle; papi please

Me; ohk I just don't need them making moves on you

Amahle; they not even there thank you ne

Me; sharp amahle

Amahle; you not ohk about this

Me; yeah i just dont understand why you side lining yourself with us now

Amahle; im not like i said il always be with you guys but i would also love to have my own friends theres nothing to it

Me; i hope you know guys never want to be your friend

Amahle; so you telling me you dont really want to be just friends with mbali

Me; you know me and mbali thats different she is like my sister but look at her and deon where did it end up

Amahle; ohk i think i know what you want now il just stay away from them

Me; the truth that would make me so happy but i dont need you blaming me for shit saying im possessive i choose friends for you so go ahead mami just know your entire time is my time i dont need you telling me you with your friends when i want to see you

Amahle; it wont even get to that

Me; ohk i need to go, im still at work

Amahle; ohk papi i love you ne so much

Me; i love you too

I hung up i did not like that idea one bit i didnt see the reason for her hanging out with them but i was not going

to be labelled as the possessive bf so i was just going to let her be. What annoyed me was i did not know them and what kind off people they were , what kind off people she was dealing with or maybe i was just over thinking things and they just people who have no intentions what so ever. I called ntombi and told her not too cook i bought us food and went back to my place i was tired

Ntombi; thank you

Me; sure

Ntombi; can i ask you something

Me; shoot

Ntombi; how long have you been with amahle

Me; nearly 7 months

Ntombi; hmmmm

Me; why

Ntombi; im just asking , she seems like a nice girl but mean

Me; she is , shes sensitive, cry baby \*ntombi laughed\* friendly and lovable you will easily love her shes not bitchy not even a lil bit

Ntombi; \*smiling\* i thought she was forward yazi to be honest and bitchy

Me; \*laughing\* she does have a mean face , you would swear she is mean but the moment she talks all that meaness in her face is gone

Ntombi; i feel like she will just tell me to stick my eyes out off her man

Me; \*laughing\* well she is crazy when it comes to me but you should have a talk with her just one time you will see what im talking about

Ntombi; yho were would i even start

Me; church

She laughed so loud, i threw my paper bag

Me; night

Ntombi; night

Me; dont forget the alarm

Ntombi; have i ever

Me; i dont know

I walked upstairs and threw myself on the bed and slept

Thursday none interesting was just work and home. Friday my dr called

Me; alex

Alex; turner

Me; how you man

Alex; im good man, iv been trying to get a hold off your woman but i cant reach her phone

Me; oh yeah she kind off had a mix up with her phones whatsup

Alex; her 12 weeks is already over , she needs to come to me for her shot or should i come to you

Me; il talk to her cause im not available

Alex; please do before Monday ohk

Me; ohk man

Alex; are you good, no problems

Me; im good man no wounds you need to worry about

He laughed, we talked about random things then went back to work. I did not have mami numbers iv been meaning to ask her for them but all the time something comes up so i called mbali

Mbali; bubu

Me; bubu , let me talk to amahle

Mbali; ohk

After a couple off minutes

Amahle; papi

Me; mami you ohk

Amahle; yes baby you

Me; yeah listen alex just called me

Amahle; oh whats wrong

Me; nothing , your 12 weeks is over and you need to go take another

Amahle; its been 3 months already

Me; \*laughing\* yeah so because im working tomorrow il ask themba to drop you off at alex place ohk

Amahle; ohk thank you

Me; anytime what were you doing

Amahle; washing the dishes but im done now, have you knocked off

Me'; yes im driving home my eyes are so close from shutting down

Amahle; papi dont sleep

Me; \*laughing\* you must come drive for me you see

Amahle; i dont mind im not ending this call till you get home

Me; even better

Amahle; let me go to my bedroom

Then the was silence

Amahle; still here

Me; yep

Amahle; i miss your sexy self

I laughed so loud

Me; you becoming a junkie

Amahle; \*laughing\* im your junkie

Me; of course you are , i miss your sexy ass too

Amahle; and?

Me; that black spot under you breast

She laughed

Amahle; and

Me; your moans

Amahle; \*laughing\* no bye dre

Me; \*laughing\* you running away from me cause you already getting wet

Amahle; maybe

Me; well il make it up your wait when i see you that i promise

Amahle.....

Me; dont go silent on me

Amahle; im just thinking

Me; about

Amahle; us papi i mean i didnt think it was possible

Me; that we would be together

Amahle; no not that but that i would love you this much , i feel so complete with you i know cliche but i , i cant even explain it papi

Me; so you would not change anything

Amahle; with us?

Me; yeah

Amahle nothing at all from our first encounter with natasha and candice nothing

Me; im glad cause i love you amahle and you remember my promise

Amahle; promise?

Me; first time we went out

Amahle; \*laughing\* you still remember that

Me; hard to forget anything that has to do with you but you still remember

Amahle; yeah dr adams

Me; yes and i still intend to keep that promise i will keep that promise

Amahle.....

Me; i know you crying so wipe those tears

I was getting weak for her each and every day

## INSERT #99

#AMAHLE

Saturday morning went to take a shower and just wore a summer dress and waited for themba, he hooted and i walked out and went in

Me; hey bunny

Themba; hi my bunny

Me; sorry to interrupt your Saturday plans

Themba; not at all you know my plans start later

Me; partying

Themba; no , your man is working

Me; \*laughing\* so you dont party without him

Themba; yes we budget with him so we dont spend our own money

Me; im going to tell him

He laughed

Themba; \*laughing\* shame you feel sorry for him

Me; \*laughing\* vele

Themba; true love

I just laughed

Themba; so what are we going to do ku alex

I didnt know whether to be honest or lie

Me; preventing

Themba; hehhhh you prevent

Me; \*laughing\* yeah dont tell mbali she does not know

Themba; why

Me; i will tell her on my own time

Themba; ohk its a good thing you preventing , i dont want that guy to have a kid now

Me; dre?

themba; yeah

Me; hao why

Themba ; we still have a lot to do, money to make him having a kid will just be a distraction for him

Me; so you dont think he is ready

Themba; oh hell yes he is ready, his been committed to you and only you that tells me his ready but a kid right now for him no plus once he has a kid then people found out the kid will live in danger 2 weakness one time we

cant even handle that we still dealing with 1 weakness at a time

Me; his mum

Themba;....

He looked at me

Me; what?

Themba; you dont know?

Me; know what

themba; \*laughing\* people need you to take dre down

Me; what?

themba; for someone who is smart you can be slow at times

Me; talk bunny

Themba; you dre weakness mama i mean if one off our enermies or his enermy gets a hold off you, does anything to you and ask for dre anything that nigga will give it up

I raised my eyebrow

Themba; lets say deon is dre enermy right you know what your man does this brings hatred , so deon wants everything that dre has and he knows he wont get it until he finds something so valuable to dre that would make him give it up thats were you come in anyone in this world

in this industry who wants every shit dre has , just needs you

Me;.....

Themba; \*laughing\* do you think the guys just call you queen cause they have no other name to call you with no thats the reason why they call you queen

Me; how would you even know that, thats just a lie themba

Themba; im with this guy 24/7 i know

Me; how

Themba; dre never travels with you without being armed, he always has a gun when his with you, you know how to use a taxi mama but im your driver right now cause he does not want you to be alone ever, when we go out his always checking up on you looking at you every 5 second with the girls he used to fuck he never took a good look at them, whatever you ask dre he never says no

Me; \*laughing\* thats a lie , he has

Themba; when

Me; i asked him to hang out with the new friends i made and he said no

Themba; he said no

Me;.....

Themba; \*laughing\* thought so he also does not want people to know who you are remember adel cape town i would continue you but it would mean spending the night together

Me; im really his weakness

Themba; yeah but it also only takes your tears for him to kill

Me; brandon

Themba; haaa as for that one he was this close \*demonstrating with his fingers\* to go 6 but then again he thought off you and didnt

Me; this is freaking me out themba

Themba; \*laughing\* im sorry let go in

We walked in dr alex place and my mind was just all over the place now

Dr alex; hi amahle

Me; hi dr alex

Dr alex; themba

Themba; hey man

Me; its already been 3 months

Dr alex; \*smiling\* yes did you go to your periods

Me; no i skipped 2 months then last month for just 2 days

Dr alex; any side effect you came across

Me; well a few actually well you already know my change of period, i gained weight and headaches

Dr alex; ohk those are common side effects so nothing to worry about

Me; ohk

He injected me on my upper arm

Themba; whats that

Dr alex; depo-provera for her not to get pregnant ohk all done

Me; thank you

Dr alex; anything to drink

Me; just juice

Themba; beer

We stayed there for an hour or so then themba dropped me off

Saturday stayed in and studied including Sunday. Monday headed to school when i was done went home i was near where i first met major so i called him

Major; and she misses me

Me; no where are you

Major; orlando

Me; wooo why you got to do this to me

Major; \*laughing\* you at our spot

Me; yes and my bag is heavy

Major; shame mummy, wait there and i will come

Me; \*laughing\* you crazy, you got home safe Saturday

Major; yes was tired as fuck

Me; i had so much fun, it was great

Major; im glad that means next year you with me right

Me; yes

Major; and your bf

Me; we sorted our shit , we cool

Major; mama you do know who your bf is right

Me; i think i do , what do you know about him and why do many people know him

Major; im sure the whole of sa knows him. I know pretty much a lot

Me; talk to me clever

Major; but i dont want you to get hurt

Me; just talk

Major; i just know his a crime lord , i mean lord clever. I also heard no cops have been able to arrest him, they scared to arrest him

Me; \*laughing\* thats crazy major ,you cant also believe that you know how people like to exaggerate things

Major; actually i do, his a legend and guys would kill to work with him or just be his friend, his got money and he can get any gir.... \*he paused \* but im sure his not cheating on you

Me; his not

Major; how can you be sure

Me; i know so thats the least of my worries

Major; ohk but this guy his one off the guys we see in the movies and we envy but for him thats its his everyday life

Me; i just think you blowing this out off proportion maybe he does crime but crime lord thats just exaggerating and even crime lords get arrested

Major; connections thats what he has

Me; ai ohk major you just giving me what you heard not something you sure of

Major; just be careful

Me; i dont have too. see you?

Major; tomorrow

Me; ohk

I hung up , made myself something to eat and then  
watched tv then called my papi

Him; sure

I kept quiet i remembered he didnt have my new numbers

Him; uzo ringa noma? (will you talk or?)

When he spoke zulu , you would swear you talking to a  
zulu guy from the townships

Him; ai

He hung up i practised what i was going to say and finally  
called him again

Him; so oviasly asu kau oringayo so mama ringa ( so its  
quiet obviaos its not a guy talking so mama talk to me)

Me; hi

I even changed my voice

Him; hiiiii \*it was so long the way he said it\*

Me; i got your numbers from a friend

Him; who is your friend

Me; it doesnt matter

I heard the guys at the background " ubani ( who is it),  
friend which friend"

Him; ohk ufunani ke friend (ohk what do you want friend)

Me; wena ( you)

He laughed

Him; mina (me?)

Me; yeah, iv seen your pictures and you really cute

Him; where did you see them

Me; social media

Him; and did you see the were also pictures off my girl

Me; yes but when you see me, you will dump her immediately

Him; dont worry about that, we no longer together

I wanted to kill dre, he didnt even know who he was talking to but he was flirting

Him; are you still there

Me; yes

Him; so you want to have fun?

My heart just broke in a million pieces

INSERT #100

Me; id love too

Him; when was the last time you had fun

Me; its been a while

Him; eish i know punka ne but im seeing you sometime this week

He laughed

Me; \*laughing\* how did you know

Him; \*laughing\* you are my girl, i know your voice very well and only you can say i want you

Me; mxm liar

Him; but you were freaking out ne

Me; no i was not

Him; mami

Me; fine maybe i was

Him; i would never play you like that i love you

Guys; wooooo

Him; \*laughing\* you making me say that in front off the guys

Me; good

Him; which phone you using

Me; my gran

Him; ohk mami listen i need to see you

Me; so why dont you come over

Him; no i dont mean a 10 minutes thing maybe a full day ,  
i have not seen you for a week mami

Me; mmmh i dont know papi

Him; i could wait for weekend its just too far though , its  
still Monday

Me; i only have 2 classes Wednesday , i can come straight  
to you but i cant sleep over

Him; what time does your class end

Me; 12

Him; ohk i can work with that but inform mbali parents  
you will arrive late

Me; ohk papi il buy us food dont buy anything

Him; what will you buy

Me; you will see when i get there , where are you?

him; the warehouse the guys are giving me a headache

Me; \*laughing\* why

Him; i was not in here for a week ne baby and the mess i  
found , i wonder what they do here each and every day  
you know

Me; ahhh babe come on just give them a break

Him; no i cant mami especially since its costing all off us money

Me; you love money

Him; not more than you

Me; of course not , hows your mum ?

Him; yho babe i have not seen her for a while to be honest ey

Me; everything ohk

Him; yes my baby , your grandparents

Me; they good too i need to go now papi

Him; ohk il call you later

I hung up

Tuesday none much happened , was just school.

Wednesday attended my classes went to buy me and dre food and took a taxi to his place, i had my own keys and the remote for the gate. I opened and walked in

Me; dreeee

I looked all over and he was not there including ntombi. I called him

Dre; mami im coming , im just 5 minutes away

Me; i did not say i was at your house

Dre; \*laughing\* did you see the time you were suppose to be there already

Me; im just joking il wait for you wheres ntombi

Dre; she is the one who made me leave the house

Me; ohk get here already

I hung up, and sat on the couch watching tv in less than 10 minutes he was back

Dre; my mami

Me; hi papi

He kissed me

Dre; ntombi is needed at her place dont know for what so i had to go and drop her off

Me; oh ohk

Dre; so what did you get us

Me; i was craving for fish and chips its been a while since i had it

Dre; ohk eating now

Me; yesss

He warmed it up and brought it to the lounge and sat next to me

Dre; let me see your phone

I took it out

Dre; \*laughing\* shame

Me; dont laugh at least i still receive calls

Dre; you need to give me your phone that broke

Me; for

Dre; a friend off mine said he could fix it but he needs to see the damage so for the mean time you need to take that one

Me; i cant take a brand new phone from you

Dre; why not

Me; i just cant

Dre; ohk take mine ke its not new

Me; what will you use

Dre; the new one

Me; ....

Dre; you have to choose new or old

Me; \*laughing\* new

Dre; thats even better when you go you will take it with you

We ate and talked about a whole lot off things then got frisky , i went downstairs only in his top and went to get us something to drink when the intercom rang i checked it

out and it was some white guy carrying a big bag more like a paperbag

Me; dreeee \*shouting\* someone is at the gate

After few seconds he showed up in his boxers.

Dre; hey man

Guy; hey

Dre; im going to let you in

Me; i hope you wont stay long its already 8

Dre; after he leaves il take you home

Guy; hi

We turned to the door

Dre; hey jake

They shook hands

Jake; hi

Me; hi

Dre; lets sit down

They sat at the lounge i was busy in the kitchen

Jake; so i have your baby

Dre; \*smiling\* let me see her

I was kind off confused on what they were talking about

Me; would you like anything to drink

Jake; beer would be nice you have it

Dre; i have everything man

I took out a beer for him and dre and walked to the lounge the was a brown box on the glass table and an envelope, i gave it to him and walked upstairs

#ANDRE

Me; no mistake right

Jake; open her up

I removed the tape and opened the box and she was beautiful "desert eagle"

Me; shes beautiful

Jake; so you happy

Me; way happy and the other thing

Jake; here

Handing me the envelope

Jake; everything you need to know about them

Me; this looks thick

Jake; well its not only the guy but the squad as a whole

Me; oh ohk anything bad

Jake; its best you read about yourself why the sudden interest

Me; no reason at all

Jake; so who is that

Me; who?

Jake; the girl

Me; no one let me walk you out man

Jake; ohk

Me; il transfer everything to your account ohk you should get it before this week

Jake; ohk thanks man

Then walked out by the time i went upstairs mami was done. I took her home and drove back home , took the envelope and headed to my bedroom. I started with the guy " minenhle major ndlovu born and raised in soweto, born 2 february , 21 years off age , parents still together but lives with his grandparents , dated a girl named palesa from high school till they matriculated. He operates a small business , is into investments, no criminal record, has never been in trouble with the law. Second page was about how he knows off me and his thoughts" then " thandeka sibiya born and raised in kzn moved to soweto during her teen years , she is in the food business , a chef for 4/5 star hotel, friends with minenhle from high school,

no criminal record or been in trouble with the law , she knew about turner through rumours not sure whether its true or false " then " nelisiwe born and raised in soweto, works at a bank" i went through their entire profiles the was nothing suspicious about all off them and that made me feel at ease just a little bit

## #AMAHLE

Next morning left with deon and mbali. They were all lovey doveys with each other you would swear i was not in the car

Mbali; yes baby

Deon; dont forget tu nana, i really need this time with you

Mbali; lets hope she agrees

Deon; or why dont you just lie

Mbali; and say what , mum im sleeping over my friends for a week or more

Deon; but you old enough now , you work she cant deny you that

Mbali; which is why i was thinking of getting my own place

My eyes went wide

Deon; and we found you one

Mbali; yes but i need to work out everything, the money they will deduct from my monthly salary

Deon; you earn enough or i can just pay it for you

Mbali; well that wont be such a bad idea

Deon; ohk its final, you need to tell your mum you sleeping over at my place for a week before you tell her you moving out

Me; thank guys

Them; bye

I could not believe mbali was leaving and leaving me alone at home. I attended my classed then went home

Friday went to school , when i got back packed my things cause i was leaving for the weekend to spend it with dre then left for his place

Got to his place and he had send ntombi home for the weekend so it will be just me and him i was glad, i left him at the lounge and went to bath wanted to feel refreshed he barged in

Dre; what will you eat

Me; i dont know you making something

Dre; its already 8 babe , when will the food be ready if we cook now

Me; so you going to buy us food

He nodded his food

Me; ohk well anything would be good

Dre; you sure

Me; yes im sure

Dre; ohk il be right back dont let anyone in

Me; i doubt i will

He closed the door and left, continued my bath after a few minutes got out , lotioned my body then wore my pjs. I looked for his laptop for a good movie , he had the best movies, checked his drawer and i found it with the envelope the guy brought on Wednesday, i took it then put it back but i wanted to check what was on it so bad so i took it and opened it, there were a lot off pages there i didnt want to mix them up , i took them all out in the order they were in and i felt like my heart was beating out off my chest, my eyes grew wide, i flipped each and every paper and my hands began shaking i just put them back.

INSERT #101

#ANDRE

I walked in and she was busy in the kitchen

Me; i got us ribs

Amahle;.....

Me; mami you heard me

Amahle;.....

She walked upstairs, i placed the paper bags on the counter and walked upstairs

Me; whats wrong

Amahle; who did i get involve with exactly

Me; huh?

She went to open my drawer and took out the envelope, i just closed my eyes

Amahle; you research my friends now

Me; ....

Amahle; why dre im really confused who andre is cause everyone has something to say about you and now you have to go so low by getting people to spy on my friends for what? So that you can sleep at night what do you call this

Me;.....

Amahle ; so you wont talk to me now

Me; i wont stand here and argue with you about something you already know, and i definitely wont argue

with you about your "friends" \*using inverted commas" during my weekend when im suppose to be doing something better than telling you something you already know.

Amahle; thats your problem you....

Me; hold it right there mami you do know who i am and who you got involved with so lets stop acting like you are a victim here and you dont know shit when you know a lot. The first time you knew who i was if you didnt want to get involve with me you should have gone your way and not turn back but you knew so i dont need you acting all surprised when you hear something new about me asking yourself who you got involved with now i got us ribs and fries you will find me downstairs

I went downstairs warmed up our food , then sat on the couch after a few minutes she joined me. She picked the movie , i picked the second one and she fell asleep the movie was interesting so wanted to finish it , i placed a pillow near the couch arm rest she laid her head there , her legs on top off mines

When it ended , i picked her up and we went to bed. I had a few things i needed to do so i got busy with them on my laptop then bed, next morning was woken up by mami lips i opened my eyes , she smiled and kissed me again i didnt hesitate to kiss her back, i pulled her to me and she sat on

top off me , i removed her pjs and she was quick to remove my boxers , she kissed my neck , moving her kisses to my chest then looked at me and smiled , i grabbed her thing that she ties her hair with and gave it to her , she tied it up and kissed my thighs teasing me i just looked at her then planted kisses on my D and slowly took half off it in her mouth , when this girl gets frisky she gets frisky and its a fucken turn on. Her hands holding down to my legs and she did her magic , giving me the greatest fucken feeling ever i was so close and it was as if she knew cause she went faster then i let out the loudest groan , she came back up kissing my chest

Amahle; morning

I kissed her and deepened the kiss she broke it and got out off bed, went to the bathroom and threw me a towel well i cleaned mess and went to the bathroom then went downstairs we made breakfast together and went to eat outside

Me; im taking you out today

Amahle; \*smiling\* you taking me out today

Me; yes more like i want to spoil you then we go out just me and you , formal wear

Amahle; \*laughing\* that means formal for you too

Me; \*laughing\* i dont fail in that department

Amahle; even better, lets go shower ke

We showered together and pleased my woman then went out, she was wearing denim shorts, all star and white top, i just wore pair off jeans, black top and black nikes then we left for the nearest mall. We walked in that salon i sat on one off the chairs well the girls there were just talking girl stuff i just put on my headsets and listened to music, i received a call from morrison

Me; mr m

Morrison; turner

Me; how you doing this morning

Morrison; i would be better

Me; dont tell me you still on about that

Morrison; well kind off , how about you dont get involved but borrow me your connections

Me; like i said im not getting involved and that goes for my clients and connection too

Morrison; .....

Me; morrison iv known you for a while now me and you have done good business together had no complaints with you, we were good and i thought we were friends

Morrison; we are

Me; then talk to me

Mami looked at me on the mirror i got up kissed her and went to talk outside

Me; you still here

Morrison; yes

Me; ohk talk to me

Morrison; im in trouble i owe few people money

Me; how is that even possible you make money

Morrison; im bankrupt man

Me;.....

Morrison; i need quick cash , couple off millions and this operation is the only thing that can get me millions in just a couple off weeks

Me; what happened

Morrison; you do know i got arrested right

Me; yeah i heard

Morrison; well i lost a lot , the wife left with kids and took me to court taking everything i own , my money. During my time i lost buyers and getting back on my feet was hard while fighting a lawsuit

Me; im sorry to hear that

Morrison; now you know how desperate i am

Me; listen i want to help you get on your feet just not like this though , im willing to loan you something just for you to get back on your feet when everything off yours is sorted money coming in then you can pay me back including the money you need to pay people you owe

Morrison;....

Me; i dont want you getting involved in some disgusting business like this, you old enough to be my father so you in this business even more disgusting lets stick to something we know

Morrison; i dont know what to say turner

Me; youv been a good client so i wont let you suffer come see me some time this week ohk

Morrison; i owe you my life

They called me inside the salon

Me; i have to go , call me to let me know when you coming and how much you need

Morrison; thank you

I went in and my eyes grew wide

Amahle; how do i look

Me; who are you again

Amahle; \*laughing\* turner girl

Me; thats how you look , like turners princess or queen  
not even sure anymore

Amahle; \*laughing\* mxm

I took out my card and paid then went to spoil her some more. Amahle was the kind off girl that did not feel good about spending someone else money , but wanted to pop out something too , she was not comfortable with me spending money on her even though i reassured her i wanted to , you can see she is still uncomfortable but nevertheless i was able to go all out with her today after buying her stuff i bought myself somethings to , then left

Got home around 5 and she rushed to the shower when she was done i was next, went out and she was busy on the mirror , applying make up. We left around 7 grabbed dinner then took a walk around that area

Went back to the car and the guys would not stop calling mami answered it

Amahle; heyyy \*smiling\* ai we having time to ourselves ...  
Where are you.... Will seee... If we dont come we dont come ao .... Bye

Me; \*laughing\* what do they want

Amahle; us they at a club in rosebank

Me; up for it

She nodded her head

Me; ohk

We drove there, i took off the jacket and i was just wearing a white shirt, black pants and shoes, mami walked out the way she was , she looked beautiful. We walked in and looked for the guys and we just had fun. Next morning we all gathered outside at my house

Deon; so i want to throw a party

Us; a party

Dorian; yeah so people will have fun 16 december

Themba; where

Dorian; glen

Me; who do you know at glen

Dorian; dont worry about that , i got a place thats the important part

Me; you got it all planned out

Dorian; yeah but i need money

Me ; \*laughing\* you need money , i dont get that

Dorian; turner, just imagine i need to take care of a dj , stretch tent and those couch's , food that includes meat, and alcohol

Me ; so how does that concern me

deon; \*laughing\* this is going to be nice

Dorian ; fuck off deon... Hook me up man cmon

Me ; boy, you have a lot in your account a lot and you want me to hook you up

Dorian; you have more than 10mil in your account and im just talking about one account

Me ; i have expenses and since when you know whats in my account

Dorian; what expenses

Me; i have to pay for this house , i must pay electricity and water for this place , i need to buy groceries , i need to make mami look good and give her money too, i need to pay for kims fees and you know that. I need to pay the guys, my car doesnt travel on water i need gas. I need clothes to wear. I need to pay the guys at the building. I need to pay my helper, i need to pay everyone who makes sure all off this we have is possible and none off us get arrested how much is that from jozi to cape and you saying i dont have expenses

Dorian; im sure you dont even spend half of the money you have

Amahle ; but dorian he said he cant

Dorian; no mama, he can he just doesnt want to

themba; this wont end good

Me ; what the fuck you want from me

Deon ; dorian il help you out

Dorian; NO! i want him to help me out \*pointing at me\*

Me; \*laughing\* no im not going to give you a cent , you want a party not me

Dorian ; give me more money then

Me ; \*laughing\* ohhh this is about money

Mbali; can you guys do something about this

themba; believe me , theres nothing we can do and shit will go down

Shane ; mama think you the only one who can stop it

Dorian; no i just want you to help me out

Me ; i said i wont help you out, you have a lot of money in your account i know you dont need my help you just dont want to spend your own money

Dorian ; fuck you and your money FUCK you

Me; so you want to fight with me now because of my money you need help

Amahle ; \*shouting\* GEEZ CAN YOU 2 STOP WE HAVE HEARD YOU TWO

Dorian; mama please talk to him

Me ; and tell me what?

Unathi ; but dorian why dont you understand he has a lot of expenses

Dorian; yeah he does but he has a lot of money nathi his just greedy

Amahle; how about we all help you out , 1 will take care of the dj, other alcohol so on

Me; i aint using my money for a selfish bitch like him no

Amahle ; dre please tu

Jerome; im cool with that

mbali; so its sorted

All of them ; yeah

## INSERT #102

After the guys left mami wanted to sleep and i let her i went to the garage and washed my car, it took me over an hour i think when i was done leaned on the bonnet and got busy with my phone

Mami; i wonder what got you smiling

I looked up and she was leaning on the door frame, i placed my phone on my back pocket

Me; only you qualify to do that

She walked up to me , towel wrapped around her

Me; you were bathing

Mami; yeah

She stood in between my legs

I tilted my head to get a clear view off her , she wrapped her arms around my neck

Mami; you make me happy mr adams

Me; let me make you more happy

I pulled her in for kiss and she didnt hesitate , i deepened the kiss and she got closer to me, i held her towel and removed it throwing it to the floor , i stood up and kissed her neck, she grabbed my arms tight, i reached for my pocket taking out my car keys and closing the garage door, put them back, i moved my hands down her thighs and picked her up i turned and placed her on the car bonnet , she reached for my jeans unbuttoning them, she pulled me closer to her with her legs , i held her face and deepened the kiss, moving my kisses down her neck to her breasts she let out a moan and her breathing changed , i kissed her stomach and went down to her thighs she laid down on her back and i kissed one warm thigh and the next i looked up to her, her eyes closed while biting her lower lip, she had already opened for papi i teased her, trying to irritate the shit out off her and it was working

Mami; papi please

I made circular movements to her clit with my finger not fast but a slow pace , then licked her up, she was already wet , and her moans made me want to do more, i slightly entered two fingers inside off her she gasped getting her body up to look at me , i slided them in and out again , while my thumb moved slowly to her clit , she did not know were to hold on to , i began at a slow pace and increased my pace , her breathing changed , the sound off her moans changed ,my fingers went on a fast pace the sound off her insides getting louder including her moans i pulled in for a kiss , not decreasing the pace off my fingers, she broke the kiss and pulled me to her holding tight to me her moans straight on my ear , the sound off her moans made me hard my fingers went faster and faster inside off her , i removed them and quickly entered them back in then she reached her climax letting out the loudest moan , her juices running down my bonnet and my fingers covered in her juices. She tried catching her breath, she pushed my pants down and went down on me she did her magic i pulled her up before i cum , picked her up, laid her on the bonnet and entered her , she gasped for air , i wrapped my arm around her waist and pulled her up, her head rested on the car window , i went deeper inside off her , she wrapped her entire body with mine, her ankles locked around my waist and fingers locked behind my back , i held on to her thigh and fucked my woman , our moans filled the garage i was so close and i

could feel her nails digging deep into my back " dreeeee"  
she kept saying and to my ear it was as if she was saying  
keep going , keep going i pulled out and for me t enter  
her again it was a smoothe glide , i tried so hard to pull  
out but i couldnt i held her so close to me i was not sure if  
she could breath and entered the last inch and let out the  
loudest groan followed by her loudest moan. We both  
catched our breath not moving from the position we were  
in , i whispered to her ear " im sorry it was hard for me to  
pull out , i cum inside off you" then she laughed i looked  
at her,, we were both dripping wet, sweating like hell

Amahle; if i was not preventing we would have been  
parents a long time again

Me; not such a bad idea

I kissed her and got off her , we looked at the ceiling

Amahle; i wish i could just brag to the world about my sex  
life

I laughed so loud

Me; would you really

Amahle; definitely and if i was not jealous tell other girls  
to come and feel what i always feel

Me; who would have thought virgin to the freakiest girl  
ever

Amahle; \*laughing\* dont even start with me

Me; when are you moving in with me

Amahle; pay lobola for me first then im all yours

Me; not a problem

Amahle; just imagine us married

Me; with our daughter paris

She turned and looked at me

Amahle; you naming our daughter paris

Me; \*laughing\* yeah its cute ne and not your usual name

Amahle; you want to name your daughter after a place  
baby

Me'; \*laughing\* its not like it will be like kenya adams \* i  
paused\* actually that has a nice sound to it

Amahle; hate to admit it but yes

Me; so think about paris adams like you naming a princess  
cause thats exactly what she will be

Amahle;; yhooo im already getting replaced before she  
even exist

Me; not at all my mami what would you like to have first

Amahle; boy name rethabile fenty adams

Me; \*smiling\* sounds good paris zulu name would be  
enhle

Amahle; paris enhle adams

Me; rethabile fenty adams

We both laughed

Me;lets go eat

She wore the towel and i just wore my boxers and placed my jeans on my shoulders and we walked in, we made something to eat later that day dropped her off at home and went home just slept

## #THEMBA

I was busy at the warehouse as tired as i was but i had a tight schedule had to get a few cars and only in a few weeks so i had to work

Me; have you got the ones i told you about

Jack; yes 2 polo vivos , both grey and both in soweto

Me; so we have to do the job and it will be just me and you, you got their place

Jack; yes and where they reside

Me; ohk , i found the perfect benz

Jack; where i looked everywhere here in soweto

Me; cause its not, i also found this one in kuruman

Jack; thats far themba

Me; i know and we would not arrive here they would catch us somewhere in northwest

Jack; so you need to bail on that

Me; we never bail dont you get that , i taught you this

Jack; .....

Me; will move it from kurumani to soweto but no one will see it

Jack; i dont get you

Me; big truck

Jack; ohhhh

Me; you seriously dont deserve to work with me

We carried on with work after a few minutes , dorian and shane arrived

Dorian; well well well everyone is addicted to their work

Jack; when you love your job you just love it

Everyone got busy with their stuff , i walked up to dorian took my laptop ad sat next to him as he was busy with whatever

Me; you got to let go off this bullshit

Said that not taking my eyes off the screen

Dorian; what?

Me; dre and the others may not see it but i do

Dorian; what you on about

Me; i think you know what im on about and if dre finds out he will kill you

Dorian;....

Me; we both know dre is like the big brother when it comes to you even though in reality thats not the case but doing what you doing will get you killed and we both know he wont mind putting a bullet on your forehead when he find out about this

Dorian; i dont know what you talking about

I looked at him

Me; so you dont have a silly crush on amahle.....

## INSERT #103

Dorian; thats bullshit

Me; it better be bullshit for your sake

Dorian; ....

Me; your feeling are starting to show now fighting that guy on amahle birthday cause he said something about her and how her and dre look, and i definitely know that punch was not a mistake and that was the only way or should i say chance you can probably get to hit dre, the

way you look at her each and every time we go out and how pissed you get the minute they hold each other, and i definitely remember how your face looked when you could hear her screaming dre name, and trying to find any sort off way to fight with dre just cause he is with her including your tantrums yesterday they getting clearer man might want to hold back and you should be glad im the only one who has noticed this get yourself together

I got up and left him there before he could lie some more and carried on with work

## #ANDRE

Monday headed to work then passed by my mums house.

Me; family

Kim; hey andre

Me; yho no interest at all, not even a smile

Kim; \*laughing\* hi my second big brother whom i love very much, how are you feeling today cause it would sadden me to know you not good , sit down take my seat and be comfortable il even massage you to make you feel at home

My eyebrow was just raised the entire time

Me; i think i like the simple kim

Kim; me too

Me; mxm wheres mum

Kim; bathing she should be done by now, ma is sleeping  
shes not feeling well

Me; did she take anything

Kim; mum gave her some pills so we should hear from her  
if they worked

Me; ohk

I joined her on the couch and watched tv until my mum  
came down

Mum; baby

Me; hey mum

Mum; its good to see you, i missed you

Me; me too and this baby off mine

Kim; its funny how you miss me but never treat me out

Me; when will you treat me out

Kim; when i start working dre

Me; yhoooo by that time i will be dead

Kim; \*laughing\* you like acting like you old ne

Me; mxm

Mum; so hows everything work

Me; work is always hectic mum , im tired right now but i had to come see you cause its been a while

Mum; just hold on to it, hows amahle

Kim; yes hows amahle

Me; \*laughing\* shes good and happy too

Mum; i really love her you know

Me; but why mum

Mum; for one shes respectful and no mother does not love a girl who is respectful, well mannered , shes gorgeous

Kim; wayyyyy gorgeous

Mum; smart shes going to be a doctor andre

I llaughed

Mum; and well this look on your face makes me love her even more

Kim; and mum and she ,was the only girl that got him to commit

Me; you so forward

Kim; whatever but you know its true

Me; mxm let me leave guys i would love to spend more time with you but im working tomorrow

Mum; let me walk you out

Kim; bye big brother off mine

Me; \*laughing\* i said i love the simple kim

Kim; bye dre

Me; bye kim

My mum walked me out and i drove to my place. Ntombi was back i greeted her then went to bed cause i was exhausted and did not want anything at all. Few weeks passed everything was good with everyone and money was coming in that was the only thing that kept me happy besides amahle. One weekend had a job and was preparing for it when mami called

Me; beautiful

Mami; hi papu

Me; how you doing

Mami; im good if you come and see me

Me; im sorry but i cant mami

Mami; you working ?

Me; no

Mami; so why cant you see me

Me; im doing a job today

Mami;a job \*she paused\*

Me; yes a job

Mami;..... Ohhhh a job

Me; \*laughing\* yes a job im only coming back to jozi  
Sunday or Monday not sure

Mami; hao kanti where are you going

Me; cape town

Mami; why dont your boys do it in capetown

Me; cause im the only one who can do it clean and thats  
what i need a clean job

Mami; but what if so....

I cut her off

Me; dont even think about it il be ohk, iv done this so  
many times its like \* i paused\*

Mami; like what?

Me; what do they say again its like

Mami;....

Me; its like taking candy from a baby

She laughed

Mami; so you going to take whatever whether a car or  
whatever and take it as if you taking candy from a baby  
even though you a prof in this i doubt thats the case

Me; trust me it is mami il talk to you when im back ne

Mami; please be safe

Me; always

Mami; dre

Me; hmmmm

Mami; i love you ohk like really love you

Me; i love you so much more baby sleep tight

I carried on with what i was doing , took everything i would need and we left it was just me , themba and deon the other guys were from capetown

We arrived at capetown around 5 pm, i was too tired from driving so i slept but only got to sleep for like an hour then woke up with the guys, i met the guys i was suppose to meet to finalise everything then we left. Well mami was right it was not like taking candy from a baby but nobody got hurt and we brought no attention to us meaning so sign of police anywhere which was even better for us

Sunday evening woke up and called mami, we talked for a while then went to bath then left

Marlene; i knew it was you

Me; and what are you talking about

Marlene; dont give me that

Me; i dont know what you talking about

Marlene; around 1 it was reported on the 1 pm news that the was the biggest heist and people got away with money and you around cape town that calls your name \*whispering\* turner turner turner

Me; \*laughing\* you going crazy now

Marlene; you know its true and lets hope fisher does not know you in town cause he will be on your tail

Me; which is why im leaving tonight

Marlene; so it was you

Me; i didnt say that i just said i was leaving cause you know how fisher is whatever goes wrong here, he starts questioning me then il be his number one suspect so i need to leave before it gets even more complicated

Marlene; yeah right hows my girl

Me; \*laughing\* you mean my girl

Marlene; dont test me

Me; \*laughing\* shes just fine great actually

Marlene; im glad to hear that, treat her good

Me; i am treating her like the queen that she is , where is orlando

Marlene; his around iv seen him once or twice

Me; his not giving you any trouble

Marlene; he knows better than to do that shit

Me; ohk lets hit 2 beers and i leave

Marlene; where are the guys

Me; they going to visit some guy in bellvile

Marlene; ohk you buying right

Me; as if you ever buy

Well 2 beers turned to 6 and talking to him made me think about life even more, his was that type off guy always talking about life and rethinking certain things, i left very late but around 2 am we were on the road

We got to jozi and i slept the whole day thats how tired i was, Tuesday morning dressed up clean and left i had to meet with someone very important and that makes my life easier

Me; austin

Austin; turner

Me; how you doing

Austin; i could be better

Me; well you will be happy

He looked on the floor checking out the black bags

Austin; 4 bags really man

Me; \*laughing\* thats how i work so will you be able to do it

Austin; yeah you know i can

Me; clean

Austin; squicky clean but with this kind off money i will need a minimum of a 2 months to get this clear for you

Me; 2 months

Austin; yes turner this takes time

Me; ohk im not rushing it so i think i can work with that

Austin; ohk

We ate and i helped him with the bags then left to see my baby. I called her but no answer as i was about to call her for the second time, she opened the gate and walked to my car

Mami; im so happy you here and safe

Me; you were worried

Mami; yes i couldnt even study i kept thinking what if something bad happens and stuff like that i didnt feel like myself

Me; i told you not to worry

Mami; its easier said than done but im just glad you here

Me; well kiss me ke to show me you glad

Mami; im not that glad

Me; haaaa

Holding my chest

Mami; \*laughing\* yes you not all off that you know

Me; im everything to my mami, so if you my mami you know im everything i wont even go far with you on that

## INSERT #104

### #AMAHLE

Well mbali was going through with the decision off moving out, i honestly didnt want her to leave cause if she left i wouldnt be comfortable not sleeping at home since i would be the only girl home

Me; mbali come on

Mbali; \*laughing\* so you want me to wait for you to finish school then move out

Me; yes

Mbali; hell to the no

Me; but why

Mbali; cause im all grown up now, i make my own money and im done with school i need my own space and wena you still need to graduate so you need to be close to ma

Me; yes i get that which is why i say lets move out together when im done too

Mbali; and im going to repeat myself no

Me; but mbali i wont be able to sleep out anymore

Mbali; \*laughing\* thats your worry that you wont sleep out

Me; \*laughing\* yeah sometime i need a day to be with my baby

Mbali; and you can , you already turned 21 you have your own key only thing you need to do is ask mum and tell her if you wont be coming home of course she will ask questions cause she is our mum thats her job and the minute you say one off the guys name she will be cool with it

Me; on that note why is that vele

Mbali; what is what?

Me; ma and the guys she trust them deep

Mbali; well she knew them from the time we first became friends till now so she knows they wouldnt do anything stupid to hurt us or anything like that

Me; oh ohk when you moving out

Mbali; next month so enjoy my presence while im still here

Me; mxm if you not going to stay you might as well go

Mbali; oh you like that now

Me; yebo

I laughed and walked out off her bedroom, i went to study for like 3 hours then took a break i was craving for a bunny chow so walked out to go buy it at the shop it was major and some girl they looked cosy together

Me; hi

Major; my loving

Me; mxm usharp

Major; yes wena baby

Me; ngi right hi

Girl; helo

She had an attitude so decided to just stay away from her bought my food and sat on one off the benches

Major; so why are we fighting

Me; fighting?

Major; yeah you dont text or call or reply to any off my texts

Me; i do reply when i get the chance major dont lie and books are killing me

Major; mmmmm

Me; what?

Major; i just thought maybe your bf told you to stay away from me

Me; and why would he even do that

Major; you tell me

Me; you came out with that idea i think im the one who is suppose to be asking you that

Major; nah just leave it

Me; no talk major

Major; \*shouting\* I JUST DONT GET WHY YOU WITH THAT TYPE OFF GUY

Everyone at that shop turned to look at us, i grabbed his arm and pulled him outside

Me; why does it bother you so much that im with him

Major; ....

Me; major whats really going on with you

Major; i just feel like that guy does not deserve you

Me; you know what im fucken sick off it, people telling me he is not good for me and he does not deserve me the

truth is im down for him major , i dont care what he does whether he kills is a criminal or whatever shit you have to say about him i dont care and i know for sure no one deserves me like him so whatever you have to say share it with someone else cause im tired off everyone making him the bad guy here as if \*i paused\*

Major; as if he is the bad guy he is, he uses girls, changes girls all the time you aint special you just one off his off bitches another one off the girls he sleeps with trust me nana this guy is selling you lies dont be like one off those girls who will be labelled as "áanother girl that turner fucked" he does not lo.....

I cut him off

Me; what is it to you whether he is using me or what if he is then life will eventually go on. Thats your problem you dont even know him but you already making assumptions about him or maybe you just talking like this cause you want to be like him am i right or am i wrong

Major; you know what nana cause i see this is upsetting you lets just leave it i dont want to lose a friend because off such

Me; only now you think off such

Major; im just trying to protect you

Me; from what?

major; he played with my sister

Me; what?

major; your bf, i dont know what him and my sister had and i dont even want to know , he broke her virginity , did things for her then treated her as if she was a whore, she would come pick up my sister with his other girls and if my sister started fighting accuse him off shit then hell would break down , she would come home with blue eyes. She uses each and every girl he comes across he does not know how to treat a lady especially you

Me; did you confront him

Major; knowing who he was i did but i could not do anything like i said i value my life then worse part my sister fell pregnant

Me; what??

Major; yeah and he forced her to have an abortion at first denying the kid and then made her do an abortion

Me; thats a lie

Major; im telling you this cause i want to protect you, a guy like that is not for you nana trust me when i say this i really care about you and dont want you to get hurt

I just left him there and walked to the shop they had called my order long time ago, took my food and left as i was walking down the street i saw dorian car i knew all the guys car by now. I finally got to the gate he was still

in the car so i knocked on the window, he opened the door

Me; hey you

Dorian; hey lala

Me; you good?

Dorian; yeah you

Me; im ohk what you doing here

Dorian; i actually came to see you

Me; oh about what?

Dorian; kind off wanted us to go somewhere like grab lunch but you have your lunch on your hand

Me; lets go to the park , will share this

Dorian; \*smiling\* ohk

I got in and he drove us to the nearest park, we got out off the cr and sat on the bonnet together, we shared the bunny chow and ate

Me; so whats up

Dorian; i wanted to come and apologise to you

Me; apologise?? Apologise for what?

Dorian; my behaviour for the past few weeks

Me; i dont understand dorian

Dorian; its just \* he paused\* amahle i...

My phone rang and it was dre

Me; its dre

Dorian; answer it

Me; hey/ im ohk/ no im not i just need to talk to you about something / yes it is dre/ come when its good with you/ ohk bye

I hung up

Dorian; everything ohk

Me; i hope so, il have to hear from him, so you were telling me about your behaviour

Dorian; oh yeah i just wnated to apologise for that fighting on your birthday and almost fighting with dre

Me; its ohk but dont make it a regular thing you and dre fight a lot these days one would swear you not brother

Dorian; \*laughing\* guess its a sibling thing

Me; \*laughing\* wish i can back you up but i cant

Dorian; totally forgot you the only child

Me; yeah so i know nothing about sibling rival thats what they call it right

Dorian; \*laughing\* i think so

Me; i have to go back and study can you take me home

Dorian; sure

He drove me home , mbali had left but i just went to study anyway. The following day went to church with mbali mum , mbali not even once went to church except april after church we went back home

Me; so ma you ohk with mbali moving out

Mbali mum; i dont have much off a choice baby , she feels like she has grown up to me she is still a baby but if she wnats to leave then i cant stop her

Me; does ubaba know

Ma; i told her about it and he was ohk with it as long as she was not going to stay with a boy

Me; \*laughing\* if she was ubaba would have gone to her place and dragged here out with her hair

Ma; \*laughing\* and she woudnt even care

Me; ubaba is too strict though

Ma; he takes it after his father , they always told me his father was a very strict man and he wanted everything to be in order if anyone off the family members had a child that was troubling them they would call him

Me; \*laughing\* for real

Ma; yes baby

Me; no wonder ubaba is like this, he takes it from his father me and mbali always talk about how scary he can be

Ma; \*laughing\* that i know baby

## INSERT #105

Dre arrived later that day, he called me and i walked out he was standing outside off the car, he opened the door for me to get in

Me; im not leaving

Dre; why not

Me; its already late

He closed the door

Dre; what did i do now

Me;.....

Dre; cause you acting the way you acting i know i did something and i have a feeling your boy is the reason for this like he always is

Me; did you get a girl pregnant and made her do an abortion

He laughed so loud

Dre; who the fuck is your source \*laughing\* geez

Me;....

Dre; dont tell me you believe this crap, that idiot is feeding you with these kind off lies

Me; just answer me dre

Dre; i aint gonna answer you shit cause it seems like you already believe the shit you have been fed

Me; i just want to know the truth

Dre; i tell you the truth now, tomorrow you bring me another issue i have to tell the truth too and the next day and the next day until we finally break up its annoying now

Me; well then bye

Dre; you making him happy you know that

Me; is it true or not

Dre; iv never made a girl pregnant in my life, i always used a condom all the time, you the only girl that iv slept with that i hardly use a condom with you happy

Me; mistakes do happen, condom can burst

Dre; of course those kind off mistakes happen but morning after pills they would drink , i dont have an andre jnr on the streets

Me;....

Dre; tell me exactly what your boy told you

Me; you dated her sister, used her got her pregnant denied the kid and made her abort it also she would come home bruised

Dre; \*laughing\* thats the kind off shit you hear about me all the time

Me; yes dre

Dre; lets go

Me; where?

dre; to your boy that way he can tell me who is his sister and let him talk all off that crap while im there

He opened the door

Me; no

Dre; what?

Me; no he wont say anything with you there

Dre; cause its all fucken lies im tired off defending myself to you so lets sort this out

Me; no need to , i never even believed him

Dre; oh really you didnt believe him

Me; yes

Dre; funny how you came down on me talking like you have all the facts and talking like someone who believes everything now its either you or your homeboy is playing a game cause now you accuse me off having to make me get my kid aborted but you dont want us to go gets our facts straight

Me; i was just making sure

Dre; off what?

\*shouting\*

me; ...

Dre; the last time i checked i asked you out so it means this union is between me and you not some kid to come with you so that will be 3 in this relationship, anything you need to know come to me and talk to me about it and stop listening to your thirsty ass boys im tired of always justifying myself to you like i said people will talk a whole lot off shit about me but how you take it, its all up to you and if you want to leave im not going to stop you amahle... You know what im not even in the mood to see you anymore sharp

He walked to his side off the door and got in

Me; dre

He started the car and drove off , i tried calling him but nothing it just rang after a few times it just went to

voicemail , i went back in and carried on with what i was doing

Monday still nothing from dre, after my classes around 4 i left to go to his place by the time i got there it was dark and walking down the street was scary , i tried calling him to meet me halfway but he didnt pick up

Guy; hi

I turned and it was some guy behind me

Me; hi

I turned back and carried on walking

Guy; do you have the time

I shook my head, and increased my pace

Guy; where are you rushing to

I didnt respond him, reached for my bag and took out the keys cause i was 5 houses away

Guy; listen

Me; what?

He suddenly pulled my arm so rough , i looked at him with so much fear

Guy; iv seen you before , im not going to do anything to you

Me; oh

Guy; yes you live in that house right

I nodded my head

Guy; you see why would i rob you knowing very well you about to reach your house

Me; oh so you were just making a conversation

Guy; yes that and making sure no one bothers you

Me; well thank you

I got to the gate and he turned back , i opened it and walked in, got to the kitchen door and walked in, ntombi was cooking

Me; hey

Ntombi; hey

Me; where is dre

Ntombi; in the lounge

I walked to the lounge

Dre; no themba we cant be giving him something he did not want in the first place i want a black car not white man

Themba; for him to get everything he needs , he needs to take the white one

Dre; you losing your touch now

Me; hey

They both turned their headed to the door that led to the kitchen

Dre; what are you doing here

Me; i came to see you

He looked at his watch

Dre; its 7 how did you even get here

Me; taxis

Themba; how you bunny

Me; im ohk

Dre; i was not taking your calls cause i did not want to see you not that i wanted to see you in person

Me;....

Themba; everything ohk

Dre; yes think off something themba i need a black one will talk tomorrow and leave with her too

Me; im not going with themba

Dre; amahle im really tired and i dont have the energy to argue with you

Me; i dont want to argue

Themba; let me go

Dre; take her with you

Me; i said im not going

Dre; amahle i cant drive you home when you done talking  
im really tired leave with themba

Me; so you seriously going to be like this

Dre;.....

Me; themba go

Dre; amahle you not sleeping over and im definitely not  
taking you home

Me; no need il use taxis , just like i used them when i  
came here

Themba; mama lets go , you will come tomorrow and talk

Me;.....

Themba; il even pick you up from school, drop you off  
here then wait for you

Me; ohk

Dre just looked at me and said nothing, i took my bag and  
left with themba

Themba; so whats going on

Me; nothing

Themba; bunny you know you can talk to me right

Me; yes its just me and dre have been arguing a lot these days and its all because off me and now i think his done Themba; insecurities

Me; that and things people tell me about him

Themba; what do people tell you about him

Me; alot off things themba some that make me question who dre really is

Themba; tell me one

Me; one off my friends told me dre got his sister pregnant and denied the child than forced her to do an abortion, other dre researched my friends and more

Themba; why is your friend getting involved with your relationship with dre

Me; his not

Themba; his a guy

I nodded my head

Themba; the fact that his talkng some shitty things about dre while he says is your friend the only person you should be questioning is him not dre and why the hell are you friends with some guy

Me; dre is fine with it

Themba; his even fine with you hanging out with other guys but you still have insecurity issues while he was the one who is suppose to be arguing with you

Me; its not about that

Themba; there are some things you will learn about dre bunny, some are true , some are lies and some dre did not even know their existed or he did them even if its the truth its in the past whatever he did you were not together so it should not affect you and stop listening to everything everybody says and stand down for him

Me; i do

Themba; good cause you need to , if people come to you telling you all sort off shit stand up for dre whether you know the truth or dont

Me; ohk

Themba; so fix thing with dre

Me; il do my best

I got home really late, took a shower studied then went to bed. Tuesday morning prepared for school my classes were late, i walked to the station to wait for my bus and came across major

Major; hey nana

Me; helo

I passed him, he followed me behind

Major; you late

Me; no

Major; yho so you wont even talk to me

Me; im just not in the mood to listen to you and tell me more unrealistic stories about my papi

Major; you dont believe me lets talk to my sister

I turned to face him

'me; i dont want to talk to you or your sister are you even sure your sister was pregnant, have you ever thought maybe just maybe your sister lied about a pregnancy in order to make dre stick around have you even thought off that or have you thought maybe your sister lied to you about being pregnant or maybe you the one who lied about the whole thing

Major; i dont care anymore, i just want to make things right with you

Me; no major ever since you came along me and dre have been arguing all the time and its boring now

Major; so you blaming me

Me; no im blaming your lies stop spreading shitty things about dre in order to score points with me just stop

I left him there and went to catch my bus to school

INSERT #106

#ANDRE

Tuesday morning woke up and went to the gym for like 2 hours , came back and just got busy at home around 3 amahle walked in

Amahle; i know you dont want to talk to me so just listen  
Me;....

Amahle; dre i love you, i mean i really love you i dont think iv loved anyone like i love you or if its possible to love anyone else the way i love you, i know i can be insecure and jealous but its not because im trying to be annoying no but its because i cant help it and thats how deep i feel for you. I should know better that people will try and break us apart by all means spreading rumours lies and even pushing temptations to us but i let that get in between us im really sorry for all the argument and accusation i threw at you i know you probably dont believe me when i say this but i do all off that because i love you also i told major im not going to be friends with him if he has nothing better to say or talk about than you

Me;.....

Amahle; dre i said im sorry cant we just put this behind us

Me;....

Amahle; papi i love you im sorry

I turned to look at her and i wanted to laugh cause her eyes got teary. I raised my eyebrow and they just came down

Me; why you crying

Amahle; cause you dont want to forgive me

Me; and crying will make me want to forgive you

Amahle; i dont know

I turned my eyes back to the tv, she sat next to me

Amahle; am i forgiven

Me; i dont know

Amahle; papi i miss you ohk its hard not having to talk to you everyday punka please

Me; never again

Amahle; never again papi

I pulled her in for a kiss and she was quick to sit on top off me , pulled her closer to my D she broke the kiss

Amahle; you love me

I shook my head

Amahle; papi

Me; i love you so much mami

She smiled and kissed me again, she cuddled next to me until it was time for her to go, i dropped her off and went back to my place

## #NOVEMBER

We all helped mbali move to her place it was way big for her and only i knew that she wouldnt be staying alone but with my boy as if they would stay away from each other

Mbali mum; i cant believe you bought so many things already

Mbali; yes i prepared everything really well

Mbali mum; well i better get going , behave you kids

Us; we will

She left

Jack; well lets do a house warming

Me; \*laughing\* you are so forward

Mbali; tell me about it

Amahle; no his not , his right actually

Mbali; isnt it too late

Amahle; when has anything ever been late for us, will cook pap while the guys braai the meat

Deon; im down for that

Themba; others will go buy alcohol

Me; im going to buy booze

Jack; can i go with you

Me; lets go, the rest off you are good right

Them; yeah

Me; mami what will you drink

Mami; just breezer peach

Me; ohk will be back

Unathi; woahhhh we dont get asked what we drinking

Me; \*laughing\* you two are men so i know you drink real beer

Mbali; you must never

Me; \*laughing\* hunters i know

Them; \*laughing\* ohk

I took cash and my car keys and left with jack

Me; so how you doing

Jack; im great everything is just great

I looked at him

Jack; i swear im not using

Me; good hows your mum

Jack; shes good more happy now to be exact

Me; she better thats my aunt and if you hurt her im going to hurt you too

Jack; i have no reason too trust me

Me; good

Jack; andre

Me; hmmmm

Jack; thank you

Me; for what?

jack; giving me a chance to work with you i know it was not easy for you but like really thank you

Me; my pleasure man im just glad you ohk and you are your own man

Jack; and its all cause off you

Me; mxm so whats with you and girls or you like guys

Jack; \*laughing\* no

Me; so why have i not seen you with a girl before as in like ever

Jack; i do talk with girls

Me; oh really jack dont even try and lie to me

Jack; im not i do talk with them

Me; so you just talk to them

Jack; and do other things

Me; \*laughing\* just so you know if you into guys i will have nothing against you, you like my baby brother and i will support you

Jack; \*laughing\* im not i love girls

Me; ohk jack ohk man

We got to the liquor shop and bought everything we would need and went back, deon and dorian were busy with the meat and the girls were finished with the pap and those 2 salads, after an hour or so everything was done we just chilled as friends

Unathi; when is your one year guys

Amahle; march i think

Unathi; any plans

Me; i dont know baby

Amahle; same here

Mbali; never thought id see this day

I just laughed

Me; so is your party still on

Mbali; yeah iv been meaning to ask you that, is it

Dorian; yeah

Themba; what am i covering again

Dorian; nah its my party il do everything on my own

Amahle; nahhh come on dorian, you dont actually expect us not to contribute anything right

Dorian; \*smiling\* nah its cool im good

Me; is this still about the money cause if it is then il give you what you want

Dorian; you cant give me what i want

Me; how much do you need

Dorian; you ca....

Themba cut him off

Themba; will help you out whether you want to or not

Deon; yeah man its all good but just know will invite a few people too

Dorian; cool

Me; one would swear you pregnant you always moody

Dorian; dont piss me off dre

I raised my hands up in defeat

Me; im backing off

Deon; sorry ladies but can we talk about business for a little while

Mbali; no

Deon; baby tu, listen man the merchandise has not arrived yet

Me; what?

deon; yes you need to call these people and let them know, when the guys went to collect it the cranes were not there meaning it never even got to sa

Me; they said today , not tomorrow but today

Deon; i know that and now will miss our deadline and you know how the guys can be case you late with one day they will want you to cut the money

Me; this cant be happening excuse me

I took my phone and went outside, i called the guys who we dealt with when it came to great drugs. Well they told me a whole lot off bullshit about how cops raided them and had to move they shit so i should only expect it next week since cops will probably be watching them, i walked in annoyed

Deon; and?

Me; next week

Themba; next week ? That cant happen man

Me; unless you willing to fly over , go there be a drug mule for me and come back with them will have to wait for next week

Shane; that shouldnt be hard to get

Me; what?

Shane; people to go pick up them up for you

Me; no i dont do that never had and never will the most careless thing you could possibly do

Amahle; sorry to get in between your convo but how is it careless when a lot off people do it

Me; \*laughing\* who

Unathi; tv

Me; you actually telling me about tv right now and airports security is tight , once they get caught i dont get my drugs ever again, they get arrested and they call me out now we all die in prison or i could just wait for it to be shipped in through the indian ocean , delivered straight to my hands in a place where the is no security at all, no one gets arrested and no one dies than never getting your drugs rather wait a few more days to have them

Amahle; you always have the answer to everything

Me; you know that mami come sit here \*tapping my leg\*

She got up and sat on top off me

Deon; so we have to wait for next week

Me; yes il talk to the guys dont worry about tha....

My phone rang

Me; talk about the devil himself... Stephen

Stephen; turner

Me; how you doing today

Stephen; im always great

Me; well im sorry to have to bring you sich bad news but i cant deliver today

Stephen; no man the delivery that was suppose to happen was the one making my day great

Me; i know, the has been some problem and its out off my hands

Stephen; turner you joking with me right, i need this i need to feed my kids they medicine

Me; guess your kids will be sober not under the influence off their medicine

Stephen; turner you want us to find someone else

Me; \*laughing\* what is this now, this is how we do shit now...\* i held the speaker\* mami sit here im coming

I got up and went to talk outside

Me; thats how you do it now, i dont deliver and you ready to move on, i thought you were better than that

Stephen; im not saying i was going to do that im just asking you cant be leaving us dr

Me; so what the fuck you want me to do stephen turn myself into coke not everything goes the way we want it, you will get your stuff next week if you feel like you dont want to do business together anymore then find someone else

Stephen; il wait for next week

Me; great

I hung up, i went back and they were arguining

Unathi; no what i dont get is why you do business with people who are old and not people in the same age group as you guys

Deon; cause they bring better money

Amahle; and people in the 20s wouldnt bring better money

Deon; eish you guys dont understand

Me; they dont understand what

Deon; maybe you will explain better they asking why we hang out with people who are older than us and not people in our age group

Me; and you cant explain that

Themba; you know how they can be like especially these 2 \*pointing at amahle and unathi\*

Me; so whats your question

Unathi; why you hang out with people older than you not in your age group

Me; cause we old

Amahle; \*laughing\* i think we all know thats not the truth i dont even care about that my question was why is it you do business with people in their 50s 60s not 20s

Me; cause they bring better money, they know how to make money and how to use their heads in certain situations other than people younger. I can get a bmw right now want to sell it and someone younger would be like give it to me for 20 cause its stolen while someone old uses their heads, negotiates and gives you money you would have got when you were going to buy it you know why cause they know business so if we were in this with younger people i would probably be making 50k a month

Themba; or less

Unathi; so how much you make with older guys

All the guys laughed

Themba; ehhhhhhhhh

Deon; \*laughing\* lets not even go there

Amahle; no how much

Themba; i sold a gti last week for 130 k cash just one car and i sell more than 10 cars a week

They jaws just dropped

Themba; and a 27 year old would have wanted to buy it with only 25 k minimum

Amahle; how much do you make a month

Me; lets get drunk

Amahle; \*laughing\* you avoiding the question ne

Me; not at all kiss me

She shook her head, i sat on top off her and kissed her, i got up and took her hand

Mbali; i will kill you if i find you in my room

We passed the hallway, and opened mbali bedroom, we got in and she closed the door, i placed my drink on the table and laid on the bed, she got on top off me and kissed me

INSERT #107

I reached for her shorts and try to push them down , she broke the kiss and looked at me

Me; what?

Amahle; \*laughing\* in mbali bedroom really

Me; \*laughing\* you think she would have stop and thought about what you thinking right now if it was her in your room

Amahle.....

Me; exactly plus its our gift to her opening the way for her I pulled her in for a kiss and she broke it again

Amahle; but everyone is just outside this room

Me; when has that ever been a problem with us

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

She got off me and got busy on the mirror

Me; when are you moving in with me ke

Amahle; we already talked about this

Me; but mbali and deon are doing it

She turned to face me

Amahle; mbali is not going to live here alone

Me; hell no they moving in together

Amahle; mbali didnt even tell me

Me; yho dont tell her i told you ohk

Amahle; ohk but still im not moving in with you

Me; mxm

I ruined the bed covers

Amahle ; what are you doing

Me; trying to piss mbali off lets go

We walked out but i went out for a smoke then went back to the guys

We only left the next morning cause we were all too drunk to drive , mbali fought with me and amahle cause she thought we fucked in her bed , next morning we ate breakfast and left. Monday had to prepare for work arrived the around 8am i checked in and the day began i didnt see mami for the whole off november only talked on the phone cause she was busy with her exams but was writing her last paper 5 december so i could not be more happier , sshe stayed our way from homeboy major but still hung out with the girls , business was going great i had no complaint in my life whatsoever

## #DECEMBER

Mami finished with her exams and we saw each other all the time and i mean all the time , except when i was working off course , mbali and deon were still on it everything was good with the fam. dorian ended up not

doing his party bitchy tendencies i don't know why .Christmas mami went to cape town to be with his family and i was with my family with dorian and jack like every christmas and it was my first christmas with my mum , my gran my fathers mother asked to talk to me so i went to go and see her

Me; sthandwa sami (my love)

Gran; ai suka wena

Me; how are you

Gran; angikho right (im not ohk)

Me; whats wrong? Talk to me

Gran; umdala kodwa awunamtwana awuna gf ( you old but you dont have child and you dont have a gf)

Me; \*laughing\* mina? (me?)

Gran; ayanda ungazongkwatisa ne (ayanda dont make me angry ne)

Me; my love i do have a gf

Gran; iphi iphi ( where? , where?) \* using her hands\*

Me; \*laughing\* she had to be with her family but i promise you next year she will be sitting in front off you ne

Gran ; abafana baku lomndeni ( boys off this family )no one wants to get married and have kids you just want to be play boys

Me; \*laughing\* im not a play boy mina

Gran; mxm where is your big brother

Me; i dont know ungaphandle ( outside)

Gran; ohk wena unjani ( as for you, how are you?)

Me; im ohk im good actually

Gran; your mother?

me; shes good too, and you?

Gran; i try im still strong and standing

Me; and that makes me happy

Gran; but i miss my son this days

Me;.....

Gran; ayanda

Me; ma

Gran; have you even been to your fathers grave

Me; yeah mama

Gran;....

Me; a few years ago

Gran; ha \*holding her mouth\*

Me; it just brings back too many memories and opens up some wounds

Gran; uyihlo loyo ( thats your father)

Me; i will go

Gran; ay....

Me; ma i said i will go angazi nina ( just dont know when) but i will maybe even go with you

Gran; ohk baby and your brother too

Me; il talk to him, i need to go now il come check up on you again ne

Gran; ohk baby

I kissed her cheek and went to sit outside with other my other cousins

Well the next day my grandmother forced us all to go to the cemetery and we went to see my fathers grave it was clean and it was just too much for me in a way i adored my father and to think he was just laying there hopelessly it was too much for me we left later that day. For today i was working mami got back on the 29 and we were all preparing for the 31st the night off all nights

We went to some place for the countdown party and everything was great we all drunk as if it was our first time drinking alcohol and i knew this day was either going to end good or bad was just not sure after a few glasses i took and beers i took i had a BLACKOUT

## INSERT #108

Woke up the next morning as if someone was sitting on my head, i slightly lifted my head up and i did not recognise where i was , how drunk was i last night. The were naked girls in that room i was also naked i panicked I mean i did not know where to touch i was confused i would have remembered sleeping with a girl or girls , where was amahle when all off this happened my heart was beating out off my chest cause i knew amahle would never forgive me for this . I got up opened the door and i did not know where i was that was the second worst thing that was happening to me searched for my phone nothing i opened every room and people were still sleeping problem was i did not know these people at all i tried remembering but nothing I sat on the couch and forced myself to remember something But nothing my biggest question was how the hell did i even separate from the guys that made me get here i got up and went out and it looked like a suburb i was at soweto the last thing i

remember and now i just woke up at a place i did not even know. I had nothing on me went back inside and woke up one off the guys

Him; who are you suppose to be

Me; dont ask me that i also dont know who are you, where are we

He looked around

Me; boy i need you to help me out here

Him; wait

he opened the curtains

Him; ohh \*smiling\* naturena

Me; naturena??

I figured we might have left the place we turned up at yesterday and came to unathi hood

Me; whos house is this

Him; mthimbane house

Me; do you know unathi

Him; girl?

Me; yeah

Him; nah there are a lot off girls by that name here so i wouldnt be sure

Me; ngiboleke iphone (borrow me your phone)

Him; yho eish

he removed the pillows and luckily he found it

Him; \*laughing\* entlek who are you , i dont remember you at the party

It rang and she answered

Me; mami

Guy; helo helo mr turner i was expecting your call sooner than this

Me; who the fuck is this

Guy; hold on for a second

He hung up as i was about to call them again , they called using a video call, i answered it and i didnt even know the guy

Me; who the fuck are you and why you have my womans phone

Him; you dont remember me do you let me show you , your woman

Bare in mind , im half naked, watching this guy on my phone through video call and this guy i just met is waiting for his phone

Him; still here good

He turned the screen to wherever and mami was naked tied down, my eyes just grew wide, i felt sick, i couldnt move

Him; and may i just say you have great taste

He said that moving his finger on her thigh, i wanted to talk but i couldnt talk at all , its was as if the was a tape over my mouth

Amahle; please dont do this \*crying\*

Him; i dont want her tied up, come untie her

Some guy appeared and removed the rope , she tried running away but they were fast to hold her and bring her back , she was kicking and screaming and this guy was making sure i was seeing everything

Guy (owner of the phone); whats going on there

He got up from the bed and his eyes also locked on the screen

Him; iv told you so many times i was going to make your life hell turner but you didnt believe me and its such a pity a beauty like her has to pay for your sins dont you think

Me; what you want?

I couldnt even be angry at that moment or threaten him cause i was not sure what he was capable off doing

Him; i want to see you break down and suffer

Guy (owner off the phone) ; you cant do this im calling the cops on you

Him; and who are you suppose to be

Guy (owner off the phone) ; t....

Him; i dont even want to know one thing i knew about you turner is when you get excited you get really excited and get drunk as if theres no tomorrow and the way i predicted it , it happened while you were sleeping on the ground floor i took the liberty to take what belong to you and now im going to have so much fun

I dont know what was happening to me, i couldnt talk but i just stared at the screen

Me; please dont do this

He said that licking her breast and neck, amahle was kicking and screaming so some guy held her hands while the other feet it was 3 guys and one holding the phone for me to see everything

Guy; (owner off the phone); man they going to rape her

I was shaking , i tried remembering one off the guys numbers but my mind just went blank i didnt even remember anything at all

Me; guys please dont do this il do anything

I kept screaming on the phone, begging them, i offered them everything that i had, everyone that i owned

everything i begged than iv never begged before amahle was kicking and screaming, the guy with the phone sat on her legs while the other was raping my girl right in front off my eyes, i literally cried watching this. Amahle finally stopped kicking and fighting and she was on the floor so still as if she was dead, the guy kept going and going and going tears was just running down my face i felt hopeless , i felt disgusted in myself. She totally stopped fighting and just laid there

him; you enjoying the porn

I couldnt even say a word

They even changed places i didnt stop begging them, the guy i was with in the room went to look for another phone to call the cops

Him; \*screaming\* I dont know where they are they raping her in front off us \*shouting\* WE CALLED THEY ANSWERED THEN THINGS JUST HAPPENED SO FAST YOU NEED TO HELP HER OUT... DO YOU KNOW WHERE THEY ARE

Me;.....

Him; \*shouting and shaking me \* DUDE DO YOU KNOW THEM OR WHERE THEY MIGHT BE

I turned to him and the phone just slipped out off my hands falling down. The guy picked it up and watched it

He carried on talking for a while then hung up, i pinched myself just to test if it was not a dream, i scratched my eyes and did anything that could possibly mean it was just a dream but nothing, he sat next to me and i could not help but watch, i took the other phone trying to remember themba number but nothing , not mbali, not dorian, not deon no one

the guy that first raped her, now sat on her legs naked while the other sweat on my woman. This had to be a dream no this had to be dream i was not watching my girl get raped, where the hell was she, what the hell was i doing in naturena

Guy 2; you really good sweet cakes now suck it

She looked dead, tears were running down her face her body exposed and i was just watching her through the phone

Guy 1; hope you enjoyed the show

Then he hung up

My eyes were still on the phone

Him; we need to go now man and talk to the cops they might have thought i was joking over the phone, we just witnessed rape

Me;.....

Him; i was having a good time last night and you just had to come here and ruin it for me , i dont even know who you are

Me;.....

Him; snap out of it. Your girl was just raped in front off you and you just going to stand here and do nothing

Truth was i could not do anything even if i wanted to.....

INSERT #109

#AMAHLE

I looked at dre as he was sleeping on the couch , we were busy with breakfast with the guys on the morning of the 1st of the new year, new years eve was a bomb no lie , dre was so drunk that he passed out, we had to help him to the car and we were all too drunk to take him to the bed so we just left him on the couch everyone had a blast including me i went closer to dre to wake him up but he was sweating heavily i mean he looked like he was being attacked or drowning

Themba; \*laughing\* lets make a video off him , he looks so crazy

Mbali; he looks like they just threw him with a bucket filled with water , look how wet he is

Me; i think his having a bad dream

Themba; leave him im sure its not so bad

Me; look at him, that should tell its bad

Dorian; just wake him up, he looks like his dying

Me; punka, dre!... Dre !!!... Punka

I shook him but nothing

Deon; i think his fucking with us

Me; i dont think so bring a jug with water

Mbali brought it to the lounge

Me; dre !

He was not waking up so i had no choice but to splash water on his face

He woke up and stood straight, he was breathing so fast, he looked around as if he didnt even know us

Me; punka

He quickly turned to me

Me; you were dreaming

He was still breathing fast and we were all surrounding him. He looked like he woke up from the worst nightmare ever i mean it was as if we were ghost especially me. He looked at me

Him; it was a dream

Me; yes baby

He covered his face and looked at me

Him; what day is it today

Themba; 1 january man, are you ohk?

Dre; i need some air

He got up and went outside

Dorian; what was he dreaming about

Themba; whatever it is, engathi it fucked his mind up

Me; someone needs to go and talk to him

Themba; i think you the right person for that

I walked outside and he was bending down touching his knees, he was still breathing very fast

Me; baby are you ohk

He turned to look at me and said nothing

Me; you scaring me dre

He walked up to me and just hugged me so tight and i hugged him back

Me; it was just a dream papi whats wrong

Dre; it seemed so real mami

He said that pulling me tighter to him

I got out from his grip and kissed him, i held on his top on his waist and went back just to get a clear view off his face, he moved his hand to my cheek

Dre; i love you so much and i would kill anyone who hurt you

Me; i love you too whats wrong talk to me

Dre; nothing

Me; you ohk?

Dre; yeah

Me; you dont seem ohk dre, you seem scared actually and thats all knew to me

Dre;....

Me; papi

Dre; il be ohk dont worry about it

He pulled me into a hug . I was quick to hug him back we walked back in

Themba; you ohk man

Dre; yeah \*smiling\* im cool man

Unathi; you scared us for a moment though

Thembal uyabo if you let me take the video he would have seen how he looked

Dre; was i doing some funny shit

Dorian; you looked like , you were losing something or dying i dont know, you were sweating

Themba; what were you dreaming about

He looked at me and back at the guys

Dre; \*laughing\* i dont even remember

Me; must have been interesting

Dre; dont think i even want to remember it

We took our breakfast outside to the pool and just dug in, i was excited for the new year trust me i will be doing my 5th year then my last year i know sounds crazy but i will be a dr at the end. After our breakfast we decided to go out again, me and dre walked upstairs together, he laid on the bed and he was lost in his thoughts this dream seemed as if it affected him

Me; punka

Him; hmmmm

Me; what did you dream about

He got up and stood behind me, his arms around me

Him; i dont remember

I turned

Me; you not lying to me right

Him; never

He held my butt and picked me up, i locked my ankles together

Me; new years sex \*smiling\*

Him; \*laughing\* no

Me; punka

Him; strip for me ke

Me; \*laughing\* no

Him; then theres no new years sex

I got down from him, he sat on the bed

Dre; take it off , take it off , take it off

I laughed i was only wearing his top so it would be easy i turned and lifted up the top and it revealed my butt cheeks, he looked so excited and he stood up

Me; where you going

Dre; wait

He left the room and came back with money i mean 100 notes it must have been like thousands

Dre; woooo \*screaming \* take it off, take it off

I laughed so loud. I lifted my top up and it revealed my underwear he slid 2 hundred rand notes and he kept on chanting , i removed the underwear before the top and he just threw the money i was holding back my laughter , i turned and took off my top, and he had the sight off my butt the money just flew everywhere he came behind me and planted kisses from behind, i bit my lip. He pinned me to the wall and i was facing the wall, he kept kissing my neck and i realised moans, he grabbed my hand and pulled it from behind his other hand pulled my hair down , he separated my legs apart with his legs and i parted them " i love you" was the last thing he said before entering me from the behind , i closed my eyes, and bit my lower lip, he went in faster and faster, never letting go off the grip on my hair , he went in hard and fast, hard and fast and unexpectedly he turned me around and lifted one off my legs up and entered me i pushed my head back while he was holding my neck so tight , he pounded me so hard and fast that i was loosing my balance from standing on one leg , he noticed and picked me up, and fucked me against the wall i scratched hard and he fucked me hard until we both cum, he lay me on the bed and we kissed

After our cuddle, we went to take a shower and the guys were also nagging us , and shouting at us but we eventually finished, i wore a white mini tight skirt, red top that went above my shoulders and white heels. While dre wore blue jeans, white muscle top, white cap and black sneakers, we walked out and all the girls looked beautiful and the boys. I wanted to drive with my baby but mbali suggested the girls go on their own cause we wanted to talk

## #ANDRE

I was with themba, deon, dorian and jack in my car an we were using 3 cars

Me; cant believe its the new year

Dorian; tell me about it lets hope this year goes as smooth as possible

Themba; mina im still concerned with what you were dreaming about

Me; leave that man

Themba; oh kay

He looked at me weird. We got to the place and themba said he wanted to talk to me

Me; you wont let this go ne

Themba; no, you my best friend and i saw you, you were not yourself

Me; dont tell anyone about this

Themba; sure

Me; we had just woke up from the 31st right then i wake up to this room that has about like 10 naked girls in it and im also naked and condoms all over

Themba; \*laughing\* you dreamt cheating on amahle ehhhh you lucky it was a dream

Me; im not done, so i leave the room and i dont know anyone there, i wake up one off the guys and the guy does not even know who i am so i ask for his phone and realise im at naturena. I call amahle and some guy answers knowing very well it was me cause he calls out for turner he starts talking about how he wants me to suffer then he does video call so now im seeing amahle naked with these guys and then man they rape her while im watching on the phone, i mean they both rape her and she the last thing i remember was her looking dead

Themba; what?

Me; now you get why i was fucked

He covered his mouth

Themba; so did you see the guys

Me; yes

Themba; you know them

Me; no i dont know them , even the guy i asked for a phone from nothing

Themba; amahle can not know about this dream even though it was a dream she cant know

Me; exactly so lets not talk about it again man

Themba; definitely

I could see he was taken back by the dream after a while we walked in

Dorian; were you 2 still fucking

Us; fokof

I went to sit opposite amahle. We ordered food and too our shock amahle plate was the fullest

Me; how is it that you ordered the same thing as themba but your plate is full

Amahle; maybe the chef likes me

She smirked

Me; \*laughing\* ohhh so its like that

Themba; they fucking with me right

Unathi; leave her alone why you got to be jealous

Amahle;\*Laughing\* yazi you also have food

Me; ohk give me that

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

Me; you dont want to

She nodded her head

Me; lets see if you finish all of that

Amahle; dont even try me

They laughed. Our drinks came and we talked about everything and anything

Mbali; guys we need to tell you something

We turned to her

She looked at deon

Me; whats up you getting married

Themba; im the best man

Me; what?

deon; \*laughing\* not this year at least

Amahle; so what is it?

Mbali; im pregnant

INSERT #110

#ANDRE

Amahle; what?

mbali; yes

Me; \*laughing\* you going to be parents

Mbali; yes

We all suddenly screamed and everyone at that place just looked at us

Amahle; hehhhh waphuma endlini wamitha ( You move out then you get pregnant)

Mbali; \*laughing\* voetsek wena

Me; how did you know

Unathi; but you were drinking last night

Mbali; actually i was not, yol thought i was it was non alcoholic

Unathi; you crook

She laughed

Me; how did you know

Mbali; i missed my periods and we took a pregnancy test

Dorian; so your parents

Mbali ; they both know, and i was not suppose to tell you guys but its hard to hide it

Themba; and what did they say

Mbali; well the mr over here needs to pay for damages and all those traditional stuff

We laughed

Me; congratulation boy

Deon; thanks man

We all congratulated them

jack; so you know the gender

Mbali; jack

jack; \*laughing\* what?

Deon; \*laughing\* i dont even think its a baby yet

shane; ehhh kanti how early are you

Mbali; just a month

jack; and thats early like you have 8 months left

Amahle; \*laughing\* shes still in the primary stage baby , by the fifth week of her pregnancy it will be a mark of the embryonic period thats when the baby brain , spinal cord and heart and other things begin to form

Us; what???

Amahle; \*laughing\* its not a baby yet but when she get on the second month then a baby will be formed the heart and other organs

Jack; wait mbali child does not have a heart or brain right now

She nodded her head

We all laughed

Mbali; wooo ay wena you really a dr ne

Amahle; not as yet \*laughing\* im so happy for you come here

They hugged

Jack; you knew this man

Me; im a paramedic man

Dorian; enough about that so if its a girl

Unathi; oviasly unathi

Amahle; no way

Mbali; \*laughing\* i love bonolo

Me; woah , you zulu and you man over there is coloured why would you give your child a sotho name

Mbali ; cause i like it

Amahle; \*laughing\* but dre is right

Mbali; oh spesihle

Themba; ahhhhh i always wanted to name my first child that

I looked at themba

Themba; \*laughing\* yini (what) i do want a kid boy

Me; you never talked about it

Themba; neither have you

Amahle; do you want a kid

Me; i dont want a kid i want kids mami 4 or 5

Amahle; yho ai wena so guys whats your plan

Deon; well i have to pay lobola for her more like an engagement

Unathi; is that happening anytime soon

Deon; maybe

Me; so oviasly im the godfather right

Themba; why you want to get the big role

Dorian; you can ask that again

Me; cause i deserve it

Dorian; how about each one off us get a role, one best man other they named after the kid and other godfather

Me; and im taking the godfather role

Themba; \*laughing\* let them decide

Me; so who will it be

Mbali; \*laughing\* will think about it then will let you know

Me; you better don't disappoint me  
mbali; \*laughing\* you not trying to make me feel bad  
me; I'm not I'm just saying I always had your back I don't  
see any reason why I wouldnt have your kids back or my  
godson

mbali;,,,,,

me; what?

mbali; stop that cause its not going to work  
I just laughed

After our time there. We left and just had some more fun.  
Got home me and mami were so tired we just slept. Next  
morning was woken up by my phone

Me; sure

Guy; hey man, i have your babies with me

Me; \*laughing\* for real

Guy; yeah im outside your gate

Me; ohk im coming

I jumped out off bed, grabbed a top, wore mami slippers  
and went outside and buzzed them in. I waited for the  
guy at the kitchen he got in and he was carrying my  
babies on both his hands

Me; they done feeding

Guy; yeah

Me; fuck how old are they

Guy; \*laughing\* 6 weeks

Me; \*smiling\* thanks man let me get your money

I rushed upstairs and mami was still sleeping i took his money and gave it to him

It was 2 male rottweilers yhooo i was in love. I walked him out and took them babies went to introduce them to their mummy i knew mami loved dogs i mean loved but i did not know how she would react. I kneeled next to her side, her hair covered her entire face i could not even see if she was facing me or the other side

Me; mami.... mami

Her; hmmmm

Me; wake up

She turned and removed hair from her eyes , when she saw what i was carrying her eyes just popped out and the excitement on her eyes

Me; babies meet your mummy

She looked at me

Her; really

I nodded my head, she grabbed them both and couldnt stop cuddling and kissing them

Me; can you stop with the kisses

Amahle ; \*laughing\* no, why didnt you tell me about this

Me; cause i wanted to surprise you

Amahle; they so cute punka , names?

Me; im not sure yet

Amahle; titon and tyson they more like twins anyway

Me; titon and tyson

Amahle; yes punks

Me; ohk fine, can you differentiate

Amahle; yes, tyson has a mark in between his eyes

Me; \*laughing\* now get them out off our bed.

She gave me titon and we walked downstairs , we went outside to sort out where they will be staying then made breakfast.

Me; toast with butter and coffee right

amahle; yes, half done eggs right

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Amahle; what?

Me; you would swear we married

She walked up to me  
Amahle; lets pretend we are  
Me; ohk mrs adams  
She smiled and went back to the stove  
Amahle; so mr adams i was thinking of something  
Me; and whats that mrs adams  
Amahle; we doing our one year very soon  
Me; who would have thought so what were you planning  
Amahle; well i have something planned but i need  
something from you  
Me; whats that  
Amahle; dont plan anything and i mean anything at all  
cause i have everything covered can you do that for me  
Me; what you have planned  
Amahle; patience ohk be patient  
Me; ohk il try  
Amahle; ohk plate please  
I handed her the plate , i gave her , her toast and she  
gave me my plate, sat next to each to each other and ate  
amahle phone rang and she answered  
Amahle; happy new year buddy wami .... \*laughing\*  
happy new years guys i miss you all... Il let you know

when im home and ningithengeleni ekota (buy me a  
bunny chow) haha ohk bye guys.

I looked at her

Amahle'; \*laughing\* what?

Me; nothing

She squeezed my lips

Amahle; you married to me remember, so why you  
jealous

Couldnt help but laugh

Me; lets go

Amahle; where

Me; your mother in law

Amahle; \*smiling\* id love too, let me go bath

Me; what about me

Amahle; hurry up , when does ntombi start

Me; she should be coming next week

Amahle; ohk

She took our plates, rinsed them and we walked to our  
bedroom. We took a bath , got a bit naughty then

Went out, dressed out then left

Got to my mums place and she was soooo happy to see us more like she was happy to see amahle as excited as she was

Amahle; hi ma \*smiling\*

Masesi; helo baby , how are you? you look so beautiful

Amahle; new year treating me good

Mum; each day treats you good

She laughed

Amahle; thank you mummies guess what?

Mum; what

Amahle; im a mum

The look on my mums face, and masesi were priceless , eyes wide open and mouth. I just covered my face cause i wanted to laugh so much

Amahle; look how cute they are \*handing over the phone\*

Masesi; ohhhhhhhh

amahle; \*laughing\* you did not think i was pregnant right

Mum; of course not baby

Me; yeah right

Mum; they so cute, male or female

Amahle; both males titon and tyson

My mum just laughed

Mum; you behind this

Me; \*laughing\* she has been nagging me about getting a dog mum so decided to

Amahle; \*laughing\* and im glad

You would swear i was not even there, they were talking non stop just the 3 off them and i knew if kim was here it would have been way loud

Me; im going to get us food ohk

Them; ohk

Mum; nandos would be nice

Me; ohk

## INSERT #111

Took my car keys and left , drove to clear water since it was the nearest. Stood at the line while i was busy with my phone and mami kept sending me the most adorable pictures i just laughed. Ordered the food and turned but i bumped into someone

Me; im sorry

Her; no guess i was standing too close

Me; \*laughing\* then you should apologise

She punched me

Her; sorry cry baby

I laughed and walked away

Went to sit on one off the tables , i dont know why but i turned to see where that girl was. She was beautiful dont even want to lie, she was coloured , and light brown eyes

Girl; can i join you

I turned and it was her

Me; sure

She sat opposite me

Her; theoline

Me; andre

Her; andre, beautiful name

Me; shouldnt i be saying that

Her; you still can

Me; beautiful name theo

She smiled why was i attracted to this girl

Me; so who are you with

Her; alone

Me; why

Her; came to do my hair now was hungry and thought  
should get something to eat you

Me; family is at home

Her; wife and children

I just laughed

Me; too young for that

Her; how old... I think thats your order

Checked my slip and they were calling my number. Got up  
grabbed it and went to sit down again then she got up  
and grabbed her food

Her; so how old are you

Me; 26

Her; you dont look 26

Me; how old do i look

Her; 23 or 4

Me; no 26 you

Her; 23

Me; hmmmm ohk

Her; you leaving or?

Me; are you

Her; \*laughing\* want us to hang out ?

Me ;for how long

Her; maybe an hour

Me; ohk

Me; so what do you do?

Her; key account manager

Me; ehhhhh big word

She laughed

Her; you can say that you

Me; paramedic

Her; thats so nice \*smiling\*

Me; yeah it is

Her; gf

Me; mmm

Her; \*laughing\* complicated

Me; not really i do

Her; how long have you been together

Me; its still new

Her; thats nice

Me; you

Her; no , was still focussing on myself

Me; ohk you cute man

Her; \*laughing\* oh r...

My phone rang and it was my mum

Mum ; where are you

Me; im on my way

Mum; ohk

I hung up

Her; got to go

Me; yeah mum is hungry

Her; it was nice meeting you andre

Me; same here

Walked away and suddenly someone tapped my shoulders  
i quickly turned

Her; you didnt take my numbers

Me; \*laughing\* take mines

I gave it to her then drove home

Masesi; you took your time

Me; sorry , traffic was hectic

We sat down and we all ate, then me and amahle left  
Amahle; you ohk?

Me; yeah why

Amahle'; you seem distracted

Me; its nothing

Amahle; ohk

My phone rang and i did not recognise the number i didnt answer it, it rang again

Amahle; arent you going to take that

Me; no

Amahle; let me answer it for you then

Me; \*shouting\* no

She looked at me with so much fear in her eyes and looked outside the window

Me; im sorry... Helo

Girl; hey andre

Me; hi

Theo; you good

Me; im good you

Theo; good was just calling so i wont forget

Me; \*laughing\* ohk can we talk later

Theo; sure  
I hung up  
Me; mami  
Amahle;.....  
Me; im sorry  
Amahle; its fine andre  
Me; i know its not fine when you call me by my full name  
Amahle; fine dre  
Me; i also dont know that name  
Amahle; ai ke  
Me; mami i said im sorry  
Amahle; and i said fine

Got home and she went upstairs. I called theo  
Theo; miss me already  
Me; \*laughing\* no  
Theo; where are you  
Me; home  
Theo; and wheres the girl  
Me; im not sure what shes doing

Theo; wont you get caught

Me; \*laughing\* bye ke

Theo; bye

Went to my room and she was not there, looked everywhere but nothing went to titon and tyson place and i crossed fingers she was not there cause if she was that means she passed on the lounge and heard me on the phone. Walked outside and she was on the floor playing with them i scratched my head and walked to her

Me; hey

Amahle; hi

Me; when did you come out here

Amahle; while you were blushing over the phone

Me; what?

She turned to face me

Amahle; when you were on the phone

I didnt want to get in deep on that she stood up, locked them up and got out. She passed me but i held her hand and pulled her to me

Me; im sorry for snapping mama ohk

Amahle; ohk

Me; ohk who

Amahle; \*smiling\* ohk punka

I kissed her

## INSERT #112

#AMAHLE

January went by so fast and by february i was back at school it was my last semester this one at school cause my second semester i will be an intern at bara as a med student. Me and dre were good and our babies lol titon and tyson. During february deon paid for damages. Monday morning prepared for school , deon was no longer there so nje had to use the bus.

Waited for the bus and it finally arrived that will drop me off at school and i sat next to this girl

Her; hey

Me; hey \*smiling\*

Her; whats that for?

Me; medicine

'her; yho

Me; \*laughing\* yini

Her; nix, guess you at wits

Me; yes you

Her; rosebank , this is the first time im meeting someone from wits who is not full of herself

Me; haaaa

Her; serious, you all so full off yourselves except you of course

Me; ai suka was nice meeting you im amahle

Her; lerato

I walked out off the bus and went to buy breakfast at mc d then went to school. Attended my lectures then home. I called punka but the was no answer so just studied. Later that day he called and told me he was outside i walked out

Me; just throw your phone away nje once

Dre; \*laughing\* im sorry was too busy too even focus on it and it was on silence the entire time

Me; missed you

I kissed him

Dre; missed you too mami , how was school

Me; the usual

Dre; explain usual to me

Me; \*laughing\* got on a bus this morning, met a girl that was really nice, bought breakfast, went to school attended my first class. My third lecture my lecturer embarrassed me for something i failed to understand, went to grab something to eat, met up with aminah and nokwanda. Then got on a bus home

Dre; \*laughing\* thats how your day is usually is

Me; yes

Dre; what did you fail to understand

Me; some thing nje but im cool now you?

Dre; work, work and work

Me; i get so bored since mbali left

Dre; you want to move out

Me; no when i start working yes

We talked about random things after a couple of hours he left. Oh never mentioned it. My fathers money and mum finally got in but i did not use it wanted to use it for something more smarter. Rest off the week i did not see dre but he said weekend his not working. Friday went to school came back and called major

Major; my beautiful buddy

Me; hey you, where are you?

Major; usual pozi im coming ne to pick you up

Me; ohk

I waited for him and he called me, got out and it was him and thando

Me; hey guys

Them; hey nana

Major; lets go buy food

Me; where

Thando; squeeza

Me; ohk

We walked to squeeza and they bought food then went to their pozi, thandeka was not there eish but neli was there

Major; you good lovy

Me; im good you

Neli; tired yhooooo

Me; from what

Neli; everything yeses including work

I laughed

Thando; well im great

Us; thats a first

Thando; yeah ao life is good

Me; whats going on thando

Thando; \*laughing\* met someone

Major; \*laughing\* no really ntwana whats going on

Thando; you like to disrespect me dont you

Me; tell us everything

Thando; no, il tell you everything when i know whats up

Neli; why you secretive

Thando; im not

Me; yes name ke

Thando; ntokozo

Me; wooooo ntokozo

Major; \*laughing\* you forward wena

I hung out with them till late then went home

Got home and began cooking, mbali mum came past 8  
dished up for her and we ate together

Me; we must go out sometime mama we always home  
nowadays

Mbali mum; yeah ne maybe zoo

Mbali mum loved the zoo i mean loved

Me; \*laughing\* ay mama if we go there it must be the entire family

She laughed

Mbali mum; ohk wena ucabangani ke (ohk what were you thinking)

Me; lets go swim plus its still hot

Mbali mum; ohk and i know a good place

Me; where

Mbali mum; wild waters

Me; yes that would be fun

Mbali mum; woooooo do i even have a swimsuit

Me; what about me mama

Mbali mum had the best body for a woman in her 40  
shame dont want to lie

She washed the dishes then went to bed

Next morning. We packed our basket and took towels , food everything that we would need and left. Got there and it was packed it was a nice place cause you would leave your stuff and they still would be there when you got back . we had so much fun around 4 we left

Mbali mum; yhoo \*laughing\* that was so nice

Me; and refreshing ma

Mbali mum; arent you going today

Me; andre said he will pick me up but his phone is off so i think he might be busy

Mbali mum; maybe his coming

Me; yes ma ,are you happy you will be ugogo soon

She laughed

Mbali mum; yes baby im really happy and im just relieved that she got pregnant when she was done with her studies and working

Me; yeah ey mama

We got home, we bought food so there was no cooking. I called punka but it went straight to voicemail hung out with ma , we ate watched movies then bed. Next day we went to church came back and hung out with major.

Monday went to school then home that was my usual schedule didnt see dre and his phone was on voicemail. I called themba

Themba; beautiful, gorgeous, queen

Me; \*laughing\* hi themba

Themba; how are you sthandwa sami (my love)

Me; im not ohk , are you with dre?

Themba; no lovy he just left like right now

Me; oh

Themba; whats wrong

Me; we were suppose .... Never mind

Themba; you ohk

Me; yeah thanks ohk

Themba; ohk

I studied till late. Around 12am andre called and i did not answer went to check on the window and he was outside just went to bed and left it ringing. Next morning went to school and it was just work. Went home and dre car was parked outside walked in and she was talking with ma

Me; hi ma

Mbali mum; hey baby

Me; hi andre

Dre; hi baby

I walked to my room and he followed me

Dre; im sorry about the weekend

Me; ohk

I said that taking out my laptop and textbooks

Dre; tried calling you last night

Me; morning actually , i was sleeping

Dre; can you leave that and look at me

I turned

Me; what?

Dre; i just said im sorry

Me; and i said ohk

Dre; pack your bags we leaving

Me; what?

Dre; i asked ma and she agreed as long as you go to school

Me; no

Dre; nana im trying to make it up to you here

Me; and i dont want you too

Dre; well please, your babies miss you

Me; how are they

Dre; \*smiling\* how about you come with me and you see for yourself

Me; just so you know , im going for them not you

Dre; ohk \*smiling\*

I packed my bags , books and everything i would need and left

Went straight to my babies then went inside, he was cooking

Me; \*laughing\* i could get used to this , wheres ntombi Dre; her room

I sat at the lounge and around 8 went to where the table was set, wined and dined

## INSERT #113

### #AMAHLE

He pulled me to his room and there were flowers, sportcene plastics, and 2 paper bags , it was a romantic setting

Me; i think il be getting mad more often

Dre; you know il do anything to make you happy

He lifted me up and laID me on the bed and pushed everything out off the bed

He flipped me over, and took off my shirt , i took off his top and unbuttoned his jeans i pushed them down and went down on him until he pulled me back up, he flipped me over and went down on me, moaned and grabbed his hair , i held the sheets in a fist and my body just shook uncontrollably he went up and kissed me

Dre; you taste so good

Me; i love you ohk

Dre; love you too

He planted kisses on my neck and i held him tight, he reached for the drawer and took out a condom. He broke the kiss and i just looked at him no. Me and dre only used condom 2 times i think cause i was preventing and we both tested negative and we both enjoyed it way better without a condom and whenever a condom was there it was suggested by me not him and now his wearing a condom

Me; condom?

Him; yeah

He was busy so he could not even look at me

Me; are you cheating on me dre ?

Dre; what?

Me; are you cheating on me?

Dre; what? No! What?

Me; you never want us to use a condom and suddenly we using one, only reason could be you cheating on me and sleeping with other bitches

Dre; no mami i just th... I mea... Yhooo \*holding his head\* amahle didnt think it would bother you

Me; it doesn't cause i dont want to get sick so im glad you think about others and condomise

Dre; im not cheating on you

Me; get off me dre

Dre; what why

Me; im not in the mood for sex anymore

He got off me, took his top and the one wrapper that he had not opened and went downstairs

Me; oh hi

She quickly turned

Her; hi

Me; its been a while ey

Her; y y yes \*stuttering\*

Me; you ohk

Her; yes

We made coffee together. She wanted to go back to her room but i convinced her not too we sat on the kitchen stools

Me; so how are you

Her; ngi right wena

Me; ngi right how is he treating you this one

She laughed

Her; his strict but he helps me out yena so i have to be grateful

Me; do you have a child

Her; no you

Me; no

Her; who do you live with

Me; my cousins ma

Her; your parents?

Me; they died

Her; oh im sorry

Me; its fine you at home

Her; ugogo, my sister and her kids

Me; only one working

Her; yes

Me; can you cope kodwa

Her; yeah only because off the salary i earn , he gives me a lot for what i do which helps me out a lot

Me; thats great ey you a nice girl

Her; you too and you dont deserv... \*she paused\*

Me; dont deserve what?

Dre appeared from the kitchen

Her; you you dont deserve what happened to you with your parents

Me; thank you

Her; let me go sleep

She stood up and left

Dre; can we talk?

me; talk dre

Dre; im not cheating on you mama , can we just forget about this. We always fighting nowadays

Me; ohk dre you not cheating

Dre; its like you dont trust me

me; ao? Your pro....

Before i could continue he cut me off and kissed me and i missed him so i kissed him back , he lifted the top and removed it from me, lifted me up and placed me on the kitchen counter, he got in between my legs and i opened wider he made my lye on my back and he went down on me. I held the corner off the counter cause thats the only place i could grip. My moans filled the kitchen i pulled him to a kiss. He grabbed my waist and put me down, i

grabbed the condom that i hid under the coffee mug since i was talking to ntombi and handed it too him he looked at me, put it on and entered me, i held his back so tight and he entered me hard and deep. Until we both cum

We made something to eat then went to bed. Next morning woke up and woke up dre to take me to school. He dropped me off and attended my classes. Then called him again he came to pick me up and we went to grab something to eat. Then home. Was like that for the rest off the week and i had so much fun.

INSERT #114

#ANDRE

Weekend i had to work, Saturday was off, woke up very late since i was really tired went to bath then called theo  
Theo; hi mr

Me; hey where are you

Theo; im at work but im going to change iv knocked off

Me; ohk want to meet up

Theo; ohk pick me up from work then

Me; ohk

I hung up and went downstairs

Me; im going out

Ntombi; amahle or theo

Me; dont even try and piss me off

Ntombi; amahle does not deserve what you doing to her i  
dont even care about that theo girl

Me; if you get in my business once again you will find  
yourself unemployed , you here to clean up after my mess  
and not worry about who i get involved with

Ntombi;.....

Me; now il be back dont let anyone in

I walked out and drove to theos work place after a few  
minutes she walked out. She got in and kissed me

Theo; well i missed you

Me; why

Theo; no call or visit during the week

Me; i was busy

Theo; busy with your bitch

Me; if you call her anything like that ever again i swear to  
you, im going to hurt you like no other person has

Theo; im sorry

Me; in fact never ask about her or mention her name

Theo; cool can we grab something to eat

Me; i dont have money with me

Theo; il buy

Me; ohk

We drove to a drive thru and she bought what she would eat , and drove to her place

Me; wheres your kid?

Theo; with my mum you should meet him

Me; how was work?

theo; just fine can i shower first

Me; sure but im eating

Theo; ohk

She left and walked to the bathroom , took my food and i was about to sit down my phone rang and it was mami

Me; mami

Amahle; papi

Me; you good?

Amahle; where are you?

Me; mmm why?

Amahle; im at your place

Me; why didnt you tell me you coming

Amahle; you gave me your key for such angithi now where are you?

Me; im co\*i paused\*

She walked out naked

Me; babe can you wait for like an hour or 2 im coming

Amahle; ohk

Me; what you want to eat

Amahle; no im full

Me; mami im going to get you something either way

Amahle; \*laughing\* ohk

I hung up, theo walked up to me and went down on her knees and did her magic then we took it to the bedroom, she fell i asleep so i went to shower then left didnt want to wake her up, i drove to fishaways and bought her food and me then drove to my place , gathered myself together then walked in

Amahle; \*laughing\* ay ntombi who would even agree to that

Ntombi; yhooooo you dont know people when they despearate

Me; hey nana

She turned to the door and the smile on her face i loved it but kind off killed me too

Amahle; \*smiling\* hi papi

She got up and wrapped her arms around my neck , i picked her up and sat us on the couch she was on top off me

Amahle; what did you get

Me; fish and chips

Amahle; just what i was craving

Me; and there you were \*imitating her \* no papi im ohk

She punched

Amahle; i didnt want to bother you

Me; you will never bother me

I pushed her hair back and kissed her

Amahle; i love you

Me; do you really

Amahle; yes

Me; why

Amahle; cause you always go out your way to make me happy, you the sweetest guy i know well sometimes sweet

I laughed

Amahle; i love you cause you annoying sometimes, i love how you always want to walk out off the shower sexy

when im around, wet hair, water dripping and that walk you do

Me; no i dont

Amahle; the was a time when the guys were here and me and mbali were sleeping in your bed and you walked out dry, your hair and the next day you walked out wet cause it was just me and you

I laughed

Amahle; how you always want to be there for me , how you make everything about us not me or you i love the irritating things you do and i just love you

Me; kiss me

Amahle; \*laughing\* no

I picked her up and threw her body to my back, her face was on my back and walked upstairs

Amahle; \*laughing\* ntombi if you want fish help yourself

I opened my bedroom door and threw her on the bed and walked to the bathroom

Amahle; where you going

Me; im going to shower

Amahle; you going to take too long

She got off from the bed and walked up to me

'me; well lets shower together

I opened water for us and we showered then i please her made her happy she wanted more but i didnt make love or fuck her i just made her moan without having to use my dick. I woke up after a few hours and she was still sleeping. I got a clear view off her back tattoo "LUNGILE MSIBI - 19\*\*- 18-07\_ 20\*\* 01 08" then nkuleko ngwenya 19\*\*- 20-09\_ 20\*\* 16-06 " it was birthday and death days off her parents with hearts on each side it was beautiful. I had work to do and transfer to make so thats what i did

She woke up after a while and we went downstairs to grab something to eat. The guys told us they were at some club she had a few clothes there, she changed so did i and met up with the guys

Themba; im going to have fun tonight

Me; \*laughing\* do you boy

Shane; let me help you out

Themba; dont you mean you want me to help you out

Me; you should bo....

My phone rang checked the caller id and she placed it back

Themba; who is it

Me; nobody , where is my woman

Themba; they left with the girls to the toilet

Me; ohk get yourself together and get girls whats wrong with you they all thirsty for you guys

## INSERT #115

Well things were good on my side , i was having fun and falling deep in love with amahle you just would not get what was going through my mind. Wednesday evening i had a meeting with my clients dressed up clean and met up with them

Me; im rushing somewhere guys can get done with this

Stephen; you might as well leave right now, we wont be rushing cause you have somewhere to be you knew about this meeting for weeks now

Me; why you have to be a hot head

Stephen; thats just how it is leave or cancel your plans

Me; i cant leave we need to talk about this

Stephen; then you know what you need to do

I took out my phone and called amahle

Amahle; you outside?

Me; mami listen im going to have to cancel

Amahle; again dre

Me; i know i cancelled last weekend and i promised you today but this is important

Amahle; family?

Me; no

Amahle; then what could be more important than you having a family emergency

Me; work

Amahle; dre its always work nowadays like always i never get my time with you ever not unless i just show up in your house whats going on

Me; il call you later

Amahle; dre wh....

I just hung up

Me; lets talk

Jake; everything ohk

Me; i didnt just cancel my plans to talk about my personal life can we talk

Stephen; ohk when is my powder coming in

Me; Friday usual order right

Stephen; yes but i need more marijuana

Owen; thats what you said the last time we had a meeting

Stephen; its not my fault, its selling

Me; ohk il get that for you, you will get all your drugs

Friday

Stephen; ohk that makes me happy

Me; your man still owes me

Stephen; for the beemer

Me; yes for the beemer and his not answering my calls,  
we talked about such thing stephen and you know i dont  
like going after someone especially for my money

Stephen; the must be a mistake

Me; what kind off mistake, you told me i should trust this  
guy and i ddi he didnt even have to pay the deposit i just  
gave him a beemer for free

Stephen; il talk to him

Me; you better cause if not h....

Stephen; it wont have to get to that

Me; good

Owen; you got my baby

Me; yes im still sorting out a few docs though , give me 2  
more weeks then i shall deliver

Owen; as for the dough

Me; you have the biggest order man

Owen; \*smiling\* i know and you will get your money

William; why is it you would order this much though

Owen; i have a new strategy

Me; tell us all about it

Owen; i buy it from you , sell my half and sell the other to someone who sells it for a bigger price and give me money

Me; who?

Owen; dont need to worry about that

Me; watch yourself

Owen; dont worry i got that

Morrison; well the new drug that you gave me is selling fast

Me; all off you guys want it , and the person i get that shit from is always giving me problems

Morrison; well i need it turner

Me; and you shall get it

We talked more business and more business then ate dinner

Stephen; so how you holding up

Morrison; well iv never been this good , i never thought id be this good again, its like i never even lost money

Jake; \*smiling\* good to hear that

Morrison; thanks again man it still means a lot to me

Me; im always here to help

Stephen; and you

Me; what about me?

stephen; i think i know something these guys dont know

Me; \*laughing\* what you talking about

Stephen; the african queen you spoiled in my restaurant

Jake; i think we might just be talking about the same woman that i saw at his place

Stephen; real beauty and sorry to say this as old as i am beautiful body

Me; \*laughing\* you old enough to be her father and you saying such

Stephen; i apologised man i think thats what matters

Jake; its definitely her

Me; well theres nothing to say

Stephen; but its serious

Me; yeah i guess i dont know

William; \*laughing\* why you even asking him this , he does not know what being serious with someone means you confusing turner

Me; \*laughing\* thank you i dont know all off this

Stephen; i think we both know thats a lie but if you finally make up your mind , shes beautiful and she seems like a keeper

Morrison; \*laughing\* you always had girls could she be the woman

Me; what you mean?

Morrison; you will know when you get there but if you dont know now it means shes not

Me; il tell you that in a few months time

Morrison; il be more than happy to listen to you

After our dinner , packed up my things and left. I called amahle but it just went to voicemail, tried it again but nothing. I called theo and she answered on the first ring

Theo; been waiting for your call

Me; why is that

Theo; always good talking to you where are you

Me; im on my way home

Theo; far from my place

Me; not really

Theo; well turn and come here

Me; \*laughing\* ohk give me half an hour

I hung up and turned got to her flat and walked up the stairs. Knocked and guessing a 10 y or 8 yr old opened the door

Him; hi

Me; hiii

Him; who you looking for ?

Me ; your mother

Him; why?

Me; \*laughing\* you always ask too many questions

Him; i shouldnt be talking to you actually since you a stranger but here i am asking too many questions

Me; \*laughing\* ohk so w

The door opened

Theo; who told you to open

Him; no one

Theo; il talk to you later, bed now

Him; ohk ohk

She walked inside

Me; why didnt you say your kid was around

Theo; why ? Are you scared off kids

Me; no i just dont want him getting the wrong idea

Theo; that his mum is a house breaker oops you not married so it should not matter

Me; \*laughing\* you getting too forward now

Theo; you worry too much get in

I walked in, she tidied the place and i just sat on the couch

Theo; its past 12 why so late

Me; why is he not sleeping

Theo; he wont sleep unless i sleep

Me; ohk and my meeting took longer than expected

Theo; didnt know medics had meetings

Me; family meeting

Theo; oh ohk everything ohk

Me; yeah nothing you should worry about

Theo; you spending time with me a lot nowadays getting tired off her

I just looked at her

Theo; \*laughing\* what im just asking , im starting to think you cant stay away from me anymore 2 weeks in a row  
wow

Me; should i leave

Theo; im just joking let me put him to bed first

Me; ohk

She went to the bedroom, i made a drink for myself and tried calling amahle it finally rang but no answer the third time she answered

Amahle ; andre i have school tomorrow and you calling me at one

Me; baby i just need to e...

Theo; what will you drink

I placed my index finger on my mouth

Amahle; who is that? Where are you?

Me; i...

She cut me off

Amahle; you know what i dont even care

Then she hung up, i tried it again and it just went to voicemail

Theo; did i get you into trouble

Me;....

Theo; im sorry i didnt see that you were on the phone

Me; i need to go

Theo; i said im sorry i did not do that intentionally

Me; i know i just need to go

Theo; you look pissed and driving like this wont help just stay and lets talk

Me; ....

Theo; please

Me; fine

Theo; so i need a favour from you

Me; mmm

Theo; im going to this event march can you accompany me

Me; no are you crazy

Theo; its just a work thing il introduce you as my friend

Me; no

Theo; fine dre

Me; cool

Theo; ohk can you at least do something for me ke

Me; what

Theo; help me get something to wear

Me; fine will do that, you will tell me when you ready

Theo; ohk

We talked some more and i eventually fell asleep

I woke up around 5 am and rushed home, walked in and ntombi was already up

Me; you up early

Ntombi; cause your girl woke me up

Me; huh

Ntombi; amahle showed up here this morning she just left maybe 10 or 15 minutes ago

Me; what?

Ntombi; yes and just so you know she knows you didnt sleep home or with themba cause she called him

## INSERT #116

I called amahle but she didnt answer went to take a shower and drove to her school, thats how desperate i was to lie to her some more. I called her but no answer it was a good thing i knew the entrance she always used i mean the was no other entrance for her to use but this

one i was not even sure she was at school but i parked there either way , i was there from morning it was 5 i was hungry cause i was scared that if i left to go buy food she might walk out and i would not see her past 5 she walked out with her friends, i got out off the car and walked to her , i was walking behind her, her friends were the ones talking and she was just faking a smile i knew when she was faking a smile, i tapped her shoulder and she quickly turned

Me; can i talk to you

She turned back and walked away

Me; mami please

Amahle;.....

Me; mami

Girl; mahle will see you tomorrow ohk lets go nokwanda

And they walked the other direction , i stood right in front off her

Me; listen i know iv been acting like a shit head but its just im stressed out

Amahle;.....

Students were literally passing us

Me; i know you came to my house and i didnt sleep home i was at work like i told you that work is keeping me busy

if you dont believe me call themba and ask him if i did not have a meeting yesterday till midnight

Amahle;.....

Me; and the girl asking for my drink, i was still at the restaurant that was our waitress , i could not possibly bring a girl at the warehouse to serve me drinks you know this

Amahle;....

Me; mami im asking for forgiveness here im sorry

Amahle;....

Me; iv been here from morning , im hungry just so i will find you cause i know you wont take my calls can you at least be mad at me while we eating cause im going to die soon

She laughed and looked at me

Me; please be mad at me while we get something to eat

She turned and walked to my car i felt so relieved, we got to mcd

Amahle; you were so rude yesterday

Me; i know my baby im just impatient these days

Amahle; whats wrong

Me; i dont know im stressed and work is just killing me

Amahle; i get that ne i totally understand but i need you to be with me too, i sometime sacrifice my school work so i will be with you and you dont when it comes to work dre i have not been with you for weeks now its like you dont even miss me , you have really changed i want the old dre back who didnt get enough off seeing me and would come and make time whenever just so he can spend time with me but since the beginning off this year you far away

Me; like i said mami its work but im going to try and see you more ohk

Amahle; ohk dre

Me; you still mad at me

She shook her head

Me; then whats up

Amahle; its nothing i need to go

Me; ohk lets go

We walked out and i dropped her off at home

Few more days passed i was suppose to meet amahle , wanted to treat her out. I picked her up and we headed to the mall got there and walked in held her by the hand and walked to this salon

Amahle; what we doing here

Me; you going to do your hair

Amahle; \*laughing\* why didnt you tell me about this

Me; cause you would have not agreed

Amahle; yes my hair is still fine

Me; can you let me spoil you

Lady; \*laughing\* let your man spoil you girl

Me; \*smiling\* please talk to her

Amahle; but babe

Me; please

Amahle; fine

She sat down and i went to sit on one off those chairs, got busy with my phone

Themba; whats going on with you

Me; what you mean

Themba; i always see something from far and i can see that shit is going on with you

Me; nothing im just stressed out

Theo; next weekend?

Me; no

Theo; i didnt see you this weekend

Me; theo il let you know when im around

Theo; fine just so you know what you missing on

Me; what

Theo; \*image\*

I quickly moved my eyes up to amahle after seeing the picture

Me; you look beautiful

Amahle; im not done

Me; you always beautiful

Amahle; mxm

When she was done we walked out and caught a movie then left. I stopped at a garage stop and walked in since i wanted to use the bathroom, went back to the car paid and left

Me; you sleeping over right

Amahle;....

Me; mami please i miss you

Amahle; how long did you think you were going to keep up with this

I raised my eyebrow.

Amahle; \*shouting\* your bitch called asking if you got the picture

Me; what you talking about

She took my phone and hit me with it

Amahle; \*screaming and shouting\* DONT FUCK WITH ME DRE! WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS

Me; \*shouting\* oh woow its always about cheating with you right, im always cheating all the fucken time

Amahle; WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS THEN? WHAT?

Me; i dont know call her and ask her what is that

Amahle;...

Me; call the fucken girl

Amahle;.....

Me; fine il call her for you

I stopped the car on the side and called theo

Theo; hi m...

I cut her off

Me; where the fuck do you get off, sending me a naked picture and having the decency to talk to my girl

Theo;...

Me; let clarify something are we together

Theo;....

Me; are we fucken together

Theo; no

Me; stay the fuck away from me

Then hung up

Me; hope you happy

Amahle; what was i suppose to think dre

Me; just trust me for once

## INSERT #117

### #AMAHLE

Few weeks passed. Around march me and dre were good i mean really good but he was distant in a way i figured it was work so was not bothered as much . Weekend was suppose to meet with dre but he cancelled. I was cool with it cause thandeka and neli asked me to accompany them, we were at clearwater and we bought a few things. Went to grab food and decided to sit in

Me; we definitely doing this again

Thandeka; yeah

Me; \*laughing\* but i still dont agree with those shoes

Thandeka; mahle no i love them tu  
Me; i told you before you bought them so  
Thandeka; and im going to wear them when im with you  
Me; i wonder who will you go with  
Neli; isnt that your bf?  
Thandeka; i dont have a bf  
Neli; no amahle  
I turned around, and i just choked  
Thandeka; mahle look at me, mahle  
I was breathing so fast  
Me; no no  
Thandeka; mahle  
I turned to her  
Thandeka; calm down ohk  
Neli; lets go beat his coloured ass  
Thandeka; no wena ! mahle  
Me; his cheating on me  
I turned to look at dre again, they looked good together ,  
dre had his arms around her waist down her butt and  
kissing her they looked so happy and i knew it was not

long since that was happening i could not breath, i was feeling hot , i was feeling dizzy

Me; i cant breath

They made air for me , people began staring at us but i didnt care i could not breath at all, i tried to stand up but my knees failed me i sat down again some guy sitting next to us brought a glass off water and gave it to me

Him; here, are you having an asthma attack

Thandeka; i think so

I tried drinking the water, i wanted to turn around and look at dre but thandeka would not allow me. I got up and went to the toilet i closed the door behind me and locked it and sat on the toilet and cried my eyes out

Thandeka; babe open please.....

They kept begging me to open but i just wanted to be alone and home was far away so the toilet would do, i tried to stop crying but i couldnt

Woman; whats wrong?

Thandeka; long story mama

Woman; baby girl open and talk to me

I didnt even know who the woman was but i didnt open

Woman; shes crying in the most painful way no mother wants to hear this , what happened

Thandeka; eish ma she just saw the one guy she was ready to give up everything for with another girl

Woman; baby please open for me i want to talk to you

I got up and opened and she was not that old ey

Woman; come here

She opened her arms for me and i just cried in between them i didnt even know the woman but here i was

Woman; it shall pass the pain you feeling will pass my angel. He is an idiot for actually thinking you not enough but what can i say all men are idiots they never know what they got until its gone and he does not know what he has but he will soon know, i want you to go home try and let it all out im not saying you wont feel the pain tomorrow cause you will feel it for the upcoming weeks or months then you will find a guy that truly deserves you ohk

I nodded my head cause i couldnt even speak, she kept rubbing my back till i calmed down people were walking in and out. When i was calm went to wash my face my make up all out fixed my hair, hugged the woman and we walked out

We got to thandeka car i sat at the back and looked outside off the window trying so hard not to cry but

pictures off him ran through my mind, the lies he fed me everything that people said about him and how of a fool i must have looked and tears just ran down my face

Neli; no way thandeka stay with your plan, this guy deserves a beating

She opened the door

Thandeka; where will you get him now

Neli; il find him, who the fuck does he think he is

Thandeka; neli please this will be so much worse

Neli; it better be im going to find him

Then she walked out

Thandeka; nana listen go home and just cry ohk , cry baby then tomorrow will talk

I nodded my head

After a while neli came back she didnt find him, we left for home got there and put on a brave face didnt even eat mbali mum talked to me but i didnt tell her anything. I cried the whole night that mbali mum had to come to my room and just cuddled me and said nothing

Next day woke up in between mbali mum hands and i just did not move from her grip in a way i cried, you must think i was a cry baby but the pain i was feeling was unbearable and crying made it feel better in a way.

We woke up and she didnt even ask me what was wrong and i was glad went to bath then we both went to church i tried not too remember anything but every time i closed my eyes i just saw dre that made me cry but people thought i was in the moment. After church changed and watched tv thandeka came with neli

Mbali mum; she is at the lounge

And they both appeared from the kitchen

Thandeka; hey you

Me; hey

Thandeka; you look like shit

Me; \*laughing\* thanks baby

Neli; you ohk now

Me; no

Thandeka; ohk ready to hear the plan

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Thandeka; will get you a baseball bat, or golf stick and you break everything that he owns

Me; ohk that sounds like a plan

Thandeka; yes so next time, he will know not to mess with you but this guy is full off shit ne

Me;.....

Neli; and too think you thought you were insecure but he was playing you for a fool

Then the was silent

Thandeka; ai but amahle you have to do this

Me; i dont think i can

Them; what?

Me; how will i even look at him without having to cry

Thandeka; put on a brave face for like 2 hours then you can cry as you please

Me; cant you come with me

Neli; you have to do this on your own but if you having problems , you can call me

Me; so where will we get that bat

Neli; im not sure we can buy it

Me; ohk

They hung out at my place for a while and told me to act as normal as possible ku andre

Monday he came and i walked out

Dre; get in

Me; no , come out

Dre; whats wrong

Me; its hot dre come here

He got out off the car and we sat on the pavement , he was talking non stop and i was thinking about everything, how this guy was fucking with me, how he played me, promised me the world and he just spit on my face

Dre; AMAHLE!

Me; hmmmm

Dre; are you ohk

I nodded my head

Me; babe need to go im really tired

Dre; you sure you ohk

Me; \*smiling\* yes im fine

Dre; ohk

He kissed me and i felt so disgusted I even broke the kiss just after our lips touched he left and i went to wash my mouth then bed. Next day went to a sports shop and got me a baseball bat. Went home and just slept, Wednesday went to school but left early i felt like shit man came back, concentrating in class was the worst always quiet and my friends were the one always talking it was even hard to fake a smile, i even lost my appetite completely. Got home

and switched on the tv and " this christmas" was playing  
watched it till the end then Cooked then bed

Weekend dre asked to be with me , and i agreed but Friday i cancelled cause i knew he would bring his hoe over at least i hoped for that and that gave me time. Saturday wore my nike gym shorts, sports bra and nike roshes so ma would think im going to gym. She borrowed me her car and left for dre place. Arrived and his car was there i stayed there in the car for an hour thinking of what i was about to do, should i do it or not

He could get me arrested after all im just a girl and they would not mind sending me away.

## INSERT #118

### #AMAHLE

I walked out carrying the bat, opened the gate and walked in i still had the keys off his place came across ntombi on the lounge and i told her to keep quiet she nodded her head

Whispering

Me; where is he?

Her; akekho ( his not here)

Me; ntombi his car is outside , how would you feel if your bf was cheating on you would you not like to know

Her;....

Me; unobani ( who is he with )

her; a girl named theoline

Me; what are they doing

Her; i dont know

I took his belt that was on the couch leaving the bat and tip toed upstairs. Outside his bedroom i heard moans " yes ahhhhh , baby" i stepped back cause i knew i would not be able to do this, i turned around and ntombi was standing on the hallway

Ntombi; if i were you i was going to beat the shit out off him

Then she walked downstairs i walked to the door

I opened the door, dre was on top off her he didnt even realise the door had open , she was so loud and her voice irritating nje . I wanted to cry but i knew i had to cry later without thinking for another second i threw the belt

"fucckkkkkkk" he turned and saw it was me and i showed him no mercy including the girl. The were pictures off me and dre in the house she knew he had a gf, he held the belt and i pulled him but he was over powering me he got

out off bed and he slipped i was glad cause he let go off the belt i hit him again, i hit him everywhere, body, and face. I hit him so hard that he could not talk cause whenever he tried to talk i swung the belt and he had to hold the belt i hit him till my hand was sore then hit the shit out off that girl she was naked and i didnt care anger just took over , it was like psychotic amahle woke up from wherever she has been hiding, dre pulled me back and picked me up and i just lost it , i just cried my eyes out , he wrapped his arms around me " im sorry baby im sorry baby im really sorry" he whispered to my ear over and over again i was just crying, i dont know how but i was able to regain my strength as weak as i was

Me; LET GO OFF ME

The girl jumped out off bed screaming to attack me , dre pulled me at the back off him and slapped her

Dre; \*shouting\* YOU NEVER LAY YOUR HANDS ON HER EVER

I went around dre and jumped on the bitch i didnt even know it was possible she went down and i was glad cause im not the fighting type so her beating my ass was 100% possible but i knew if i was on top off her i would over power her weird thing she was still naked and i just let it all out i literally fought like a man, no slaps but with fists and one after another, dre pulled me up from her and pulled me in a hug

Dre; \*whispering\* mami this isnt you dont let me turn you into something you not...

I was still in between his arms, he turned to the girl

Dre\* shouting\* GET FUCKEN DRESSED

I got away from his grip and left him there and walked downstairs i grabbed his baseball bat on top of one off the cupboards since i did not know where i placed mine and stood next to his tv he walked downstairs dressed

Me; was i not enough?

Dre; put that down

Me; was i not enough turner

Dre; mami im sorry

I hit his tv and sparks were everywhere

Me; \*shouting\* WAS I FUCKEN NOT ENOUGH FOR YOU,  
YOU MADE ME LOOK LIKE AN IDIOT OVER AND OVER  
AGAIN

Ntombi was standing at door that led to the kitchen her hands covering her mouth

Dre just covered his face and bent down

Me; \*screaming and crying\* WAS I NOT ? THAT YOU HAD TO PICK UP SOME CHEAP RATCHESS ASS BITCH TO HAVE A FUCK WITH

Dre; im so...

Before he could finish that i smashed his table

Me; COULD YOU NOT HAVE THE DECENCY AT LEAST TO  
PICK UP SOMEONE BETTER LOOKING THAN ME , WAS I  
NOT ENOUGH FOR YOU DRE

My hands began shaking

Dre; you were

Me; THEN WHY THE FUCK ARE WE IN THIS POSITION  
WHY

I walked to the kitchen , ntombi moved away

Me; TIRED OFF SLEEPING WITH ME ALREADY

I hit the oven glass

Me; YOU FUCKEN SAID I SHOULD TRUST YOU FOR ONCE  
CAUSE YOU NOT CHEATING , TRUST YOU FOR THIS SHIT

I hit the glasses on the counter

DRE;....

Me; IM FUCKEN TALKING TO YOU TURNER, TIRED OFF  
ME ALREADY

Dre; ma...

Me; SHUT THE FUCK UP, YOU DONT GET TO TALK ALL  
THOSE LIES IM NYWEKING IM NYWEKING KANTI YOU  
FUCKING THIS BITCH, HER FUCK YOU

I smashed everything that was glass there , picture frames... The sliding door opened

Themba; whats this no....

He looked at me , i must have been a mess, tears, i had running noise and drooling

Themba; mama

Me; \*shouting\* DID YOU FUCKEN KNOW ABOUT THIS, THIS \*pointing at the girl\*

She had just came down fully dressed. He looked at dre and the girl

Themba; NO

I hit the sliding door and he quickly moved away, the glass was just all over the place

Me; STOP LYING , YOU LYING

Themba; bunny i swear i knew nothing about his

Me; WAS I FUCKEN NOT ENOUGH FOR YOU ? IS ANY GIRL ENOUGH FOR YOU THE MIGHTY TURNER

Dre; m...

Me; SHUT UP, SHUT THE FUCK UP YOU ACCUSED ME OFF NOT TRUSTING YOU, YOU LIED TO MY FACE OVER AND OVER AGAIN MADE ME THINK I WAS CRAZY KN., KNO.... KNOWI....

I couldnt even finish my sentence i ran to him with intentions to hit the shit out off him with the bat, but themba held me before i got to him,he backed away it was the first time seeing dre scared for his life

Me; I FUCKEN HATE YOU, HATE YOU

I got away from themba grip and walked out everyone walked out i must have looked like i was crazy and broke all off his car windows not even leaving one window

Themba; \*shouting\* DO SOMETHING

Dre just looked at me and allowed me to do as much damage as i wanted

Me; I LOVED YOU AND YOU PROMISED ME YOU WERE DONE DRE, YOU PROMISED ME YOU WERE NOT GOING BACK TO YOUR OLD WAYS , YOU SAID IT WAS IT FOR YOU WHY DRE

After that sentence i just broke down, dropping the bat and my knees failed me i just went down on my knees and tried so hard to let it out i couldnt even control myself from crying. I cried till i felt like i could not cry i got up and they were all just watching me , dre was sitting on the floor next to his car his head buried in between his legs , themba and ntombi next to the door and the girl everyone was just quiet. I said nothing and walked to the gate leaving the bat there. i opened the gate with the remote and left the keys there , went to the car

I could not go home, i went to the nearest park there and it was empty. I locked the car jumped on the back seat and tried to sleep hoping everything was just a bad dream, i cried till i zoned off there. I woke up and it was dark outside started the car and drove home . Got out off the car opened the gate, and drove the car in.

Around midnight, the was someone hitting the gate after a while The light in my bedroom suddenly went on i lifted my head up and it was a really really cute police officer Office; mam i need you to come with me

Me; for

Office; please just get dressed and i would advice you to be warm

He smiled and left

I wore sweatpants, sweater, slippers tied the weave in a bun and walked to the lounge

Mbali mum; she is a student

Other officer; she broke the law

Office; mam need you to come with us

Me; for

Officer; they opened assault charges against you

Me; oh ohk

I stretched my hands

Officer; i dont think that will be necessary

Me; ma dont worry ohk , i will be ohk

She couldnt even speak

Walked out, and the police lights nje were too much. They opened the van got in and did not have regrets what so ever. Arrived at the police station, sat on the benches while the cute officer wrote something on the papers then called me and dragged me to the cells, there were like 4 other woman there. Sat down , everyone mind their own business there nothing in the movies is true lol.

Later that day , mbali mum came and gave me something to eat, clothes, and things to wash with , no judges were available on weekends. Had to go back and engaged in a convo with the girls for the first time, other were arrested for stealing, other assault nje.

#ANDRE

Sunday morning felt like shit , i loved amahle whole heartedly i didnt even know what i was doing to be exact . Went downstairs and couldnt even eat. Then someone came in with such noise

Mbali; who the fuck do you think you are

I covered my face

Mbali; how can you cheat on my sister then get her arrested

I quickly turned to face her

Me; what?

Mbali; you heard me , you had everything but this was not enough for you ne, tomorrow is school and her bail hearing is tomorrow , she must miss a class because off you

Me; i dont know anything about this

Mbali; like hell you dont, how the hell would they know where she lives fuck you dre, stay the hell away from amahle, you like a curse in her life

Me; mbali i know nothing about this

Mbali; and stay away from me, no one does my family wrong like you did to mine and i still became your friend. I wish you never get happy

She walked away

me; mbali

Mbali; i never want to see you again

I took my phone and dialled theoline number

Her; what?

Me; where the fuck do you get off opening an assault charges against her

Her; cause she assaulted me

Me; how did you even know where she lives

Her; you once told me and it was not hard to forget

Me; you better drop those charges

Her; like hell i will, you let her hit me and so did you i should have opened one for you too

Me; dont even try and test me, with that girl i dont mind killing some girl because off her im warning you

I hung up and called my connection that side

Him; turner

Me; hi man

Him; what do i owe this pleasure

Me; i need to ask you for something

'him; ohk thats what you pay me for

Me; the was a girl arrested im not sure whether today or yesterday can you check her for me

Him; ohk whats her name

Me; amahle ngwenya

Him; ohk il check the women holding cells

Me; thanks just make sure she is ohk

Him; anything in particular

Me; check that for me first and il get back to you

Him; ohk

## #AMAHLE

I was still in the holding cells i didnt want to sleep not because i didnt trust anyone but because the second i would close my eyes i would just see andre and that will cause me to cry. I thought about my parents, my life how i would live without dre i had drifted so far from my thought i did not see or hear anything the officer said

Officer; yey

I lifted up my head

Officer; are you amahle ngwenya

I nodded my head

Officer; whats a pretty little thing like you doing here

Me;.....

He shook his head and took out his phone

Officer; turner .... I found her

The name turner i just looked on the floor

Officer; here

Me; no

Officer; theres someone on the line

Me; and i dont want to talk

All the girls there just looked at me

Officer; ohk il make it happen

Then he left

INSERT #119

#AMAHLE

Monday morning i was out and had to rush to school ,Few weeks passed I had few books that i needed to collect at dre place but i dragged my feet. Eventually Friday after my classes ma was on leave so i took her car to school and i knew i had to make a delivery, i hoped he was not there. Rang the buzzer then the gate opened i was not sure whether it was ntombi or him. Knocked at the kitchen door and ntombi allowed me in

Ntombi; hey

Me; hey i came to pick up some off my things

Her; ohk

Me; is he here

Her; yes in his room , he h...

Me; ohk thank you

I cut her off , cause i didnt want her to tell me how miserable he was and all that stuff walked to the lounge and the was already a new tv, and the sliding door, most things were new went up to his room and opened the door, there was a pillow over his head and glass plate with drugs on it i didnt even care and bottle off whiskey

Him; ntombi i dont want anything

I walked to the side off the bed and he jumped out off the bed , i opened the drawer and took out my books that were there

Andre; baby please let me explain

I went to his wardrobe and took everything off mine except for whatever he bought for me, went downstairs and he followed me

Andre; mami please

Me; ntombi thanks ne \*smiling\*

Ntombi; ohk

Tried to walk out but he grabbed me , picked me up and tossed me on his back and walked with me upstairs i kicked and hit him but it was no use. When we got to his room he threw me on the bed and i hit my head on the

headboard he locked and threw the key out off the window

Me; \*shouting\* are you insane whats wrong with you  
Andre; i just need you to do whatever you want to do ,  
just dont leave me, you cant leave me

Me; i dont have time for your jokes dre, i want to leave  
Andre; then talk to me

I leaned against the wall and folded my hands

Andre; baby i cant lose you, i love you soo much, i have no excuse for what i did and i wont tell you any more lies but the truth is i love you and i have only loved you , no one else dont leave me please. Yes ! I know i screwed up i ruined everything that we have i know and im so sorry and i dont care if you want to take my phone or whatever or question me each and every day i dont care but you cant leave me mami. Im nothing without you, look at me

I was not looking at him but tears just ran down my face

Andre; im so sorry baby just please dont leave me please

He placed his head on my shoulder so close to my neck , i couldnt even move, i could feel tears running down my back that were falling on his face

Andre; im sorry for everything that you saw

After he said that i just closed my eyes, and cried i bent down and cried like i never even cried

Andre; mami please dont cry like this

Me; \*crying\* why dre, why did you do it

Andre; im sorry mami

I got up and went to the bathroom, washed my face and pulled myself together

Andre; can we sort this out

Me; theres nothing to sort out

Andre; so you just going to throw away everything we had for my one mistake

Me; fuck you, fuck you, you threw that away the first time you laid eyes on that girl, and now im throwing away the other half that i was still holding on too

Andre; i am sorry

Me; for what dre, what exactly, lying to me , fucking another girl or that i caught you what are you sorry for , i was a fool to ever believe you changed your ways , you still the same old dre i met 3 years ago

Andre;....

Me; how long have you been seeing her?

Andre; that does not matter

Me; \*shouting\* it does to me , you made love to me on top of her sweat , you made me a fool i gave you everything , everything dre what more did you want from me what did i not give you andre what? You wanted a child cause im sure i would have given you that too

Andre;....

Me; \*hitting him\* talk you wanted to talk right lets talk what did i not give you that she gave you

Andre; im sorry

Me; stop fucking saying that , answer me

Andre; nothing

Me; so you had it all?

He nodded his head

Me; then why andre , why did you do this to us, why did you destroy us just when we were about to do our 1 year why

Andre; i dont know what you want me to say

Me; i want you to tell me the truth

Andre; temptations then, maybe i missed fucking different girls i dont know it just happened i wont lie to you and say i dont know what i was doing i knew what i was doing , i knew i wanted to hit it but why i dont know but that doesnt mean i did not love you, it does not mean shit. The

way im feeling right now , the way you feeling right now  
thats what we need to fix

Me; theres nothing to fix

Andre; we cant end us

Me; you ended us, andre you, its all on you

Andre; what do you want me to do , what

Me; i want you to leave me alone

Andre; thats not possible, and thats not going to happen

Me; me and you will never ever be together ever again , i  
dont wish bad upon you just hope you meet someone who  
will your change your ways off thinking cause i failed dre.  
You broke the little part inside of me that was left and you  
just broke it, now \*i tried to hold back my tears\* i may  
never ever give someone my all because off what you did  
to me i dont know if im ready to forgive you as yet but i  
really hope i do. I love you so much , more than anything  
but i never want to see you again. Now please open the  
door

He just looked at me and broke down , he went to his  
closet came back and opened the door

I walked out took my things, took the bags from the car  
and left them at the ;lounge with his phone that he  
bought for me and a paper bag that was suppose to be

for our 1 yr anniversary, then got in the car and drove home.

## #ANDRE

I sent ntombi home and i trashed the entire place , everything and for the first time ever since i was a baby i was just emotional. Worse part i could not believe she brought back everything i ever got for her. It was hers not mine and the they were. I took the paper bag that was on table and it was a usb i took it and applied it on the tv and it was her " eish lento, is it recording, ohhh ohk... Hi baby \*smiling\* punka wami... Today is our anniversary 1 year geez thats how long we been together and i still cant get enough off you, your smile, your dimples and \*she covered her face \* everything nje. This 1 year with you was the best ever iv never felt so happy in my life since the death off my parents , you saw that no tears \*she opened her eyes wide \* for the first time i can say that and not want to cry because of you , so thank you for that. Also thank you for being there for me, supporting me and just loving me you the best thing that has ever happened to me. I love you so so so much i think you used some black magic on me \*she laughed\*. So i created a lil something for you i know its not your kind of style and stuff but please act like you love it to me when you see me cause i had to use like 5 to 6 apps to get this

together , hold on \*laughing\* you calling me \*she showed her phone on the camera "punka papi wami" helo, yes punka, i miss you too , woza yes right now im home \*she hung up\* haha so enjoy what you about to see love you so much and happy 1 year ann"

Then it went black then " i wanna luv you - donell " began playing and it was our pictures and videos joined together. I did not believe that i just destroyed what i was seeing that tears automatically ran down my face. It was like a rewind of what i had, then after the pictures that were so many. It looked like a live stream. Amahle was on my arms, her legs around my waist, i laid her on the bed and kissed her then i began talking in the video

Me; is this a video

Amahle turned moved me away, blew a kiss on the camera and it switched off"

I opened the paperbag and the was an envelope opened it and it was a trip for us to go to durban , accommodation everything just left everything there and went to bed. Few more days passed and i was just at home doing nothing. I hated everything around me and sometimes i would get through the day by smoking drugs by the end of march i was not getting better actually thought i was getting

worse. Usually went to work, smoked came back, smoked and slept woke up and smoked i was being an addict by day never even went to the warehouse. I gave amahle her space but there was no way in hell i was giving up on us

Woke up Wednesday afternoon, took a long shower then went to the warehouse. I called them all

Me; let me get something straight , this is my place and if you feel like you dont want to be here anymore or dont want to work then please no one is holding anyone back \*sniffing\* and i mean no one \*sniffing\* so just get the fuck out off my place cause i wont tolerate niggas bitching around \*sniffing\* i dont have time for all your bullshit, and your tantrums \*sniffing\* another thing what happened between me and amahle that our business it does not concern any off you niggas \*sniffing\*, so stay the fuck out off my business if you want to bitch around get the fuck out off here but this place is my place i hope we understand each other \*sniffing\*

Jack; sure

Me; themba cars \*sniffing\*

Themba; you ohk man

Me; fucken cars themba \*sniffing

Themba; iv got black golf velo city, 1 still in the process but other all done waiting for a buyer, scored a gti red still fresh less than 100 000 km then by tonight might just have a benz A

Me; deon \*sniffing\*

Deon; all orders were made and delivered, money got in and should be in your account by the end off this week. Another batch should be coming in maybe the following week. But bumps stephen was short off a couple of hundreds this time but he said next batch he will pay you double

Me; how much short

Deon; 250 k

Me; he was short off 250 k \*sniffing\*

Deon; thats what he said

Me; il talk to him

Me; dorian

Dorian; those equipment went on the market and they were selling but not all

Me; the rest?

Dorian; still looking for a best offer , people are ready to kill for them which means the bid goes high

Me; shane

Shane; let me get straight to the point, not very good this time around only got away with 125 k work of card scheming

Me; that bad

Shane; that bad but we should go up by next week or next month

Me; ohk il through all the invoices and deposits made  
\*sniffing\* should get your money by the end off this week

Themba; via trade?

Me; it arrived safe and everyone is happy that side  
\*sniffing\*

Themba; ohk

I got up and walked to my car until themba pushed me to the car , his arm on my neck

Themba; dont piss me off man

I just looked at him

Themba; i wont watch my best friend kill himself with drugs

Me; get the fuck off me

I pushed him away

Got inside my car and left

## INSERT #120

#ANDRE

Days passed i didnt even care , i would go to work when i was working but i could not wait for the day to end. They never even suspected anything with drugs cause i was still good at my job. One Saturday was just home watching tv actually the tv was just on but i was not watching it. The guys walked in

Dorian; no andre like really drugs

Me;.....

Themba; i told you he was using

Deon; andre!

Me;...

My eyes were just staring at the tv screen

Nhlanhla; turner!

Me;.....

Dorian; andre you my little brother i wont stand this

Shane; boza we dont do this, we stopped jack from doing this now you doing this

Me;.....

Themba; ntombi \*shouting\*

Ntombi; yes

Themba; how long has he been like this

Ntombi; his always like this

Themba; the drugs

Ntombi; all the time with alcohol

Themba; boy nah man this aint you

Me;.....

Jack; amahle left for capetown yesterday

I looked at jack

Themba; you an idiot wena , straight up idiot

Jack; what? He needs to know

Me; to do what jack?

Jack; i heard her speaking to mbali about how she needed to leave jozi for a while

Me; and?

Dorian; jack shut the fuck up

Me; and what jack?

jack looked at the guys and they all gave him death stares

Me; all off you get the fuck out off my house except you boy

They just stood there

Me; \*shouting\* I SAID GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY  
HOUSE.... Want this \*talking to jack \*  
deon; how fucked can you be offering jack drugs

Me; jack you want, will do it together

Dorian; what the fuck are you doing? Jack lets go

Me; jack dont go

Themba; man snap out off this

Me; jack!

Jack....

Me; ALL OFF YOU GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY PLACE

Themba took the glass plate from my hands and threw it  
on the floor and i just lost it, i took my gun that was next  
to me and jumped to him and placed it on his forehead

Themba; \*shouting\* PULL THE TRIGGER DO IT..... DO  
IT... THIS IS ALL YOUR FAULT MAYBE THEY WONT TELL  
YOU BUT I WILL, YOU LOST THAT GIRL AND ITS ALL  
YOUR FAULT NOW YOU TRYING TO DESTROY EVERYONE  
LIFE CAUSE YOU DESTROYED YOURS GIVING JACK  
DRUGS WILL NOT BRING BACK AMAHLE, PULLING THIS  
TRIGGER WILL NOT BRING HER BACK, DOING DRUGS  
WILL NOT BRING HER BACK I DONT KNOW WHAT YOU  
HAVE BECOME LOOK AT YOU, YOU HAVING A GUN ON  
MY FACE ME AFTER ALL THE SHIT WE HAVE BEEN  
THROUGH AND YOU HAVE THIS SHIT POINTING AT ME

Me; GET OUT

I got off him

Dorian; dont do this to yourself

I left them there and went to my bedroom and slept

#MBALI

Deon had literally begged me to go and talk to dre i was not up for it but he was my best friend and they said he needed help. Ntombi let me in and i walked to his bedroom it smelled like shit it was a mess, he was sitting at the edge off the bed in his boxers, glass plate and doing a line

Me; what the fuck are you doing

He didnt even respond, he placed the plate on the side and laid on his back. Iv seen dre go through one off the toughest things in life, getting arrested, getting beaten in jail, hearing his father has died and he could not go, after he was released him seeing his fathers grave so many things but never have i seen him breakdown like this EVER he looked drained, like he had nothing to live for anymore like someone who can die tomorrow no today in a few hours thats how bad it was

Me; dre!

Him;.....

I got near him, his eyes were shutting down and he would try opening them again but it seemed like they were heavy for him, i tried opening them

Me; dre!

Him;.....

Me; dre please talk to me

He looked dead i dont know if he was high or what. I called themba

Me; come to dre place

Themba; for what?

me; dre

Themba; no

Me; themba please its not looking good for him and call alex

Alex was dre dr

After an hour or so they showed up , well alex asked us to leave him with dre and we went downstairs

Me; iv never seen him like this

Themba; me too i also never thought he would end up like that

Me; what if he dies, his using drugs themba

Themba; im sure it wont get to that but to be honest i think he wants that

Me; like i know deon loves me ne but i doubt he would break down like dre just broke down

Themba; you know dre was always the backbone off us all, kept us together whatever shit we went through he was the one who would not break down whatsoever , when we were arrested together as kids the was a time they beat the living shit off us for selling weed and it was a group mbali i cried like i dont even want to lie i cried i was only 16 and people who were about 30 40 something were beating us up as if we were the same age i cried but when i looked at dre nothing i mean nothing in that moment i felt like a fool crying while dre wasnt his father died no tears and obviasly those emotions build up each and every year and now shit like this happened with amahle , the one girl he loved and i think that ball off emotion finally popped and now its all coming out the reason he could be like this

Me; well you got a point ever since amahle dre

Themba; just fell in love nana at this point i dont care what happens i just need my best friend back im even willing to pay amahle to be with dre

Alex; guys

We turned

Me; is he ohk

Alex; since when does he do drugs

Themba; few weeks now

Alex; turner never does drugs even if they paid him to he wouldnt do drugs

Themba; but your weakness will make you do drugs

Alex; i dont understand

Themba; he broke up with his girl

Alex; amahle???

Me; you know her

Alex; yes she takes prevention shots with me

Me; no wonder shes been gaining weight she prevents

Alex; they broke up

Themba; yes and the big man did not know where to turn but drugs

Alex; well he will be ohk for now as long as he stops using

Themba; iv tried and iv failed

Me; i think i should go and talk to him is he up

Alex; yes i better get going now

I walked upstairs and he was on a drip

Me; dre!

Him; what do you want

Me; to talk

Him; i dont want to talk mbali

I sat on the bed

Me; ohk listen to me ke

Him;.....

Me; i love you dre , you the only guy who has been there for me supported me and has done so many things for me some you dont know i know like paying my school fees when i was doing my second year when my mother lost her job i know you paid for it but you didnt tell me. You my one and only best friend you have seen me at my worst times and still stuck around but now its my turn to hold you down i wont allow you to kill yourself with drugs i want my baby to have a godfather and if its not you then nobody will be one. Please dont do this to me snap out off this how do you expect to get her back if you became a junkie im begging you dre please stop doing this to yourself and us cause you not just killing YOURSELF but everyone themba his going insane knowing he might lose his best friend deon, dorian what about kim what about your mother think about them if you wont think about me and this baby.....

## INSERT #121

# AMAHLE

Went to capetown for easter holidays just had to get out off johannesburg.

Ma; you didnt come with andre

Didnt even know where to start to tell them we broke up

Me; yes ma , he had to be with his family too

Ma; would have been nice

Me; where did pa go

Ma; to buy some things, hows mbali

Me; \*laughing\* getting big by the day

Ma; shes still going to get way big, and how are you baby

Me; im ohk ma just missed you

I hugged her

Ma; i miss you each and every day

We sat at the lounge while we chowed on scones

Ma; how is school

Me; its good, from july will be working as interns at bara

Ma; what? Will you be working with people

Me; yes but we wont be alone, it will be like im an assistant but theres someone who will be monitoring me and making sure i do everything perfect

Ma; if not?

Me; i fail

Ma; yhuuuu baby listen very carefully

Me; i always do ma

I went to unpack my clothes then cooked , her best friend arrived they have been friends from high school, believe me when i say this , logged in on whatsapp and of course im going to check dre we may not be together anymore but i still love him and i wont get over him in a day. His last seen was weeks ago was king off hurt by that

Pa; when is my baby arriving ?

He was talking at the kitchen and me,ma and her best friend were on the lounge

Ma ; maybe she is no longer coming

Pa; she would not do that to me knowing how much i miss her

I just smiled

Ma; what you doing there

Pa; im packing the groceries

Ma b. F; dont even go there \*talking to me \*

We laughed after a while

Pa; maybe i should cal.....

He saw me sitting at the lounge and the look on his face made me forget about everything. I jumped from the couch and went to hug him and the hug was way tighter

Me; i missed you too

Pa; \*laughing\* you were here the entire time

Me; yes and i love the way you speak about me when im not around

He laughed and pulled me into a hug again

Pa; i was getting ready to drive to jhb

I just laughed

Pa; come help me with this

We went to sit outside while he got busy with the car, he loved to work this man

Pa; hows andre

I just rolled my eyes

Me; his good pa

Pa; you both good

Me; yes we happy

Pa; im glad that you are, i like that boy very much

Me; pa

Pa; what, his the first bf of yours i actually like

Me; you never liked orlando

Pa; no, he was a good for nothing boy , didnt know where he was going , he did not deserve you

Me; neither does dre

Pa; huh?

Me; nothing pa, how have you been and ma

Pa; we both good, and you know how ma is never wants to rest

Me; look whos talking

Pa; i do rest

Me; yeah right

Pa; \*laughing\* i need to work my princess, to stay active im this strong because im always busy

Me; \*laughing\* how old are you pa

Pa; i wont tell you that

Ma; why not

Pa; cause you might want to kill me

I just laughed

Me; pa

Pa; yes princess

Me; why arent most guys like you?

pa; what you mean?

Me'; you have been with ma since you been 18 till now and she was enough for you and you still happy why cant guys do that

He looked at me

Me; im just asking

Pa; angel me and ma have been together for so many years and during those years it was not smooth at all, i used to be a charmer baby \*i laughed\* and i did so many things that hurt ma, after work on fridays i would go to my gf and come back only to ma on Monday morning or Sunday. We would fight but because she knew how much i needed her and how much i would be nothing without her she stuck around and that time i was just having fun while i had a wife at home it was not easy for her and she should have left me but she chose not too why i still dont know till today. But i knew her worth, i knew she deserved so much more and the thought off her being with someone else killed me so much that i left my ways and i gave her my all. Sometime these small boys do what they do because they scared not off loosing you but scared off

the power and the effect you have over them but when they realise that all this is not worth it and they realise your worth they will come back some get lucky and get a second chance to fix things but some its too late for them to do anything because the woman has finally cried the last tears , got your answer

Me; so you telling me its ohk for guys to cheat

Pa; no im not saying that, but you would swear its in their nature what i mean is a shoelace goes through many holes before it can actually tie the knot same goes for guys they get with a lot off woman, sleep with a lot off women until they know its time to tie the knot

Me; oh ohk i get you

Pa; why, the sudden interest

Me; just wanted to know your secret behind a successful marriage

Pa; we have all the time in the world to talk about that

Me; \*smiling\* of course we do

Around 6 i prepared dinner. 8 dished up and we all ate, we were just laughing and talking. These 2 are never a dull company believe me. We watched movies till late, ma always wanted to stay all night with me and pa but 10 -15 minutes off the movie she would fall asleep on the couch.

Around 11 we woke her up and went to bed. Got busy with my phone and dre picture appeared on the screen cause he was calling i just looked at it until he hung up. Then a message " i really miss you, wish you could just take my call and we fix this cause we can fix it" switched off my phone and slept. Next day woke up cleaned then went to bath

Pa; joe and cloudy are coming over angel

Me; \*laughing\* you still play

Pa; yes but im alone these days so

Me; no today will show them whose boss

Ma left to be with her best friend and the old madalas arrived

Joe; \*laughing\* look who is here

Me; yes , im back

Cloudy; good to have you back

Me; good to be back

Hugged them both and we sat at the dinning room table and began playing, starting with casino games that we lost too and board games we took the win, including chess. We then had lunch well they grilled me about dre eish and i pretended to be sooo happy. Past 8 they left, we ate then bed. My phone rang and thought it was dre checked the screen and it was orlando

Me; hi

Orlando; hey can i come in

Me; where

Orlando; your window

I got out off bed and he was standing opposite the street

Me; come

I got dressed and my window opened. He stood there

Me; you need to stop doing that

Orlando; you taught me

Me; mxm what you doing here

Orlando; heard you were here

Me; so?

orlando; wanted to see you

Me; ohk

Orlando; cant we talk like mature people, we not dating  
im just trying to be your friend

I looked at him

Orlando; please i miss your company

Me; fine

He sat on the bed

Orlando; so how have you been

Me; im ohk you?

Orlando; can you tell me more than im ohk

Me; school is way hectic now, but all shall be well by the end off june. Im singel and

Orlando; what

Me; yes orlando

Him; what happened

Me; same shit with you

Him; sorry

Me; its fine , il get over him like i got over you . You hows life

Him; im trying man, still hustling , no girl just fuck buddies

Me; \*laughing\* why am i not surprised

He punched me

Him; dont start with me

Me; \*laughing\* but im not lying

Him; really missed you

I raised my eyebrow

Him; talking to you geez

Me; hmmmm

We talked about random things nje

INSERT #122

#AMAHLE

My weekend was so great. Tuesday arrived at jhb since school was starting Wednesday. Arrive home and mbali dad was home. I went to sleep cause i was tired from the trip. Wednesday prepared for school and it was just a long day for me. Rest off the week was just boring , mbali bump was now showing. The following week Tuesday too my surprise received a call from my gran

Me; ,mama wami omuhle ( my beautiful mother)

Ma; helo my baby

Me; unjani ma (how are you ma)

Ma; ngi muhle (im beautiful)

I laughed

Me; hehhhhh listen to yourself who taught you that cause i dont remember teaching you that

She laughed

Ma; ngikukhumbulile yazi ( i miss you, you know that)

Me; nami ma, mara june ngiyeza ne (me too ma but june im coming ohk)

Ma; vele mele uze , uphi udre ( yes you must come , where is dre)

Me; his good ma

Ma; you both good

Me; \*laughing\* yes

Ma; im glad, the thought off you 2 together makes me so happy

Me;.....

Ma; even if i die i know you will be in good hands

Me; ma you wont ao , and im in good hands with you

Ma; yes but its great to a mother to know that her child is happy

Me; what you doing

Ma; nceda ukudla baby ( just finished eating)

Me; i miss you so much you know that wheres pa

Ma; his sleeping on the sofa

Me; \*laughing\* wake him up

Ma; no his always laughing at me when im sleeping at the couch , now i want to do the same

Me; but ma

Ma; no leave me, if i knew how to use this phone i would take the picture for you

Me; \*laughing\* i have been teaching you that phone for years ma and still you dont know how to use it

Ma; but i can call you and answer your call

Me; \*laughing\* only that ma

Ma; i love you baby ohk, i love you so so so much

Me; are you ohk ma

Ma; yes baby i just want you too know that i love you and i think about you each and every day

Me; me too ma , love you so much more

Ma; and promise me something

Me; ohk

Ma; you will never forget us, me and pa

Me; never and you know i would never do that

Ma; i know baby, let me take the big baby to bed now

Me; \*laughing\* tell him i said goodnight and i love him

Ma; i will, i love you and bye baby

Me; love you too ma, il see you june, bye mwah mwah goodnight

She hung up. Was so happy to have talked to her

I dished up for mbali mum and dad and as i was about to sleep, the was a knock,

Me; come in

And mbali appeared

Me; and since when do you knock

Mbali ma; you can ask that again baby

Mbali; i wanted to scare you

Us; shame

She laughed

Mbali; can i dish up

Me; sure

She dished up for herself and joined us

Mbali mum; so this time off the night

Me; i was ordered and deon said he was coming this side so i asked him to drop me off

Mbali dad; bowusi khumbulile ne (you missed us)

Mbali; no, nina nikumbule mina ( no you miss me )

Us;....

Mbali; guys can you at least console me

We just laughed

After eating , we washed the dishes and went to sit at my room

Me; so how are you , the baby

Mbali; we both good, but i should be asking you that

Me; im getting there

Mbali; im glad that you are, can i say something

Me; sure

Mbali; his a mess

Me; too bad

Mbali; i mean his a mess hlehle i mean his doing drugs

Me; ...

Mbali; yes his way deep into them , his becoming an addict

Me; well theres nothing i can do about that

Mbali; you still love him

Me; no

Mbali; mmmmm ohk deon drives me crazy you know

Me; \*laughing\* why

Mbali; everything he does , it irritates the shit out off me

Me; its the hormones babe \*laughing\* you will be ohk and you will get used to him

Mbali; whatever

Me; woooo you forward now ne

Mbali; piss off mahle

Mbali mum; mbali they here to pick you up

Mbali; walk me out

Took my gown and we walked out

Me; hi deon

Deon; hey lala, you good

Me; im good you

Deon; im ohk

Mbali; you done?

Deon; yes , we can go

Mbali; babe i love you ne

Me; i love you too baby , take care of my niece or nephew

Mbali; you know i will

Me; and be patient with her

Deon; im trying my level best trust me

Me; \*laughing\* bye guys

Waved goodbye and they drove off

Went back in and i just went straight to bed

INSERT 123

#AMAHLE

The was a woman in my dreams calling me , but realised she was not in my dream. I opened my eyes slowly and it was mbali ma . She was crying

Me; ma

Mbali mum; baby

Me; why you crying

Sniffing and wiping her tears

Mbali mum; we need to go

Me; where ma? is mbali ohk

She nodded her head and sat on my bed. She was crying

Me; ma scaring me

Mbali ma; baby ma left us

I looked at her and smiled

Me; \*smiling\* ma im sleeping mina

She looked so serious

Mbali mum; baby she passed away this morning  
fkghdggin.....

I couldnt hear her anymore, i looked at her and her lips were just moving and tears running down her face but i couldnt hear her

Mbali mum; im so sorry baby

I got out off bed and as i was about to walk out the door i just dropped to the floor

I gained consciousness

Mbali mum; baby

Me; ma, yho just had the worst dream ever....

I paused as i saw mbali approach me , crying and i just broke down

Me; \*crying\* it was not a dream wasnt it

She shook her head, mbali pulled me into a hug and everything came back again , my mum, my dad now ma was this a curse , what did i do to deserve this. They told me we had to go. I couldnt even stand up the walk to the car was just long. I sat at the window and we drove off. I was just staring outside the window and tears running down no matter how hard it was to hold them back it was impossible , mbali cuddled me . I couldnt even sleep i remembered my last phone call with her i was just talking

with her last night, last night she sounded good, her words began haunting me , it was as if she knew she was going to leave me

I woke up in a bed and it was my bedroom, mbali was next to me , dressing up

Mbali; hey

I couldnt even talk, just walked out and there house was really full. I went to look for pa but i could not find him anywhere people kept talking to me but i just passed them i had nothing to say to them. I went outside and he was sitting outside the garden with his friends and other man. He just opened his arms when he saw me and i just cried again, sat on his lap and cried to him, i held his shirt so tight and he didnt even complain and cried to him , his shirt was wet and he said nothing but rubbed my back. I cried so hard that a headache just attacked me but i did not move from the position i was in and he let me be. I think i eventually fell asleep, until someone held my waist i lifted my head up and it was mbali mum

Mbali mum; come baby

I shook my head

Pa; shes fine here, my child

Mbali mum; ohk

She left and i placed my head on pa shoulder again

Pa; baby

Me; hmmm

Pa; go and eat something

Me; im not hungry

Pa; please baby , go and eat for my sake ohk

I nodded my head, got up and went inside, mbali mum made toast for me and i went to my room and sat there alone. I knew pa wanted me to eat but i could not eat.

This was not happening, ma was still here, ma would never leave me , she would never do that to me, never and suddenly i just screamed , kicked and screamed. I was angry at ma how could she leave me. People barged in my room. Mbali mum held me so tight and cried to her again then blackout

#ANDRE

Mbali words haunted me each and every day that i finally woke up, took a real bath and tried to stop using one day I was not working so wanted to sleep the whole. The was a knock on my door

Me; what

Ntombi; theres someone here for you

Me; tell him im sleeping

My bedroom door opened

I was about to do a line, i was not a heavy smoker like before maybe a line or 2 a day would get me through the day cause i felt like i needed it

Me; wh... Man what are you doing here

Themba; you need to stop this shit

Me;.....

He took the tray and threw it to the floor

Me; \*laughing\* you such an idiot

Themba; the drugs need to stop

Me; what the fuck do you want

Themba; we need to talk

Me; what is it?

Themba; i shouldnt even be telling you this but you deserve to know

Me; man will you talk or what \*sniffing\*

Themba; amahle grandmother passed away

I looked at him and he looked dead serious

Me; \*laughing\* next time you want to try and make me stop using dont go so low by using death especially with her family

Themba; im not joking dre

Me; mxm, how would you even know

I pulled my blankets but he pulled them down I felt like the drugs just got out off my system immediately didnt even know that shit was possible

Themba; mbali told deon, and deon told me to tell you

Me; you serious

Themba;.....

Me; no man, amahle cant lose her

Themba; they say she is going crazy man, we need to go and support her

I got up and took my bag

Themba; you need to shower ANDRE !!! \*Shouting\* get yourself together man

I sat on the bed and covered my face and just lost it , themba let me be

I went to take a long shower, took everything i would need, packed my bags and we left. Picked up dorian and deon the rest had to take care off everything there. I didnt

even have the strength to call amahle what would i say to her. We arrived around 4 am in the morning went to bed and woke up around 7 could not even sleep

## #AMAHLE

Woke up the next morning and i was not feeling better by any chance. I still could not eat and i was getting skinny. Walked out off my bedroom and went to bath. I stayed there for like an hour and i wanted to drown myself. I went under water , closed my eyes. Someone knocked and i went out

Woman; amahle

Me; yes im bathing

Woman; ohk

I took my towel and went to my room , i stayed on the bed didnt do anything just kept over thinking about everything until mbali came in

Mbali; lala

Me;hmmm

Mbali; you need to get dressed

I took lotion and slowly applied it on my body. Got dressed and went out, people wanted me to talk to them but i paid no attention to them. I just wanted to be with

pa. I walked outside and just froze andre, themba, dorian and deon were sitting down with him. I slowly walked to pa

Me; pa

He turned

Pa; come here baby

I sat next to him and i hoped dre did not say anything

Me; hi guys

Them; hey mami, how are you

Me; im ohk

I looked at dre and he couldnt even look at me

Pa; why dont you go and talk to andre

Me; n....

He cut me off

Andre; come here

He gave me his hand, i stood up and we walked out.

When we were out off the gate he pulled me in a hug and i just cried , he held me so tight, i was holding his top so tight, it was wet and he didnt even let go off me and i needed it soo much. His arms around me were so tight, i was crying so loud and in pain and his touch made some sort off difference. We got inside the car, and i laid my

head on his lap and we said nothing to each other. I fell asleep

Dre; baby

Me; hmmmm

Dre; i need you to eat

I shook my head

I lifted up my head and he was carrying a plate

Dre; please eat

I looked at him

Dre; please il eat with you

Me; ohk

We both dug in the plate that was the first time i had actually eaten then just cuddled next to each other. Mbali came to pick me up and i went to bed

Friday was the day when ma was coming home. I was the worst that day. I was just crying non stop pa and dre were the only people that could calm me down. I took a long bath , went out, wore my clothes then went to ma room, i sat on the mattresse with other family members there , the coffin arrived and i went crazy i screamed i shouted at it, hoping and wishing she was going to wake up and just smile at me but nothing. I was so out off

control that they called pa but pa called dre. Dre put me too bed, he was brushing my head as we were laying on the bed. He was in over rolls and he smelled off meat. He stayed with me till i fell asleep. I woke up and he was not there. I went to ma room and looked at her, she was smiling and she looked so peaceful. I began crying so i left and went outside. The guys were all on over rolls. I sat with mbali

Me; how are you

Mbali; im ohk wena

Me; im ohk

She rubbed my back

Mbali; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

After a while, they were done with the meat, they came and sat down with us. Dre asked for us to walk and i agreed

Dre; you need to rest

Me; you the one who asked for the walk

Dre; when we get back you going straight to bed

Me; i cant believe shes gone dre

Dre; feel the very same way mami , can you do me a favour

I looked at him

Dre; tomorrow will be the worst day mama, i want you too cry ohk dont try to be strong for anyone, just try and let it all out. She loved you dearly i want you to know that

Me; thank you ohk

He kissed my cheek

Dre; im here for you

We walked back home and orlando was there. I hugged him then we talked for a while then went to bed

INSERT #124

#AMAHLE

Next morning they woke me up, took a quick shower, dressed up and took a deep breath. Went to ma room and pa was there went to sit next to him, they brought us tea and cakes me and pa had no appetite nje. Church members began singing the pastor prayed and we moved outside. Everyone got a chance to talk and her best friend did not look very good. They prayed sung then went to the cemetery. Me and pa said our last good bye and headed home. Went straight to my room and sat on the floor, and just cried. Pa walked in and we both cried i mean cried and just sat there. In silence, i looked over

him and tears were just running down his face and that made me cry too

Pa; its just the two of us now

Me; will this pain go away?

Pa; i dont know baby, i really dont know

Me; im tired pa, im really tired

Pa; me too baby but we have to be strong , i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

I wrapped my arm around his and we just sat there, looking outside the window

Pa; cant believe we have to go buy scones now whenever we feel like them

Me; \*laughing\* you remember , when we were watching a movie and we were like , this movie would have been more nice with scones

Pa; \*laughing\* she began taking out the flour

We laughed

Me; who will tell us stories now

Pa; or snore for us

Me; \*laughing\* she snored so much

Pa; \*laughing\* or get us dressed for no reason at all

Me; im going to miss her

Pa; im going to miss her too baby

I grabbed the photo frame on my bedside

Pa; you remember this day

Me; yes when we all went to durban for the first time,  
remember how excited she was to touch the dolphins

Pa; i think thats how her love for dolphins began

Me; then after that she wanted us to go to durban each  
and every december

Pa; until she fell in love with mozambiqu.....

The door opened

Woman; here you 2 are , everyone is looking for you

Before we could answer anything she left and came back  
with 2 plates full of food.

Pa; no we not hungry

Me; yes

Woman; you have to eat

Mbali mum appeared

Mbali mum; yes you have to eat

Pa; my child can i please have cakes

Me; me too ma

They took the plates back and came back with a tray. We ate our cakes and drank our tea

Pa; lets go see our guest

Me; ohk

We hugged and walked out. Went to greet orlando first cause he was leaving and his friends, the was tension between them and dre and the guys but i walked him out then went to sit with mbali who was sitting with my other cousins that were my age 2 off them i think and they couldnt keep their eyes off dre

Me; hey

Them; hey you/ mami/ lala

Me; did you eat

Them; yes

Luyanda (cousin); im really sorry ey

Me;its fine

Pa called dre to the side and , dre came back with a black label bottle

Me; and that

Dre; dont forget im the son in law here

Ntokozo; off course \*smiling\*

Dre looked at her and back at me. he poured for everyone except for me and mbali nakhona just tots

Dre; you want a taste

Me; yeah

Dre; \*laughing\* no

One off my uncles called dre again and he stood up with his glass , he stood next to me and gave me his glass and left. I tasted it and it was not nice lol

Themba; it nice mami mos

Me; not really sies

Dorian; you want daquari

Me; \*laughing\* vexactly

Dorian; this is a mans drink

Me; ai suka

Dre came back he looked really hot, he was wearing black jeans, white shirt, black and white blazer with formal shoes. All the guys were formal nje

Dre; its nice

Me; no

Gave him his glass back. Well few off my family members came to me most i did not know some i remembered and had to question me tell me how sorry they were , nje so it

was not that interesting and dre was busy with my family , my uncles loved him i mean loved him and he enjoyed the attention that he got , thinking we still together. My aunts called me in the house and i went to see them when i walked out dre was talking with my uncle bheki

Uncle; mshana (my niece)

Me; yes uncle bheki

Uncle; i talked with your grandfather and he introduced me to this boy \* pointing at dre\* us ngwenya dont need to see another bf from you cause you must know his the one if you can bring him here

I looked at dre and he looked at me back. Before i could answer

Uncle; im done we waiting for cows no ma mithisana ( no impregnating each other)

Then he walked away

Dre; you ohk?

i looked around hoping to see ma its was like i got lost in my thought i snapped out off it and looked at dre

Dre; you ohk?

I nodded my head. I walked back inside and went to my room and tears automatically ran down my face, my door opened but i did not turn to check who it was, arms wrapped themselves around me i looked down on them

and i knew it was dre cause off the tattoos, he pulled me closer to him and i held them closer to me, my back was facing his front

Me; you doing drugs now?

Dre; ....

Me; why not alcohol dre , drugs

Dre; i needed to escape and they were my only escape

I turned to face him, my hand on his cheek and his hand on my waist

Me; not drugs, stop using please

Dre;....

Me; papi

His eyes looked like they just regained hope

Me; my papi does not do drugs he handles situation way better than that

Dre; i love you

Me; i love you too

Few days passed i was still in cape town ,I wanted to transfer schools so bad cause i did not want to leave pa alone but my aunt was going to stay with him. Yes the one i despised. Went back to jhb and i felt like shit each

and every day. Dre came to check on how i was , we talked about random stuff

Me; dre

Him; hmm

Me; thank you for being there for me, when i needed you most and supporting me

Him; you dont have to thank me for that

Me; actually i do, but i mean you comforted me and i gave in to you because you still mean a lot to me but that did not mean anything , me and you are not getting back together. I will never forget what you did for me but i also cant forget what you did to me

Him; why did you not tell pa we broke up and ma for that matter

Me; it does not matter the truth is we did break up and thanks for not telling pa

Him; i just hope you will find it in your heart to forgive me for what i did cause i really love you

Me;....

Him; just one day

He held my neck and pulled me into a kiss i gave in to it and we kissed , the moment our lips touched a tear just

dropped, we locked our lips until we both could not take it anymore, we pulled back and i walked out off the car

Few days passed I was not getting any better each and everyday i though off ma and my parents including dre. My breakup with dre was cutting deep , i could not stop myself from loving him but how do i get back with someone i saw fuck another girl on the other hand ma left i could never talk to her or cry out to her , I loved pa so much but i could not do it anymore , this was just hard for me i was in such a dark place that i could no longer escape from it but the was somewhere i could escape too and i wished people would understand why i was doing this....

INSERT #125

#ANDRE

I was at work around 6 i was about to knock off, my phone rang and it was mbali mum

Me; hi ma

Mbali mum; andre \*crying\* please come now, amahle, she could be dead , shes not moving, i dont know what to do please come

Me; ma where are you?

## Mbali mum; home

I was still on duty ,Started the ambulance and just flew there arrived. I was working with khaya and thando. I got in the house and called for mbali mum she was in the bathroom, the was water on the tub, that was filled with blood, knife on the floor, pills. Immediately moved her to the stretcher and left with her got to the hospital and they took over.

I had to leave to sign out at work but i drove back to the hospital immediately Just sat there on the benches, mbali came with deon and the guys arrived soon after that. we heard nothing from the doctors. Her grandfather arrived and aunt and he was devastated. We sat there and pa just broke down in tears. I held my tears back so hard. They asked us to go home because theres nothing we can do. Dropped them off and went to my place tried to sleep but i couldnt, i blamed myself, hurting her the way i did and on top off that pain losing the one woman she would die for. It was too much for her.

I went to take a long shower and i dont usually cry but this made me cry, the thought off never seeing her again, her cute dimples, her laugh as awful as it was, her beautiful big eyes it just haunted me. If i could i would do anything to bring her grandmother back but the are some

things that turner cant even do. Walked out, wore sweatpants, sweater, and all star, took my car keys and left for the hospital . Her grandfather, aunt, mbali mum and mbali were there, greeted them

Me; have you heard anything

Mbali; nothing and they dont want to tell us anything , this is just frustrating

Her aunt; i really failed her

Pa; dont say that

We sat there for hours and hours and hours past 6 a doctor came to our direction. I was about to approach her when she sat me down. She joined us

Her; im so sorry for keeping you all waiting

Pa; how is she

Her; shes not good

I just covered my face

Dr; i think she knew what she was doing, and she was not taking any chance if you had not brought her in or the medics kept her stabilised you would have lost her

Pa; oh my god

Dr; she lost a lot off blood and i mean a lot off blood, we could not stop the bleeding until this morning but now she needs blood, urgently we running short off her blood type

Me; where is she

Dr; intensive care, we keeping a close look at her. But we were able to drain the pills out off her body , other she crashed so we had to cleanse her body from the inside and made sure each and every organ was not harmed

Me; so she needs blood

She nodded her head

Pa; we not a match , ma was the match oh my baby

Dr; we need her parents , if not someone who has the same blood type as her , because her blood type is in short supply

Pa; i cant lose my child

I moved away from them ,i was panicking i cant lose my girl and then i remembered the most important thing

Me; i can donate for her

Dr; you her type or blood related

Pa; no boy you cant

Me; no im not

Dr; then im sorry

Me; no my blood type is O negative and its a universal donor right, i can donate to any blood type

Dr; yes are you sure, theres only a few people with that blood type

Me; yes i am

Dr; ohk come with me

We went to some department for sanb . They tested my status, checked my iron and i was indeed vele type 0 negative

Girl; have you eaten

I shook my head

Her; you will have to eat

I bought a sandwich , coke , chowed them fast and went in, they easily found my vain and the process began. The dr made it clear that , it may not work so they just trying watched my blood, move out off the injection to the filter. And silently prayed " father i hope you can hear me, im sorry for my doings and sorry for the sins iv committed i know im a sinner but father i know i dont usually come to you for anything but this is out off my hands which is why i come to you, let this work god, i love that woman so much and i cant lose her please just dont take her away from me i still need her amen" opened my eyes and pa was there

Pa; did i disturb your prayers

Me; i wa...

He cut me off

Pa; dont have to explain to me, thank you for doing this i will never forget this

Me; i would do anything for her

After the filter was full, they took another one, then it was full, bandaged my hand and left

Dr; we starting the transfusion, this hours will be critical, its late go to sleep and come back tomorrow

Pa; but she will be ohk now

Dr; i cant say sir, her blood , and his will be mixed to check compatibility , this is called crossmatching if they not compatible , then we might have to expect the worst so il suggest you all pray that its compatible

Me; but chances are

Dr; 50 /50 i need to get going

Mbali; thank you dr

We all left and i felt dizzy so i sat down , ntombi brought me something to eat and i ate. Then went to bed

Next day had to go to work but unathi said she will go in for me , i should go see amahle, got to the hospital and the dr was already talking to them

## INSERT #126

#ANDRE

Me; hi

Them; hi

Dr; your family will inform you about amahle i need to get going but before i go can i talk to you

Me; sure

We walked to the side

Dr; something happened with her and i need you to be honest with me

Me; ohk

Dr; she became high

Me; i dont understand

Dr; i was negligent for not asking you this but do you smoke drugs or have you smoked drugs in the past 3 months

Me;.....

Dr; you a paramedic you should have known this

Me; it slipped my mind i was just so determined to give her my blood and save her

Dr; she kind off got cocaine high in the middle off a operation as a result of a transfusion and giving her blood that contained cocaine was life threatening for her cause the traces off the cocaine remained in the blood

Me; she is ohk right

Dr; fortunately yes but you could have killed her

Me; \*shouting\* i was not thinking ohk it slipped my mind

Dr; i think we should all be grateful that she is ohk cause we all would be at fault

Me; so did it work

She nodded her head and smiled

Me; yhooo thank god

I walked up to the family and i was still kind off scared off the damage that i almost did

Pa; and thank you

He tapped my shoulders

Me; so can we see her

Mbali; yes after a few minutes

Me; ohk

After a few minutes they went in and i just stood outside , i suddenly felt nervous and i could not go in anymore. Sat down at the benches. Pa came to me

Pa; wont you go in

Me; i will pa

Pa; shes alone now you can go

Me; i will

He looked at me

Pa; dont give up on her, she needs you more than ever right now

and he walked away. Got up and went to her ward. Got in and she was laying there , her head looking the other side, she was awake. I sat on the chair and said nothing and she said nothing too

Me; how you could be so selfish

Was the only thing i could say

Her;.....

Me; do you have any idea, the pain you would have brought to pa , to me

sHe quickly turned and faced me

Her; \*shouting\* why do you care dre \*crying\* why would you even care, yes im sorry for hurting pa im really sorry but you

Me; i love you, dont you understand that and you know that why should i even justify myself cause you know how i feel about you, its no secret

Her; just go dre

Me; no maybe they wont tell you but i will. What you did was very selfish , and im sorry for everything that you going through im really sorry and you thought you were taking away the pain but what you dont know was the pain you were leaving behind. Mbali, Pa, Your entire family did you think off them let me not include myself. Did you think off them amahle. The are people who are going through things worse than you and you just want to take the easy way out

Her; you dont get it , do you which is why you speak so calm about the situation because you dont get it

Me; make me get it, make me understand your selfish ways

Her; \*crying\* please go

Me; \*shouting\* no

Her; \*she covered her face \* i have nothing , nothing dre...

She was crying so bad that i felt so bad

Her; the one guy i saw a future with , i was not enough for him. My second mother left me, my parents left me , this is just too heavy for me i cant do it. I cant do it and if i would do it again believe me i would.

I just stood up and left

Went home , next day went to work , knocked off then went home. Mbali came with deon

Me; hey mummy to be

Mbali; hey you

Hugging me

Ever since the passing of amahle grandmother, mbali forgot about everything and i was glad

Deon; you didnt go to the hospital

Me; no

Mbali; the doctor said she is a danger to herself dre

Me; maybe she is

Mbali; we going there want to come with us

Me; nah

Mbali; dre

Me; what i dont want to go, and i dont think il ever go back there

Mbali; what happened

Me; nothing i just dont want too

Mbali; then come for the last time today and say goodbye

Me; no

Mbali; then dont come when i give birth

Me; what

Mbali; yes lets go

Me; fine

I sat at the back , got to the hospital and i was standing at the window while they talked to her

Mbali; we going to get something to eat ohk

Her; ohk

They got up and left. She got out off bed

Me; where are you going?

She looked at me

Me; get back

Her; im not going to finish the job geez

She opened the door and i followed her

Her; you going to go wherever i go now

Me; if i have too yes

We got to the toilets and i stood outside. She got out and went back to her ward

Me; i wan...

She cut me off

Her; thank you for what you did, pa told me

Me; sure

Her; what did you want to say

Me; im not coming back here again

Her; ohk

Me; you just going to say that

Her; what you want me to say? No andre i want to see you everyday, please dont leave , andre i need you, andre all that bullshit

Me; mxm never mind amahle

Her; ohk, im grateful for everything that you did for me , but i have not forgotten what you did to me

Me; will you ever give me a break on what i did?

Her; yes, we having a decent conversation arent we

Me; i have apologised amahle, not once not twice not even 10 times, i bought you flowers i did everything in my power to show you how much i love you , and for you to forgive me

Her; and im just suppose to forgive you cause you did a few things

Clapping my hands

Me; \*shouting\* im sorry ohk , im sorry for hurting you, im sorry for what you saw, im sorry for breaking you, im sorry for making you lose trust in me I AM SORRY.

She sat on her butt, pulling the drips

Her; \*shouting back \* take your sorry ass, thats all you ever knew to say , to say sorry and thats just suppose to make it right saying sorry sometimes a sorry is not enough

Me; \*shouting at her\* what you want me to do , i didnt tell pa we broke up cause you know it would break him. I donated my blood for you

Her; so you want your blood back now just cause you donated blood for me we suppose to get back together

Me; i didnt mean it that way

Her; i dont owe you shit andre , i dont owe you anything

Me; but i owe you right \*shouting\* you behave as if everyone owes you something just because you lost your parents at a young age

Her; \*shouting\* DONT!

Me; no amahle other kids out there dont know they parents at all but they dont behave like you do , you act as if we all owe you cause you lost the most important people in your life as much as you dont owe me anything i also dont owe you shit

Her; \*shouting\* fu....

The door opened and we both turned to the door

Pa; i can hear you 2 from the corridors whats going on

Her; pa i found dre having sex with another girl  
I quickly turned to her

Pa; what?  
me; you really going to go that low , thats our business  
we not together with pa he was never there when we  
were together or started this

Her;.....

Me; pa i made a mistake a mistake i regret to this day , i  
dont know what i was thinking but i made a mistake the  
mistake i did , did not mean i did not love amahle or i  
loved her any less i dont have an excuse for what i did but  
iv tried my level best to try and fix this but its so easy for  
her to move on as if the was nothing between us. I know i  
should not be pinning this to her but im trying to fix this  
and i just want her to give me a chance and its making  
me think some other way

Her; what? Thinking about what

Me; that you busy with that major guy and i just made  
things easier for you, so you will leave

Her; dont turn this on me why you even telling my  
grandfather our business

Me; cause you were so fast to turn me into a bad guy

Her; \*shouting\* cause you are

The door opened and pa just walked out

Me; i re....

My phone rang, i looked at the screen and it was "theo" i put it back in the pocket

Me; i ....

Her; arent you going to answer that

Me; no

Her; just go andre, and i hope this is the last time you become the hero. Its about time you began playing a part with your skank

Walked up to her and tried to kiss her cheek but she just pushed me away. Walked out and went to sit at the car one thing i knew that me and her were over

#AMAHLE

Few days passed and i qualified to right my exams. Major and the girls and guys came to visit me at hospital and were angry on what i tried to do but they didnt understand anything.I was back home and my aunt was taking care off me. I had forgiven and forgotten and she could not be more happier. Pa was at jhb for a while. I would usually go to school , came back and stayed indoor, nabo major saw me sometimes. Pa was really disappointed about my breakup with dre.

Late june i wrote my exams , wrote my last paper on the first week of july then i was home. Mbali bump was getting bigger. Pa was so uptight that he was living with my aunt at glen , whenever i would just go there and spend time with the both off them. I have not talked to dre in forever nje and it helped cause i was getting over him bit by bit

I was on holidays so i woke up late each and everyday. One morning my phone rang non stop i answered it

Me; helo

Guy; helo, listen titon is not good and i have to go to work so can you please take him to spca

Me; ohk

Dre; i will tell ntombi you coming and you know where to find the car keys

Me; sharp

He hung up

I got dressed and went to dre place. Buzzed the intercom and ntombi let me in

Me; hey you

Ntombi; hey when was the last time i saw you

Me; yhooo ntombi, you ohk though

Ntombi; yess you

Me; ngi right

I went to the back and they were so happy to see me, i took titon belt , put it on and played with them

Me; whats wrong baby, you just missed me didnt you , i missed you too, lets go. I took him and left tyson. Went to his room and took the car keys i looked around and nothing had changed including our picture frames this guy was not going to get over me. Walked downstairs, put titon on the car and left for the spca at dube.

I went out first registered him then waited till they called me out. When i walked in everyone moved away even though i put a face mask on him and he was on a leash . People were afraid off him; i put him on the table and they did whatever

Woman; is he the only one

Me; no they 2

Woman; i would suggest , you bring another one cause it tends to be contagious

Me; oh ohk

He injected him then we left some guy

Guy; but girl here i am thinking you the type off girl that likes dogs that dont grow

Me; his my bodyguard

Guy; \*laughing\* definitely isecurity etight

I just laughed put him back on the car went in and drove off. Arrived at his place. Put him back and he was feeling down he just laid down while tyson was the only one active. He just jumped on me and i fell on my back and could not stop laughing. Got up, dusted myself , turned and bumped into dre, his hands were on my butt. I moved from his grip

Dre; thank you

Me; they also my kids so you dont have to thank me , tyson also needs to go

Dre; why his fine

Me; apparently its contagious

Dre; oh, should you or

Me; you working

Dre; no

Me; if you dont mind il like to take him

Dre; ohk

I went inside took my bag, said bye to ntombi and walked out

Dre; i could drop you off

Me; im fine

I walked out off the gate and began walking to the nearest taxis . Got home cooked and went to bed. Next morning we took him together and the drives were silent. He dropped me off and just watched tv before cooking

After 2 weeks. Started the biggest task off my life i was an intern at bara as a medical student. The drs there were very strict. We rotated through hospitals and other department. And the feeling there was just exceptional. Tea time. I went to the anaesthetic department and the woman there was very friendly i made myself coffee cause i did not have my own cup she borrowed me hers. I made myself coffee and sat on the couch. Then my eyes grew wide , white guy in theater garments appeared from the door, his lips were pink , pinching blue eyes and his head was covered i stared he was flames. He walked in made himself tea and bread then left he didnt even notice me

After my tea time went to do my routines , of course i looked for the hot dr but he was nowhere to be seen. At 5 went to change and left for home. next day was the very same thing i had to follow dr khan and see how he does things. Got to a patient that had heyna but they removed

it. I looked at the wound with dr khan , he gave me all the information, when the operation was done, how deep the wound was and everything about the patient. Next patient had to interpret for him what the patients card said, looked at it and what pills the nurses were giving her. After the womens ward we moved to the mens ward. We communicated and he was not harsh with me, even though i did not understand something he made me understand it and would not easily get angry

Lunch time went to get something to eat at the department walked in and the hot dr was there with like 4 other dr. I froze at the door

Someone; excuse me

I turned my back and realised was standing on the door, i looked at the hot dr and he was looking at me while sipping on his coffee, i quickly disappeared to the kitchen and made myself something to eat. Got busy with my phone

Mbali; baby your niece or nephew kicked for the first time

Me; what?

Mbali; it was so scary at the first and i actually cried cabanga

Me; lol yhooooo , you need to record that cause your dr will ask you if he/she has kicked yet

Mbali; i will

Major; hows the pressure now

Me; lol not so bad im trying my level best to stay calm

Major; but im sure , dr are drooling over you ne

Me; yhooo i dont even exist

Aminah; you know woman dr are so bitchy

Me; lol have to agree, i was with a man dr today and he was the friendliest

Aminag; you lucky, the one i was with she just wanted to embarrass me

Me; sorry baby

Aminah; eish il get used to it, what you doing

Me; lunch

When i was done rinsed my cup and plate and left

INSERT #128

## #ANDRE

FEW months passed and too be honest thats when i realised that me and amahle are really over, she no longer hung with us and i was ohk with that everyone was actually cause it meant no drama mbali gave birth to beautiful baby boy (jamal thando boysens ) and off course i was the godfather , we couldnt see the baby for like 2 weeks cause off traditions.

Woke up Saturday morning and headed to work knocked off early and went to mbali place, got the door and knocked, i just froze

Amahle; hi

Me; hi is mbali here

Amahle; yeah

She walked away , i went in and she was on the lounge

Me; hey lala

Mbali; hey bubu

Me; hi to the big man himself

I picked up jamal

Mbali; burp him please he just ate

Me; sure

I rubbed his back  
Mbali; coming or going  
Me; coming from  
Mbali; well you knocked off early  
Me; yeah it is a Saturday  
Mbali; mxm so you good  
Me; im ohk bubu just work is hectic but money is making me happy  
Amahle; mbali il see you tomorrow ke  
Mbali; sure babe, when you wake up you must call me if he doesn't wake me up  
Amahle; \*laughing\* sure bye  
Mbali; bye  
She left  
Mbali; no bye?  
Me; wheres deon?  
She raised her eyebrow  
Me; at the warehouse  
Mbali; i think so when was the last time you went there  
Me; i was there just yesterday  
Mbali; ohk

He burped and he soon fell asleep, i put him to bed and we chilled

Mbali; so any girl i should know about

Me; i dont think so what did you hear

Mbali; nothing when was the last time you touched a woman

Me; \*laughing\* thats the last thing on my mind right now

Mbali; you have to move on

Me; and who said im stuck on her

Mbali; it seems that way

Me; not everything is about having a fuck and if i want a fuck i will but iv moved on mbali , im so over that now

Mbali; ohk cause she is moving on

Me; good for her so we still on Saturday right

Mbali; yes my mum is baby sittin

Me; good you need to have some fun its been a while

Mbali; ye....

Deon; i thought that was your car

We turned to the door

Me; hey man

Deon; hey why didnt you tell me you coming

Me; cause i was not coming to you

Deon; \*laughing\* the little man is taking everyone from me

Me; \*laughing\* i dont blame him, you good

Deon; im good man you?

Me; im good how are things there

Mbali; stop right there no talking about business here just dont even try it , im about to dish up talk about some other shit not busy

Me; \*laughng\* we only know business

Mbali; dre

Me; mxm so how does it feel being a father

Deon; perfect man ,i cant believe im responsible for another life

Me; hectic when you put it that way

Deon; but great feeling when should i be expecting turner jnr

I laughed so loud

Me; i doubt you will ever meet a turner jnr man

Deon; you know thats not going to happen

Me; im telling you, i dont want a kid or kids for that matter

Deon;....

Me; \*laughing\* what?

deon; i thought you did we talked about that

Me; not anymore i am allowed to change my mind

Deon; is it be...

I cut him off

Me; mbali cant hear us stephen is doubling the order ohk so make sure that happens and you dont do the order for last time

Deon; ohk i have to do it fast so i wont forget

Me; please man cause if you forget this then it will just delay everything

Deon; ohk

Mbali; are you eating that side

Us; yeah

She dished up for us, we ate and i hung out with them for a while and left for home

Ntombi had already slept and my food was on the oven i was full so i just went to bed, Sunday morning walked downstairs

Ntombi; did you see your food

Me; yes i was full but i will eat it for breakfast, thank you

Ntombi; ohk im doing spring cleaning today

Me; \*laughing\* so

Ntombi; make yourself busy , go out i dont want you to disturb me

Me; cant i sit in my room

Ntombi; no cause i need to change it too

Me; ohk let me go shower

I went to shower, dressed up and walked downstairs

Me; oh and ntombi

Ntombi; yeah

Me; please throw away any pictures off me and amahle ne

Ntombi; throw away

Me; yeah burn them first and frames you can have them , the clothes you can take them if they fit you , if not donate them like get rid off anything that belonged to her

Ntombi; you sure

Me; yeah iv hold on way too long now its time to move on

Ntombi; ohk

Took my car keys and left , i met up with deon

Deon; you good

Me; yeah i came to check up on you, how are the preparations going

Deon; all done kgontsi is the best

Me; so how will you do it go down on one knee

I laughed

Deon; \*laughing\* if i dont i know for sure she will say no so i have too

Me; im so proud off you man like really a father and now soon to be husband

Deon; when you found her , you found her

Me; yeah

Deon; and you

Me; what about me

Deon; gf what?

Me; i dont know about that but i need a womans touch  
\*smiling\*

Deon; \*laughing\* definitely you do its been a while

Me; exactly

We hung out for a while then went out for drinks and we t home past 9 the place was fucked up clean i was even scared to touch anything. I went to the kitchen

Me; this time

Ntombi; i finished late dre

Me; ohk and the one time i dont eat my food is not ready

Ntombi; give me an hour

Me; ohk im going to take a shower

I walked up to my bedroom, she changed everything to the position my bed was in , my bed was not that far from the sliding door , no picture frames, closet empty it was just my personal things, i showered then wore sweatpants and walked downstairs , she dished up i ate then bed

INSERT #129

#ANDRE

The week passed by really fast , Saturday we all went out

Unathi; well its been a while since this happened

Mbali; im sorry but you know with thando its hard to separate myself from him

Me; well im glad we all out and enjoying each other company again

Themba; yes please

Unathi; wheres jack

Themba; he had a job he should be here in a few hours if they dont catch him

Mbali; \*laughing\* dont say that

Themba; im just saying

After an hour or 2 jack walked in

Unathi; well we all here can we get started

Dorian; yes please im starving

We ordered and dug in, well we all had fun then

Themba; ohk guys theres this new place that just opened downtown

Deon; what kind off a place

Themba; im not sure its mixed , pub and restaurant and i hear its the bomb

Me; so?

Themba; lets go check it out

Mbali; but then themba

Themba; i thought we said we going to have fun today

Mbali; do you even know where it is

Themba; yes or i think

Me; ohk lets go

Mbali; guys you want us to go to a place we dont even know

Deon; we going , lets go

We paid the bill and walked out, deon drove with themba and i was with mbali, unathi and jack

Unathi; so you know where we going

Me; i think so

Mbali; \*laughing\* dre call themba tu , its like nearly midnight and you want us to get lost, my baby still needs me

Me; you dont trust me anymore

Mbali; i do bubu dont even go there

Me; then enjoy the ride

We got to where i was told to go and we walked out

Mbali; where is deon and the guys

Me; maybe they behind us lets check it out

Mbali; lets wait for everyone

Unathi; no lets go in

She pulled her in and when we walked in it was fucked up beautiful, red roses, candles slow music

Mbali; i think we just crashed something lana lets go

Me; \*smiling\* i also think we crashed something

Unathi; lets check it out

Mbali; no lets go be...

She got cut off, when a guy in a tux walked up to her and handed her a singel rose. Me and unathi looked at her and another guy came and another

Mbali; \*whispering\* no no you made a mistake these dont belong to me, yey come back

Me; why they giving you flowers

Mbali; how the fuck must i kn...

Another guy came , it was like 30 roses now. When another guy approached her

Mbali; listen i wont take that rose, you making a mistake

The guy placed it on the other flowers

Unathi; \*laughing\* mbali whats going on

Mbali was panicking

Mbali; i d....

Her eyes grew wide. Deon walked in carrying too many balloons he let them go and they were all over the place my boy even wore a tux for this, he went on one knee and mbali just rushed to him and kneeled in front off him. I laughed and went to her

Me; you ruining everything stand up straight

The guys showed up and i pulled her back, she cried i mean really cried

Deon; for one i didnt even know i would be the one on one knee asking you to be my wife , especially you. From being my best friend to being my wife i dont know how you did it , i dont know how we did it but whatever it was , we must be doing it right for me to be doing this. Mbali you irritate the shit out off me , getting mad at me for no reason but through all your bullshit funny enough i want to spend my entire life with you , i want you to annoy me some more but more importantly i want you to make me happy some more cause i know only you are capable off that , i want you to tell me shit when i do something out off line , i want you to carry on supporting me. I dont know what else i want from you cause you already gave me everything but this is the least i can do if i could give you the world trust me bunny i would and give you anything you desire i love you so much, thank you for being there for me and giving me something i could not ask from anyone else thank you for thando but now i want you to be my wife will you do me the honour off being my wife

Mbali knelt down again

Us; \*shouting\* MBALI!!!

Deon just laughed and she was crying none stop

Deon; so is it a yes

She couldnt even speak , she nodded her head and we all clapped and congratulated them. Mbali was a mess but after a few minutes she gathered herself up and she was ohk ,we partied there and seeing her that happy made me happy

Well the two decided to go and have more fun and left us we went to a pub and ordered ourselves booze that was galore

Themba; lets go

Me; where

Themba; cant you hear them

Me; hear who man \*laughing\* you drunk

Themba; girls , turner, turner, turner they waiting for you

I just laughed he sat next to me

Themba; they miss you, i miss you, i miss having to share a bed with my best friend to fuck girls, one off them is engaged and one off them is singel so who do i choose

Me; \*laughing\* and you say im a problem when im drunk lets get some girls

Themba; \*screaming \* YESSSSSS

We got up and went to the floor , girls there were beautiful and it was time i had fun. We walked to a group off girls sitting in one table

Themba; hey ladies

Them; heyyy

Me; what you drinking

Girl 1; this \* grabbing her drink \*

Me; can we join you?

Themba; or you with your bfs

Girl 2; no just join us

They were 5 , i sat in between the 2 and so did themba

Girl1; no cat fight drama right

Me; we should be asking you that

Girl 1; \*laughing\* i mean no gf coming our way right

Me; and i mean none off you will be fighting over us right

They all laughed, me and themba looked at each other and smirked

Me; so whats your name

Girl1; dudu

Themba; duduzile right

Dudu; \*smiling\* yeah

Girl 2; and im lebo

Me; lebo

She smiled

Girl 3; kea

Girl 4; shannelle

Girl 5 ; emm

Me; nice meeting you ladies

Dudu; same here but who are we talking to

Me; dre is the name

Themba; themba is the name

Shannelle; themba

She said that so slow

All off them were beautiful but my eyes were on dudu oh lord she was a beauty.

Me; let me buy you a drink

Dudu; i can buy my own drink

Me; well let me spoil you then

She laughed

Dudu; ohk

We both got up and headed to the bar

Me; may i just say you beautiful

Dudu; you not bad yourself mr

Bartender; turner

Me; hey man get the beautiful dudu a drink

Bartender; what will you like

Dudu; this would be nice

He gave it to her and we walked to my car

Dudu; let me guess, you going to buy me my drink then you going to tell me how beautiful i am, we go to your place you promise we dont have sex but eventually we find ourselves taking each others clothes off

Me; \*laughing\* thats what you planning

Dudu; dont even try it

Me; what do you want us to do

Dudu; nothing

Me; you dont actually think when we get to my place or yours we wont have a fuck right

Dudu; \*laughing\* straight talker ne

Me; im just saying it like it is

Dudu; well maybe we should not go to your place or mine

Me; ohk if thats what you want

Dudu; what do you want

Me; i want to take you home

Dudu; cant you put it in a polite manner

Me; that is the polite manner

Dudu; \*laughing\* ohk il drive behind you

Me; we leaving now

Dudu; you still want to look at your choices

Me; \*laughing\* ohk lets go

She went to her car and i went to mine and we drove to my place

## INSERT #130

Months passed december we had way more fun it was a new year and amahle was soon to graduate or at least thats what i heard. I was back to my old self just having fun. Deon paid lobola for mbali and they traditional wedding was soon to happen that was april. Kim was in matric and i could not be more proud off her. Dorian had a gf she was pretty and they looked good together, jack was still afraid off girls, none much had changed in the past few months to be exact pretty much everything was the same

My business was still bringing money for me and that made me happy, i was busy as hell. The second week off march was off from work 7 days. Tuesday got up and went downstairs, ntombi was not there i made myself something to eat then watched movies around 2 people barged in, in my house they were all in suits and dresses

Me; yho

Mbali; dont say yho get dressed

Me; for what?

Themba; dont tell me you dont know

Me; what

Dorian; its amahle luncheon she was graduating today

Me; so?

Mbali; so? What you mean so?

Me; i mean exactly that so?

themba; we all invited including you

Me; well count me out

Them;.....

Me; you all look good, il see you when you get back  
congratulate her for me

Themba; you really not going

I got up to take my plate to the kitchen

Me; im really not going

Deon; how about we all go after 30 minutes will come back together boy

Me; \*laughing\* you seriously dont understand no and im not going ne i mean that shit. I have plans lock on your way out

I walked upstairs and went to take a shower, the shower door opened and it was themba

Me; \*shouting\* are you fucken crazy , im bathing

Themba; 15 minutes then we come back

Me; no, now go

I closed the door and carried on with what i was doing when i was done went downstairs and they had left. I went to dress up took my car keys and left i ordered flowers and gift and sent it to her. Went to some place in midrand and got myself drunk , i wanted a line soo bad but i didnt allow myself , got up and some guy bumped into me , i turned and the nigga didnt even say sorry. I walked up to him and hit his head on the bar table he hit his forehead and the guy he was travelling with tried to come for me but i reached out for my gun

Me; dont , just dont

He backed away

Me; and watch were you go

I walked out maybe 4 or 5 steps from the guy

Him; put your hands up in your head

I stopped and slowly turned to the guy, blood was dripping from his forehead and he was holding a gun

Me; what?

Him; im a cop and you just broke the law

Me; the last time i checked you not on duty so i broke no law

Him; but i intend to open assault charges against you

Me; \*laughing\* then get the warrant for my arrest

I turned and walked away and i felt a sharp pain on my back , i went down and the nigga cuffed me.

When we got to the police station i was still fucked up drunk so i passed out there. I woke up the next morning only because some guys tried to pick pocket me, i got up and i was in a police station , they called for me i didnt know who to call so i just went back. I was there for a maximum off 3 days in a way i was glad i was there in fact i wanted to go to a correctional service not be in police

holding cells the weekend passed and i didnt even care.  
Monday i called my lawyer

Me; smith

Him; turner

Me; i have a bail hearing today i need you to be in  
midrand around 3

Him; what? For what

I just hung up and left, they came to pick us up then they  
called me up, smith was already there

Judge; charges laid against you being in possession off a  
illegal fire arm, assaulting a police officer, drinking and  
driving this is not your first encounter and you have a  
criminal record

Me;....

Smith; your honour my client was under the influence off  
al....

I held his shoulder, he turned to me i shook my head

Smith; what?

me; forget about it dont try

Smith; what you talking about

Judge; is the a problem

Me; i want to get a sentence off about a year or 2  
Smith; what? Are you crazy

Me; i shouldnt have called you  
Smith; are you high?

Me; ....

Judge; is the a problem

Me; no your honour its just he does not represent me anymore so i dont see the reason why he should be here

Judge; is this true counsellor

Smith; turner

Me; go home

He packed his things

Judge; we consider you a threat to the community so you shall do a 1 yr sentence and 6 months for good behaviour

Me; thank you can i be transferred to leeuwkop, prison closer to home

Judge; that should be done

They took me back and was transferred there you might think i was crazy but thing was my head was all over the place and I knew exactly what I was doing

#THEMBA

Me; ntombi come on his not back

Ntombi; themba i told you already no i came back here and he was not here , dre is used to this maybe his in between some girls legs

Me; ohk you have a point but from last week Tuesday and now its Monday

Ntombi; plus he was on 7 days off i wouldnt even be worried

Me; ohk tell him to call me when he comes back

Ntombi; ohk how was amahle graduation

Themba; it was beautiful she is a dr now just imagine

Ntombi; yho thats so nice

Me; yeah anyway let me get going

Ntombi; sharp

I left and headed to my place the was a car blocking my way from going in i got out off the car

Me; oh hey man

Smith; we have a problem

Me; whats up

Smith; turner is in for a 1 year sentence

Me; \*laughing\*get out off here man

I turned and walked back to my car

Smith; im not joking, he fired me in front off a judge so i wont represent him, he did not get bail but was giving a year right on the spot

Me; you joking

Smith; wish i was, i was in midrand, he used a illegal fire arm with a cop and assaulted him

Me; what the fuck was he doing in midrand

Smith; thats the shit i should be asking you

Me; you sure which jail

Smith; he asked to be transferred in leeuwkop

I held my head

Me; he wont come back out man

Smith; why do you think i came here, once his in he wont be able to leave and this one year sentence will be a 10 or even more

## INSERT 131

People could not believe i was back i was with my mentors from a very young age. Saturday i was informed i had a

visitor, i walked out and themba was sitting down i wanted to turn back but i walked up to him

Themba; \*shouting\* what the fuck is wrong with you

Everyone turned to us. The warder warned him, i sat down

Me; hey man

He held his head

Themba; are you trying to get yourself killed

Me; i need a few things , did you bring me something

Themba; yeah things you will need, why you doing this

Me; doing what?

Themba; you could have got out off the situation you in, you would not be here so why

Me; cause there are some things i needed to do

Themba; inside

Me; yeah and i needed to get in

Themba; you bullshitting me man

Me; what you want me to say

Themba; is this about amahle

Me; shes not all off that and why would i get myself arrested for her dont be stupid man

Themba; then what dre? Like i dont understand

Me; i need to do something here

Themba; that will end up you being in here for a while

Me; im just in here for a couple off months you bitching  
manje

Themba; what the hell do i tell your mum, the guys only i  
know about this

Me; dont tell my mum shit , lie to her i dont know i dont  
want her breaking down

Themba; the guys

Me; i dont care dont tell mbali about this

Themba; im still confused about this

Me; let stephen and the guys know what happened take  
care off them, i want millions in my back account when i  
get out off here thanks for what you got for me

I got up and went back, later that day i got everything  
themba bought for me

## #THEMBA

The drive home was long , my mind was all over the place  
but most importantly i wanted to get in dre head and see  
what he was thinking cause i was fucked up confused. Got

to my place and just went to bed, Sunday was woken up by the guys went downstairs and opened up for them

Dorian; what happened to you yesterday

Me; i got busy

Deon; whats up?

me; i dont even know were to start man

Jack; whats up?

Me; turner is serving time

They literally laughed

Me; thats how i reacted when i first heard that but thats some real shit

Dorian; you joking right

Me; wish i was

Deon; what the fuck are you talking about?

Me; dre was arrested a week ago, for having an illegal fire arm, and assaulting a police officer and some other charges, he is doing time for a year

Jack; whats going to happen to us

Deon; jack wait... Why didnt you tell us this , he is in for something so stupid

Me; he could have got out off it but he chose not too

Dorian; why the fuck not

Me; i thought it was amahle but he said there are some things he needs to do, he said he will call at 8

Deon; im not going till he calls

Nhlanhla; what will happen with business

Me; nothing changes there, just keep on working

Jack; well im not going anywhere

Me; boy go all off you except you 2 will let you know everything later or tomorrow

Them; ohk

They left and it was just me, dorian and deon

Deon; i cant believe this

Me; i feel you

We were all impatient, we had no appetite we were just stressing , past 8 my phone rang

Me; hey

Dre; boy

Deon; what the fuck is wrong with you

Dorian; are you that crazy, she is just a girl dre you can get any other girl

Dre ; will you all shut the fuck up

Us;.....

Dre; as for you dorian why the hell would i be sobbing over amahle and want to do it inside dont be stupid, im over that iv been long over that its been a year and not everything i do is about amahle fuck man and you deon im up to something i cant let you in on it as yet but nothing is wrong with me

Deon; you going to have to give us something better than that

dre; i needed to be inside

Me; so you did everything intentionally

Dre; kind off i knew the cop and i took a gun that was illegal everything was planned

Me; what?

dre; yes but i had to act as if i did not know shit , i sent the judge an anonymous letter letting her know the danger i was to the community which is why i had no bail and was taken in immediately, smith was clueless as you guys i need to do something

Dorian; what should we tell people

Dre; nothing especially mbali deon

Deon; how must i do that, my wedding is next month man

Dre; im sorry im going to miss it but if i didnt do this none off us would have made it to the wedding

Deon; what you talking about

Me; just tell mbali some lie that she will believe that i wont make it

Me; whats your plan

Dre ; il let you guys know everything when im out off here , themba il call you when i need anything to bring it to me dont be coming here every weekend to see me , il be too busy to lose an hour

Me; ohk man

Dre; will talk

Then he hung up

Deon; i always thought this guy is crazy but now im convinced

Me; i just wonder what this is all about

Dorian; and what he meant when he said if he was not in we all wouldnt be there for the wedding

I walked the guys out and they left

INSERT #132

## #AMAHLE

It was 2 weeks before mbali wedding , everything was set , everything was sorted only final touch ups. The last week i was at mbali place. I walked in and the house was full, i called out for mbali and thando nanny was feeding him, i greeted them and went to the bedroom, i knocked Deon; come in

I walked in mbali was crying , deon sitting next to her Mbali; \*crying\* how can you lie to me like this, how can he do this to me

Deon; he made me promise ohk , im sorry but at this point we cant do anything

Mbali; \*crying\* no deon you lied to me , he lied to me i would have postponed this so he would be there , he must think im a bad friend for not visiting him, its nearly a month now and you telling me this now

Deon; i had no choice mbali im still confused to this day

Me; im going to come back later

They didnt even hear me , i just closed the door and walked out took thando after 30 minutes or so off mbali screaming and things being thrown deon walked out

Me; whats going on?

Deon;.....

He just walked out, i sat thando on the floor and went to the bedroom

Me;; your wedding is Saturday and you already crying

She was crying so bad, she couldnt even talk. I sat next to her

Me; mbali whats wrong

Mbali; please leave

Me; no whats wrong

Mbali; \*shouting\* I SAID LEAVE AMAHLE

I raised my hands in defeat and walked out, people began coming in and the bride was not in a happy mood

Tuesday mbali still locked herself up and Wednesday. Thursday the were some things she needed to do she looked like shit though when everything was done, she went to bed again. Friday people came in , in large numbers , people were cooking , singing it was nice vibes not for OUR BRIDE though i walked to her bedroom and opened the door she was on the phone, smiling but also crying

Mbali; it wont be the same...yeah i know that and i love you too... You were not suppose to miss this ..... Please

tell me whats going on i think i deserve to know..... You wont stress me ..... Fine but how am i suppose to act as if im happy when im not the one person i want there is not there how explain that to me.... Fine can you call me tomorrow then.... I love you too

Then she hung up

Me; you ohk

She nodded her head

Me; whats going on mbali

Mbali; \*smiling\* nothing let me go help out

Me; ohk

She walked out, i took the phone and it was a number i did not recognise , i put the phone down and went out.

SATURDAY was the day off the wedding, deon family was coloured so it was not that much off a big ceremony and stuff after everything it was the lunch, mbali would be happy and get a sad face for a few minutes and smile again. The guys tried they hardest to smile but i knew it was fake, they were just faking it but they were having fun. But what bothered me was dre he was nowhere to be seen at all.

Me; hey guys

Them; hey lala/ mami

Me; you good

Them; yeah you

Me; yeah bunny i need your help with something

Themba; sure whats up

Me; come

I stretched out my hand for him, he took it and we walked away

Me; where is dre?

themba;.....

Me; themba!

Themba; i dont know

Me; so this is how it will be now , lying to each other

Themba;....

Me; i just want to know where he is

Themba; forget about dre

He tried to walk away but i held his arm

Me; where is he

Themba; yho amahle

Me; its just simple question

Themba; not with a simple answer

Me; did he skip the country what?

themba; why do you care?

Me; cause, cause

Themba; cause what

Me; cause mbali is having a shitty day because off him  
and im just wondering where he could be that he missed  
her best friend wedding

Themba; his in prison, he was arrested

Me;....

Themba; yes amahle

Me; where?

Themba; for what

Me; where themba

He told me and i just walked away

Later that people were already drunk, Sunday it was just a  
lunch rest off the week passed by so fast, Saturday woke  
up and went to jhb ,sandton i signed in and did what i had  
to do and went to sit at the waiting area , they said dre  
should be there in a few minutes, i was just fiddling , i

was looking on the floor the entire time a chair was pulled  
i lifted up my head and i just had a lump on my throat.  
They had cut his hair short but there were still traces off  
them ,was in the prisoner uniform colour orange, i had  
forgotten how good he looked, if it was up to me i would  
have ripped everything he was wearing and allow him to  
make love to me cause i missed him, he said nothing but  
just looked at me

Me; hi

Dre; hi

I looked on the floor again, he tilted his head to the side

Dre; what you doing here

Me; i came to see you

Dre; for what?

Me;....

Dre; who told you im here

Me; what you in for

Dre; who told you im here

Me; it doesnt matter

Dre; do.....

Guy; turner

He turned around and greeted that guy and turned back to me

Me; i shouldnt have come here

I got up, he laid back on the chair and just looked at me , his eyes eye colour just popped out

Me; i just th.....

He raised his eyebrow

Me; never mind what i thought , bye dre

He pushed his chair back looked at me and walked away, everyone was looking at me since he pushed the chair back rough and it fell , i wiped my tears and walked out. I just headed home.

Few months passed i loved my job as busy as it kept me but i loved my job dearly. Woke up one morning and headed to work i had no appetite so i just grabbed a muffin and apple then sat at the cafeteria ate when i was done got up and bumped into someone

Me; oh im sorry

Guy; no im the one who is suppose to be sorry

I looked up and i just froze

Guy; i hope i didnt hurt you

Me; \*smiling\* no

He looked at my name tag

Guy; dr ngwenya

Me; and dr \*holding his tag\* gwama

He laughed

Me; i dont think iv seen you before

Dr gwama; i just transferred here

Me; and what do we owe this pleasure

Dr gwama; just work

Me; hmm ohk , thank you for not breaking me better  
get going

I passed him

Dr gwama; ma ngwenya

I turned

Dr gwama; you beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

Dr gwama; and i would love to take you out for lunch  
meet me here at 2

Me; is that an order

Dr gwama; im glad we understand each other

I just laughed and walked away, went to work lunch time applied a bit off lipstick and perfume and went to the cafeteria he was already waiting for me

Dr gwama; i thought you might just be disobedient

Me; i always follow order

He smiled. The dr had something over me no lie he was chocolate dark brown eyes, tall , he was xhosa cause he mixed , i was attracted to him. I sat opposite him

Dr gwama; lubanzi by the way

Me; amahle

Lubanzi; beautiful like your name

Me; thank you

Lubanzi; and how old are you

Me; does it matter

Lubanzi; yes to me

Me; well it shouldnt shall we

Lubanzi; sure

We got up and walked to his car, even a nice car got in and he drove to maponya that was the nearest mall, went to spur and ordered

Lubanzi; so who is the lucky guy

Me; no lucky guy i think im the lucky one actually

Lubanzi; what you mean

Me; forget that

Lubanzi; ohk so where you from

Me; cape town moved here few years ago

Lubanzi; why

Me; long story il tell you another day

Lubanzi; i hope that actually happens

Me; and you where you from

Lubanzi; eastern cape queens town

Me; thats nice iv never been there before

Lubanzi; beautiful place i tell you

Me; so what brought you to jozi

Lubanzi; work

Me; ohk

We talked some more and went back to work.

INSERT #133

#AMAHLE

I was now seeing the dr lubanzi he was a gentleman a guy iv never dated before and i was asking myself why, we had been seeing each other for 6 months now everyday was the honeymoon phase. I was really happy Lubanzi; so lets go out tomorrow

Me; ohk where

Lubanzi; well i want to spoil my woman

Me; \*smiling\* ohk can never say no to that

Lubanzi; il pick you up ohk

Me; ohk

I kissed him goodbye and we separated. I moved out at home and had my own place now , went to take a long shower then bed. Next day woke up cleaned the place then went to wash i just wore casual since i did not know where we were going he picked me up and we went out , we drove to some airport soh , got there and there were private jets i looked at him he smiled. We walked out

Me; where we going

Lubanzi; come on

He took my hand and we walked in.

Lady ; mr gwama miss

Me; hi \* i said that so slow\*

Lady; would you like anything to drink

Me; no im fine

Lubanzi; \*laughing\* get her a glass off red wine

Lady; yes

She walked away

Me; this

Lubanzi; i can spoil my woman right

Me; \*smiling\* well where are we going

Lubanzi; cape town

Me; what?

Lubanzi; yeah

I couldnt believe it, after a while we arrived and went to camp bay to this huge place with the view off the beach

Me; well this is beautiful

Lubanzi; all for you

We kissed and he ordered food for us. Then later that day he told me to go and shop for a dress i did just that later that day we wined and dined.

Lubanzi; i dont know if it might be early to day this but i love you amahle

I looked at him

Lubanzi; like i really do

Me; \*smiling\* i love you too

I kissed him and he didn't hesitate to kiss me back, he picked me up and wrapped my legs around his waist. He walked with us to the bedroom and slowly laid me on the bed, I unbuttoned his shirt, and took it off then went for his jeans, he unzipped my dress and I stepped out of it. He flipped me over now I was on top of him. He unclipped my bra and threw it to the floor. And pushed my underwear down, I whispered to his ear

Me; protection

He broke the kiss and looked at me

Me; protection

He opened the drawer and opened the packet I kissed him and he flipped us over and put on the condom, I was happy and ready to do this but I could not help myself from thinking, he massaged my clit with his thumb and made entrance for him to go in, he slid himself in and I closed my eyes since there was a slight pain then he began at a slow pace, I was closing my eyes the entire time. Well he cum and that was good enough for him. He laid down I got up and went to the bathroom, I used the toilet and just sat there thinking for one I just had sex but I was not happy, never has that ever happened to me. I got up and went to the bedroom

Lubanzi; you ohk

Me; \*smiling\* yeah just needed the toilet

Lubanzi; ohk come here

I cuddled next to him and we just talked

## #THEMBA

I waited for dre and he showed up sitting opposite me

Me; boy

Dre; sure you good

Me; yeah i should be asking you that

Dre; im good

Me; whats up you said you wanted to see me

Dre; yeah i need to ask you for something

Me; ohk

Dre; i need you to look out for amahle and i mean know who she is with, where everything

Me; whats going on

Dre; i cant tell you anything right now

Me; im tired off you telling me that, whats going on dre you cant be expecting to solve everything on your own

Dre; fine you cant tell anyone about this

Me; ohk

Dre; people are after us man

Me; ohk im lost

Dre; the are some people investigating us , law enforcement i didnt know this until at a later stage they working with someone newbie

Me; i still dont understand

Dre; cops are investigating us themba, the work that we do, the murders every single thing we operate they looking into that and if i didnt get myself arrested shit would have went down, reason im in here they cant continue with the investigation if im locked up here giving me time to think about everything and who im dealing with we dealing with, dangerous people who want to take me and everyone close to me down . the guys inside gave me info about the guy who wants to bring me down

Me; cops

Dre; no guy who is working with cops the newbie

Me; and

Dre; well one thing for sure he is smart and he has been asking around about me, my weakness

Me; amahle

Dre; exactly

Me; how can i protect her from someone i dont even know, how he looks like

Dre; new bf , new friend i dont know themba but i cant do 2 things at once but i need to be here

Me; well she does have a bf

Dre; she does

Me; yeah man , his a dr

Dre; when did they meet? The name, where is he from

Me; man relax i dont know anything about the guy

Dre; \*shouting\* WELL YOU NEED TO KNOW

Warder; turner nooo

Dre; \*whispering\* i need you to know every shit about that guy i cant protect her while im in here and they want her to bring me down

Me; do they know about her

Dre; YES THEMBA, THEY KNOW EVERY SHIT ABOUT HER, I MEAN EVERY SHIT ABOUT HER , EVERYONE KNOWS ABOUT HER , EVEN IN HERE THEY KNOW ABOUT HER

Me; what how?

Warder; its time

Dre; PROTECT HER WITH YOUR LIFE

I got up and went back

I left for home and called amahle  
Amahle; hey themba  
Me; hey where are you  
Amahle; cape town  
Me; what you doing there when did you leave  
Amahle; surprise weekend away  
Me; with who  
Amahle; that does not concern you  
Me; i need to talk to you  
Amahle; about what?  
Me; just make time please  
Amahle; ohk il be back by tomorrow morning il see you  
then  
Me; ohk  
I couldnt even sleep, Sunday dre called me but i didnt  
even answer it cause i knew he would freak. Amahle  
called me and i went to her place  
Me; hey  
Amahle; hey you its been a while  
Me; i know wanted to spend time with you

Amahle; oh really whats going on

Me; what you mean

Amahle; we hardly ever hung out anymore so all off a sudden you want to know hang out whats going on

Me; i need your favour

Amahle; whats up

Me; i need you to tell me everything about your bf

Amahle; \*laughing\* why

Me; please

Amahle; your friend sent you

Me; no i just need to know

Amahle; i dont understand

Me; amahle please if you ever cared about me, please answer me this

Amahle; fine what you want to know

Me; everything

Amahle; name lubanzi gwama, his 30, from the eastern cape queens town, lived with both his parents that live here now, his a dr thast all i can think off right now

Me; thats all

Amahle; yes themba whats up

Me; nah was just asking i need to get going

Amahle; oh kay

I took my bags and left and i was just relieved this guy was cool he didnt sound like a criminal....

INSERT #134

#ANDRE

Themba had told me the guy was clean i was relived. But not happy about the idea off her moving on not that i was not expecting it but i just didnt want it to happen.

Tipson; turner

Me; yeah man

Tipson; lets talk

Me; let me get done with this

He walked away after my duties i walked out and he was sitting on the floor , i stood next to him

Tipson; so what? im waiting for your order

Me;....

Tipson; its all on you man, im not going to do something you didnt order for

Me; if i dont do this then i might as well put the bullet on my forehead

Tipson; so?

Me; take him out

He got up and walked away and i went back inside. I took my phone and dialled amahle number i was not sure to press but i did it anyway

Guy; helo

I kept quiet the voice sounded so familiar

Guy; private number helo

I hung up, and my mind was just all over the place that voice i knew for sure or did i , i was not sure though. I called again

Amahle; helo

Me;.....

Amahle; helooo.

Guy; see i told you they dont talk

I just hung up and called themba

Themba; sure boy

Me; ntwana tell me about amahle bf again

Themba; hao why

Me; just tell me

Themba; name lubanzi, doctor from the eastern cape, parents still together only child. Normal boy ntwana its not him

Me; you sure

Themba; yeah its not him relax amahle safe

Me; ohk

I just hung up

Nine months off being there i was realised on patrol, themba picked me up and i just wanted to be in my own bed, he dropped me off i went to take a long shower then went to bed. I woke up the following morning , ntombi was suppose to come in today since i told her to stop working but i would carry on paying her, i woke up to a great smell walked downstairs and breakfast was served. She was so happy she walked up to me and hugged

Me; \*laughing\* you missed me

Ntombi; dont say that dre, how can you do that

Me; im sorry never again you didnt tell anyone right

Ntombi; yes including your mum

Me; thank you

Ntombi; i dont know what you were eating so i made you fresh food

Me; thank you

I went to sit down, i took my phone and it was too much to deal with it but themba was using it so he had sorted a lot off things for me with that

Ntombi; so your job

Me; i have to find another job

Ntombi; they wont take you back

Me; i dont know but im still on patrol for like few months then everything will be good

Ntombi; mara wena its like you dont value your life you just living in the fast lane

Me; mxm thats crazy

She gave me my plate and i ate then went to take a shower then headed to the warehouse. Got there and the guys were happy to see me i sat them down cause i needed to tell them everything

Me; \*laughing\* can your`ll relax

Nhlanhla; whats going on man

Me; ohk thing is like this the were some people after us and if i didnt do what i did , all off us would probably be serving time for life or dead

Jack; what?

Me; yeah some detective was tipped off by some newbie about me, i dont know how but the nigga knew everything we did and this guy was working with this detective so when he takes me out, he takes over my territory, my business i mean everything we have. Cop was investigating us no one knew about this investigation which is why my connections could not warn me sooner it was more like a private thing so i wont be tipped off and put my things in order, around february last year tipson called me one off the guys from the inside letting me know that there was some shit going on from the inside , shit like people talking about how i was going down , how im going to lose everything, you guys, mbali amahle everything that happened outside was known on the inside

Shane; what?

me; yeah , he told me he had heard the is a guy trying to take me down not one but group off people want to take me down, he told me i was being watched and every move i was making it was taken down so thats when i began being cautious checking every shit i was doing and indeed it was true. My connections had no power including money only choice i had put myself behind bars , i asked around and they tell me theres a cop in midrand who does this and that so his my target i attack him using a illegal fire arm and get myself arrested. The cop investigating me finds out and has to put the investigation on hold , giving

my connections a chance to do something so they dont lose out on money. On the inside i get info about this guy who tipped the cop thamsanqa is the name , orphan and is a dr but his just a worker the are some people his working for they are the ones trying to take me out

Deon; dr

Themba; his a dr you didnt tell me that

Me; i told you themba

Themba;...

Me; yeah apparently his some hot shot where he comes from so the big guys hired him, offered him my territory only if he takes me out

Dorian; but how were we in danger

Me; he sent a hit for all off you, people close to me

Deon; so?

Me; until he found out about a particular someone

Dorian; who

Jack; who?

Themba; amahle

Them; what???

Me; yeah amahle , only found out now my love life with amahle was not as private as i thought it was , people

know her and not only know her they know she is my weakness and i would do anything to protect her meaning they only need her to take me down. I get in contact with this guy from the inside and he cant do anything to you or her as long as im in the inside so he says he wants me to suffer so

Dorian; he pulls the hit for us on hold

Me; exactly giving me more time to think about everything

Jack; so since you out our lives are in danger

Me; you ohk for now , the guy is quiet i dont know why or maybe he has something up his sleeve but il have to see with him when he strikes

Dorian; why dont we just take him out

Me; i could but i dont know the guy

Nhlanhla; what?

Me; yeah i dont know him so he wants to see me suffer so if he wants to kill any one off you he will have to bring me along to watch which is why im saying do everything as if nothing is happening will just have to see when he strikes

Deon; so the cop

Me; i took him out , i was on the inside they cant pin anything on me and only him and his cop friends knew about this investigation so that should not bring any attention to us cause they know i was inside and they

must have kept an eye on you so they know you dont know shit but the guy and his bosses know exactly its me and after finding out about this they just went silent

Deon; so he might be planning something big

Me; yeah really big which is why i could not tell you anything cause i knew they would be watching you

Jack; so we shouldnt worry about cops

Me; no but worry about this thami guy

## INSERT #135

### #ANDRE

I stayed in jhb for a while after my patrol was done, i got a job as a medic in cape town and had to move there cause i cared about ntombi , themba said she could work for him and she did not mind at all. Thami and his friends were silent so i figured they backed away but i told the guys to keep their guide up, i also run an operation in cape town so i was going to keep a close eye on that. While themba and deon kept a close eye on the one in jhb.

When i got back from work went to get myself something to eat bought my food then went home, ate watched tv then went to bed that happened most off the time if i was not going to the warehouse to check up on things or go to marlene place. One Friday was not working so i went to marlene

Marlene; i easily forget you back now

Me; dont even start

I sat opposite him

Marlene; whats up

Me; with

Marlene; work

Me; all good i didnt go there today

Marlene; why

Me; ahhh im tired , you can also see that

Marlene; you just fucking with me

Me; are you good

Marlene; im good man i cant complain

Me; ohk if you say so

Marlene; what you mean if i say so

Me; i mean the fuck that

We went to get drinks and we just hung out there

Marlene; so this guy

Me; can we not talk about this guy, im tired off talking about this guy that i dont even know

Marlene; arent you threated by him

Me; his just a puppet, the people i should be worried about are his masters

Marlene; even if thats the case , looking at you , you just relaxed about the whole issue as if nothing is going on

Me; thats because nothing is going on

Marlene; dont lie to yourself, you here in cape town your boys could be killed one by one

Me; it wont get to that actually i wont let it get to that

Marlene; then why arent you doing anything about this guy

Me; do what? How am i suppose to contact him when i dont know shit about him, if he wants a fight he will come to me and stop acting like a bitch

Marlene; thats your problem you always take things slightly because off your name, your name is not a bullet proof that you wont die because off it

Me; and thats your problem you forever undermining me

Marlene; im not , its just this is not something we get over in a day this is war

Me; im not in a war with some bitch

Marlene; i hope you understand that if amahle gets hurt cause off your pride and you thinking nobody can defeat you , il kill you myself

Me; nobody will be dying and its cause off you they know about her

Marlene; me! Dont fuck with me boy

Me;.....

Marlene; we both know orlando knows about this and how he knows amahle makes you weak dont blame me for putting yourself out there and how weak and your knees shake when it comes to amahle

I stood up

Me; \*shouting\* dont fuck with me

Marlene; il kill your weak ass now, i taught you every shit you know and gave you that name if anyone can take you out it will be me and i dont mind doing that shit right now. You knew exactly the shit you were getting yourself getting involved with her, orlando and now some niggas i dont even know are willling to hurt her cause off you watch yourself

Me; \*shouting\* no one will fucken hurt her

Marlene; you better hope so

Me; and you say im weak , only thing i see is everywhere that girl goes she makes everything and everyone weak you might say im weak and she made me but truth is im not the only one

I took my car keys and walked out

Saturday i prepared for work and it was a hectic Saturday when i knocked off headed to my place 5 minutes off being there, the was a knock i opened and it was adel

Me; boy

Adel; sure came to check up on you

Me;.....

Adel; ohk im bored and i miss this place

Me; this is not your place

Adel; i know but i live here most off the time and i miss it man cant i just move in with you

Me; fuck no

Adel; its not like we sleeping on the same bed

Me; i said no

Adel; dre please

Me; i dont want to be calling you asking you if you around if i want to bring a girl over so no

Adel; you see that will not be a problem for me, you do your shit i dont care the minute i see you bring a girl i walk to my bedroom

Me; then the girl will be turned off knowing i have a roommate so no

Adel; ohk you tell me if you bring a girl over so i will go

Me; thats exactly what im avoiding having to call you to tell you to leave as if we in high school no

Adel; ai mxm

Me; is that the reason you came down here

Adel; yeah and i wanted to talk to you

Me; about what

Adel; whats happening in jozi

Me; with?

Adel; people are talking and i wnat to hear it straight from you

Me; hear what?

Adel; getting arrested, and order out for you and the guys. Your gf

Me; who told you all off that

Adel; everyone is talking

Me; im tired off talking about the same thing over and over again so whoever you had that from go to them and ask them to tell you everything

Adel; you never want to tell me anything

Me; yes cause i know how you are, get out off my house

Adel; \*laughing\* you the rudest person i know

Me; piss off

He took his things and left

Sunday went to walk was just a normal day. Monday was off so decided to drive to waterfront and hung out there for a while everyone was making a big issue off something that was not even there i knew this thami guy was just a dog barking but would not bite but it seemed like everyone was threated by the guy.

Girl; turner

I turned and i could not believe it , she looked so beautiful. She smiled and i could not help but smile too

INSERT #136

#ANDRE

Me; helen

Helen; i thought that was you

Me; cape town what you doing here

Helen; i work here

Me; thats great

We hugged

Helen; look at you, you never cut your hair this short

Me; had no choice

Helen; long story

Me; kind off

Helen; always is with you can i join you

Me; sure

We sat down

Helen; well me and y...

Me; lets not get into that, how have you been

Helen; good, been outta jozi for a while now

Me; everything ohk

Helen; yeah but jozi had a lot off memories for me, so moved to bellville until i found a place here in cape town

Me; relationship

Helen; nah too busy for that

Me; you look good

Helen; i try you too, you should leave your hair like this

Me; nah

Helen; still want women to hold on to your hair

Me; \*laughing\* dont go there

She laughed

Helen; and you relationship, i heard about you and amahle

Me; from who

Helen; mbali

Me; she told you

Helen; yeah we talked cause it was hard moving on

Me; but look at you, you eventually did

Helen;.....

I tilted my head to look at her, she got lost in her thoughts

Helen; i always thought i was the one you were going to commit too , finally say youv had your phone and you want to settle down with me and when i heard you went all types off crazy with amahle i just broke down

Me;.....

Helen; \*smiling\* but its cool

Me; let me take you out for supper my treat

Helen; always is

Me; \*smiling\* lets go

We walked to my car and i drove to a restaurant i was familiar with , we sat in and ordered

Helen; so what brings you to jozi

Me; work?

she raised her eyebrow

Me; no medic

Helen; other job

Me; im no longer in that market

Helen; what you mean

Me; im done with that life

Helen; no more illegal dealings

Me; no

Helen;....

Me; what?

Helen; nothing its just you treated your dealing as your baby, i didnt think you would just let go

Me; some things will humble you

Helen; what you mean by that

Me; enough questions about that tell me about you

Helen; you already know but im more interested in you

Me; i stay here now, work is work, no relationship thats all

Helen; so if your life is here now what about the guys

Me; they living their life

Helen; your life is really here now

Me; yeah

Helen; well its great knowing il be seeing a familiar face

Me; call me anytime

Helen; \*laughing\* no im not going back there

Me; \*laughing\* fun lala im not even there geez you so fast

Helen; oh really

Me; \*smiling\* really

Helen; \*laughing\* dre i know that smile

Me; what does it mean

She leaned and whispered to my ear

Helen; you want to take my clothes off

I laughed so loud

Me; after 2 or 3 years still the helen i knew

Helen; nothing has changed trust me

Me; love to see that for myself

She just laughed. We ate then left. I dropped her off and went to my place

Tuesday, Wednesday and Thursday was working. Friday the cape town squad decided to go to longstreet, i called helen and she was game. We chilled and drank past midnight we packed our things and left, i was at the backseat with helen

Me; should they take you home

She shook her head i just laughed, we got home and we did the deed. Woke up the next morning and she was still naked, i prepared breakfast for us and took it upstairs she was still sleeping

Me; lala wake up

She turned and slowly opened her eyes

Me; breakfast

She smiled and covered herself with the blanket

Me; \*laughing\* too late for regrets now

Helen; why did you do this \*smiling\*

Me; you said i should not take you home

Helen; dre i was drunk

Me; no you were not

Helen; i guess its true right a drunk person never sees another drunk person

Me; exactly

Helen; thank you \*taking her plate\*

I sat next to her and we both dug in

Helen; i cant believe im in bed with you

Me; bad thing

Helen; no.. Ye... I dont know

Me; \*laughing\* confused soul shame

Helen; you making me confused

Me; sorry ke

She looked at me

Me; \*laughing\* what?

Helen; nothing

Me; i know you falling in love with me

I wrapped my

Me; my love

Ntombi; \*laughing\* mxm

Me; whats wrong?

Ntombi; you dotn even call to check up on me knowing who im staying with

Me; \*laughing\* askies sthandwa sami what is that dog doing to you

Themba; ohhh im a dog when you talk to ntombi

Me; \*laughing\* ohh ntombi exposing me like this

Ntombi; his forward this one you good though

Me; im good ehhh ntwana

Themba; what

Me; guess who i saw here

Ntombi; who

Themba; who

Me; helen!

Themba; what?

Ntombi; who is helen

Me; oh i forgot you dont know helen

Themba; ntwana where

Me; here long story boy are you 2 good

Themba; yes we good, shes irritating lona how the hell did you manage to live with her

Ntombi; yewena themba dont make me mad

Themba; vele its true

Me; \*laughing\* wow i think i just made a match made in heaven

Ntombi; woooo with him never

I just laughed

## INSERT #137

I was in cape town for a few months but i knew that i eventually i would ask for a transfer at work to work at jhb since the company was around each and every province, a month before i left i was hanging out with helen

Helen; im so happy we back together

Me;....

Helen; whats wrong

Me; im leaving

Helen; what you mean , you leaving

Me; im going back to jozi

Helen; why i thought everyone was good here

Me; it is good lala but my life is in jozi , my family , my business everything i was only coming here for a few months

Helen; what about me and you

Me; i still care for you , a lot but you of all people know being stable aint my thing

Helen; but you were with amahle why you failing to do that with me

Me; with me and amahle it was different, something different you what you and me have

Helen; which is sex, im not worthy to be in a relationship with you

Me; dont degrade yourself like that cause i didnt say that

Helen; you know what fine dre

Me; you mad

Helen; of course im fucked up mad, iv been sleeping with youf or the past few months and all off a sudden you tell me we cant be in a relationship and you leaving

Me; lala im sorry but thats just how it is

Helen; whatever dre

She took her bags and walked away

When my transfer forms were all approved and i was ready to leave i sent helen somethign to cheer her up and just so she wont be mad at me for a while and went back home. Arrived in an empty house i left my bags and headed out got to themba place

Me; hi

She quickly turned and she screamed

Me; \*laughing\* you loud

Ntombi; hai suka , why didnt you say

Me; cause i wanted to surprise you

Ntombi; uyabora shame dre

Me; wheres themba

Ntombi; his not here

Me; i came to pick you up, im back and i want you back nobody else

Ntombi; \*laughing\* im tired off moving

Me; oh so you dont want to come back

Ntombi; i will but

Me; but

Ntombi; you no longer leave and i mean ever dre

Me; i was leaving cause off work you know that

Ntombi; yeah but still no more leaving right

Me; yeah no more leaving geez woman  
She laughed

After few hours themba arrived and well we fought for ntombi but ntombi new were home is lol , when we got home i told her to just relax hence she just got back. We just chilled and watched movies

Me; this is boring

Ntombi; well im enjoying it

Her eyes didnt even move from the screen. I looked at her , she turned to look at me

Ntombi; what

Me; nothing

She moved her eyes back to the screeen

I went for the kill but she just pulled back fast

Ntombi; dont

Me; why

Ntombi; one it will make things awkward between us , i still have respect for your relationship with amahle and you not all off that, that every girl wants to shove their tongue down your throat

I laughed

Mel im sorry

Ntombi; \*laughing\* its cool all off you whats up

Me; what you mean all off you

Ntombi; themba has the same tendencies as you

Me; well im sorry for the both off us

Ntombi; its fine in a way i understand i am attractive after all

I just laughed and brought her in for a hug

## INSERT #138

### #ANDRE

well nothing changed in the past few months except our age, i was back to being the dre everybody knows and i didnt realise how much i missed doing what i do best until i back to it again. I woke the next morning next to this beautiful girl, i covered her naked body and went downstairs

Me; hi ntombiyami

Lol that what i called her now

Her; helo dre

me; \*laughing\* you ohk

Her; yes you

Me; im ohk can you please make us breakfast

Her; ohk

Went back upstairs and she was up

Me; morning beautiful

Her; hey you

We kissed

Me; breakfast will be ready in like 10-15 minutes

Her; so what do you suggest we do

Me; let me show you

I got on top off her and kissed her neck , she tilted her head back and went down on her , she held the sheets into a fist and let out a number of moans, i licked and sucked till she could not take it anymore, she pulled me up and i kissed her again. I flipped us over and she was on top off me and she went down on me and she did some magic down there until i cum on her mouth. Ntombi knocked on our door and we both laughed

Her; i think breakfast is ready

Me; \*laughing\* i think im full now

She punched me

Her; lets go

She took my gown, wore my boxers and went downstairs.  
Ntombi set it for us outside

Her; thank you for yesterday had a great time

Me; \*smiling\* you dont have too

Her; will i see you again

Me; yeah if you want to

Her; i want too

Me; ohk then will make a plan

Her; ohk

We ate our breakfast then dropped her off at her place,  
went to themba crib , he had my house keys and i had his  
. Opened the door and the was some naked girl at the  
kitchen she covered herself

Me; please call themba

Went to sit on the lounge and this idiot jumped on the  
couch

Themba; hey man

Me; whos that

Themba; wuye ( shes herself)

Me; \*laughing\* zkhiphane (whats up)

Themba; nix boza yami your side

Me; same here singikshiye nebitch yakho ( let me leave you with your bitch )

Themba; ay uyavaya nou lomuntu sovaya sonke ( she leaving right now will leave together

She came down dressed and left

Themba; singiyo splasha ( let me go bath)

I watched tv and took a bottle ye heinekein and waited for him after a few minutes he came down

Themba; ehhhhh did you head ma ada died

Me; ehhhhh ntwana like i heard about it but i just took it slightly

Themba; its true the funeral is Saturday

Me; we must go

Thembe; sure i also didnt know the guys from that side called me

Me; i havent seen them in a while

Themba; same here i was surprised to even get a call from them

Me; ai ntwana we must go find out the time for us

Themba; sure lets go

Got up and he locked

Went to some place we do our hair tebogo was the guy  
that did our hair

Tebogo; sure bo kau

Us; sure

Themba; let me start

Me; ohk

Themba; ntwana cut it here and here but not all of it here

Tebogo; ohk

Themba; manje ntwana leya outi ( so that guy)

Me; ahhh loyo uyahlanya angina skhathi sakhe ( his mad i  
dont have time for him)

Themba; maningi lama bari afuna ukuzenza wena ne ( too  
many of this idiots trying to be you )

Me; yhoooo ntwana ende never bafike ( and they will  
never get here )

Themba; funny how he is a dr but is not satisfied with that

Me; yazi boy you can repeat that

Themba; sure so what does he want manje

Me; which is why im saying his mad

When he was done. I got on the seat

Me; oh la on the side cut it short but here just leave it

Themba; ahhh ntwana zigunde kancane ( ah boy cut it )

Me; zinkulu? ( is it big)

Themba; sure

Me; ohk kancane ke la ( ohk cut it even here)

Tebogo; ngiyenze futhi edye ( dye?)

Me; sure

Themba; theres some event in alberton we could come back with fresh things

Me; manje wena ufunu ukuya ( you want to got there)

Themba; trust me , sizobuya ne mali manje nje wena mele uvaye nami, ngoba yimi, no jack mele sivaye nawe ( trust me will come back with money but you want go with me cause it will be me and jack so you must come with us)

Me; mara lentwana ikhulile kule besigheid ne ( but this boy grew in this business ne)

Themba; kakhulu boy , like ngathi uvele waba yindoda ( big time, he just became a man)

We laughed

After that, we went to get something to eat then went back home

Next day on a Friday went to work and i was with my girl unathi

Me; uyakuphi ksasa ( where are you going tomorrow)

Unathi; siyaphi ( where are we going)

Me; \*laughing\* kune funeral esiya kuyo, elinye igintsa awufuni ukuhamba nathi ( funeral of some clever dont you wnat to go with us)

Unathi; eish skirt?

Me; \*laughing\* vele ( yes)

Unathi; what time

Me; sokhulumaphonini , ngoba uthemba uzong phonela ( will talk via phone, cause themba will call to tell me about that)

Unathi; ohk ugrand mara ( you good though)

Me; ngi mnandi ntwana wena iphi lebari yakho ( im good wena wheres that idiot of yours)

Unathi; \*laughing\* ungathi umuntu wami ebari ao ( dont say im bf is an idiot)

Me; isoka lakho ke ( your lover ke)

Unathi; ukhona ngimuthanda ( his around i love him)

Me; ai suka

Unathi; ey wena uyabora yazi. ( you boring)

Me; but he doesn't relax yazi

Unathi; wuye othanda ukuzi stressa nje , ngoba uyazi  
kukuthi niy mpintshi zami ( his the one who likes to stress  
himself out cause i told him you are my friends)

Me; mele ngikbambe nge roma one time phambkwakhe ( i  
must kiss you one time in front off him)

Unathi; voestek umdala mara wena yazi eroma ( piss off  
you so old though you even know what a roma is)

Me; \*laughing\* yiyo into oyaziyo leyo phela ( thats the  
only thing you know)

Unathi; voetsek angithi wena uwazi e \*she paused\* (   
thats because wena you kn...)

Me; ini (what?)

Unathi; angifuni ukthukana ( i dotn want to insult you)

Me; uyenza kahle ( good keep it that way)

We received e call. Attended all off our calls and knocked  
off. We went to grab something to eat. Themba called to  
let us know the info. Then dropped her off at home and  
went home

INSERT #139

Woke up in the morning wore a pair of blue jeans, white shirt, and black formal shoes, and black hat. Headed out. Themba picked me up , he had already picked up unathi. We went to dlamini and it was packed. When we got out off the car eyes were all on us. More on me but i paid them no attention. We were at the back so we heard nothing. Then it was time to leave , themba threw me the car keys , and i went on the driver seat , unathi looked beautiful, she was wearing a black dress that revealed her body perfectly and black heel. We both got on the car and waited for the hearse to move out

Guy; sure turner

Me; sure

Guy; ncela ukvaya nawe ( can i please go with you)

I looked at him

Guy; ngyakcela ( please the bus is full)

Me; get in boy

He got in then we were 4

Me; dont even get close to her

Guy; sure yhooooo ugrand mara ( are you ohk)

Me; ngi grand wena ( im good you)

Guy; ngi mnandi mthimbane (im good themba)

Themba; sure

Guy; ugrand nawe (you also good)

Themba; sure

Unathi; does everyone here know the 2 of you

Me; y....

I got cut off

Guy; yes izinja phela lezi ( big dogs these 2)

Unathi; hmmmm

We drove to the cemetery , the were some crazy things that were done then we drove home. We washed our hands and went on the q. A lot off people wanted to sit with us and we were ohk with it. I had already had a few girls that were crazy for me , and themba but we made sure unathi was not bored

Me; so whats your name

Her; oratile

Me; ora

Her; \*laughing\* yeah i never got yours

Me; turner

Her; turner?

Me; yeah you dont believe me

Her; yes

Me; ask them

Her; whats his name

Them; turner

Me; \*laughing\* believe me now

Her; yeah

We bought alcohol and it was the after tears. Unathi was having fun me and themba were having fun life was good

Me; so will you go home with me

Ora; im not going to sleep with you

Me; i didnt say you have too

Ora; ohk but im not sleeping with you

Me; ohk , you coming with me or

Ora; yeah but i cant leave like this

Me; where do you live

Ora; phiri

Me; ohk its not far, will got to your place you go change then we leave ke

Ora; ohk im going to sit with my friends when we about to leave you will tell me

Me; ohk

She left

The guy we drove with

Guy; mara turner did you hear kuthi nenyenye iouti ifuna kuba wuwe ( did you hear about this guy who wants be like you)

Me'; \*laughing\* ubani loyo ( who is that)

Guy; they call him master

Themba; \*laughing\* master bari yakuphi ke leyo ( idiot from where)

Guy 2 ; ay unama simba yena ( his the shit )

Me; ay ngyambongela madoda sothini ( good for him what can i say)

Guy; mele umcishe ( you must take him out)

Me; ngicishana nabantu mina ay wena ( do i take people out mina)

Guy 3; but on the real, ulethe ishishini ekasi ( his has brought something on the street though)

Themba; aba ringi ngo kau ( arent they talking about the guy)

Me; nami ngiyasolo boy ( thats what im thinking too)

Guy 3; i dont know him face to face but xhosa guy

Me; \*laughing\* wuye ntwana ( its him boy)

Themba; ahhhhh dont even tell us about that one his taking chances

Guy 2; akathathi ma chance ( his not taking chances)

Themba; ehhhhh wena dont believe everything you hear

Me; just leave that man

We talked about other things they even brought us more meat , around 7 called oratile . We left it was so many off us. We all went past ora house she jumped out off the car , came back and she looked really nice

Me; mama are you coming with us

Themba; sihamba naye vele ( we going with her vele)

Unathi; \*laughing\* nizobe ningishiyelani vele ( why would you leave me though)

We went to this place , the vibe was great, chilled vibes. We all got drunk and just had fun. Around 11 dropped off unathi, themba dropped me off and ora and he left with tshepiso

Ora; this is your place

Me; yes come on in

She walked in

Me; want anything?

Ora; no thank you

Me; \*laughing\* its just us here so i dont understand why you not free, what do you want

Ora; \*smiling\* what can you offer me

Me; i have beer and wine

Ora; wine will be nice

Moved it to the lounge. Well we talked for a while then went in for the kiss, she didnt hesitate to kiss me back , i lifted her up and walked to the bedroom i laid her on the bed, never breaking the kiss. I kissed her neck and she let out a moan. I moved my hand down her jeans unbuttoned them and pushed them down i broke the kiss and removed them , took out her top and she removed my top too. She bit her lower lip by the sight off my chest i just laughed and kissed her, i moved my hand inside her underwear and made circular movements on her clit. She grabbed my back and her breathing got faster the faster i moved my fingers the louder her moans, unexpectedly i inserted 2 fingers inside of her and she gasped for air the look on her face was priceless. I removed her underwear, then my jeans. I opened my drawer and took out a wrapper, removed it and put it on. I rubbed her clit again just too make her dripping wet she was soo wet that it was easy to slide in. I slowly pushed in and she was tight, she grabbed me so tight and my pace increased . The faster and deeper i got the louder her moans, and tighter her grip was

Next morning , turned to the other side and she was still sleeping. I took my laptop and got busy with it and had to make some transactions

Her;hmmmm

I looked at her and she slowly opened her eyes

Me; slept like a baby

She smiled

Her; yes

Me; morning

I kissed her forehead

Her; my mum is going to kill me

Me; \*laughing\* why?

her; cause i didnt sleep home

Me; will explain to mummy

Her; \*smiling\* what you doing

Me; work but im almost done then will eat ohk

Her; ohk

Me; \*shouting\* ntombi!!!!.... Ntombi !!!!

Her; whos that

She knocked

Me; come in

The door opened and she looked at the girl and back at me

Me; hi ntombiyami

Ntombi; \*laughing\* breakfast is done andre

Me; \*smiling\* thank you ne , and i transferred your money, if its not there today tomorrow you will get it

Ntombi; ohk thank you

Me; baby this is my half my right hand

Her; hi

Ntombi; hi, iv set the table outside ne

Me; thank you

She left

Her; and her?

me; she helps me around the house, more like my right hand

Her; what do you do?

Me; \*laughing\* why

Her; no indaba its seems like you loaded

Me; maybe i am, lets go eat

We got out off bed, gave her my top and walked downstairs

We ate our breakfast . Then dropped her off at home then went back home i was so tired.

INSERT #140

#AMAHLE

Monday woke up and prepared for work. Lubanzi came to pick me up

Me; hey baby \*kissing him\*

Lubanzi; helo nana

He kissed me back

Fastened the seat belt and we drove to work

Lubanzi; when is your day off again

Me; only tomorrow and friday

Lubanzi; ohk i knock off at 7 friday, will go out for dinner

Me; ohk , hows your mum

Lubanzi; she good, wont stop asking about you

Me; \*laughing\* wont complain to that

Lubanzi; she really likes you

Me; i enjoyed my time with her too, she is really nice and your dad too

Lubanzi; as for him, his ready to pay lobola for you

Me; \*laughing\* will i be mrs gwama soon

Lubanzi; i think you might just be \* smiling\*

We got to work and headed to our department, wore my jacket and name tag and began my rounds. Lunch time went to grab something to eat

Me; afternoon dr khan

Dr khan; afternoon dr

Me; \*smiling\* how are you ?

Dr khan; im good and you

Me; im exhausted

Dr khan; not as much as me believe me

We ate our lunch , then went back to work

I knocked off at 4, mbali picked me up cause she promised me food lol. Went in and kissed my baby

Me; i missed you so much

Thando; missed you too

Me; kiss me

He kissed me

Me; hey you

Mbali; hey babe

Me; you good

Mbali; im good you

Me; im good

She drove us to maponya . We went to spurs , i picked up thando and went up the escalators

Me; you not troubling mummy arent you

He shook his head

Mbali; wheres your man

Me; his knocking off at 8

Mbali; woooo

Me; wheres daddy

Mbali; his around ey

We went in, ordered what we would have and talked none stop

Me; hows work

Mbali; hectic, eish mtase work nje yhooooo

Me; haha you will get over it

Mbali; you never told me, how the meeting with the parents went

Me; \*laughing\* it was sooo good , his parents were nice mbali i mean really nice and they loved me

Mbali; woooo dr no dr

Me; \*laughing\* ai suka wena , athi his father is ready to send ama lobola just imagine

Mbali; lilili

Thando; lililil \*raising his hands up \*

Me and mbali just laughed

Me; deon must do a second born manje

Mbali; serious shame if he doesnt by the end off this year, im going to leave him

Me; \*laughing\* you mad

Mbali; serious we have been together for way too long and thando needs a brother or sister

Me; that does not mean anything kodwa

Mbali; ey im telling you this angithi , if he doesnt then its clear he does not want to more kids and i do

Me; ohk but you would die for him so i doubt

Thando pulled my top

Me; yes baby

Thando; toilet

Me; lets go baby

Picked him up and we went to the toilet, helped him and we went back. We ate our food paid and left

Got home and tomorrow was my birthday and i was picking up my baby i was so excited that i had to ask someone to hold my shift for me. Felt like someone was watching me i opened my eyes and it was my baby i just smile

Lubanzi; happy birthday to my queen , happy birthday to my queen, happy birthday to you \*singing\*

He kissed me and i pushed my head back

Lubanzi; baby come on

Me; i have not brushed my teeth

He just got on top off me , and kissed me and i just laughed

Lubanzi; come here

Me; wait

Went to the bathroom and walked down with him. My lounge had balloons on the ceiling , paperbags and a birthday cake that had my name on it

I turned to him and hugged him

Me; thank you so much baby, i love you so much

Lubanzi; love you more

Breakfast was served and i could not wait to open my bags there were more than 10 paper bags there

Me; can i open them \*excitedly \*

Lubanzi; \*laughing\* go ahead nana

Jumped on the sofa and this man , just made me the happiest woman ever

I stood up and kissed him, he picked me up and walked with us to my bedroom. He laid me on the bed , i removed his top and unbuttoned his jeans and pushed them down. He removed my top cause i slept with only a top. He kissed my neck and i tilted my head back , he moved his hand down my V i opened my legs wide for my man and he made circular movements to my clit, i pulled him closer to me and bit his neck ,his fingers moved more faster and i moaned on his ear. He opened my drawer and took out a condom , put it on and slowly went in i dug on his back and he went in deeper, he lifted my leg and placed it on his waist and went even deeper, and my moans and his groans filled the room until we both zoned off

We cuddled then went to take a shower together , got a bit naughty then went out. I wore a black dress that went above my shoulders and black heels. He got dressed and we left. We went to the mercedes garage at rosebank and walked in my baby was wrapped up. I just smiled. Went to sign everything i needed to sign , they handed me my keys. My baby took a lot of pictures

Lubanzi; il be right behind you ohk

Me; ohk

Went in, still smelled off fresh leather, touch the steering wheel and it was beautiful . I inserted the keys and the sound it made , i was driving a beast i prayed and took off , i could not believe i had my own car. Drove to my aunts place and she was so happy to see everyone was there including pa. They hugged me and congratulated me

Pa; i cant believe you bought such an expensive car for your first car

Me; \*laughing\* i dream big pa

Pa; they would be so proud of you i know they are

Me; are you proud off me

Pa; i have my very own doctor, you just bought your car why would i not be proud

Me;thank you pa

I hugged him

We had lunch they sang for me then my baby took me out. We wined and dined. The staff there sang for me and could not believe it nje it was the best day ever for me.

## INSERT #141

### #AMAHLE

Next morning woke up and my baby was sleeping went downstairs and his helper was up

Me; hi ma

Maria; unjani sthandwa

Me; ngyaphila ma

Maria; happy belated birthday

Me; \*laughing\* uyakhumbula kanti

Maria; ngingakohlwa kanjani

I helped her with breakfast, took a tray upstairs and he was busy on his phone

Me; thank you for not ruining the surprise

Lubanzi; i know you too well nana

Kissed him and we ate

Me; i have to go babe

Lubanzi; eish i cant pick you up anymore  
Me; \*laughing\* no... Il see you Friday right  
Lubanzi; yes baby wami  
Kissed him and left

Arrived home, went to shower, wore a royal blue dress and blue heels and headed to work, arrived and began my shift. It was a really hectic day, even changed to flats. Around 9. i knocked off and headed home

Cooked, ate then it was bed. Thursday was just another day. Friday was off, went to pamper myself in the morning cause i was going out, 7 my baby came to pick me up

Lubanzi; my beautiful queen

Me; my king

I kissed him

Lubanzi; ready to go

Me; yes baby

Lubanzi; i love you ohk

Me; how much

Lubanzi; so much baby

He kissed my hand

Me; so from next month i will start working nightshift

Lubanzi; ready for it ?

Me; i think so baby , its not like i have a chance

Lubanzi; whenever you bored, you will just call me

Me; \*laughing\* you only a phone call away

Lubanzi; for you yes sthandwa sami , when is your grandfather leaving ?

Me; i think this weekend , Sunday

Lubanzi; baby

Me; hmmmm

Lubanzi; tell me about your past relationship

Me; my past relationship

Lubanzi; yes

Me; theres nothing to tell

We got to the restaurant , wined and dined then went to his place

I removed my shoes

Lubanzi; why you so secretive

Me; im not secretive

Lubanzi; then why dont you want to talk about your past relationship

Me; cause theres nothing to tell

Lubanzi; well il love to know

I looked at him

Me; why you so interested in my past relationship

Lubanzi; i just want to know

Me; dated only 3 guys in my life when i was still a child

Lubanzi; tell me about them

Me; one was when i used to stay at capetown nothing interesting, 2 biggest mistake , third \* i paused\*

Lubanzi; third?

Me; third just a normal relationship

Lubanzi; ngathi theres a story

Me; theres no story lubanzi

Lubanzi ; what did he do

Me; medic, im going to the shower

He grabbed my hand and pushed me against the wall

Me; \*shouting\* what is wrong with you? Whats this all about

He let go

Lubanzi; im sorry

Me; let go off me

I got away from his grip and went to take a shower, went out and he was sitting on the bed

Lubanzi; im sorry

Me; ....

Lubanzi; baby i just wanted to know the other side of your relationships

Me; by forcing me

Lubanzi; its just you were so secretive about it

Me; im not secretive i just didnt want to talk about it

Lubanzi; but why

Me; cause its my past , you never tell me about your past why should i

Lubanzi; i never had a serious relationship until i was 21 her name was mihla , she was 20 and was studying logistics, we broke up after a year of our relationship. Then met mbali , we had a good thing going on and she was into accounting we broke up because i was not in love with her anymore then i met you

Me; just like you told me about your past relationship when you wanted too, i will do the same

Lubanzi; ohk im cool with that

Me; ohk im going to bed

Lubanzi; i love you hok

Me; i love you too

Kissed him and we switched off the lights

Kept tossing and turning , woke up and went to make myself something to eat, lubanzi sudden interest was bothering me i dont even want to lie why was he suddenly interested and should i lie. Lying was the best option because i didnt want this guy to judge me for my past mistakes nje

INSERT #142

#AMAHLE

Woke up the next morning mam maria bought breakfast for us and it was just silence between us

Lubanzi; im sorry for yesterday , its fine im just going to forget about it

Me; my last relationship, the guy was cheating on me so i left him, name andre and he was a paramedic , before him brandon i left him for andre cause i was not in love with him, guy before brandon orlando he cheated on me with my x best friend

Lubanzi; how long did you date

Me; who

Lubanzi; andre

Me; a year

Lubanzi; where you in love with him

Me; yes i was deeply and he was too or so i think

Lubanzi; what did he do

Me; cheat

Lubanzi; no i mean work?

Me; medic

Lubanzi; medic?

Me; yes but

Lubanzi; but what?

Me; he did some dodgy business

Lubanzi; crime ?

I raised my eyebrow

Lubanzi; just a wild guess

me; yes crime, he was a crime lord everybody feared him  
or wanted to be him but he was not that person to me

Lubanzi; what you mean

Me; he was sweet and lovable to me , nothing compared to what people made him out to be

Lubanzi; he was different with you

Me; yes , his friends always said i was his weakness and people only needed me for him to do stuff which is why im glad we broke up so i dont have to live in fear

Lubanzi; totally understand so lunch?

Me; i cant already promised my grandfather that

Lubanzi; ohk you leaving now

Me; yes baby

Kissed him then dressed up

Me; il call you later on, tomorrow im not working but il be going to church then il take you out for lunch

Lubanzi; \*laughing\* ohk come here

I got on the bed and kissed him but he pulled me on top off him

Me; baby

Lubanzi; do you really have to go

Me; yes baby , i really have to go

Lubanzi; ohk let me get up

Me; dont worry already called a taxi

Lubanzi; ohk

Me; i love you

Lubanzi; love you too call me when you home

Me; ohk

Went out and the taxi was already out. Got home and took a nap cause i was exhausted. Woke up around 11. went to take a long bath. Wore a denim mini , white long sleeve turtle neck top , and carried denim jacket that i just placed on my shoulders, shades and white sandal heels with strips that went up my knees, took my car keys and went to pick up my grandfather. We went to a restaurant, rocco mamas

Me; so when you leaving pa

pa; tomorrow my angel

Me; will you be ohk alone

Pa; yes im a grown man

Me; il find someone for you ohk , too look after you and cook for you

Pa; i can cook for myself

Me; pa please, you cant live alone, you far away from me and i cant worry about you each and every day wondering if you safe and im sure you dont want me to stress myself

Pa; fine do whatever you want to do

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

Pa; so how are you my baby

Me; im good, im happy

Pa; are you really happy?

Me; yes

Pa; when was the last tim...

Me; pa dont, dont even mention his name im so over him and im happy you also need to forget about him im with lubanzi now and im very much happy, he makes me happy pa i love him

Pa; you do?

Me; yes, his perfect his not into some shaddy stuff. He understands me

Pa; well princess if you happy then theres nothing else i can say

Me; are you happy for me

Pa; of course i am like i said as long as you happy

Me; ohk , im having this you

Pa; this i hope i can eat it

Me; if not you will get something else

Pa; so will you be getting married anytime soon

Me; \*laughing\* pa i cant believe you just said that

Pa; what? I have to ask

Me; i dont know maybe i will be actually

Pa; \*laughing\* look at you all grown up

Me; thank you so much ohk pa

Pa; for what

Me; everything never giving up on me , for everything

Pa; you my child i dont even know why you asking me that , right now im just waiting for a grandchild

Me; \*laughing\* not now pa, believe me not now

Pa; of course not im still young right now

We both laughed

We ate our lunch and had a good time. Then we went to buy some things he didnt want any clothes but i wanted to spoil him and he just allowed me also bought myself a few things and thando. I loved that kid then went back to the car, dropped things off at thando and thando was happy to see pa, he loved him

Me; hi deon

Deon; hey lala

Hugging him

Deon; you good

Me; im good you?

Deon; all good why you hiding

Me; no im not

Deon; oh yes you are

Me; everytime i come here you not around, so dont blame me

Deon; whatever

We hugged

Me; i missed the little guy over here and you know i get a lil carried away sometimes

Mbali; you need to stop spoiling him

Me; i think its too late for that now

Thando; thank you aunty mahle

Me; pleasure my sweetie , can i get a kiss

He nodded his head , kissed him and we left

Pa; i cant wait to see you with your own child

Me; \*laughing\* because off the way im with thando

Pa; yes you would swear he was your child

Me; i guess i just have that soft spot for kids

Pa; and it looks so good on you

Me; \*laughing\* i think i might have a child sooner than expected just to make you happy

He just laughed. Arrived at my aunt and we both walked out

Me; hi aunty

Auny; hi my angel

I hugged her

Aunt; nihambe kahle (how did you go)

Me; yes aunty , wena ubuye nini ( when did you come back?)

Aunt; ngaboma 2

Me; pa

Pa; yes baby

Me; travel safe ohk

Pa; i will can you not worry for once nje baby

Me; \*smiling\* i cant help it sometimes , when i come down there ohk

Pa; ohk take care of yourself and i love you

Me; i love you too, il call you everyday

I kissed him, then my aunt and left

Got home i was full so went to take a shower then bed

Next Sunday woke up and dressed up for church after, church dropped off mbali mum and then went to pick up my baby for our lunch. He asked for me to stay over and i agreed. Went home, packed a bag for the week and went back to his place

## INSERT #143

Few months passed i was in a happy relationship. I was just living my dream life. September arrived it was a hot september already. Got back from work ate, took a shower then went to bed. Suddenly i could not breath i opened my eyes and the was a man standing over me , covering my nose and suddenly i just zoned out

## #ANDRE

Me; do you have any idea how sexy you are

Her; tell me

Me; how about i sh.....

My phone rang but i just ignored it

I kissed her neck and she bit her lower lip , i moved my hand down her V and....my phone rang again

Her; can you just answer it

Me; eish sorry babe

I took it, answered it and kissed her

Guy; turner , turner, turner

I went down her neck and she moaned

Guy; turner

Me; you called to shout my name or talk

I kissed her breast and she grabbed the sheets....

Guy; i have something of yours

Me; what would that be mr thami

Thami; \*laughing\* good thing you know who you talking to

I did not break the kisses

Guy; how about you give me your attention i swear you will not regret taking this call

Breathed out loud and got out off bed walked downstairs

Me; man can you start talking i have a beautiful woman in my bedroom that i would love to fuck

Guy; and i would love to fuck amahle

I remained silence

Guy; got your attention now

Me; what?

Guy; you heard me, manje uzongimamele fondin (you will listen to me) , i got it didnt i , im the only one that actually found your weakness didnt i

Me; where is she?

Guy; im looking at her right now

Me; what the fuck do you want man?

Guy; i want everything of yours , your business including your reputation

Me; kill her

Guy; what?

Me; you want to kill her right , kill her i dont give a fuck anyway

Guy; you lying

Me; are you listening to what im saying or should i speak slower. I said kill her , got it now.. Good

I hung up

I rushed upstairs and got the girl dressed

Me; listen i need to go and you need to go too, should i drop you off or

Her; ohk

She got dressed and left, as i was going to drop her i asked the guys to meet me at the warehouse, i dropped the girl home and my phone would not stop ringing, got to the warehouse

Me; this master guy got amahle

Them; what? / no man/ how/ how did he know where she lived

Me; i dont know , ohk i dont know

I was panicking and shaking

Themba; what did he say

Me; a whole bunch off stuff like how he wants every shit i own and i told him to fuck off and kill amahle

Dorian; ohk that way he will know that amahle is no use to him

Me; but he wont kill her

My phone rang and it was the same number, i put it on speaker

Me; is it done

Him; dont fuck with me turner i will do it

Me; if you wanted to do it you would have so where  
should i meet you

Him; my place

Me; how about an open area, the hills

Him; fine

Me; ohk il be there right now and bring the girl along

Him; fine

I hung up

Me; lets go

## INSERT #144

Got to the hills and i was armed and the guys. Two cars showed up , i didnt know who i was expecting , the car door opened and some guy walked out and walked towards me

Guy; turner, finally we meet

Me; \*laughing\* you want to be me this bad

Guy; fuck you !

Me; wheres the girl?

Guy; in the car

Me; so will you get her or should i

One off the guys he was travelling with dragged her out off the car , she looked fucked up beautiful, she was wearing just a top, her hair covered, tape on her mouth and eyes covered , also tied. I was so scared to walk up to her

Me; was all that shit necessary

Guy; will you give me what i want or not

Me; she could be the wrong girl for all i care, let me see if its her

Guy; dont fuck with me turner

I turned to my car

Guy; fine check her out

I turned back and walked up to her

Guy; no you cant remove that cover

Me; why the hell not

Guy; you just cant

Me; she knows you doesnt she

Guy; will you give me what i want or not

Me; let me see if its what i want or no

She was on her knees i bent down next to her, one hand carrying a gun the other free, i removed ear plugs first, then the tape. She was crying

Her; please dont kill me, please il give you anything you want, please just dont kill me please \*crying\*

I removed the eye cover with the gun , her eyes were closed , she slowly opened them. She looked so relieved to see me, we just got lost in each other eyes. I could have done this at a better time but her lips were just calling for me i planted a kiss on her lips and they were so cold

Her; \*crying\* dre

Me; you will be ohk

I wiped her tears and stood up and she looked at the guy

Her; lubanzi whats going on

Guy; shut the fuck up

Me; lubanzi

Guy;....

Me; so i was right she knows you

She looked so beautiful and yet confused and scared

Me; so what you want in exchange for her

I stood right in front of the guy he was so intimidated he stepped back

Guy; EVERYTHING!

Me; you dont harm her you get everything

Guy; \*laughing\* iv never seen a man that is made weak by a skirt and worse case scenario for you a skirt that sold you out

Me; what?

Guy; \*laughing\* yes the bitch you want to give up everything for , she sold you out

I grabbed his shirt and pinned him to the car bonnet, his guys came at me with guns pointing in my face and the guys had guns pointing on their heads

I looked at amahle but she just looked down, thami laughed

Thami; get the fuck off me

I let go off him and backed away

Thami; touch me like that ever again and you will breath your last breath

Me; you fucken talk to much and i dont have time for this

I turned to walk away but the was a gun shoot and jack went down, i quickly turned and thami was holding the gun up amahle ran towards me and he got distracted trying to hold amahle, i hit him on the head with ,the end off the gun and he went down , i pulled my slide back and

a car showed up, amahle was behind me the entire time and thami had zoned off i let go off his head hitting the ground and walked towards the car that pulled up

Me; \*shouting\* TAKE JACK TO ALEX NOW!

Themba; theres no fucking hell im leaving you here

Me; make sure jack is safe and amahle go NOW!

Themba pulled amahle to the car and a car drove away , i turned and themba walked up to me

Themba; i aint leaving you

We had like 5 guys pointing guns at us but we were not worried about them, thami woke up from his dream

The door opened and some old guy walked out off the car

Him; the two brothers from another mother

Me and themba;....

Him; im so sorry we had to meet in such circumstances but this idiot wanted to do things his way

Me;.....

Him; which is why i had to rush here to stop all off this madness when i heard about it

Me;.....

Him; can we talk over lunch , drink

Me; you fucken send 5 year olds to do jobs for you , you let your idiot touch whats mine and allow him to disrespect me in the middle of the night to come and play fucken games with me then you come here all dressed up as if we in a fucken movie to offer me lunch or a drink do i look like your fucken friend and this idiot \* i pulled my slide back and pulled the trigger\*

He screamed off pain and guns were all up in my face again

Me; SHOOTS MY FUCKEN BROTHER AND YOU WANT TO HAVE FUCKEN LUNCH

The guy turned to thami who was literally screaming

Him; put those guns down and take him away

Guys;....

Him; i said take him away

They helped him up to the car

Him; i have great respect for you and \*he paused\*

Themba; fuck you man, fuck you

We turned and walked away

Him; dont make me do this

We turned to him and he had a gun pointing at us

Me; im fucken tired off people threatening to pull the trigger , pull the fucken trigger

He looked at me and walked back to the car , me and themba got out off there.

Got to my place and alex was already there, he took care off jack and he was able to stop the wound from bleeding. I went upstairs to check on amahle it was so awkward for me, ntombi was rubbing her back since she was crying so i just decided to leave her there

Next morning i went to check up on jack

Jack; \*slowly\* hey

Me; you ohk

He nodded his head

Me; im sorry i put you through this

Jack; requirements off being a gangster right

I laughed

Me; who told you , you are a gangster

Jack; if you are one that means i am too

Me; number one i aint no gangster

Jack; then what are you

Me; a person that makes money and has a gun and a normal family , no gangster has that

He laughed

Me; im really sorry jack

Jack; if i had to do it again, i would

Me; alex will take care off you

I shook his head and went up to my bedroom, I opened my bedroom door and she was covering herself i got on my side off the bed and removed the covers from her face she was fast asleep. Her lips pouting, i just immediately fell in love with her again is this crazy not see someone for years and when you finally see them again , feelings come running back as if they never left, i covered her face again and scratched my head

Themba; his not dead we have to finish the job

I turned to the door

Me; but first i have to found out how he knows amahle

Themba; how is she

Me; shes sleeping man, and ....

Themba; and what?

Me; i dont know

Themba; you still crazy for her

Me; i think so

Amahle; hmmmmmm

Themba; let me leave seems like you both need to talk  
He closed the door

I just looked at the covers move , she pulled them down  
and her beauty was just revealed. We just looked at each  
other and said nothing until she broke the silence

Amahle; im sorry

I got up and walked to the door

Amahle; andre im sorry

Me; \*shouting\* YOU SORRY , I WOULD HAVE BEEN  
KILLED AND YOU CAN ONLY SAY YOU SORRY

Amahle;.....

Me; YOU TELLING EVERYONE MY SHIT NOW , WHAT I  
DO?

Amahle; i didnt know about him ohk, i didnt know he was  
after you

Me; WHATEVER SHIT YOU HAVE TO SAY, YOU HAD NO  
BUSINESS TELLING HIM SHIT ABOUT ME. MY MAMI SOLD  
ME OUT TO PEOPLE WHO WANT ME DEAD, I KNOW I  
HURT YOU BUT FOR YOU TO WANT TO HURT ME LIKE  
THIS

Amahle; \*shouting\* i was not trying to hurt you, i did not  
know dre i did not know how am i suppose to know every  
guy who is asking me out is just out to get you, im sorry

Then she just broke down, i left her there and went downstairs

Themba; you not being fair

Me; dont even start with me

Themba; how the hell was she suppose to know, she was probably having a harmless conversation and that guy took advantage off it

Me; makes no difference

Themba; it makes a huge difference cause you know deep down that girl does not want to see you go down

Me; focus on your own shit man

I did whatever i wanted to do, talking to the guys and stuff, ntombi came down with the plates she went up with still full off food

Me; why are those plates full

Ntombi; shes not eating, shes just crying

I got up , took the plate and went upstairs, opened the bedroom door and she was not there, i sat on the bed and she walked out off the bathroom

Me; are you ohk

She shook her head and sat on the floor

Me; did you get hurt

Her; no

Me; can you eat

Her; im not hungry

Me; why did you tell him

Her; he used me

Me; who

Her; lubanzi, she just used me to get closer to you , no wonder he asked about my past relationship , how can i be such a fool

Me; so you were dating him

She nodded her head

Me; you still had no business telling him about me

Her; im sorry ohk its not like i did it on purpose

Me; cool

Her; thank you for yesterday and saving my life

Me; sure

I got up , she was having such an effect on me. Went to wash my face and went back

Her; i need to go

Me; its not over yet amahle

Her; he will come after me

Me; i dont know, but he will get to you over me and as long as he is not dead you cant leave

Her; you will kill him

Me; yes

Her; what? Thats crazy , he has parents that love him and a family, he has a job

Me; his real name is thamsanqa this lubanzi is made up ralarala his parents died when he was 8, he grew up on the streets , the place he lived at was not his. He was a dr from the eastern cape, he has no real family and everything that you had with him is a lie

Her; no thats not true, how would you even know him

Me; he wants to take me down , take everything i own and have i did a research on him so whatever he told you was a lie so you will fall in love with him and open up to him about me

Her; he knows my family , he can get them

Me; which is why he needs to die, i have to go

I went downstairs and she followed me, went to the garage and took my baby

Her; do you really have to

Me; do you want to wake up to news that pa was killed or mbali or mbali mum

She shook her head

Me; then go do something just stay here until i get back

#AMAHLE

Seeing dre again brought back some kind off feelings, ntombi made me something to eat and i was in bed the whole day. Could not believe he lied to me about such and could not believe i was in danger because off dre. I cried thinking about my times with lubanzi or thami but quickly wiped away my tears. I stayed in bed for hours and hours. He left his phone i took it and went through his photos, there were naked girls there, him and the guys, and him with girls naked on the bed. He barged in and i froze with his phone

Dre; what you doing

Me; nothing

He roughly took the phone from my hands and saw the pic i was looking at, he looked at me

Me; can i go

Dre; police will call you just tell them truth on when you last saw your bf

Me; can you drop me off , i cant catch a taxi im naked  
He looked at me and walked out i followed him, said bye  
to ntombi and i directed him

Dre; when did you move out

Me; i dont remember

Dre; did you love him

Me; yes

Dre; more than me

Me;.....

I looked outside the window the drive was then quiet, i  
opened the door

Dre; arent you going to ask me back

Me; what?

dre; if i loved anyone else more than you

Me; why should i if i already know the answer to that can  
you come check if theres no one inside

Dre; ohk

He got out off the car

Dre; you live here alone

Me; yes

He walked in and i was downstairs, came back down and  
he looked so yummy

Dre; you clear  
Me; ohk thanks

He left. Went upstairs, took a long shower until i was disturbed by the buzz wrapped a towel around my body and ran downstairs. Opened the door....

## INSERT #145

### #AMAHLE

He wrapped his hand behind my neck , pulled me closer to him and just kissed me , i didnt even hesitate to kiss him back, he lifted me up and closed the door , he placed me on the kitchen counter and removed my towel, he pushed my body to lay back . He held my legs and opened them and the moment his tongue touch my clit. I knew daddy was home. He made his magic down there until i could not take it anymore i pulled him back up and walked upstairs, i pulled him to my room and he just pinned me to the door and picked me up i removed his top and he threw me on the bed he got on top off me i removed his jeans and i miss daddy jnr way more. He got on top off me and parted my legs apart i placed my leg on his waist and he just moved his fingers up and down my clit, he

kissed my neck and my eyes rolled at the back off my head and unexpectedly he entered me . I gasped for air and he looked at me straight in the eyes " i never stopped loving you "he said as he pushed himself deeper , " i still love you" where the only words i could say and he entered me hard , fast and deep, his groans filled my bedroom, my moans filled my bedroom. He picked me up and pinned me against the wall and entered me " make me cum baby" as i said that he just went faster and faster and i came, he came and we were both happy, he threw us on the bed and we just zoned off

Later that day opened my eyes and dre was just watching me before i could talk he just kissed me and i pulled him to me , we stayed in that position in silence

Me; papi

Dre; mami

Me; what did we just do

Dre; i think we just made love and fed our craving

Me; and what does this mean

Dre; thats all in your hands what it means to me is, i got my queen back dont know about you

Me; i dont know, i just found out the guy i was planning a future with lied to me

Dre; there was never a future if we were never together

Me; yes b...

He cut me off

Dre; did you mean what you said

Me; yes

Dre; we both still madly in love with each other, so why  
dont we just forget the past and just make each other  
happy

Me; its not as easy as you make it

Dre; it is now are you with me or not

Me; im with you

He looked at me

Dre; forever this time

Me; rules first

Dre; no cheating

I nodded my head

Dre; you mine forever now

Me; i always have been

Dre; come here

Me; \*laughing\* no

He pulled me closer to him , i covered my mouth and just kept on laughing. He held my hands " move them or i will" i shook my head , he tickled me and i just let go and we kissed. I was happy with lubanzi but this feeling i had was a feeling i was longing for. His phone rang

Me; take it , it could be important

Dre; ohk

He took it and answered it

Dre; sure boy \* he kissed me\* mmmmm i hear you? , eish \*he looked at me\*, ohk boy ngyeza (im coming), sharp

He hung up

Me; have to go

Dre; yes mami

Me; ohk i have to get ready anyway

Dre; for what

Me; im working nightshift

Dre; look at you

He kissed my nose, got up, dressed up and i just looked at him

Dre; i see your list got longer

Me; you mean the tattoo

Dre; yes now theres ma

Me; yeah its only fair i did it and i wanted her too

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; you what

Dre; \*laughing\* i love you sthandwa sami (my love)

We kissed and he left, i took a nap just after he left around 4 got up and went to take a shower , dressed up and went to work.

Night are hectic like hell, gunshot wounds, stabs , its hectic believe me. Around 3am went to grab quick snack then went back to work. 6 am i knocked off and drove home, made something to eat then went straight to bed. The rest off the week it was like that i didnt see lubanzi, there was no news about him and no signs of cops, i called his numbers a number of times , went to his place but nothing

friday evening made myself something to eat, the radio was on , i was in my bra and shorts and dancing to the song while cooking i loved living alone no lie. The buzz made its usual noise i checked the monitor and it was a black beemer , the window rolled down and i just buzzed him in. I waited for him to get in

Dre; this needs a video

I didnt stop dancing and he wouldnt stop laughing, he came behind me and kissed my neck

Me; hey papi

Dre; hi mami, i missed you

Me; did you really

Dre; you know i did , what you making im hungry

Me; why didnt you eat

Dre; cause i missed my womans food

Me; mxm, sit down im about to dish up

He walked to the lounge , after 10 minutes or so i went to the lounge with his plate first

Dre; you definitely a zulu woman

Me; \*laughing\* you want the food or not

Dre; \*smiling\* yes baby

I handed him the tray and went to take mine . Sat next to him and we both ate

Me; so wheres lubanzi

Dre; i dont know

Me; dre

Dre; lets not talk about that ohk

Me; ohk , hows your family

Dre; they ok but mum was disappointed about our break up, you know she was crazy about you

I smiled

Me; and how is kim

Dre; that one, varsity now

Me; you dont see her as much ne

Dre; yeah, i dont see her as much anymore

Me; you miss your little sister

Dre; \*laughing\* no but i missed my baby

Me; ai suka

My favourite song came on and he just looked at me " i wanna luv you" i began singing , the smile on his face just told me something. He got up

Dre; want to make this moment caucasian style

I just laughed, stood up and took his hand

Me; i cant dance

Dre; me too

He pulled me to him , i placed my right hand on his shoulder, left joined his right and his left on my waist and we just moved to the song. I pulled him to the couch, he took the remote and put it on repeat. He laid on his back on the sofa and i was on top off him

Dre; i wanna luv you, every night , every day , i wanna need you in my life, each day i wanna luv you every night everyday you know i need you in my life each day  
\*singing\*

I just laughed and kissed him , he squeezed my butt and brought me closer to him . He kissed my neck and i bit my lower so tight trying to hold back my moans , he got up from the sofa, my legs were behind him. He stood up and i locked my ankles, he placed me on the carpet on the floor. I removed his top and pushed his shorts down , he flipped me over and removed my top and unclipped my bra. He got on top off me again

He was balancing with his knees he grabbed my waist and pulled me closer to his legs , i balanced myself with my legs while he was holding my waist and he was on his knees, he had the best view off my body , he massaged my clit with his thumb while slowly entering me. I could not hold on to anywhere so i just squeezed my breast. He let out a groan and i moaned to the pleasure off him inside off me. He went in faster and the tighter his grip got on my waist. My body got up from the floor and back again , i held the corner off the table and couch and let out a number off moans , i could feel him inside off me , i could feel it inside off me and that drove me more crazy, i could feel something building inside off me and he

noticed, he rubbed my clit , i pulled him to me and tried to kiss him, his body hardened against mine , he held the behind off my neck so tight , more like choking me . His moans on my ear made me want him even more , his breath on my neck

Me; dre

I dont know why but i felt the need to call his name , tears rolled down my eyes and he pushed himself even harder inside off me and he pulled out ,his sperm was on stomach and his groan filled the lounge, My body began shaking uncontrollably and he let out the loudest groan as he cum and i let out the loudest moan that i had within me , i ran out off breath but He pulled me to him and kissed me anyway we both ran out off breath and we just laid dead on the floor

Next morning He got up and went to the kitchen i was still in that position , this guy knew how to weaken my body he sat on top off me

Dre; and this \*he was holding my car keys up \*

Me; \*laughing\* my baby

Dre; your first car is a benz

I nodded my head

Dre; \*laughing\* how much do you earn mami

Me; wont tell you that

Dre; why not

Me; how much do you make

Dre; i make about 10 mil, with cars thats minimum

Me; what?

Dre; yeah , now you

Me; \*laughing\* 40

Dre; your first pay check was 40 k

Me; yeah nakhona cause im still a general practioner

Dre; so if you were not a g.p

Me; like i want to get into surgery so il earn about 60

Dre; fuck then after deductions

Me; thats after deductions

Dre; so lets see this baby

He pulled me up, i grabbed his top and he wore his boxers. Went to the garage and went in

Dre; shes a beast

Me; have a good choice dont i

Dre; \*laughing\* i taught you well

I punched him

Dre; lets see if she really is a beast

he went on the driver seat , sat on the passenger , just imagine we both half naked

Dre; how long have you had this baby

Me; my birthday

He turned to me

Dre; so she was your birthday gift

Me; yes from myself to myself

Dre; kiss me

Me; \*laughing\* can you just drive

Dre; kiss me cause im really proud of you

I kissed him

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

ITS GOOD TO BE BACK HOME!

INSERT #146

He opened the garage and we passed the security on the complex.

Dre; how fast have you driven with her

Me; fastest 110

Dre; \*laughing\* mami you joking right

Me; \*laughing\* no

Dre; lets feed her , her craving ne

Me; and whats her craving?

Dre; min 160

Me; you crazy

Dre; not with this

He joined the freeway , i looked at him and he just smirked. The way this guy drove, the way he went over other cars, i watched at the speedometer and i just closed my eyes

Me; you crash my car im never talking to you ever again

Dre; \*laughing\* im a good driver

Me; and a crazy one

He slowed down and drove into a garage

Dre; so im craving something ne but im not dressed

Me; you dont even have money

Dre; i never leave money behind

He showed me

Me; \*laughing\* so who will go in cause im also not dressed

Dre; ohk i have a plan

He reversed the car and the guy came

Dre; sure give me 93 yeh 3hundred

Guy; ohk

Dre; can i ask for a favour

Guy; sure

Dre; eish me and the girl are not dressed and i want to buy something inside

Guy; \*laughing\* why arent you dressed

Dre; kohlwa ngalokho manje ( forget about that so?)

Guy; sure, ubadale nge khadi ( are you paying with a card)

Dre; no

Dre gave him 300 and 100 and he walked inside

Me; is she good enough for you

Dre; shes a beast like i predicted

Me; \*smiling\* you crazy

I looked outside

Guy; here shes your girl

Dre; no

I turned to look at them

Guy; ngfake ke ( help me out ke)

Dre; \*laughing\* ngikfake ( want me to talk for you)

Guy; sure , yho umuhle yazi ( yes, you beautiful you know)

Me; \*laughing\* thank you

Guy; ahhh ama outi ayasizana ( guys must help each other out)

Dre; \*laughing\* mcele ke ama number ( ask her for her numbers )

He sat back and folded his arms

The guy leaned on the window

Guy; listen girl , im just guy hustling but im sure i can make you happy numbers would do for now

I just laughed and dre was over the moon

Dre; \*laughing\* ahhh lah boy ngyakhaba , akudlalelwia la ( sorry boy but here i kill , i dont play when it comes to her)

Guy; yhooo ay nami ngingakhaba sengiphethe ipencheas elinje ( i would also kill if i had a peach like her)

Dre; ngizokzamela ( il help you out someday)

He took off with such speed

Me; do you ever drive slow

Dre; no and you enjoy it so dont act like you dont

Me; yeah right

He drove to his warehouse

Me; are you aware that we not dressed

Dre; come on, they know us

Me; im not getting out

Dre; suit yourself

He hooted then suddenly a guy approached the car and he realised it was dre and they opened he drove in and the guys just came out off nowhere

Themba; where did you get this beauty

Dre; the owner is inside

Deon; why arent you dressed

Themba leaned on the window and he screamed

Themba; \*laughing\* no way

Me; yes way

Suddenly everyone came and they went crazy. Themba opened the door and got in

Themba; why are you both not dressed

Me; you dont want to know

Themba; mami this is your baby like you went to the dealership?

Me; yeah ao \*laughing\*

Themba; shes beautiful im proud off you

Me; thank you

Dorian; this is a first, expensive car like this for a first car

Dre; she dreams big

Deon; i see you all excited about the car but i want to know this \*pointing at dre and me\*

Themba; yes on that note vele is mami and papi back together or

Dre; \*laughing\* you know mami and papi will always end up together no matter what

I just laughed

Dorian; its about time fuck this calls for a celebration please im dying to piss on my pants

Themba; yes please for old time sakes

Dre leaned on the window

Dre; you up for it

Me; i dont even know why you asking me that

Themba; ohk can i take this baby for a ride now she looks hungry for me

Dre; no way man, already did that , she ran 220

Deon; no way

Dre; way

Dorian; his lying ne mami

Me; \*laughing\* nope

Jack; why are you not dressed

Dre; thats not your business

Themba; mami hit the hood for me

I opened the hood for him

Themba; fuck this is beautiful

Themba envies cars i mean cars drive him crazy

Dre; let me take my woman away now

Themba; ahhhhh madoda, mami and papi definitely back together

Me; \*laughing\* but themba why you like this

Themba; im just happy mami

We all laughed

'dorian; so today right 6 dinner then hit the club

Dre; ohk

Me; including mbali, thando is staying with his grandma today

Deon; \*laughing\* he wont say no to that

Dre; il see you guys

He went to take his clothes then we went back to my place , we made breakfast

Dre; you want to eat what

Me; anything

Dre; ohk

He made breakfast while i tidied the place

Dre; why dont you find someone to help you around the place

Me; eish i just dont want someone to steal from me so its hard to trust people nowadays

Dre; but you do know you need someone right.. Oros , tea or just juice

Me; oros please and yes i do but where do i look babe?

Dre; you want someone old

Me; yeah but then i dont want to overwork the woman , with my clothes, cleaning and cooking its too much for an old person

Dre; then get someone young

Me; then she will drool over you, she might steal my makeup and wear my clothes

He peaked from the kitchen

Dre; \*laughing\* mami you know what you want or not

Me; i do but i want to find the perfect candidate

Dre; well good luck on that another thing we need to stop this habit off not using a condom

Me; yeah but

Dre; \*laughing\* i know mami its good, did you use it with the guy

Me; yeah all the time never ever made that mistake

Dre; so why dont you use it with me

Me; \*laughing\* why dont you grab it

Dre; mina my choice off words is i like to feel my woman and if i were to impregnate anyone it would be you so i dont mind not using it your choice off words

Me; i dont have

Dre; mami

Me; \*laughing\* honest truth

Dre; honest truth

Me; its perfect that way and i guess i feel the same with the baby issue cause with lubanzi even if i want it so bad if a condom was not there i was not doing it cause i didnt want to fall pregnant and i knew very well i was preventing but still i guess even though i was with him i had hoped you would come back and did not want you to find me with another mans baby you?

Dre; same here always used it whenever i had sex

Me; but still babe i think it would be best if we protected ourselves

Dre; lets do the same procedure with the prevention shit

Me; hiv tests

Dre; yeah

Me; ohk but im a dr i should know better

Dre; \*laughing\* whatever mina im comfortable with anyway you like it condom or not

Me; oviasly you were going to say that

Dre; vele but lets go consult and those type of shit i know you a dr but you know

Me; \*laughing\* i love you

Dre; who wouldnt love me

Me; voetsek

Dre; \*laughing\* love you... Come take the juice

Got up and went to the kitchen , took the juice and took it too the lounge. He came with our plates and fuck it looked so good

Dre; this is yours, no egg

Me; thank you

Dre; do you have pills

Me; yeah already took them

It was toasted bread, burgers, cheese that had melted , bacon and some sauce that was dripping and it was 4 slices this guy fed me and he knew i ate. We both dug in

## INSERTT #147

After our long shower, went to sit on the mirror and did my makeup

dre ; mami

me; hmmmm

Dre; i \* he paused\*

I turned to look at him and he was sitting on the other side off the bed looking the other way

me; whats wrong

Dre i , its just

Me; its just what?

He turned and looked at me

Dre; im done

I raised my eyebrow

Dre; i mean i know i told you this before and still fucked up but im done my ways of fucking each and every different girl, i have what i want and i want you , i want to make a life with you but i need to know if you feel the same so we wont waste each other time this is all that i need and i hope and wish this is what you want too?

Cause i dont want to fall even way deeper than i am in love with you so you will leave me for a surgeon or lawyer

I just looked at him

Dre; i want you too know who i am and love me for who i really am

Me; i...

He cut me off

Dre; let me finish. I got arrested when i was in grade 9 for armed robbery and was realised after 1 years then got arrested again and got realised when in my early 20s. crime has always been in my blood i began my business while i was in jail and joined a gang , i had to kill in order for me to be who i am. My father died when i was in prison. I steal cars, i deal with drugs, i do card scheming ,

i do fraud also do tradings . But im also a paramedic. I have a crazy obsession with guns and adrenaline rush. Yes i have killed and im ready to be judged on that when i die. When i was out My mum used to hit me each and everyday after my dad died , blaming me for my fathers death dont know why and sometimes she would just let me sleep outside , she always made sure that i knew my fathers death was my fault and maybe it was \*breathing fast\* i have a scary reputations on the streets, people will get to you to try and hurt me but i will never let anything happen to you. I love you so much that scares the shit out off me i know im asking a lot from you to accept all off this but if you decide to accept it i just want you to have my back at all times and just give me what i long for im done.

I just looked at him for one where did all off that come from, when i said nothing he just looked on the floor and covered his place

Me; iv been arrested twice \*he lifted up his head\* the first time i hosted a house party and the neighbours snitched on me , when i got to the police station the officers there beat the hell out off me, second time i beat up a girl that was fucking my man with a belt. I lost 3 important people in life and i once tried to take my life but it was not my time. Im into guys who are dangerous dont know why guess its an obsession iv only been in love once , and heartbroken once , im a dr i have my own place and car. I

have beat up a guy before but not killed. I dont have a reputation on the streets. Guys will be jealous of you i mean a lot off guys but they wouldnt hurt a fly \*he let out a slight laugh\*. I have 4 tattoos i dont have any side business. Im in love with a crime lord i did not know how that happened but it did. I would take a bullet for him and i picture him as my husband so if you accept my baggage i just ask off you to please be my husband and the father off my kids and be the best dad you can possibly be im done

Dre; i....

Me; oh wait im not done also please accept that i would like to adopt a child now im done

he just covered his face and walked up to me and gave me such a tight hug

Me; i love you so much, im sticking with you and i have you back

Dre; i love you so much more, how many kids you want

Me; 4

Dre; will adopt the 5th one ke

I just laughed and he kissed me

Dre; we stuck with each other right

I nodded my head

He kissed my forehead and i went back to my makeup

Dre was done and he was just laying on the bed looking at me. I wore a tight black mini long sleeve dress, with high knee black boots and took my small back. I tied the weave as a bun

Me; done

Dre; lets just cancel on them

Me; no now lets go

We kissed and took his car. Arrived to this place at braamfontein we were sitting on the roof top and the city lights beautiful as fuck

Mbali; why was i not told about this

Me; il tell you all about it promise

Unathi; good to have you back

Me; its good to be back

Dre eyes were on me every 5 second

#ANDRE

Themba; \*whispering\* shes not going anywhere

Me; \*laughing\* have to make sure

Themba; its good to see you this happy man

Me; im just happy im with her

Themba; dont make any fucked up decisions

Me; not this time around, shes all i need

He tapped my shoulders and i just laughed

Mbali; can this guy chill geez

Me; who

Amahle; unathi bf

Themba; \*laughing\* he knows you with us

Unathi; yeah he keeps on calling

Me; let me answer it

Unathi; no i know his already mad so dont make it worse

Dorian; mara lovy why you with this guy

Unathi; cause i like him

Themba; just listen to that like

Me; \*laughing\* yazi ntwana

Unathi; \*laughing\* i love him ke

Sandile; but he treats you like shit come to me

Unathi; i dont think so

Sandile; ahhh dont say that cause you know we almost dated

Amahle; and you suited each other

Sandile; thank you mami

They high 5

Amahle; \*laughing\* but babe on the real this guy is jealous i mean too jealous

Dre; come on i think every guy is jealous

Unathi; yeah and if his still jealous, it tells you that he loves you

Mbali; yho my friend you blind ne, yes your bf needs to be jealous vele , like deon jealous or dre jealous not obsessive jealous

Me; \*laughing\* please explain dre jealous

Mbali; if a guy can wink at amahle or try to make a move on her, you will get angry and shit and protective off her but unathi bf jealousy, is calling her every 5 minutes, he went to know who she is with and when shes coming back. Whenever a guy looks at her , he get angry at her and wants to change her unathi dont wear shorts anymore see the difference

Me; lovy he does that

Unathi looked at mbali

Mbali; what they need to know the truth

Sandile; oh hell no , what the fuck is this im hearing

Unathi; his just protective

Me; thats what he says

Unathi; dre dont

Me; dont what? Im asking

Unathi; just leave it guys

Themba; we cant do that lovy , you off all people know we a family and we protect each other so we dont stand back when some nigga nje tries to tell you bullshit

Dorian; exactly and this im being protective of you is bullshit

Unathi;.....

Me; listen baby mina ne i dont deal with shit i mean i dont deal with shit even amahle knows that but you will never see me , tot tot im on amahle case and lie to her and say im just protective of her. I dont like to hit a girl believe but if she thinks im an idiot mina then shit will go down so this nigga of yours im not sure whether his used to this or what

Deon; his fucken crazy

Unathi; well it will be my mistake right

Me; if thats what you want cool

Amahle; we love you ohk

Unathi; \*smiling\* i know

Sandile; this is what being protective is not what this nigga tells you

We just laughed

Then went to a club that was around braamfontein. We went in and got ourselves a table , the was a lady that was serving us that was a first. Amahle came to sit on top off me

Me; you having a good time

Amahle; yes are you

Me; im happy \*smiling\*

Amahle; \*laughing\* you are whipped , do you know that

Me; i think i was whipped from the time i first met you

She kissed me

Amahle; im going to dance bye

She got up and went to the dance floor. I got myself a drink and it was us guys, the girls were on the dance floor

Me; you really like nathi ne

Sandile; yho ntwana mara manje akangiboni yazi ( yho boy but she doesnt even see me)

Themba; \*laughing\* ahhh manje wena nawe uya beda why ungamutsheli ( but you should just tell her)

Sandile; ahh ntwana uyambona uhlanya ngo kau ( you can see her that she is crazy over this guy)

We all laughed around 3 am we left the club

## INSERT #148

### #ANDRE

Woke up the next morning , next to my queen she was still fast asleep. I took my laptop and had to make sure if my money was in and she woke up , she went to the bathroom , kissed me and cuddled next to me

Amahle; what you doing

Me; checking if my money is in

I checked my current balance

Amahle; thats your balance or id numbers

Me; \*laughing\* my id numbers

Amahle; you lying papi

Me; maybe its my balance

Amahle; dre you are literally wealthy

Me; i am????

She punched me

Amahle; you know you are  
Me; \*laughing\* well only you know that now  
Amahle; you make this kind off money on a monthly basis  
Me; yeah then i have to pay the guys their share  
Amahle; you the boss thatha wena  
Me; ai suka  
I put my laptop down and kissed her  
Amahle; i need a jug off water  
Me; hangover  
Amahle; i think so  
She took my robe and got out off bed, i followed her.  
Ntombi was listening to metro fm  
Me; hao no church today  
Ntombi; no woke up late, hi amahle  
Amahle; hey ntombi \*smiling\*  
Ntombi; what do you want for breakfast  
Amahle; dont worry will make it ourselves, do you want anything  
Ntombi; anything you will make  
Amahle; ohk do you eat eggs  
Ntombi ; yeah

Me; you the only person i know that does not eat eggs

Amahle ; there are so many people that dont eat eggs

Me; yeah right out off all the people its just you , that i know off

Amahle; \*laughing\* i dont care

I sat on the kitchen counter and she stood in between my legs. I folded the long sleeves for her. Then she took out everything she would need. I made the juice

Me; so please avail yourself on the 26

Amahle; this month?

Me; yeah

Amahle; that like week after next

Me; yes mami i know

Amahle; why

Me; a cousin off mine is getting married

Amahle; ehhh your entire family will be the phela

Me; so

She turned to face me

Amahle; so? That scares me

Me; but you know my mum so why should other people scare you

She just looked at me

Me; \*laughing\* what

Amahle; for a smart ass you can sometimes be ignorant

Me; whatever you coming with me nje

Amahle; what do i even wear

Me; mina il wear a black and white tux

Amahle; \*laughing\* for real

Me; look at you blushing already

Amahle; voetsek we both know you look yummy in one

Me; i do?

Amahle; \*laughing\* dont make me burst your bubble

Me; you dont honestly believe that right

Amahle; \*laughing\* papi test me

I got off the counter and wrapped my arms from her behind

Me; you sexy woman of mine

Amahle; can you behave, please pass me aromat

I fetched it for her and handed it to her

Me; how old are you mama now

Amahle; \*laughing\* im not going to tell you that

Me; you 24 ne

Amahle; wooo ungajabula (you wish)

Me; \*laughing\* how old ke baby you 24

Amahle; you dont know my age its best that way

Just looked at her.

She set the table where we would eat, she insisted ntombi join us and she eventually did, i couldnt keep my eyes away from her, she looked so sexy, my robe was big on her and it went down her boobs just a little and her chest was revealed, her hair tied at the back, she was beautiful. The buzz went off and i got up checked the monitor and it was this nigerian guy oho that what we called him cause it was a long nigerian name, me and him were not on good terms but we did business together

Me; what you want man

Oho; we need to talk

Me; not in my house

Oho; do you think i would be here if it was not important

I let him in , took my gun that was on top off my fridge , i hid it and sat on the lounge

Amahle; everything ohk

Me; yeah

He walked in and sat next to ntombi

Me; lets go talk in the other room

Him; no its fine here

He looked at amahle

Him; 2 girls , how lucky can you be

Ntombi and amahle just looked at him

Him; hi ladies

Them;.....

I just laughed

Me; man what do you want ?

Oho; i want my money

Me; you wan....

I paused cause i had themba voice in the kitchen

Themba; who blocked the ga.... \*he paused \* what brings him here

Ntombi got up taking our plates

Me; he was getting to that

Themba sat where ntombi was sitting , opposite my baby

Themba; hey mami

Amahle; \*smiling\* hey

Oho; who is the girl

Me and themba spoke the same time

Us; that doesnt fucken concern you  
Amahle eyes went wide open and got up  
Her; il be up there and she walked upstairs  
He turned as amahle passed him  
Me; which money you want man  
Oho; i want 300  
Themba; \*laughing\* uyanya (you shitting yourself)  
Me; man you not getting a cent from me , you got the  
money that you deserved now get the fuck out off my  
place  
Oho; thats fucken crazy man  
Me; get the fuck out off here  
Oho; this is not over  
Me; \*laughing \* you want to kill me for my money now  
Oho; fuck you  
He got up and left  
Me; and what brings you here?  
Themba; eish ntwana engathi ngi flopile yazi (boy i think i  
messed up)  
Me; yini (whats wrong)

Themba; ehhhh engathi ngimithisile (i think i impregnated someone)

## INSERT # 149

I laughed so loud and he was just looking at me

Me; you lying

Themba; check

He gave me his phone

Me; \*laughing\* ahh you an idiot ke nawe

Themba; eish boy

Me; so what you gonna do?

Themba; i dont know boy just imagine nje i have not been in a relationship but i already have a kid nah its not on

Me; tell her to terminate ke

Themba; she will be nagging me about principles and morals

Me; \*laughing\* you dont even know just ask her

Themba; but it will be like im killing my kid

Me; ay wena ke angisazi mina kuthi ufuni ini kimi ( ay i dont know what you want from me then)

Themba; mara siyimi engimumithisile lomtwana ( but i didnt get her pregnant this kid)

Me; did you sleep with her

Themba; sure but

Me; but what

Themba; i didnt leave my soldiers

Me; you know what take this girl to the doctor

Themba; yeah plus they will tell me how many weeks

Me; easy

Themba; let me go boy

Me; sharp

He left and i went upstairs, baby was not in the bed walked to the bathroom and she was inside the tub

Me; can i join

Amahle; no im about to get out

Me; \*laughing\* please

Amahle; come here

I just took out my boxers and joined her

Amahle; so who was the weird guy

Me; an idiot i do business with, his demanding more money from me

Amahle; so you will give him

Me; no, i already gave him a lot than he deserves

Amahle; he does not think so

Me; greedy people will never say its enough mami

Amahle; ohk you got a point there

Me; i always have a point nana

She splashed me with water

Amahle; watch how you talk

Me; yes mam

We just laughed , we changed positions and she sat in between my legs

Me; punka when was the last time you saw pa

Amahle; im not sure ey, few months ago

Me; you talk to him

Amahle; everyday but im too busy i cant go to the cape to see him

Me; you must make time so will go together ohk

Amahle; ohk papi i need to go

Me; cant you leave late

Amahle; no papi, i need to rest

Me; how about when we get out off here, you rest while i do my stuff. Later today we eat dinner then i take you back home

She turned to face me

Me; i swear i wont disturb you

Amahle; no kisses when im asleep

Me; mmmm

Amahle;\*laughing\* dre

Me; fine no kisses, no nothing

Amahle; ohk and dont tell me you tired when you have to drop me off

Me; i wont mami

We kissed

When we got out, she wore my top, a pair off my socks , tied her hair up and got inside the blankets

Me; you need me il be downstairs ohk

Amahle; ohk i love you

Me; i love you too my baby

Kissed her and closed the door on my way out. I went out with my laptop and sat at the lounge. Ntombi was busy

Me; do you ever relax , this place is always clean

Ntombi; and the reason its clean, its cause i dont relax

Me; \*laughing\* ay wena

Ntombi; wheres amahle

Me; shes sleeping, i didnt want her to leave so i suggested she rest

Ntombi; why do you love amahle so much? I dont mean it in a bad way but you dont treat amahle the way you treat other girls like whats with her

Me; i think its because, she is with me for me and not the person i am behind these walls

Ntombi; i dont quiet understand

Me; eish you see the way you see me im not that person on the street, on the street im this hardcore guy that amantombazana (girls) wants a piece off because off my name and the money right

Ntombi; oh ohk

Me; so with amahle, all off that it does not exist with her she loves me for the real me, the soft me

Ntombi; ohhhhh ohk sengiyakthola manje ( ohh i get you now)

Me; yes and shes beautiful, shes smart, she is not afraid to speak her mind

Ntombi; wena kodwa uyamuthanda uamahle ne beka nje  
uze uyahleka when you talk ( but then you really love  
amahle ne, you even laugh when you talk about her)

Me; \*laughing\* ai suka wena

Ntombi; niyafanelana futhi ( you look good together  
though)

Me; thank you ntombiyami

Ntombi; funa ukudla (want food?)

Me; no im good il make something when im hungry

Ntombi; ohk you must marry her

Me; just waiting for the right time for that

Ntombi; eh you serious

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

The buzz rang

Me; whos that

Ntombi; your brother

Dorian appeared

Me; big brother

Dorian; little brother

Me; \*laughing\* that sounds like shit

Dorian; and its the truth what a pity

Me; mxm , what brings you here ?

Dorian; wanted to see my little brother i dont spend that much time with you anymore

He sat next to me

Me; \*laughing\* the big guy misses me what a shame

Dorian; lets do lunch

Me; mmmh ohk , let me get dressed

I went upstairs and she was fast asleep, wore a pair of blue jeans, red top, white sneakers and red cap and left

Me; ready to go

Dorian; sure

Me; but 2 hours is long enough , amahle is here

Dorian; hao lets go with her

Me; no shes sleeping she wanted to rest

Dorina; ohk will bring her something to eat

We left and went to spurs

Me; so you good man?

Dorian; yeah im ohk man , just have a lot off things in my mind

Me; whats up?

Dorian; i was just thinking about where my life is going

Me; ohh kay im going to need more than that for me to help you

Dorian; the thing is i need money

Me; money?

Dorian; yeah i need it for something

Me; what thing ?

Dorian; like i said something

Me; you want me to give you money kodwa you dont want to tell me for what

Dorian; if you dont want i can go ask from mum

Me; man i can make a transaction for you right now , but i need you to tell me what the money is for you already earn enough

Dorian; fine im in trouble

Me; what kind of trouble dorian?

Dorian; i owe people money

Me; how much

Dorian;....

Me; dorian how much

Dorian; 2 mil

## INSERT #150

Me; what??

Dorian;....

Me; \*shouting\*what the fuck is wrong with you, how the fuck can you owe someone so much money no scratch that shit what the hell were you doing with that money

Dorian; man all of this is yours , not mine so i wanted my own business, a business that i can call mine

Me; who the fuck did you get involve with?

I was shouting my lungs out causing us to gain stares at that place

Dorian; ....

Me; are you aware that you my brother, what i have is yours including this business so what the fuck is this shit

Dorian; im tired off people telling me about turner , this is yours it never was mine i wanted to make my own name

Me; you such an idiot , you never wanted anything to do with this now you want to make a name for yourself

Dorian; you see what i mean im ti....

Me; so which business did you want to do ke dorian

Dorian; diamonds

Me; who gave you that idea

Dorian; i did

Me; and who did you get involve with

Dorian; ugo

I covered my head. I just got drained, i breathed in and out just so i can try and not kill this idiot. Ugo was the only guy in this business who was in the same league as me, he had everything i had a big name for himself, successful drug business and was rich as me. We never stepped into each other toes he knew what i was capable off and i knew what he was capable off. We never made business together EVER!

Me; i cant believe you man , out off all the people in this world and you had to choose ugo

Dorian; he said he was going to give me something i needed, something you wont give me

Me; how can you be so gullible i give you everything everything

Dorian; its not enough dre

I quickly stood up ready to beat his ass he raised his hands trying to defend himself and i pulled myself together and sat down

Me; dorian i gave up my teen life for this life i have while you went to varsity , studied some degree that you said

will bring money in for you and you were going to be successful while i was getting arrested constantly while i slept on the cold floor, while i took lives and did things that risked my life you were in varsity getting pocket money, living the good life , life with no stress at all , you graduated but you sat home with your degree. I wanted you to make money so i gave you something to do you joined my business and forgot you ever went to school now you have the nerve to sit there and tell me you want to make a name for yourself i never thought you are stupid until today

Dorian; iv grown in this business

Me; and its because off who? you did not know shit but here you are knowing each and every drug in this world, knowing each and every cop on my payroll , knowing each and every car and part off a car because off me you think you can just wake up one day and get into this crazyness they will chow you up like you nothing you wouldnt even last a week without me in this business so dont try and act smart with me

Dorian;....

Me; so how did it even happen you end up owing him 2 mil

Dorian; he gave me the diamonds i needed and set me up with the man to do business with him but the man played me , he gave me forgeries

Me; you an idiot

Dorian; man his going to kill me he wants his money

Me; you on your own, you off all people know the tension between me and that guy and my own brother goes and makes business with him behind my back for all you know he set you up so you will owe him and now because you in trouble you run to me and need my help. I would not expect this kind off shit from you knowing our history. You want your business go to those career expo things cause you cant just start a business in this industry and theres no one who will help you in this industry to get to the top cause everyone in this business are enermies and we dont need more people involve in it and wena you think you can go to some guy and he will help you to get too the top then you more stupid than i ever thought

Dorian; this is the kind off shit why i went to him in the first place you never want to support me

Me; SUPPORT YOU, SUPPORT YOU TO BRING ME DOWN SUPPORT YOU TO GET YOURSELF KILLED ARE YOU HIGH

Dorian; no but its ovias

Me; i dont have time for this bullshit , you on your own figure it on your own on how you will pay the guy

I called our waitress, she came i paid and we left. He dropped me off and i walked in

Greeted ntombi then went to my bedroom believe it or not she was still sleeping i even got closer to her to see if she was breathing and she was i went to sit outside and thought about dorian shit. Iv always protected him but this time around he screwed up and i was not getting involved. Got busy with my phone

Me; wheres my baby

Mbali; im on my way to pick him up

Me; i need to come pick him up and spend time with him

Mbali; and then s=he does not stop talking about you i dont think so

Me; lol thats the way its suppose to be

Unathi; so you think its best i end it with this guy

Me; yes nana for your own good wena off all people know how you need to be treated and this guy is nowhere close to that

Unathi; but how do i even get to that

Me; just tell him straight and give him the reason why you doing that shit give it to him straight and if he even touches you, you call me il be there in a split second

Unathi; thank you ne

Me; pleasure sthandwa sami

Themba; this shit is stressing me out

Me; forget that shit we have bigger problems to deal with

Themba; what could be important than me possibly being a father

Me; lol boy you not the father man, she is making you a father you only slept with her a week ago, but now she knows she is pregnant thats bull, take her to the dr and the dr will probably say shes a month then it shows ukuthi its not yours wena just makes sure you know when was it mowumudla (when you were eating her)

Themba; i also suspect ey this bitch will shit herself so whats wrong

Me; we need to talk when i see you, this shit is out off my hands

Themba; dont tell me its oho

Me; its way bigger than that

Themba; ehhh ay ohk will talk

Mum; there are some things that you need to do for the wedding

Me; such as what ma

Mum; come see me will talk

Mami ; what you doing

Me; lol arent you suppose to be sleeping

Mami; lol i just woke up, i miss you now

Me; must i come up

Mami; yes but dont come empty handed

Just laughed it out and took snacks and went up to my room , she was still in bed

Me; feeling better

She nodded her head, i kissed her and cuddled next to her

Amahle; what time is it

Me; 7

Amahle; you cooked

Me; ntombi did but she is not done as yet, you hungry

Amahle; yeah but im craving for coffee im coming

She got up and left after a few minutes she came back with 2 cups of coffee

Me; so tomorrow you going to work

Amahle; yes the whole week actually

Me; but mami next week please dont forget

Amahle; Saturday ne

Me; yeah

Amahle; ohk il check my off schedule then il let you know if il be working or not so you better cross your fingers im not

Me; i will

Amahle; want to keep yourself busy

I raised my eyebrow

Amahle; \*laughing\* i want to remove this hair

Me; really

Amahle; yeah

Me; have i seen you without this

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; you lying mami

Amahle; ohk if you say so remove it ke

She took the scissor and gave it to me and instructed me to cut the wool nothing else she sat in between my legs , the wool was hard to find believe me but i found it

Amahle; papi tell me about your dad

Me; mmmm you do know he was a black half coloured guy right,

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; i looked up to him so much mami , whenever i was with him or just looking at him i would be so happy i would just get excited i was really close with him , me and kim were close to my dad while dorian was a mamas boy. He was a calm guy would never shout for no reason at all, but could be hard at times i mean he would not take any kind of bullshit.

Amahle; how did he react when you got arrested

Me; from a young age like i was a trouble you know, bullying people in high school, bunking like they could not control me anyway. So at times cops would knock at my house looking for me for whatever i did or sometimes maybe they found me somewhere and bring me back home like my mum was at that stage of expecting a call that your son has died or is arrested cause when i was 14 i hung out with people who were done with school who stole cars so just imagine the kind of friends i had

Amahle; no way

Me; way so growing up my parents had money i dont want to lie but my father would always tells us that this money was theirs and not for us and we would not get things easier because our parents were rich so one time we were suppose to go to some trip with my friends, asked my parents and they were like no you not getting a cent from us so there i am my parents dont want to give

me money, i need it cause i really want to go what do i do , go talk to one off the guys i hung out with he gives me a gun

Amahle; what?

Me; \*laughing\* yeah that very same day later at night around 12 or 1 am man babe phela that time i was still immature i knew nothing i see this guy i take out the gun and hold him gun point , he gives me his phone and everything i ask but now cause im too excited i forget the gun and only to find out he was a cop

Amahle; \*laughing\* are you for real

Me; dead serious then ke was sentenced went to sun city for like a couple off months then they moved me to leeuwkop cause sun city was full

Amahle; youR dad must have been angry

Me; you have no idea , then i met themba at leeuwkop we become friends. When we got out we became close with deon and the other guys did it the second time round this time i was caught with a car and it was me and themba that time , my dad babe went all out to get us out but they were like he broke his patrol and now he has to serve this new sentence then thats was the longest time, i built a name for myself, my business the people i associated myself with but you know although i put my dad through shit he never gave up on me , he always sticked up for me

Amahle; then wena your dad seems nothing like you  
Me; actually i was like my dad , him growing up he was also a trouble maker and the worst part with him , my grandfather his father was a police officer so whenever he was in trouble they would report him to his father

She laughed

Me; so thats why he never gave up on me cause he knew i was like him and i would not change my ways and i have not , no matter how many times i got arrested i still do the shit that landed me there in the first place

## INSERT #151

Monday , Tuesday and Wednesday were just other days off the week, only talked with my baby through the phone , i was at work so i came back tired and would just go straight home. Thursday was off went to take a shower then went to the warehouse

Me; hey man

Jack; hey you good

Me; im good, look at you looking all fresh

Jack; what can i say life is good

Me; your wound

Jack; all good

I just looked at him and laughed , went to check up on a few other things , deon and themba came

Them; sure boza

Me; sure ni grand (you good)

Deon; yeah wena (yes you)

Me; sharp , wheres dorian?

Themba; ahhh that one its been a while since he came here

Me; we need to talk about him

We sat down

Deon; whats up

Me; dorian owes ugo 2mil

Themba laughed, i looked at him and i was dead serious, his laugh immediately disappeared

Themba; what??

Me; yeah

Themba; how the fuck did that happen?

Deon; this cannot be happening man

Me; it is

Themba; this fucken idiot what the fuck was he doing

Me; calm down

Themba; \*shouting\* calm down are you aware whats going to happen , the war thats going to take place , do you have an idea that amahle could be in danger, deon family all of us how can that bitch be so selfish

Me; i didnt want to get involve in his mess but right now i dont think i have a choice

Deon; how did this happen man

Me; listen this to this ungrateful bitch he says he wanted to build his own name on the streets , he wanted to have his own business since this was all mine and im like this is not just mine, we built this all together

Themba; what the fuck does he know , he was not into this shit from the start now he wants to build a name for himself

Me; just imagine

Deon; what the fuck was he thinking

Me; i dont know, cause now he is saying im not being supportive the next thing he will say im jealous i dont even know of what

Deon; how fucked can dorian be

Themba; his a fucken idiot you know that yeses

Me; so what do you suggest we do

Themba; i suggest we leave his ungrateful ass and let ugo deal with him

Deon; as much as i would love to agree with you, man we have to help me out

Me; you know what pisses me off this guy wont stop and me bailing my brother out he will take advantage off that Themba; and we cant have him , having leverage over us that cannot happen

Me; exactly my point

Deon; lets just get dorian here

Themba; and let me beat his ass

Deon called dorian

And after an hour he arrived and themba was already down his throat

Me; man calm down

Themba; how can i calm down , when we have such ungrateful people like him working with us . \*shouting\* man you need to understand we a team , and the people around us are the people we only need to get far, and you going to our biggest enemy to do what some shit you dont even know , what the fuck do you know about building

yourself a name. Im tired of your fucken bullshit i let this thing of you fantising about amahle slide now this shit f...

Me; what?

Themba; You dont know the shit we have been through so will have all of these

Me; he fantasies about amahle

Themba; and wena you do this bullshit. You think you can just graduate from eh uj and come in the streets and want to build yourself a name when you dont know shit, the struggles fuck you man. Who the fuck do you think you are and out off all the people you go to ugo and thina manje we need to stress ourselves out in getting you out off this shit hole. Sort this shit out on your own and build yourself a name ke nxaxa fuck man

Me; \*shouting\* shut the fuck up

Them;.....

Me; whats with you and amahle

Dorian;.....

Themba; fucken tell him you love amahle and not as a sister , fucken tell him

I looked at themba

Deon; whats this now?

Dorian; his lying i d....

Before he could finish his sentence , themba punched him Themba; before you build yourself a name, you should fucken learn to stand up to your little brother and never fucken say im a liar

Dorian rushed to themba to fight with him but deon pulled them away from each other

Me; i know you pissed man but hitting him was unnecessary and lying

Themba; why the fuck would i lie, im tired of having to protect this bitch and helping him out when im suppose to be helping out jack not this grown ass man

Me; dorian

Dorian; it just happened

Now i was ready to hit him when nhlanhla and jack pulled me away i didnt even know were they came from

Me; you my fucken brother

Deon; let it go man

Me; fuck no, iv always had your back and helping you out while you imagining my girl naked and now you expect me to help you out off this mess fuck you

Deon; can we fucken stop this , lets fight later but right now we need solutions to get him out off this mess

Me; i aint helping him

I took my car keys that were on top off the table

Deon; you wont help him out

Me; no

Themba; im with you, lets go

Deon; i hope you know when they kill him, it will be on your hands wonder what your father will say knowing you let your brother die

I hit themba with the car keys on the chest and quickly turned to deon, i pushed him against the wall

Me; dont piss me off mentioning my father, his already a disappointment to my father

Dorian came on to me and i pushed deon away and we actually fought, throwing fists,, he held my top throwing me to the table, it broke and he aimed for my face but i quickly moved and i regained strength to flip us over , giving me power since he was on the ground, the first throw i missed but the second i didnt. The guys just let us be until deon pulled me up, i got out from his grip but he pulled me back again

Deon; you will kill him are you crazy

Dorian; fuck you \*spitting out blood\*

Deon was holding me back the whole time

Dorian; you quick to say im a disappointment to my father what about you, at least he died being proud of me, his last thought about yo.....

I pushed deon to the wall and went for this nigga, he threw in a few punches and so did i, it took literally all the guys to pull us away from each other

Me; get the fuck out off my place

Dorian; fuck you and your place

He spit on the ground and walked out

I was pissed so i just took my car keys and left too, got home

Ntombi; eh eh eh what happened

Me; not now ntombi

I walked to my bedroom, took a long shower then went to bed, was woken up by a woman voice

I slowly opened my eyes and it was mami

Amahle; punka what happened

Me; hmmmm

Amahle; your face

Me; what you doing here

Amahle; dont even change the subject, sit up straight

I did just that, she held my face so soft

Me; nothing is wrong

Amahle; you bruised dre

Me; dont worry about this

Amahle....

Me; i was in a fight

Amahle; with who? Why? Dre no

Me; dorian

Amahle; \*shouting\* WHAT?

me; he made me feel like shit mami

Amahle; you fought with your brother , not themba but  
your own brother

Me; you should have heard him

Amahle; what happened

Me; i dont want to talk about it

Amahle; dre no talk now

I told her everything

Amahle; im sorry

Me; its fine

I got up before i could go anywhere, she held my hand and i didnt want her to cause i was feeling some sort of weak

Amahle; papi look at me

I slowly turned to her

Amahle; im sorry, he was just angry

Me; \*shouting\* thats the thing amahle, even if he was angry but he was being honest im a huge disappointment in my fathers book while him and kim are gold, he died before i could explain certain things to him, before he could see other things i could do than commit criminal offence, i made him have sleepless nights, go up and down for me while dorian was the perfect kid , smart never got in trouble i know you trying to console me but its fucken true i was a fucken disgrace to him and that cuts deep, it cuts deep knowing my brother knew that, iv been turning a blind eye on that when its in fact true

She got emotional, she got up tip toed and hugged me and i just got emotional just like her

Amahle; \*crying\* thats not true dre, its not

Me;.....

Amahle; baby its not true you a paramedic, you help people at a daily basis to get a second chance in life, you this great guy that everyone envies, you never want to

disappoint anyone and you always want to protect your family you not a disappoint to your father, your father knew you were his reflection and im sure nothing made him more proud than that and im proud off you and i love you

## INSERT #152

Next morning was woken up by mami she slept over cause she saw i was a mess

Amahle; get dressed

Me; for what?

Amahle; you have visitors downstairs

Me; you going to work

Amahle; yes

I went to the bathroom, washed my face and walked downstairs only to find my mum and dorian. I stood on the stairs

Amahle; dre

Me; just proved that you the biggest bitch

Mum; andre!

Me; by involving mum into this

Dorian; dont piss me off, i didnt even tell her shit

Amahle; stop it, dre i told your mum cause i know the 2 of you need to sort out your issues you not behaving as brothers and i wanted dorian to apologise for what he said cause i dont appreciate what he said to you cause it also hurt me

Dorian; im sorry

Amahle; i dont care dorian dre already has a lot to deal with and he does not need that kind of negativity

Me; b....

Amahle; ma im going to work , i hope you will sort them out

Mum; dont worry baby

She took her bags walked up to me, kissed me and walked out, i sat opposite them

Mum; what is this? \*pointing at my face and dorians\*

Mum; \*shouting\* im talking, what the fuck is this

For one i was shocked that my mum actually swore at us , not even once have i ever heard her

Dorian; we just got in a fight

Mum; why dorian?

Dorian;...

Mum; andre

Me; i have nothing to say

She grabbed the remote that was next to her and threw it at me

Me; wh.....

I stopped

Mum; \*shouting\* you fight like animals now, you fight now using your hands are you both crazy, what are you showing your friends that one has more power than the other

Us;.....

Mum; im not talking to my self

Dorian; i just asked him to help me out but he doesnt want to, next thing he is hitting me

Mum; why dont you help out your brother when he needs your help

Me; theres no way in hell i will help out someone who knew what he was getting himself into

Mum; enough with the swore words andre as for you what kind of trouble are you in

Dorian;....

Me; he owes people money and on top off that he likes amahle, how can you love your brother gf what do you call that

Mum; are you insane ?

Dorian; it just happened

Mum; why did you allow it to happen in the first place,  
you the big brother i would expect such immaturity from  
dre not you

Me; ex....

Mum; and as for you? This things happen siblings having  
crushes over their brothers or sisters gf or bf but it does  
not mean something will actually happen

Me; how s...

Mum; im talking

Me;.....

Mum; why you always trying to make your brother feel as  
if he is nothing

Me; i dont do that

Mum; you do andre, cause if you didnt we would not be  
here

Us;....

Mum; and you mr big brother who the fuck gave you the  
right to tell my son, his father was not proud off him and  
he saw him as a disgrace

Dorian; ....

Mum; dont make me turn into something im not dorian, you will never say such shit to my son and that goes for you too. Have you ever heard your father say andre was shit to him or he regrets him have you?

Dorian;....

Mum; dont be too quick to open your mouth to things you dont know, just because andre faced certain things you didnt, just because i mistreated him, just because he didnt get the treatment as you and you think you better than him or we loved you more than him cause the way i remember it we loved you all 3 equally, you will not push my sons spirit down , poisoning him about how his father hated him. I will not stand for that bullshit do you understand me

Dorian;...

Mum; do you fucken understand me dorian, how would you feel if dre said things like that to you if what happened to him happened to you. Dont make me angry as for you remember his your brother and your big brother and that will not change

She started crying

Mum; i dont understand why you have to go all out to hurt each other , why dont you just become brothers who love each other like normal brothers and stop this

madness , it hurts me to know you fighting with each other than fighting for each other stop this

Us;.....

Mum; i hope this is the last time

Me; yeah

Dorian; yeah

Mum; yeah is that all you have to say yeah

Dorian; im sorry mum and sorry andre for what i said

Me; yeah

My mum grabbed another remote that was next to me and threw it to me

Me; fine im sorry

after a while they left and i went tot he warehouse, Themba was still pissed i mean he was pissed and too be honest i was pissed as him, i felt exactly the way he felt. It was themba deon and dorian

Deon; fighting right now wont help us get anywhere we need a solution

Me; he needs 2 mil

Dorian; yeah

Me; mmmm boy how much do you have at your place

Themba; maybe 250

Me; ohk il have to use the one thats here

Themba; gather up one il also gather up one

Me; you sure?

Themba; yeah cause we know what the word "family" means

Me; ohk will take it there together

Dorian; thank you guys it m....

Me; i dont have time for your shit dorian so nje dont get on my nerves

We all got up and left

Me; ugrand? ( you good)

Themba; il be fine i need to go

Me; where?

Themba; i have problems everywhere mina , the baby issue

Me; eish good luck

Themba; yho boy will talk ne

Me; sharp

I did what i had to do

Nhlanhla; so are we all invited

Me; \*laughing\* yes ao we all going together and buy new clothes

Jack; you will see how my family rolls ke  
Nhlanhla; eish i even forgot you are a family  
I just laughed

Jack; i really need to learn zulu

Me; yeah otherwise these guys will gossip about you,  
cause they can gossip beli...

Dorian; dre

Me; what

I turned to face him, he handed me his phone

Me; helo

Guy; mr turner

Me; ugo

Guy; how are you

Me; im doing absolutely fine and you

Guy; not so good, i need my money from your big brother  
man

Me; was this a set up

Guy; what never, why would i do such a thing

Me; you will get your money tomorrow

Guy; im glad we understand each other

Me; bye

I handed his phone back

Jack; and that

Me; nothing important , so what did your mum say about moving out

Jack; for one he couldnt believe i had a job

Me; \*laughing\* where did you say you work

Jack; i just said i work at retail

I laughed

Jack; but he believed me and she was proud man i mean

Me; im proud of you too, for not relapsing especially knowing we work with drugs

Jack; i dont even think about them anymore , just think about making more money with you guys

Me; thats how a man thinks, making money and women only but you lack in the woman department

Nhlanhla; \*laughing\* iv never seen him with a girl before

Jack; nobody wants a typical white boy

Me; which type of girls do you like, black girls or white girls

jack; which girls do you like

Me; \*laughing\* we not talking about me but i used to like every girl mina it didnt matter if she was white or black or coloured as long as she was beautiful

Jack; well im also attracted to black girls so i think i can date any type

Me; ohk so wena you want to date, not fuck

Jack; well yeah i guess

Nhlanhla; his afraid of girls this one

Me; \*laughing\* ay voesek wena... Girls like a guy that knows how to dress nice

Jack; i dont

Nhlanhla; no

I looked at nhlanhla he raised his hands in defeat

Me; well not really man, look at you right now you wearing bootleg jeans , people dont wear those jeans anymore unless you the typical guy, you wear running shoes with bootlegs and they not nice trainers man. You earn money but you look like you dont work which is why girls will never look at you

Jack; ohk so no more jeans and trainers

Me; buy nike trainers they nice , not this old school type

Nhlanhla; your hair is too long man

Me; yeah , cut it not all off it but just reduce it but dont shave it all off, cause other girls like hair like my baby she likes running her fingers into my hair

Jack; can i cut it like yours

Me; \*laughing\* no , you cant we dont have the same texture off hair so you may try it but chances are it might go wrong

Jack; ohk next week we getting paid, come help me out buy clothes

Me; il tell you when im not working

Jack; thanks man

Me; sure cuz

## INSERT #153

Saturday morning gathered the money for dorian mistake, themba came to my place we counted it and ntombi looked like she was ready to rob us lol. We packed it up and took themba car and drove to UGO place he lived at rivonia

Me; so you excited you not a father

Themba; yhooo ntwana you have no idea like boy she was 2 months 2 yeses she almost played me

Me; \*laughing\* use protection nawe man

Themba; and boy that was the only time

Deon; but a kid is great man

Themba; yes when you have it with a woman you love like you and mbali

Me; talking about that, will you ever do white wedding with mbali though

Deon; hell yes

Themba; then what are you waiting for

Deon; i wanted thando to be at least 2 so he will be old enough to participate

Me; hmmm

Deon; you?

Me; what?

Themba; will you marry amahle

Me; definitely i just need time

Themba; for

Me; thats all you need to know

We got to the place and walked in. The gate opened and we walked in as i was about to get out 2 pitbull appeared and i just closed my door. Ugo appeared and he locked them away or so i think

Ugo; turner

Me; ugo

Ugo; its always good to see you

Me; wish i could i say the same

He laughed. We walked inside and sat down

Ugo; so you have what belongs to me

Me; let me get this out off the way, me and you we made a deal we would stay away from each other

Ugo; but i kept my end off the deal

Me; then why the fuck am i here

Ugo; but i did keep my end off the deal, your brother is the one who came to me

I thought of dorian

Ugo; and come on im not selfish i offered to help him out

Me; he knows nothing about this business so stop offering your help to everyone

Ugo; well its the past now , isnt it

I threw the money on the table

Me; 2 mil now i dont want to come back here

Ugo; thank yo...

Girl; daddy i dont feel so well

We all turned and it was ugo daughter

Ugo; come here baby

He picked her up

Me; stay away from my family ugo and i mean it

Ugo; or what

Me; you have a beautiful daughter , im sure we want her to reach her 18th birthday

He looked at me as if he was ready to kill me

Me; stay away from my family, we made an oath stay at your end off your territory and i will do the same

We got up and left

The drive was silent got to the warehouse and everyone went to their field. My phone rang and it was my baby

Me; my beautiful, sexy, cute woman off mine

Her; \*laughing\* and hows my everything

Me; i miss you

Her; i miss you too sthandwa sami

Me; you at work?

Her; yes , im on lunch right now

Me; you working even saturday

Her; till Sunday papi

Me; yeses no man , they overworking you

Her; dont worry, then thur im off till Tuesday

Me; you definitely sleeping over

Her; would not mind im coming there Wednesday

Me; good

Her; you ohk, you dont sound ohk

Me; theres just a lot on my mind

Her; i have time , want to talk about it

Me; not over the phone babe

Her; want to come over

Me; \*laughing\* no il be fine baby , tomorrow you knocking off what time

Her; i think 8

Me; ohk il come see you then

Her; ohk i love you ne

Me; i love you too baby

I finished off at the warehouse and just sat down just to relax, themba joined me

Me; im done boy

He looked at me

Themba; you done?

Me; yeah this business , im done with it

Themba; \*laughing\* stop playing around man

Me; im not man , im out

## INSERT #154

Themba; what you talking about man

Me; i want to have a family man with amahle, i want to have kids and having that while im in this business is impossible, i dont want my family to leave in fear and the only way i can prevent that is to get out now

Themba; you cant do that man, we will protect you at all times this is crazy man why did amahle tell you to do this

Me; no its a decision i made on my own she does not know this

Themba; this is within you man, its in your blood you cant just pack and go

Me; yes i can and i will

He breathed in and out loud and got up

Themba; you cant leave your calling just like that

Me; its not my calling , its a business we started together i take my half and leave you all to it, you know what to do , everyone does

Themba; this is crazy man

Me; this is my last month man. I dont want to fail amahle i really love her and im willing to give up all off this for her and as my best friend i need you to understand that and please dont tell anyone as yet about this

Themba; this is fucked up man, you the only one who keeps this business going yes i understand how you feel about amahle and im happy for you man but come on dre this is a big step, you want to leave everything are you aware of that, and just because you leaving it does not mean you wont have enermies you will forever have enermies till you die man , leaving this business wont change shit

Me; themba can you support me with this thats all im asking

Themba; ....

Me; please man you cant just leave me like this

Themba; i dont support this not one bit just so you know

Me; i know you wont right now but please try and understand

Themba; cool man

Went home, took a long shower then went to bed. Next day went to the gym , and had a meeting with my biggest clients. We talked business then it was lunch. I went to mbali place and hung out wit thando. I loved him as if he was mine he was the one who made me get excited about getting a baby in the future i left there at 8 and went mami place. They let me in and i parked on the driveway and she was already waiting at the door i kissed her and closed the door , picked her up and we walked to the couch and i sat down , she was still on top off me

Her; i missed you so much

Me; want to show me

Her; later but first we have to talk

Me; \*laughing\* about what?

Her; whats bothering you

Me; i just got here

Her; what do you want, tea, beer or whisky

Me; you have beer

Her; no

Me; then why did you ask me that

Her; cause it would be cool for you to know that your girl has a beer

Me; thats the dumbest shit iv ever heard

Her; whatever so talk to me

Me; wait

I flipped her over and went to look for a snack and joined her again, she sat on top off me again

Me; dont sit so close

Her; \*laughing\* ai suka ao talk

Me; how will i be able to talk if i get a hard on

She moved back

Her; fine now

Me; \*laughing \* yeah

Her....

Me; uyahlupha yho ohk so iv been thinking

Her; about?

Me; i want to be legit

Her; legit?

Me; i want out off this illegal and crime thing mama, i see a future with you and i dont want to put you in danger because of what i do

She got off me

Me; i dont want you to live in fear

Her; so you leaving what you love for me

Me; yes

Her; no are you crazy

Me; what?

Her; you have told me so many times how much you love doing this, all the time and now you just want to leave it

Me;....

Her; i dont want you to hate me for making you stop something you love dre

Me; i wont

Her; do you really really want to stop

Me; yes

Her; i want you to be honest with me dre, dont tell me something you think it will help me do you really want to stop

Me; no

Her; then dont baby, i love you so much and i told you that im willing to accept everything that you come with , well it scares me that i have to be scared of every siren i hear , but your happiness is also important to me i dont want you to be someone you not because off me

Me; this brings me too many enermies that wont leave me alone

Her; so you think just because you leaving they wont come after you, no the day they will stop coming after you is when you dead , instead they will take advantage off the fact that you no longer in that business

Me; \*smiling\* so what you saying

Her; im saying i love you too much to allow you to do that, do what you love babe just like im doing what i love. Will deal with the consequences when we get there but right now i have your back

Me; i love you so much

Her; i love you too come here

She gave me a big hug , i picked her up and pinned her to the wall, i kissed her neck and she whispered to my ear " im on my periods" i broke the kiss and looked at her

Her; \*laughing\* sorry

Me; nooooo baby

I laid my head on her neck , she got down

Her; but that does not mean i cant make you happy

I looked at her, she smirked , she turned us around and now i was leaning on the wall, she unzipped my pants and pulled them down and she made magic i let out a groan and she made eye contact that turned me on even more, she made so much magic that i just cum , i pulled her up and kissed her

Me; i love you

Her; i love you more bubu

We walked to her bedroom and just talked the whole night till we both fell asleep

Woke up the next morning and she left a note " already made breakfast for you, off to work will talk later i love you" got up and went downstairs , took my breakfast, turned on the tv and sat on the couch after eating washed my plate , made the bed and went to shower. Wore the jean i was wearing and took one off her hoodies cause i know she never buys hoodies that are her size its always XL. I looked for my car keys but nothing , instead i came across her car keys and keys off the place on the counter, i went to the garage and my car was not there i just laughed. Took the keys and left got to my place just changed my jeans and went to the warehouse.

Me; sure

Them;.....

I turned to see if they heard me

Me; whats up?

them....

Me; oh kay

## INSERT #155

I walked away

Deon; how can you?

I stopped and turned

Me; huh?

Jerome; how can you just leave us and leave what belongs to you

Me; what you talking about?

Deon; themba told us

I just closed my eyes

Me; really, like really

Themba; what? You did not expect me to just keep quiet about this, did you

Me; actually i did

Jack; does this mean , you shutting the entire thing

Me; no what no , you know the business you can do it on your own

Dorian; i know what i did was fucked but you blowing this out off proportion , im sorry for my selfish ways but come on

Me;.....

Nhlanhla; boza 2 minutes off you leaving this , this whole operation will go down straight

Deon; we may know the ropes but the clients, the suppliers know you man

Jerome; come on turner will be the laughing stock off jozi and the cape you cant do this

Deon; you willing to give up on millions a week and go to 5 thousand a month , how the hell will you take care off amahle, cause that way amahle will be taking care off you

Dorian; this is yours man , you cant just walk away from it

Me; are you all done now

Sandile; no you want us to protect amahle , il take that job il be with her 24/7 if i have too so nobody gets to her

Themba; will make that 4 people for amahle

Sphiwe; yeah man dont be selfish, you leaving here wont only affect you but all off us

They all talked i mean everyone i worked with had something to say i just looked at the them they didnt even give me a chance to speak. After a while off talking they finally kept quiet

Me; its about time geez

Them;....

Me; i thought about it and i know you bitch niggas would be nothing without me so im not leaving and i thought i would not have to tell all off you cause a nigga said he would not talk

Themba; so ?

Me; like you said this is in my blood and i cant run away from it

The way they all went crazy i just looked at them and went back to work

Themba; thanks man

I lifted up my head

Me; you an idiot

Themba; come on i had to tell the guys to convince you and it worked

Me; \*laughing\* yeah it worked

Didnt want to ruin the moment by saying no , amahle did actually

Themba; thats mami car right

Me; \*laughing\* yeah she took my car

Themba; lets go for ride

I got up and suddenly everyone wanted to go but it was just me, themba, jack and nhlanhla. Threw the keys to themba since he was nagging me. We decided to hit the mall since i paid the guys way early and jack wanted to change his style and he needed our help. The other guys didnt want to stay behind so they followed us from the behind

Themba; i think im going to get myself a this baby now

Me; \*laughing\* shes smooth ne

Themba; yho ntwana its as if im not driving

Me; yeah

Themba; but we need to keep her on lock down

Me; nah man amahle would freak

Themba; she does not have to know , like you said if people found out she was your biggest weakness they will come for her

Me; and if she takes it in for service

Themba; they wont find shit, its just a tracker man

Jack; you want to put a tracker on amahle car

Me; its not a bad idea but it seems wrong especially if she does not know

Themba; hmm ohk we dont have too anyway i was just saying, we not spying on her and checking where she is

and stuff. We doing like this tracker companies make it easy for us to find her or her baby if she was stolen or stuff like that not if she is at work and mall thats freaky. you know we deal with these things and if her car gets stolen these thieves nyana always know where those big company trackers are but you know me, they will never find it man

Me; ohk you got a point

Themba; if these companies put the tracker like me , trust me we wouldnt be making money

Me; \*laughing\* ai fokof wena

We got to the mall and walked in

Jack; so where do we start edgars

We all looked at him

Themba; tell me that was a joke

Jack; that was a joke

Themba; good

We went to markhams

Jack; a jean for 500

Me; yeah man , and thats the cheapest one , now take it

We went to markhams, sport scene and truworths. Jack kept on complaining like a bitch nje but we eventually bought him new clothes , i dropped them off at home and went home. Went to take a shower and when i got out, the were missed calls from my queen, i dialled her

Amahle; papi

Me; mami you good

Amahle; \*laughing\* im ohk why didnt you answer your phone

Me; i was taking a shower mami

Amahle; yhooo your car drama

Me; \*laughing\* how was it driving my baby

Amahle; interesting well believe me i loved all the attention i got then something crazy happened

Me; what?

Amahle; so iv just knocked off right, as im about to join the freeway the cops stop me, i pullover and look for my license as the officer is walking to the window, as finally i get it but the guy is already knocking on my window i turn and guess what

Me; what?

Amahle; \*shouting\* his knocking with a gun

Me; \*laughing\* what you lying mami theres no such

Amahle; im telling you so i open the window and his shocked , he puts away his gun and his like " who are you" just imagine baby and im like " what?" and his like i mean " wheres the owner off this car " and im like " i am the owner off this car" and his like " you not turner"

I laughed so loud

Me; so what did you say?

Amahle; i was like im his wife he was like " when did he get married why dont i know you" just imagine papi

Me; \*laughing\* must be one off the guys we work with

Amahle; cops?

Me; yes mami

Amahle; yho i miss you already

Me; i miss you too, she did not give you any problems

Amahle; no in fact she will be with me for the rest off the week , i will come with her when i come

Me; ohk babe

We talked for a while then hung up. I got dressed and deon came to pick me up it was just the guys going out

Even jack looked nice

Themba; so listen boy, this is your moment, your time,  
just get the girls now ohk

Jack; \*heavy breathing\* ohk

Me; \*laughing\* let me help you out

We walked together and this guy was afraid off girls  
yhooooo

Me; hey lala

Girl; hey you

Me; can you do me a favour

Girl; for you anything

I smiled

Me; \*smiling\* my brother over here is kind of scared off  
girls, so can you show him a good time

Girl; well he is nice

Me; so will you do me this favour

Girl; like i said anything for you

Then that was my que to leave , went back to the guys  
and we just had fun, jack came back with another girl i  
was surprised but happy for him. We hung out there for a  
while and left

INSERT #156

#amahle

Sunday morning woke up and went to work, found myself a scrub and went to change

Nobuhle; hey baby

I lifted up my head and it was my new best friend . We worked together and i loved her to bits we were complete opposites but the same in a weird way i know. We were both in the same department , she was beautiful may i say and fit too way fit

Me; hey lala, just got here

Nobuhle; yes ngikhathele (im so tired)

Me; syafana lala ( same here)

Nobuhle; asambe (lets go)

We got up and did our rounds , Sunday passes fast then we went for lunch , we drove to maponya

Nobuhle; your bf is filthy rich ne

Me; you can say that

Nobuhle; i think im also ready to settle down yazi, i want to receive calls nami , flowers and all that cheesy things in relationships

Me; you into that cheesy things

Nobuhle; i dont even know what im into anymore , plus its dry down there im tired of using machinery

I laughed so loud

Me; no you dont

Nobuhle; what?

Me; you seriously get down when you alone

Nobuhle; yes im a woman , and iv been singel for years hlehle i need someone

Me; il put in a good word for you to those doctors

Nobuhle; please do

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

We ordered mc donalds and headed back to work but sat in the car

Me; hows your family

Nobuhle; yhoooo you dont want to know

Nobuhle mum was an alcoholic i mean alcoholic and she never knew her father , before she moved out she used to stay with her aunts, mum and uncles nje

Me; whats up

Nobuhle; i gave them 5 thousand ne hlehle , for groceries and everything they would need thats a lot off money and they would have change ne

Me; yeah

Nobuhle; izolo they call me asking for more money just imagine , they say my cousin child is sick like how is that any off my business, like ever since earning my salary you would swear i work only for them

Me; so did you give them

Nobuhle; im taking it today its not like i have a choice cause if i dont they tell me how they took me to school and all that shit that time they never even took out even 100 rand for my fees cause i had a bursary and clothes and food my mum took care of that before she became who she is now

Me; yho lala but then they should know you have your responsibilities manje , you have to pay your rent, your car and you have to eat

Nobuhle; do they care ?

Me; you need to stand your ground

Nobuhle; if i could i would , so they would chase my mum out then were does she go cause she does not want to be with me

Me; but you need to talk to them , and get your mum help

Nobuhle; i guess cause i cant live like this

Me; yes babe what you doing this Saturday

Nobuhle; if im not working il be home

Me; asambe siye emshadweni ( lets go to a wedding)

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* okabani ( whos wedding)

Me; angazi nokwazi ( i dont even know) my bf invited me i think one off his family members

Nobuhle; you crazy

Me; come on please

Nobuhle; no just imagine

Me; how about i ask him , ke plus you might get a bf

Nobuhle; ohk plus weddings there are some fine brothers

Me; \*laughing\* my point exactly

Nobuhle; but still ask him ke

Me; ohk

We went back to work and it was time to go , we went our separate ways , went to take a long shower then went to cook, dished up ate then went to bed. Next day woke up, went to bath and as i was dressing up my phone rang

Me; my papi

Dre; my beautiful queen

Me; how are you

Dre; i miss my woman

Me; your woman misses you too, can i ask you something

Dre; sure

Me; Saturday is the wedding right

Dre; yes

Me; who is coming

Dre; everyone mami, the guys everyone

Me; so

Dre; sooo ? What you want?

Me; i want to bring a friend off my mine baby , she will be home bored so please please please

Dre; \*laughing\* i dont even know why you asking me that, she can come of course

Me; thank you so much

Dre; mxm what you doing

Me; dressing up

Dre; mmmm how sexy do you look

Me; \*laughing\* not very sexy

Dre; i dont see you but i know for sure that a lie

Me; ai suka will talk later ohk

Dre; ohk i love you ne

Me; love you so much more

I hung up and took a few pics and sent them too him and he immediately called

Me; \*laughing\* what?

Dre; can i come touch

Me; \*laughing\* no

I hung up and carried on dressing up and left

Arrived at work and began my schedule, tea time , nobuhle brought me a cup of coffee with muffins

Me; the rep is here

Nobuhle; yeah and there are so many more off those

Me; \*laughing\* uthanda ukudla wena ( you love food)

Nobuhle; and look whose talking

Me; mxm so Saturday mina nawe we going

Nobuhle; you talked to your man

Me; yeah and he was angry at me for asking

Nobuhle; shame this guy is crazy for you, he doesnt even mind when you bring friends of yours to a family thing

Me; \*laughing\* he wants to keep me happy what can i say

Nobuhle; you see this, this is what i want \*pointing at my mouth\*

Me; what exactly

Nobuhle; thats smile i hope there are some hot brothers there

Me; i hope so too for your sake

Dr khan; ladies

Us; hi dr khan

Dr khan; hows your morning

Nobuhle; calm

He laughed

Dr khan; just for now

Me; that i know , please excuse me

I answered my call

Me; \*smiling\* hi pa

Pa; helo my angel

Me; how are you?

Pa; im ohk baby i was checking up on you

Me; im ohk just for now kodwa, im at work

Pa; ohk let me call later

Me; no , hows melissa

Pa; she wont stop feeding me

I laughed

Me; good i told her not too

Pa; \*laughing\* i cant fit on my pants now

Me; \*laughing\* will buy you new one

He laughed

Me; i miss you so much pa

Pa; i miss you too baby, yesterday i went to clean ma place

Me; is it fine

Pa; yes baby i was just missing her so much

Me; you want me to come there

Pa; no im fine baby

Me; december il be on leave , so im coming there ohk

Pa; ohk

Me; but il come before that maybe for the weekend but not this week cause , im going to a wedding

Pa; whos wedding baby

Me; one of andre family members

Pa; andre??

I forgot i never told pa about me and him

Me; \*laughing\* long long story il tell you when i come

Pa; \*laughing\* hehhhh no tell me this now, why am i hearing of this now, wheres lubanzi?

Me; pa not now

Pa; you better call me

Me; i will

Pa; will it be you soon

Me; \*laughing\* pa no

Suddenly there was a chaos, shouting " GUN SHOT, GUN GHOT , GUN GHOT"

Me; pa i have to go

Pa; ohk

I hung up and rushed outside, it was a male he looked really young

Nurse; we need to give him an anesthetic dr

Me; no he needs to get to the theatre now ! \*shouting\*

Nurse; but dr

Me; \*shouting\* i said now , or will lose him

Nurse; yes

We rushed him to theatre

After that sudden rush, the guy survived and i felt so relieved then it was time to go home, packed up my things went to buy something to eat then went home , ate and just slept. Tuesday non much happened it was just a busy day at work and finally knocked off including Wednesday immediately when i got back home packed my things and went to dre place

## INSERT #157

### #ANDRE

After work i was so tired , drove back home , opened the garage and my car was there , i just smiled parked and went inside

Amahle; \*laughing\* unamanga ntombi ( you lying ntombi)

Ntombi; ngyakutshela (im telling you)

Me; when theres just a lot off noise, i know the woman off the house is home

She turned and smiled, she literally jumped to me and i held her. We kissed

Her; i missed you

Dre; i missed you too baby wami

I kissed her again and we walked upstairs. I went to the shower and she joined me

I pinned her to the glass, and she looked at me and bit her lower lip , i kissed her neck and she moaned to my ear , i lifted her leg up and entered her , she held on to me so tight. She was tight i tried it again but it failed and i tried it again and it went in i picked her up and went in and out off her , she held on to me and her moans got louder the deeper i entered her. I increased the pace until she reached her climax , i put her down and made her face the wall she was breathing heavy, i rolled her hair to my hand , parted her legs and entered her from the behind until we both cum

We both got out off the shower and dressed up, kissed her and we went downstairs. We all ate together ntombi only ate with me when amahle was there. She was comfortable with me but she would never eat with me not unless ke i beg her and i mean beg her. Ntombi went to bed, we cuddled on the couch

Me; so tomorrow you coming with me right

Amahle; where?

Me; im going with ma , we need to buy some final things

Amahle; sorry babe but no

Me; why not

Amahle; we going to look for clothes to wear

Me; you and who

Amahle; me , mbali, unathi and nobuhle

Me; nobuhle?

Amahle; my friend from work

Me; ohk why dont i know her

Amahle; me and you did not start talking till this year

Me; \*laughing\* woooo ohk

Amahle; \*laughing\* no im not being forward baby im just saying

Me; whatever sthandwa sami (my love)

Amahle; so whos coming

Me; the squad nje baby and some off my friends you dont know

Amahle; which friends

Me; \*laughing\* woman you dont know everything

She looked at me

Me; you will meet them Saturday i promise you

Amahle; so who is getting married vele

Me; this family thing is long but she is from my fathers side

Amahle; ohk

Me; yes lets go

We switched off everything and we went to bed

Next morning i had to leave early. Went to shower and just wore jeans , top and sneakers and left

#AMAHLE

Woke up and dre was already gone. I just wore my denim shorts, all star , and white top , took my smaller nyana bag that i came with and left. I went to pick up nobuhle, then mbali then unathi i made the intro

Unathi; i cant wait to see the guys faces when they see this pretty face

Me; \*laughing\* they will be crazy

Nobuhle; which guys

Mbali; you will see , you singel right

Nobuhle; hell yes

Mbali; good

Unathi; can we make a bet

Nobuhle; what kind

Unathi; well it involves you but it will be just us 3

Me; which one

Unathi; who will want to get on with nobuhle

Nobuhle laughed

Mbali; definitely shane, shane 100 percent

Nobuhle; cute name shane

We all laughed

Unathi; nah i say jerome or jack

Me and mbali; jack?

Unathi; \*laughing\* what?

Me; i think themba

Nobuhle; can you give a scoop on how these guys look

Me; dont have to worry about ugly , that i can guarantee  
you

Mbali; definitely but themba i dont think so

Unathi; nami i agree with mbali

Me; thats my bet

Mbali; ohk so let me give you a taste of shane

Nobuhle; yes please

Mbali; his light, i mean light, his coloured so nje you get me now, his really cute, his 28 , his loaded , his body too die for, his cute

Me; themba his also light not as shane though kodwa but light skinned nigga, has the cutest smile ever, \*laughing\* body wise cant say

Unathi; your bf is not here, his got a hot body lala i mean hot

Me; \*laughing\* yeah that and his also loaded , his also got ink , he dresses nice his hot

Nobuhle was biting her lower lip too

Unathi; jerome ohk coloured nigga , no ink , his got really small eyes but they cute, short hair, his a smooth talker , craziest body jack white guy, dark brown eyes, no tattoo his cute

Nobuhle; i feel like you describing the same person lana , no dark skinned niggas

Me; oh they are but one you should not get close to sandile

Unathi; \*laughing\* really amahle, really

Me; \*laughing\* im just saying you know what you will see for yourself

We walked in a number off shops and everybody got the perfect dress, shoes and clutch. I got a royal blue short dress that had a slit just up my thigh, it was sexy as fuck , and it was straps with a royal blue heel , and white and blue clutch , mbali got a grey dress that went above her shoulders it was knee height to her and silverish heels, and silver grey clutch , unathi got a pink mini skirt, white top that went above her shoulders, white clutch and white heels and nobuhle got a blush pink see through top, blush pink skirt that had the same design as my dress it had a slit that went up her thigh and blush pink heels and clutch. We even bought sunglasses. We went to do our hair i did curls , and they all just had straight weaves. We went to grab lunch

Nobuhle; so what time should i meet you guys

Mbali; why dont you sleep over

Me; yeah

Nobuhle'; no

Unathi; \*laughing\* you one off us now plus Friday will be at dre place right

Me; yeah they will be there doing manly stuff so its only fair if we go help out i dont know about you

Mbali; im cool with it

Nobuhle; same here i dont want to arrive there and just eat

We laughed

Me; so il talk to dre and ask him if its ohk

Mbali; then when we done, since dre place is big will sleep over there and we all wake up together and get dressed together

Me; woah can i talk to dre first

Mbali; its not like his going to say no

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* you see thats exactly what i said to you, that your bf loves you so much he cant say no

Me; dre does say no

Unathi; when?

I thought about it and i realised dre has never said no to me when i asked him anything

Me; he does when we together believe me

Them; mmmm ohk

I just laughed, after waiting i dropped them all off and drove home dre was not back as yet so i helped ntombi cook. She was happy she was going to see her bf this week yho she could not stop telling me about it

Dre came back , we ate and went to bed

Me; so tomorrow can i go with you

He looked at me

Dre ; you were going to go with me

Me; \*smiling\* ohk the thing is , me and the girls want to help out tomorrow

Dre; \*smiling\* ohk my baby plus my family is not vey big im sure they will need all the help they can get and they will love more help especially from the future makoti

I punched him

Dre; \*laughing\* what its true

Me; mxm go to sleep

Dre; what did you buy vele

Me; clothes

Dre; and you didnt buy for me

Me; \*laughing\* you told me you already had a tux

Dre; but another one would have been special

Me; ai suka

I closed his eyes and we eventually slept

Friday morning, we talked in bed nje, until ntombi called us for breakfast

Dre; want me to take you home

Ntombi; you dont have too

Dre; no just tell me when you ready

Ntombi; i am done

Dre; ohk asambe

I helped ntombi with her bags and she left. The place was already clean i just made our bed and went to shower i wore my short dungaree with slippers , he came back and he went to shower , we hung out just the 2 of us and took off each others clothes of course. Around 6 i wore a pink skirt, all star and white top with a pink doek just for in case. Mbali said she would pick up unathi and nobuhle. We arrived at his place and it was already packed the cars there i mean i looked at dre

Dre; lets go

Me; cant i wait for mbali

Dre; no lets go

## INSERT #158

We walked in the house and i was so scared i was looking down the entire time. Dre greeted people at the kitchen and so did i , he was holding my hand the entire time. We

got to the lounge and the whole family it was a full house, it was mixed race black and white and coloureds i figured dre mothers family was also there my stomach tied into knots i mean yhooooo.

Dre; sthandwa senhliziyo sami (my love)

The woman was old must be his gran, he kissed her

Her; mara ayanda yini ( but ayanda whats wrong)

AYANDA????

Dre; \*laughing\* ngenzeni (what did i do)

Her; why ungangithandi ( why dont you love me)

Dre; wena yhoooo ngikuthanda kanje ( you! I love you so much )

The woman there were just happy to see him, everyone there nje it was ayanda , ayanda and was kind of shocked. There were 3 old woman i mean old woman, and 2 woman maybe in their 30s or 40s , and one old man, 3 young girls maybe 20s somewhere there

The old woman; so baby uban lo umuhle kanje ohambanaye ( so baby who this beautiful girl you with)

He walked up to me

Dre; you said you want me to bring you umakoti right there she is

I laughed everyone laughed

Old woman; umubi kanje uthole umakoti omuhle kanje ( how can you get such a beautiful wife when you ugly)

Dre laughed

Dre; this is my baby amahle , mami this is my entire family ke as a whole all together, let me start with my dads side

I smiled

Dre; this beautiful woman is my fathers mother.

Me; sawbona ma (helo ma)

She gave me such a warm hug i mean warm and the biggest smile ever

Dre; and her beautiful sister

I hugged her too

Dre; their closest friend, my cousins lungile, ntokozo and samu , my aunts , aunt shiela, aunt thuli and aunt topsy, ntokozo husband bonga.

I hugged them all and they gave me such a warm welcome

Dre; you already know , my mum and my mothers mum and her father, this is my mothers sister linda , her kids melissa and emily, my mothers brother joshua and her wife chelsey

I also hugged them. I had a smile at all times and they all gave me a warm welcome. I sat down and dre left me . I was just fiddling with my fingers

His fathers mother; so baby girl mina ngifuna ukwazi wena ( so i just want to know you baby girl)

Me; mina gogo egama uamahle, ngiphuma escape town ngazalwa khona ( im amahle ma i come from cape town i was born there)

Her; so uya praata ( you talk afrikaans)

They all laughed

Me; \*laughing\* ca gogo, ngafunda uku praater eskolweni kphela, umama nobaba were zulu ( no ma, i learned afrikaans back in high school, my mum and dad were zulu)

Her sister; ntombi yomzulu (zulu girl)

Me; kodwa my zulu is not vey good, ngyakhuluma khona kodwa i just know the basic zulu ( but my zulu is not very good , i talk zulu but basic zulu)

Gran; mtana wesilungu ( child from the suburbs)

i laughed

Her sister; abazali bakho dali, basase kapa ( your parents darling, they still in cape town)

Me; ca gogo , seba dlula emhlabeni ( no ma they passed away)

Her sister; oh im sorry sthandwa sami

I smiled

Aunt shiela; and then family

Me; we not a big family, i lost my grandmother 3 years back but im left with my grandfather, who is back in cape town, my aunt is here in joburg and my other aunts and family members

Gran; manje uhlala noban baby girl ( so who do you live with baby girl)

Me; i live in my own apartment gogo

Gran; usafunda or uyasebenza ( you still studying or you working)

Me; i work gogo , im a doctor

They all cheered i laughed so hard

Gran; wooo we have a doctor now

I laughed

Dre came back , and sat on the arm rest next to me

Dre; kudliwani yeh ( what are we eating)

His gran; you brought us a doctor

Dre laughed

Dre; you see i have class

We laughed

His gran; hambo bona kuthi udlu ini ( go and see what you will both eat)

Dre; baby ufu.....

Girl; like this girl how can she cancel on this appointment

Gran; ubani baby ( who baby)

Girl; the girl thats going to do m.... \*screaming\* ayanda !!!!!

Dre; \*laughing\* so why you screaming

This ayanda name man

She hugged dre

Girl; this entire week iv been missing you , finally i see you

Dre; i know lovy , hows the bride to be

Girl; stressed , things arent going my way

Aunt shiela; baby this is luthando, the bride

Girl; why dont i know her

Dre; \*laughing\* cause iv been hiding her from you

Me; hi

Girl; hi you with him

Dre; \*laughing\* i forgot your manners, shes my girl

Girl; woooooo shes really beautiful

Me; thank you, you too

She smiled

They made me something to eat and i talked with his aunt and his mothers brothers and sisters i had fun to be honest and they would not stop questioning me after a while i got up and helped Lungile with the dishes

Me; so tell me about you

Lungile; \*smiling\* im 25 , my mother is topsy, im a sales consultant

Me; haha bf?

Lungile; \*whispering\* yeah his here i will show you but they dont know we dating

Me; why?

Lungile; his kind off a family friend

Me; \*laughing\* ohhh get your point

Lungile; \*laughing\* yeah you really nice

Me; you too

Dre; \*laughing\* noooo boy you crazy

I turned and it was dre with a cute brother lol, he wrapped his arms behind me

Dre; can i take her

Lungile; yes we were done

Dre; nazi izinto zakho \*laughing\* ( here are your things)

Lungile; \*laughing\* i cant believe you told him out off all people him

Guy; what? His my closest friend

Lungile; \*laughing\* you tell anyone im going to kill you

Dre; maybe i wont il think about it

He pulled me outside and there were rooms upstairs we walked up the stairs , he opened the door and we got in. He picked me up and laid me on the bed

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; love you too ayanda

He laughed

Dre; let me tell you about that

Me; please do

Dre; \*laughing\* ayanda is my first name ne, my gran wanted me to have at least a zulu name, and i was named ayanda andre adams

Me; why dont i know all of this

Dre; you didnt know

Me; no but why dont you use it

Dre; i do just a lot off people dont use it and i cant be telling people to call me ayanda thats their choice but now iv gotten used that only my family calls me ayanda

I just laughed, he kissed me

Me; im not having sex at your place

Dre; ahhhh baby

Me; get off

He kissed me and got off

INSERT #159

#AMAHLE

When we got down mbali, nobuhle and unathi where there i hugged them and we sat at the kitchen all together. With dre cousins. Dre gran called me and i went to the lounge

Gran; engathi uthukile nje sthandwa sami ( you look scared my love)

I smiled and shook my head

Her; bengifuna ukhuluma nawe baby ngalento engiyi bonayo wena nomtwanami ( i wanted to talk to you baby about what im seeing with you and my child)

Me;.....

Her; iyangjabulisa lento engiyibonayo , uyamujabulisa umzukulu wami ( what i see makes me happy, adn it seems like you make my grandchild happy)

Dre; kakhulu futhi mawe ( too much ma)

I turned and dre was leaning on the door frame. I smiled

Her; ibe njalo ke, for into enhle kanje kuthi isebeenze kuba into yabuntu abayi 2 kuphela , akudingakali abo nondindwa ( it must stay that way then, for something this beautiful to last it needs to be between 2 people only, you dont need sluts)

My eyes went wide open and dre just laughed

Her; angihleki njalo ayanda , baby girl maka kuphi iyingkinga ungi phonele yezwa angisa funi ukubona amanye ama rubbish , thina la siyayi mele into esiyifunayo so wena boy mele umulwelwe lomtwana uyangizwa (im not laughing ayanda, baby girl if he gives you a problem call me i dont want to see other rubbish here, in this family we fight for what we want so you baby you need to fight for this child)

Dre; yes mawe ( yes ma)

Her; good

She talked with us then dismissed us. I went to the kitchen and the ladies were peeling veggies , dre came to

check up on me and he was wearing blue over roll pants, white top and all stars he looked hot lol does this guy ever look ugly even for once kodwa.

Dre; you ohk?

Melissa; you think we going to kill her or something

Dre; when she is with devils like yourselves i have to make sure

Me; \*laughing\* im ohk baby wami

He walked to me but i stopped him

Dre; you dont even want me near you anymore

Aminah; thats our work

Dre; my point exactly

Me; have the guys arrived

Dre; yeah they outside

Mbali; wheres shane?

Me, unathi and nobuhle laughed

Me; its not going to work man

Unathi; yazi shes cheating

Dre; ohk what are you up to

Me; nothing punka , do you want anything to eat

Aunt thuli; ay ay umshado lo (ay ay ay this is marriage)

Dre; \*laughing\* umshado ne aunty ( marriage ne aunty)

I laughed

Aunt thuli; mowungathathi ngala ngithumele ufana ( if you dont take here, il send fana to take )

Dre; he will never survive

Aunt thuli left and he kissed me then we carried on with peeling making salads and a lot off things nje, it was really fun cause we would sing , and dre family treated me like a queen you would swear i was the one who was getting married and well the bride was still mad about her make up trial

Around 3 am we were done with everything , including the guys with the cow. We were still waiting for the pots we were only left with rice and stamp for it to cook. We went out and the guys were crazy over nobuhle well shane was making a move on her and i was angry as themba was not there well we lost the bet to shane cause she looked like she was taken by him.

Dre; here

Me; thank you

I wore his jacket i was really cold yho

Me; wheres themba?

Dre; he had to go , he left like 5 minutes ago why?

Me; nothing

Dre; mami

I got closer to him

Me; \*whispering\* i love shane to bits ne but i loved nobuhle for themba

He laughed

Me; dont laugh papi

Dre; no what makes me laugh is , thats exactly what i was thinking too when i first saw your friend i went out and told themba but he was too busy to even concentrate on anything i was saying

Me; \*laughing\* uthanda izinto ayanda yazi ( you like things you know ayanda)

Dre; \*laughing\* you wont stop calling me that ne

Me; it is your name

Dre; yes the one that only my family calls me with

Me; really

Dre; yes mami

He pulled me and just kissed me i kissed him back.

Around 4 am we left. I told dre his not sleeping at his place , he was ohk with it he took everything and left. Well it was more like a sleep over with us girls it was me, unathi , mbali, nobuhle, melissa, aminah and lungile. We all went to bath then did our make up, then wore our clothes we looked like queens. Dre picked us up and we squeezed ourselves. We arrived at the church , the matrimonial began , it ended, they went to take pictures and we went back home. The deco was beautiful no lie

The bride arrived and she was singing. Everyone got seated we were sitting on one table just us girls and the guys were outside. Speeches were said and toasts were made. We decided to go and sit outside with the guys

Dre; you look so beautiful

me; thank you baby and look at you

Dre; kiss me

Me; no

Dre; please

I kissed him and he just smiled

Themba; hi mami \*smiling\*

Me; hey themba \*laughing\*

Themba; mara why unje ( but why are you like this)

Me; ngingani ( like how)

Themba; sokhuluma ( will talk)

Me; ohk

The girls came with chairs and themba face was priceless, we sat around in a circle , the was drinks in the middle off us and we all just talked random stuff, at first nobuhle was not comfortable but eventually she was relaxed and laid back

Dre; one for everyone

Dre appeared with a tray

Me; and this

Dre; take yours and taste

Will all took one and drank it , it burned

Themba; so you 2 work together

Nobuhle; \*smiling\* yeah

Everyone was comfortable with everyone and we all had fun,dre introduced me to more off his friends and family. We got drunk and went to bed. Sunday it was a traditional wedding where the bride was introduced to the grooms family. It was really nice and we only left Monday morning around 3 or 2 am

## INSERT #160

#AMAHLE

Tuesday morning went to shower , ntombi was back ate breakfast and dre dropped me off , he said he would pick me up again. Found myself a scrub and went to my department lunch time called nobuhle and we would meet at the anaesthetic department. Finished my rounds and headed there

Me; lala

Nobuhle; \*smiling\* hi lala

Me; so what we eating today

Nobuhle; i dont know

Me; we taking your car , they dropped me off

Nobuhle; yho

Me; yho what?

Nobuhle; i didnt come with my car

Me; uze ngani ke (what did you come with then)

Nobuhle; \*smiling\* they dropped me off

Me; who the hell dropped you off?

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* i wont tell you

Me; start talking

Nobuhle; ilunch yethu iyaphela mfazi ( our lunch will be over woman)

Me; asambe siyobona sidlani ke (lets go will see what we eating)

We changed and went out to the rank and bought steers and sat in

Me; please tell me tu

Nobuhle; dont judge

Me; ohk

Nobuhle; themba

I laughed so loud

Me; no you didnt

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* it just happened , how i dont know

Me; you slept together

She bit her lip

Me; nobuhle !!!

Nobuhle; i know it was wrong and irresponsible kodwa we had some sort of connection at the wedding, we took each other numbers. Sunday ke thats were everything hit off ke. His a smooth talker, his nice, he smells nice , his got an amazing body and he \*she got lost on her thoughts \* he

Me; \*laughing\* dont even tell me

Nobuhle; im an idiot kodwa for sleeping with him ne , for sure right now he will never even take a good look at me

Me; i hope not lala

Nobuhle; but i had so much fun, i dont even remember the last time i had so much fun

Me; im glad you enjoyed

Nobuhle; like your bf friends, you just get confused who to look at

Me; \*laughing\* that what i noticed the first time i met them

After eating, we went back to work around 4 we knocked off

Dre was with themba. Themba was driving and i sat at the back with my baby

Me; hi themba

Themba; \*laughing\* hi mami

Me; you good

Themba; ngi sharp wena

Me; im good

Dre didnt even wait for me to greet him he just kissed me  
then greeted nobuhle

Dre; so what do you want to eat

Me; right now

Dre; yes or wena mama what do you wanna eat

Nobuhle; me

Themba; whats up with the two of you, you dont want to  
eat

Me; mina im hungry yho

Nobuhle; same here

Themba; ohk what we eating

Dre; lets go to spurs once

Themba; ohk

Me; so you missed me

Dre; maybe

Me; maybe what does that even mean

Dre; it means just that

Me; you such an ass you know that

Dre; and you love me for that , do you really have to go  
back to your place

Me; yes want to live with me now

Dre; yes

Me; no

Dre; \*laughing\* ohk kiss me ke

Me; \*laughing\* no uyabora wena (no you such a bore)

We cuddled next to each other and listened to themba  
and nobuhle

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* why dont i believe you?

Themba; why vele ?

Nobuhle; you look like the type not to be trusted

He laughed so loud

Themba ;uyangi hurter ( you hurting me)

Nobuhle; sorry ke \*smiling\*

Me and dre looked at each other and just smiled about  
what i dont even know

We got to spurs ordered our food , ate and we left, they  
dropped me off first and i went to take a long shower then  
it was bed. Few weeks passed and everything was going  
perfectly with me and dre i mean perfectly. Themba and  
nobuhle were dating, sandile and unathi were dating i  
know shit was going down. I went to visit pa one weekend  
and i told him off my plans i wanted to buy my own house  
, where he would live with me , he was hesitant but

eventually was ok with it. I sat plans with him to sell my parents house since i doubt i would be moving back to cape town

One Tuesday woke up and went to gym i even went to gym now wanted to take care off my body. After gym i headed to dre place. I had the key just like he had a key to my place i parked my car on the driveway and walked in i was still in my gym outfit, i didnt go in the kitchen door just opened the sliding door and heads turned

Me; yho yini ngani (whats up with you)

Themba; why you sneaking up on us

Me; im not

Kissed dre and the were stacks off cash on the table and drugs

Me; and this

Dre; we had nowhere to work , ubuyaphi usexy kanje ( where do you come from looking so sexy)

Me; gym

Dre; oh konje you gym now, mele ngihambe nawe ( I must come with you one time) the are some thirsty niggas at the gym

Me; mxm where is ntombi?

Dre; one off the bedroom

Me; why when you deal with money and its just you 2

Themba; cause we the only people that actually know money

Me; \*laughing\* ai suka wena im hungry yho

Dre; what you want to eat

Me; i dont know, not too much fat or carbs kodwa

Dre; \*laughing\* yho there she goes

Me; \*laughing\* what you cant expect me to eat junk on the other hand i just got back from gym

Themba; theres nothing wrong with that

Me; no

Went to the kitchen and made myself light food and went back to sit with them

Themba; where must i drop this off

Dre; 1st gate . 4th floor number 212

Themba; ohk exchange right

Dre; yes and dont leave until he give you the stuff man or you know how fucked up they can get

Themba; ohk and this is for stephen

Dre; yes im meeting him with william today , these 2 bags are for stephen and 1 for william

Themba; kanti, what did william give you

Dre; he had a shortage off the problem but he said next month it will be 3\* more

Themba; ohk , il go put this at the bank ke

Dre; the one in your name

Themba; i know that and that

Dre; no im keeping this one here just in case emergency , and this batch will you be able to do it

Themba; eish yeah relax

Dre; ntwana please, noma ngaba ksasa ( even if its tomorrow) the owner is only expecting if before the end of this week

Themba; ohk if thats the case then sharp

They placed the money on the bags and drugs and he turned to me

Me; you all mine now

He nodded his head

Themba; no no im not leaving as yet yho

Me; \*laughing\* why themba?

Themba; ngoba angifuni nithanda kabi uku sexana nina ( cause I don't want to , you love have sex ne)

Me and dre laughed

Me; hows nobuhle

The smile on his face lol

Themba; \*laughing\* ugrand (shes ohk) why?

Me; no im just asking

Dre; seems like you taken by her

Themba ; too much i mean shes wife material

Dre; ehhhh wife material that fast

Me; \*smiling\* vele she is , you look cute together , after us of course

Themba; ay nina phela ( ay as for you too)

Dre; never thought id see this day , this guy in a relationship

Themba; no mina im so much better wena thats a whole other story

Dre; but i mean id be crazy if i was not with her

Me; vele

He covered my face with his hand and i just laughed

#ANDRE

The rest off the week flew by so fast , i had a talk with my uncles then went to mbali. I asked mbali to find out

something for me and the next day she gave me what i needed from her

INSERT #161

#AMAHLE

PA told me he was coming this weekend to see me and i could not be more happier than that , i never saw dre cause he was working. Friday afternoon i rushed to the airport and picked him up

Me; i missed you so much

Pa; i miss you too my angel, how is work

Me; hectic pa i mean everything is just hectic but right now i will leave you with mam joyce ne

Mam joyce was my helper a woman in her 50s

Me; cause i have to go back to work ohk

Pa; ohk its fine baby, hows andre

Me; \*smiling\* his good pa really good

Pa; you happy

Me; so much , he makes me so happy

Pa; \*smiling\* im glad to hear that

Me; and you remember the wedding i told you about

Pa; yes

Me; i met his entire family they were so nice

Pa; i was going to fight andre if they were not nice to my angel

Me; \*laughing\* i know you would

We got to my place

Me; hi ma

Ma joyce; hi baby girl

Me; this man over here is my everything ne , my father, my grandfather everything nje

Pa laughed

Mam joyce; sawbona baba (hi baba)

Pa; yebo ma unjani (hi ma how are you?)

Mam joyce; ngyaphila wena unjani (im good and you)

Pa; nami ngyaphila (im good)

Me; ma please make him something to eat ngisaye emsebenzini (im going to work)

Ma; ohk

Me; Pa i knock off ngo 6 ohk

Pa; ohk i have to talk to you about something very serious

Me; what is it?

Pa; when you get back

Me; ohk

I kissed his cheek and left for work

Me; thank you lala for holding it down for me

Nobuhle; pleasure , hows your pops

Me; he looks good so im happy

Nobuhle; the way you get so happy when you talk about  
your pops

Me; \*laughing\* you have no idea how much i love him  
yhooo

Nobuhle; ncooooo

Me; \*laughing\* I forgot you like this

We went back to work. Past 6 i knocked off and went to  
buy us food then went home. He was watching tv with  
mam joyce

Me; ohk i got us ribs, nama chips

Pa; thank you baby

Ma joyce got up to dish up everything. I went to change  
and went downstairs

Me; im back

Pa; ohk i have something for you

Me; ohk

He left

Me; ao where you going

Pa; im coming

After a few minutes he came back holding an envelope

Me; and this

Pa; read it

" mndeni wakwa ngwenya othandekayo. Philani nathi siyaphila.

Sibhala lencwadi ngoba indodana yethu uayanda andre adams ubethanda ukucela isandla sendodakazi yenu uamahle ngwenya emshadweni.

Ngokuzithoba , sicela ukuthuthukisa ubuhlobo phakathi kweminden i yethu. Ngokosiko, singathokoza uma iminden ingahlela ilanga esingathumela ngalo abakhongi.

Thina bakwa adams besinga kujabulela ukuthumela abakhongi mhla ziwu 15 november kulonyaka noma ngomqqibelo olandelayo mhla ziwu 22 november. Sicela nisazise usuku eningalujabulela nina abomndeni wakwa ngwenya.

Sibhala lencwadi ngokukhulu ukuzithoba thina umndeni wakwa adams"

" the lovable family of ngwenyas . Be happy as much as we are happy.

We write this letter because our son ayanda andre adams would love to ask for your daughters hand in marriage that is amahle ngwenya.

With great pride , we ask of you to build a relationship between the two families . According to tradition we would appreciate it if you could tell us a day where we can send our elders to come meet with your family.

The adams family would be pleased , if they could send the elders to your home on the 15 november this year or the following Saturday on the 22 november. We ask of you to please let us know when you would like for us to come to your home

We write this letter with pride and joy us the family of the adams"

I read it maybe 10 times and finally looked up at pa. My breathing was heavy and pa just smiled

Me; pa

Pa; uyezwa bathini lapho (do you understand what are they saying)

I nodded my head

Me; they, they

Pa; \*smiling\* they want you to marry to their family

Me; am i ready i dont even know pa

Pa; that decision , you the only one who can make it

Me; omg i cant believe andre did not tell me

Pa; he was not suppose to , you were suppose to see with this im just confused about andre what is he baby

I laughed

Me; ugogo wakhe (his granny)is zulu but married into a coloured family the adams, his father was then born but before they could get married so he adapted the zulu tradition because his fathers father had not yet paid the damages and lobola so , andre father grew up with her mothers family which are zulu and only changed his surname when he was about to marry andre mother

Pa; oh

Me; \*laughing\* yes

Pa; so do you love him?

Me; yes pa i love him so much

Pa; then you ready to marry him

Me; i think i need to talk to him first

Pa; ohk baby take your time, they wont rush you cause they hoping you say yes its still october so we have time

Me; ohk pa i love you ohk

Pa; i love you so much more my angel

I hugged him so tight, mam joyce came back with our food, she read the letter and was very much happy for me

Next morning i called andre around 6 i could not sleep to be honest, it rang but no answer i tried it again , no answer and i tried it for the last time

Dre; hmmmm

Me; wake up

Dre; mami

Me; i need to see you today

Dre; could you not wait till 11 or 12 to tell me you miss me

Me; andre im serious

Dre; ohk sthandwa sami , when?

Me; meet me for lunch at maponya ngo 2

Dre; ohk mam

Me; bye

Dre; no i love you baby

Me; no

Dre; you mad at me

Me; yes now bye

I hung up and prepared for work

Got to work and i told nobuhle , the was she screamed even our prof complained and i just laughed

Nobuhle; dr adams

Me; \*laughing\* dont even start how did you even know

Nobuhle: themba

Me: mxm

Nobuhle; dr adams how cute is that

Me; and nerve wrecking too, im only 25

Nobuhle; you financially stable, you a dr, you have your own place, you are crazy in love with a guy that wants to marry you, what the hell is wrong with you. People who dont marry in their 20s are usually waiting for what you have and wena you already have it so what you waiting for

Me; there are so many things to consider than that when you want to get married

Nobuhle; then sit down and talk to andre about it

Me; which is why i wont be joining you for lunch

Nobuhle; you meeting up with him

Me'; yeah better get going ke

Nobuhle; you will call me when you back ke

Me; ohk dont miss me too much

Nobuhle; i think thats hard

## INSERT #162

### #AMAHLE

Dre called me and told me he was at mc donalds. I headed there and looked for him he was upstairs , and had already ordered my favourite. I kissed him and sat opposite him

Dre; you look beautiful when you mad

Me; mxm

Dre; \*smiling\* talk to me lala

Me; pa got a letter from your family andre

Dre; ohk

Me; they asking for my hand in marriage including you

Dre; dont you want to be mrs adams

Me; i do but

Dre; but

Me; are we really ready andre, i mean ready we only got back together this year after 2 years of not seeing or talking to each other and we making it official i dont mean official serious relationship but marriage papi. Mina i dont want any divorce papi when we get married , its us forever only us as your gran said do we want the same things all off that

Dre; ohk...

Me; im not done papi

Dre; ohk

Me; this is a big commitment yes i love you so much futhi and sometimes i think im ready but now that its actually happening i dont know are you ready?

Dre;....

Me; im done

Dre; ohk mami im crazy about you, i mean im crazy about you and you know that which is why im making this big commitment im not doing this because im putting you on

lock down or anything like that im doing this because this , us is it for me and i love you and i doubt i will love anyone else like i love you which is why i know this is the right decision to do. Marriage is a lot of work and it wont be fun at times but its up to us to make it work yes we love each other but that may not be enough when it comes to marriage but will need so much more than love but trust and communication. I also dont want a divorce at all once we say i do theres no going back another reason why i want to take this step with you i want to be stuck with you. Will we fight yes, will we argue yes, will we have temptation maybe , will we want to give up yes marriage has never been easy its very different to what we have now but you a praying woman mami , if we involve god in our marriage no shit will come between us. Mina im ready to marry you i can even marry you right now for all i care cause i know what i want and i want you , i need you so i dont want you to feel pressured or anything like that you want me to give you a year or 2 ohk thats fine with me but thats telling me you waiting for something to break us up or something to happen to us

Me; no ....

Dre; im not done which im not saying you are, like i said i love you and waiting for you wont be a problem with me as long as im with you still. I take us very seriously mami which is why i did it the traditional way im not traditional but i wanted to show you how serious i am about us. I

love you amahle i dont care if i have not seen or talk to you since this year , a month ago or yesterday for us to get through what we went through thats enough for me to know what i want and so should you

I was already teary

Dre; im not rushing you ohk, take your time come here  
He pulled me in a hug , and i just broke down. Im sure people there thought they just dumped me. After our moment i bought food for nobuhle and we left, we went our separate ways since we came with different cars. I gave nobuhle her food and my mind nje was all over the place 7 i knocked off and went home

I knocked at pa room

Pa; come in

I went in and he was reading a bible, since ma died he never stopped

Me; hi pa

Pa; helo my angel

Me; can we talk

Pa; ohk come sit here

He taped the side of the bed and i jumped on it

Pa; whats wrong

Me; so i have made my decision on what i want to do, or what you should tell andre family

Pa; ohk

Me; i love him pa i really love him and i dont want anybody else to be my husband but him so you should contact them adams family

'the smile that appeared on pa face , it showed he wanted this so much

Pa; you sure \*smiling\*

Me; iv never been so sure about anything in my life pa

He hugged me

Me; you happy

Pa; im happy if you happy my angel

Me; \*smiling\* il be mrs adams

We both laughed and i sat with him for few more minutes

Well he said he would talk with mbali dad, and my aunts husband and my other uncles to confirm the date and since cape town was far they had to do it here. I wanted it to be at mbali place so i was going to ask mbali mum if she was ohk if it.

## INSERT #163

#AMAHLE

One Saturday i called mbali mum

Mbali mum; baby

Me; hi ma

Mbali mum; nhow are you my love

Me; im good ma can i come see you today ma

Mbali mum; come baby

Me; thank you ma

I went to bath and pa left very early. I just wore a pair of shorts, top and slippers and left

Got home and went out

I hugged ma and made tea for us

Me; so ma did daddy tell you

Mbali mum; \*smiling\* yes baby lilili

I just laughed

Me; so ma andre family is coming in two weeks time, I don't count this week and by the end of this week it will november

Mbali mum; on the 15 right

Me; yes ma but I want them to come here, I don't have a problem with aunty place but I want them here its home

Mbali mum; well that's the same thing she said that it was only fair they come here cause its your home

Me; yes ma

Mbali mum; ohk il talk with daddy then will finalise everything

Me; thank you ma

I hugged her

Mbali mum; so you excited

Me; yes ma too much

Ma; iv been saying the will be a wedding you know

Me; haaaaa ma

Ma; \*Laughing\* what it's the truth

We talked and only left when it was dark. Got home and my plate was already waiting for me ate and watched tv cause pa was already sleeping. My phone rang and it was my papi

Me; papi

Dre; thank you for making me the happiest man alive

Me; you got the news

Dre; yes, my uncles told me your family gave us the go ahead

Me; \*laughing\* you were nervous ne

Dre; you have no idea mami like i even prayed

Me; really

Dre; yeah something i dont do everyday

Me; you should

Dre; il try mami, i miss you

Me; i miss you too and im done

Dre; \*screaming\* yhoooooooo im going to show you flames

Me; please do

Dre; but i thought you starting with prevention

Me; i am the 1st of november

Dre; ohk sthandwa sami when is your day off

Me; it was today and tomorrow but im taking pa to the airport tomorrow

Dre; what time

Me; 1

Dre; ohk il pick you up and him and will both drop him off

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

Dre; anything for my soon to be mrs adams

Me; \*laughing\* just imagine il be dr adams

Dre; i love and i mean i love the sound off that

We talked about random stuff and i hung up

Next day i spent time with pa and we had so much fun. Around 12 dre picked us up and i sat at the back seat. It was like i was not even in the car they were just talking just the two off them. We got to the airport said my goodbye gave him a big hug and kiss and he would be coming back the week off the negotiations. He left and we went back to the car

Me; so after the negotiations?

Dre ; what do you want to do ?

Me; \*Laughing\* dre!

Dre; ohk its all up to you but keep your place

Me; ohk im cool with that

Dre; we still have a white wedding....

He kept talking but i did not hear anything my mind was just all over the place mostly my parents and ma , i was looking outside the window. My parents would not be there to see me get married or my father walk me down

the ai.... My thoughts were disturbed by dre hand on my shoulder i did not turn to look at him cause i was crying i just went silent

Dre; its ohk to think about your parents and ma mami

Me;.....

Dre; just like its ohk to cry and miss them

I turned to look at him and he wiped away my tears

Dre; you may not see them on that day but they will be with you just like they with you each and every day ohk

I nodded my head, he kissed my hand and carried on driving

We went to get something to eat for later. Got to his place and we just cuddled in bed

Dre; mami you still want your own house

Me; im not sure anymore but im keeping my apartment

Dre; you will rent it out

Me; yeah , when did you want to finalise things

Dre; maybe next year

Me; early next year

Dre; yeah or later does not matter

Me; cant believe i have to start planning for my wedding

Dre; did you want to , growing up

Me; yes yes yhooo

He laughed

Dre; you like things

Me; look who is talking

He flipped me over and got on top off me , i wrapped my arms around his neck and pulled him closer to me

Dre; why do you smell so nice?

Me; \*laughing\* saying that only now?

Dre; no man baby like , im only getting to you this close phela and only now am I smelling this new perfume of yours

Me; its not new

Dre; you lying i know you too well, your taste, i know how you smell and this is not the perfume you usually wear

Me; \*laughing\* you sound like an obsessive bf

Dre; cause i am , now who bought you this perfume

Me; my new bf , his still trying to impress me

Dre; \*laughing\* il fuck him up real quick

Me; well lets see

I kissed him and he deepened the kiss , he moved his kisses to my neck and i let out a moan suddenly ntombi called his name but we ignored her

Ntombi; andre your mum is here

He broke the kiss

Dre; me and you we not done

Me; of course we not \*smiling\*

We got out off bed and fixed ourselves up and went downstairs when dre mum saw me , she just opened her arms for me and i went in between them

Me; hi ma

Her; hi baby you 2 cant stay away from each other can you

Me; we did not even see each other the whole week

Her; \*smiling\* im so happy to see you

We hugged again

Dre; im also here

Her ; i dont even care about you anymore

Dre; \*laughing\* oh wow mum, really

Her; \*smiling\* how you baby

Dre; im good ma

She kissed him on the cheek and we sat down

Her; so how are you 2 doing

Dre; we ohk arent we baby

Me; yes we good ma

Her; excited to be the 2cnd mrs adams

Me; \*laughing\* il be the second mrs adams?

Her; yes , his father was the only boy to carry out the adams surname and gave it to me first, now his son giving it to you

Me; thats amazing

Her; im so happy you making things official , you need to talk to your brother to settle down his not getting any younger

Dre; when he meets the right girl trust me , he wont waste any time

I got up and made us something to drink cause ntombi was too busy

We talked with his mum about so many things and we just had fun. Later that day she left and we got back to what we were doing earlier then went home the following morning.

INSERT #164

## #ANDRE

Monday morning woke up and prepared for work. Signed in and headed to where i will be working non interesting was happening at work just the usual and traumatic events when i knocked off headed straight home and to my surprise kim was there

Me; what brings you here

Kim; no hi

Me; \*smiling\* hi baby

Kim; how are you

Me; im ohk you

Kim; im good

Me; whats up

Kim; i missed you

Me; you never miss me so what do you want

Kim; ohk i need a favour from you

Me; ohk let me change first im exhausted

Kim; ohk

Walked upstairs, changed to sweatpants and sweaters and went downstairs

Me; ohk lets talk

Kim; so you know my matric dance is a day after my exams right

Me; yeah how could i forget, when you tell me about it all the time

Kim; mxm so i need you to convince ma to allow me to go to the after party

Me; hell no

Kim; dre

Me; no , shit goes down in these after parties and theres no way in hell im going to allow ma to let you go

Kim; why do you have to be like this

Me; im just protecting you

kim; from what? People iv been in school with for 5 years

Me; kim if mum does not want you to go , its because she has a good reason for it

Kim; dre please all my friends are going and me staying behind thats just not fair, its my last day probably with them and you taking that away from me. Im sure you went to your dance

Me; no i was in jail

Kim; oh I forgot but dre im sure you want me to have something you didnt have

Me; \*laughing\* where the hell do you get that shit

Kim; dre please i really want to go

Me; fine yho, il call her just as long if anything happens  
you call me or dorian

Kim; dont worry about that i will

Me; ohk have you eaten

Kim; yes, ntombi made me something to eat

Me; ohk

Kim; thank you so much ohk

Me; just dont make me regret it

Kim; you wont... So?

Me; what now?

Kim; \*laughing\* nothing i just heard you getting married

Me; maybe i am

Kim; i always knew the girl that would make you settle  
down was amahle

Me; \*laughing\* yeah right stop lying

Kim; im not and you know it but im really happy for you,  
like really, really happy for you

Me; thank you lala im way happy im with her

Kim; wooo just take a look at yourself

Me; mxm

She left around 8, she knew how to drive so she had things easier for her. After she left i just went straight to bed thats how tired i was. Well few days passed and the weeks passed by so fast. Friday day before the negotiations had to go buy a few things like drinks that will be given to amahle uncles and took out money. Saturday morning my uncles came to pick up everything and left, they did not go with me cause that was part off the process.

## #AMAHLE

Dre uncles arrived and i was told to sit on one off the rooms outside, i changed to a skirt and doek and sat at the room with mbali and 2 off my uncles daughters.

Mbali; you nervous

Me; just a lil bit

Cuz; i wonder what are they saying

Me; same here or how much they charging for me

Cuz 2 ; mina i want at least 500 thousand

Mbali; yeses what do you come with wena

Me; \*laughing\* yazi , i think thats too much

Cuz 2; mina thats what im settling for

Mbali; good luck with that lala

We talked about random things until one off my uncles called me, actually all 4 us they asked us to cover up so we did and we walked to the lounge, sat on the floor and they asked them if they know their bride, they agreed and pointed me then we got up and left. After a few minutes we dished up for them and well mbali and my cousins took the food to the lounge. They stayed there for like an hour or 2 drinking and just talking then they left.

Later that day i called my papi

Dre; my woman

Me; my man

Dre; or should i say my wife

I laughed

Dre; everything went perfectly

Me; it did

Dre; yes and you didnt come cheap either

Me; \*laughing\* serious

Dre; yes yho

Me; how much is left for you to finish it up

Dre; im done

Me; \*laughing\* you paid my lobola in a singel day

Dre; \*laughing\* yes well my uncle told me how much was short and i rushed to the bank and met up with him

Me; yhoooo kodwa baby

Dre; \*laughing\* what i didnt want to owe your family

Me; i love you ne

Dre; i love you too baby wami

Me; talk tomorrow ohk

Dre; ohk mami

I hung up

I went to make myself a cup of coffee and pa was there

Me; you still up

Pa; yes angel but i could not sleep

Me; you ohk?

Pa; yes baby im ohk , are you good

Me; yes and happy too that everything went well

Pa; but this guy

Me; dre?

Pa; yes

Me; \*laughing\* what did he do

Pa; he took out money as though he was buying bread  
yazi , i didnt like that

Me; \*laughing\* so you wanted him to take 6 months  
before he paid it again

Pa; yes

I laughed

Me; no pa im happy he is done

Pa; well whats left now is the big day

Me; yes im still going to think about that, everything i  
want a big wedding

Pa; always have , from a young age

Me; yes so i really wish i will have what iv always wanted

INSERT #165

#AMAHLE

Sunday morning woke up and went to church , pa never  
went to church even during ma, he never went to church  
just read the bible. Got to church and went to sit next to  
mbali ma and mbali. The service began and after 2 hours  
or 3 it was over, went straight home found pa and mam  
joyce just talking greeted them and went upstairs changed  
to more comfortable clothes

Me; il cook today ma ohk

Mam joyce; you sure baby

Me; yes ma

She went to sit down with pa and i took out everything i would need

Pa; have you talked to dre

Me; yes last night pa

Pa; why dont you invite him to join us for supper

Me; you sure

Pa; yes

Me; ohk can you call him, my phone is on the table

Pa; i dont know how to use this phone of yours

I unlocked it and dialled dre numbers and gave pa. After a few minutes

Pa; andre, yes im fine boy how about you, i wanted to invite you to join us for supper this evening , \*laughing\* yes , no you dont have to bring anything unless you want to, ohk come at 7, ohk bye... His coming baby

Me; ohk pa

I continued cooking while listening to rnb jams , around 6;30 i was done. I set the table and mam joyce had already left

Past 7 dre arrived, well pa opened for him and he had dessert with him. He kissed my cheek and went to sit down, well began the course with just drinks, we talked then i dished up. Well they talked as if i was not even there , talking from news, politics, sports and the future. Around 10 he left and i went straight to bed. Cause Monday i had to go to work dre took pa to the airport. The week flew by so fast and none interesting happened. The following week was just home. Saturday morning was woken up by a buzz. Ran downstairs and it was a delivery guy, i let him in and waited for him at door. The car appeared and it was a bouquet of pink and white roses and 2 paper bags i signed them and walked inside

I put the flowers in the vase , and opened the paper bag one was a red dress, the other a box with red heels my eyes just went wide. Took the card " see you at 6 date night... Love you " the smile on my face was way big. I made breakfast for myself , ate and left. Went to do my hair and nails and came back around 3. went to take a shower, then curled the weave and wore my dress and heels , they fitted like they should. The dress was a long sleeve open back red dress and the heels revealed my toes, and painted them red. Dre arrived while i was still

busy and told him to wait for me then took my red bag and went downstairs

Dre; how lucky am i

Me; \*smiling\* vey lucky

We kissed. He was wearing blue jeans, white shit, red tie and red blazer and formal shoes.

Dre; you look so beautiful

Me; thank you \*smiling\* you dont look bad yourself

Dre; i tried didnt i

Me; \*laughing\* yes papi

He pulled me closer to him and squeezed my butt

Me; dont cause if you do anything at this point will end up taking each others clothes off

Dre; thats a good idea, may i

Me; yes you may

I wrapped my arm around his and we walked out. He opened the door and i got in the car

Me; so where are we going

Dre; a surprise

Me; dre!

Dre; trust me ohk baby wami

Me; ohk il try my best

Dre; hows work?

Me; hectic papi, theres never a slow day lapho its  
exhausting sometimes yazi

Dre; but you love it right

Me; a lot , wouldnt change a thing about it

Dre; thats all you need to know, to get through the day

Me; and you , thinking about us makes me get excited for  
the next day

Dre; oh really

Me; \*laughing\* dont act like you dont know that

Dre; i didnt mami \*smiling\*

Me; well now you do , dont you

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; oh really

He laughed

Dre; oh so you going to be like this

Me; no i just didnt know that

He kissed my hand and we continued talking about  
random things

We got to this place iv never been too before

Me; what is this place

Dre; just a place i know

We walked in and the place was empty. I turned to dre

Dre; \*smiling\* whats wrong

Me; theres no one in here

Dre; cause its only us

Me; how is that even possible

He leaned on and whispered to my ear

Dre; i know the owner off this place, we do business together so he didnt mind to borrow me the place for the whole night

I smiled

Dre; come here

I walked with him and he pulled the chair for me i sat down and he sat opposite me. A guy came out and gave us drinks. The were rose pedals everywhere, candles, it was dark , and there was a view of the city lights i think, slow music playing on the back ground it was beautiful looked more like a movie and fairy tale than reality to be honest

Me; this is beautiful baby

Dre; you know i would do anything to make you happy

Me; \*smiling\* when did you start being such a romantic

Dre; im taking it one step at a time and i do have to keep my woman happy dont i

Me; of course you do

We talked about random things and our song came on i just covered my face

Dre; come here you know this is our song

Me; can this day get any better

Dre; i dont know, il let you be the judge by the end off this day

Me; it already is

We got up and he pulled me closer to him and just moved to the song. Our dessert came and it was the bomb some guy that looked familiar came to our table, he looked a bit old

Dre; baby still remember stephen, met him I think few years back your birthday week his also the owner off this place

Me; oh yes you have a beautiful place here and the food, seems like your restaurants never go wrong

Him; \*laughing\* with me around nothing will go wrong and im glad you enjoying it what about the dessert

Me; \*smiling\* i was just telling him , i might just come here everyday for it

Him; well good thing you love it , can i take her turner

Dre; dont take too long

Him; i wont, let me show you how its done

Me; will you really

He smiled and nodded his head. He gave me his hand i took it and we disappeared to the kitchen. Well it had a lot off ingredients but i was definitely going to try it out

Me; \*laughing\* when i try it out , can you be the first one to ta.... \*i paused\*

I could not breath anymore , i began sweating, my heart began beating sooo fast i could not control it, what was happening is this real. I was suffocating it seemed as if the place just went small for me to breath in. What was in front off me was taking my breath away.

INSERT #166

#ANDRE

ME; can you please breath

Her breathing just got heavier and heavier

Me; sthandwa sami, my woman, my queen, my punka and most importantly my mami. We went through a lot for us to be together , some approved off it and some didnt but we didnt let that keep us down instead we took stolen kisses, we would disappear together and just have fun but in that process i also hurt you, not once and maybe not twice but you still gave me a chance and i will never forget that. You stood by me through my bullshit , you stole everything inside off me something that a lot off people failed to get but you with no effort at all you just took it and that shows that it was yours from the beginning. I never knew what it meant to love someone so much that you would do anything for them i would hear people talk about love and how their partner was important to them and how they would give up everything for them but i was always like thats just bullshit theres no way a woman can come into your life and you ready to give up everything for them just them while they dont give you anything in return but their time and loyalty i was always against that until i met you, where i wanted to give up everything iv fought and killed to built just for you , i wanted to just give you the world and i didnt want anything from you, i wanted to and still want to protect you and i would still do anything to protect you and because off you amahle ngwenya you made me believe that all the things i said were bullshit are actually true.

Cause im ready baby im ready to please you, to love you, to give you the world and too even die for you sthandwa sami. \*she began crying\* thats the only tears i want to see from this day on till we both go 6 feet , tears of joy. I dont want to hurt you baby and i wont you mean way too much for me baby. I promise you i will never love any other woman as much as i love you well except our daughter paris of course \*she laughed\* i love you so much mangwenya, dr gwenya and i want you to be my wife. We have made way too many memories bad and good but i want us to make more good memories than bad. Thank you baby for forgiving me for all the shit iv put you through and thank you for giving us this chance i love you so much so make me the happiest man and well most hated guy since i know a lot off guys want to put this ring on this finger of yours and be my wife not for 2 years but for a lifetime be dr adams

She couldnt even answer me , she just went on her knees next to me and hugged me. She was crying uncontrollably and was even getting hiccups

Me; im still waiting for my answer

Amahle; \*crying\* yes, yes baby a thousand times yes or even more yes baby

I just laughed , she handed me her hand and i slowly put it on her and she gave me a huge hug again

Me; i love you ohk

Amahle; i love you too papi so much

I wiped her tears

Stephen; well congratulations are in order

Amahle; so you just wanted to take me out off the room

Stephen; well i had to give you a distraction , for my man over here to do whats right

Me; so you think i did whats right

Stephen ; definitely just look at her , i would get down on my knees on day 2 off knowing her

I laughed

Amahle; well thank you mr stephen

Stephen; please miss call me stephen

She laughed.

Me; thank you man, for helping me put this together

Stephen; any time

Me; want to have the last dance

She nodded her head and i pulled her in my arms

After a couple off hours i drove us back home, she kept looking at her left hand and i just smiled got home. And we walked inside she began taking her dress off and i just looked at her, she removed it and threw it to me i quickly

grabbed it so i will see whats next. She looked at me and walked upstairs, she unclipped her bra and also threw it to me. I bit my lip as she held her underwear and pushed it down. Walked in to our bedroom and she was laying on the bed on her back i got in between her legs and kissed her, she deepened the kiss. I flipped us over and she was on top off me, she held my shirt in fists

Her; do you love this shirt

Me; not anymore

She just pulled it and the buttons went all over the room i smiled at that and she removed the shit, she went down and removed my belt, unbuttoned my jeans and pushed them down and my boxers. She kissed it first and just down throat it. She did her magic while she moaned. I groaned at that. She was doing her magic and it was real i was ready to cum so i pulled her up and flipped her over. I went down on her , sucked licked and fingered her till her body shook like crazy. She pulled me up and i kissed her neck, she grabbed me tight and pulled me closer to her. She let out a number of moans and i entered her she gasped for air the sight off her face was beautiful. I kissed her and she held my arms urging me to go faster i did as ordered her moans got louder and her grip tighter " baby \*heavy breathing\* " i joined our fingers together and the pace increased , she locked her legs with mine "'im going to cum baby \*heavy breathing\* i went deeper and she

suddenly let out the loudest scream. I flipped us over and she ride on my D ,her pace increased and my body , i bit my lower lip and her paced just went faster the only words i could say " fuck" and she just went faster and suddenly my body got up from the bed and i held her so tight , she also grabbed my back tight and just let cum inside off her . We were both breathing so heavy , we ran out off breather , she jumped to her side off the bed and just tried so hard to breath

Amahle; \*heavy breathing\* i love you so much

She said that cuddling me and i just kissed her forehead , we both zoned off

Next day woke up early and went downstairs. Made breakfast for us well i did her favourite toast, butter and coffee and walked upstairs. She was still sleeping

Me; mami .... Mami

Amahle; hmmmm

Me; wake up

She slowly opened her eyes and smiled

Me; what you smiling about

Amahle; \*smiling\* i just remembered im looking at my soon to be husband

Me; \*laughing\* you an idiot , wake up

She sat on her butt , took the big pillow and leaned on it

Gave her the tray , went downstairs took my food, and also leaned on the big pillow

Amahle; does this mean i can start looking for a dress

Me; \*laughing\* lets set the date first

Amahle; what were you thinking

Me; well its a bit late for december now , but i wanted it to be summer babe so we wont have to worry about the weather

Amahle; yeah maybe november

Me; you sure

Amahle; yes and this will give me time to plan uyabo

I kissed her

Me; anything you want mami , im ready to give it to you

Amahle; really

Me; yes

Amahle; ohk i want a g wagon for our wedding gift

Me; \*laughing\* done

Amahle; \*laughing\* ay baby im just joking yho

Me; really

Amahle; yes baby im just kidding , you need to stop taking everything i say serious

Me; but sometimes i dont know if you joking or not

Amahle; you will have to figure it out ke

Me; \*laughing\* i cant believe il be marrying your ass, think i might just change my mind right now

Amahle; \*laughing\* biggest mistake you will possibly make , a garden wedding would be nice ne

I looked at her

Amahle; what? \*laughing\* im already planning it on my head and i cant help it

Me; i know that and it wont stop till that day

She nodded her head

Me; well it would be nice, like matrimonial

Amahle; next to a river \*raising her eyebrow\*

Me; yeah picturing it, it is quiet nice

Amahle; yeah but i also wanted an indoor thing

Me; so what do you want kahle, outdoor or in door

Amahle; mmmmm outdoor is really nice and romantic and refreshing but in door theres deco beautiful deco, warm feeling nah outdoor

Me; ohk outdoor it is

Amahle; what do you think

Me; does not make much off a difference too me

Amahle; ohk we need to sort this out

Me; what?

She turned her whole body to look at me

Amahle; baby this will be our wedding ohk ours so i dont want to be those fussy brides that chose everything and you just the groom that follows everything i say i want you to tell me if you dont like something even if i love it. This wedding is mine as much as it is yours, cause if i fuss you might just change your mind and i dont want that i also want you to be part of this. You want a braai ohk tell me then will sort it out into something will both agree on please ne

Me; \*smiling\* ohk baby but i dont kn....

She cut me off

Amahle; i know i know you dont know anything about planning a wedding so do i but you know what you like and dislike angithi

Me; yes

Amahle; good then thats settled

Me; ohk mami

Amahle; and i changed my mind i think i want indoors now

Me; no more outdoor

Amahle; no

Me; you need to stop changing your mind

Amahle; its confusing at times baby , wheres ntombi

Me; whats the time

She took her watch and checked

Amahle; 11;30

Me; church

Amahle; what time does she usually come back

Me; past 1

Amahle; you should go to church

Me; when im ready yeah, not now though

Amahle; before we get married?

Me; \*laughing\* i dont know maybe maybe not i dont know baby

Amahle; mmmm ohk thank you for my breakfast

Me; sure whats with you and toast vele

Amahle; \*smiling\* its nice ao

Me; you enjoy bread thats burnt, with only butter

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah its really nice just like you love your eggs half done

Me; different story

Amahle; no its not

Me; lets just end it here, cause you wont stop arguing with me

Got up and took our plates, put them on the sink, went upstairs and she was on my phone

Amahle; \*smiling\* yes, nangu hold on..... Here

Me; already being a wife huh

Amahle; \*laughing\* voetsek

She went to the bathroom

Me; sure

Themba; bozy

Me; you good boy

Themba; not really , adel was arrested

Me; \*shouting\* what?

themba; this morning, he called me and told me to let you know

Me; what did they find?

Themba; he wont say but he needs to see you

Me; where is he

Themba;..... Prison

Me; get me one off the vaders numbers there eish this kid

Themba; sure, il check them here and then il text you

Me; ohk sure boy

Themba; how did the mrs take the surprise

Me; \*laughing\* perfectly, a lot of tears

Themba; haha that was the whole aim congrats man you  
one lucky bastard

Me; thanks man means a lot

Themba; keep your phone at your hand at all times ke

Me; sharp

INSERT #167

#ANDRE

Past 1 ntombi arrived and the mrs and me went to bath  
well more like her. I just sat on the floor outside the tub  
while she washed

Me; you mind if i smoke in here

Amahle; no go ahead

Me; i shouldnt even be smoking in front off you

Amahle; why vele, you only smoke in front off me when we in this position im bathing and you down there

Me; i just dont want the smell of this to stick on your clothes as if you smoke , so when you bath i know it wont

Amahle; mmmmm does your mum know you smoke

Me; \*laughing\* you do know my mum smokes right

Amahle; yeah and it looks good on her

Me; \*laughing\* WHAT?

Amahle; \*laughing\* what? It does iv seen your mum smoke and she does it perfectly i mean she looks sexy when she smokes

Me; i cant believe you saying this

Amahle; a lot of people will agree with me on this if they saw your mum smoking. Or just a white woman smoke, smoking looks good on white woman no lie

Me; so if you were white....

She cut me off

Amahle; i would definitely smoke, the way they hold it, talk with it, blow out the smoke its beautiful art

Me; oh wow now its art

Amahle; \*laughing\* you dont get my point so just leave it  
Me; cause its crazy

Amahle; whatever , i really love your mum ey  
Me; iv noticed how you are, around her

Amahle; shes more like my mum in a way , shes not loud,  
shes calm nje i really wish you could have met my parents  
you know

Me; i wish you had met my dad , he would have loveeee  
you i mean love you

Amahle; you think so

Me; i know so

Amahle; you know what scares me ?

Me; what?

Amahle; our kids going through the pain we went  
through. I dont want my kids losing their parents at a  
young , age , questioning god , feeling lonely and unloved  
i know its not in my hands to say they wont lose me at a  
young age but i always pray that they dont, that i get too  
see my children age and get to see my grandchildren  
something my parents couldnt see

Me; thats not in our hands but i wish for the same thing

Amahle; and what scares you?

Me; to be honest one off my sons turning out to be like me

Amahle; thats what scares you

Me; yeah mami, i dont want my son to be anything like me, want them to make an honest living , id rather they get bullied than for them to be uncontrollable like me, i dont mean i want them to be weak no but theres a certain boundry i dont want them to step over. I dont want any off my sons stepping foot at a correctional service or even police holding cells like i want them to be something i never was and it scares me that possibly one off my kids would be like me either end up dead or nothing in life

Amahle; but you know thats out off your hands right, cause i feel like it can be like your father and you. Im sure your father wished for one off his sons not to be like him growing up and you had to follow that road

Me; yeah i know that mami but like im willing to do anything for them not to follow that path

Amahle; \*smiling\* i know you are , papi

Me; hmmmm

Amahle; like growing up what did you want to do

Me; \*laughing\* a business man or soldier but i was crazy about being in a military especially knowing i would be dealing with guns thats what made me love it

Amahle; gun freak

Me; wont even say no to that

Amahle; which gun do you like

Me; \*smiling\* desert eagle 50ae

Amahle; \*laughing\* what kind is that

Me; im coming

Got up and went to take it from my side off the bed and went to the bathroom with it

Me; first and last time we doing this

Amahle; whatever can i hold it

Me; be careful

I handed it to her

Amahle; this gun is really pretty

Me; she is isnt she

Amahle; you that obsessed with guns

Me; \*laughing\* maybe

I took it from her

Amahle; i love the rifle

I turned to face her

Amahle; \*laughing\* what i do watch movies plus thats the only gun i know by name

Me; mami theres a sniper rifle and then the hunting rifle

Amahle; ay whats the difference

Me; a lot

Amahle; man baby the one in hitman

Me; sniper rifle

Amahle; yeah i love that one, it looks dangerous

I just laughed. She finally got out. She wore my clothes and we went downstairs. We took a walk around the hood

amahle; but this neighbourhood is nice ey

Me; its ohk

Amahle; of course you were going to say that

Me; \*laughing\* what did you want me to say , i love this place babe , i dont mami and there people that live in it

Amahle; you dont like anyone

Me; thats a lie

Amahle; its not and there are a lot of people that would confirm that

Me; i just dont like and trust a lot off people

Amahle; my point exactly you should let go sometimes and just enjoy other people company

Me; hell no

Amahle; i wonder how many people will actually come for you

Me; \*laughing\* on our wedding day

Amahle; yes

Me; babe we can bet , you know a lot off people and are friendly to everyone and im nothing to those 2 things but people that will be at our wedding will mostly be my guests

Amahle; no way , you only have about \*she paused\* themba, deon, dorian, nhlanhla, shane, jerome , jack, adel , sandile, sphiwe forgot the others we dont count your family 11 people that will be your guest

Me; il have more than 150 guest just my guests want to bet on it

Amahle; dont invite people you dont know

Me; you know im not very good with people so why the hell would i invite people i dont know

Amahle; cause you never want to lose

Me; well im putting that risk on the line

Amahl; fine, if there are more than 150 guests of yours  
you ...

Me; you take me out on dates every Friday for 2 months

Amahle; every Friday

Me; yes

Amahle; fine and if i win every Friday you buy me a gift ,  
or surprise me with something for 3 months

Me; why is yours 3

Amahle; you made your own win and so did i

Me; come on baby that no.....

I got cut off cause amahle was knocked on the ground by  
some guy on a bicycle

Me; what the fuck is wrong with you

Guy; im so sorry , i honestly didnt see her

Before i could even try to pick her up, this guy arms were  
around my womans waist. I looked at him

Guy; im so sorry , are you hurt

Me; get your fucken hands off her

I picked her up

Guy; im re.....

Me; shut the fuck up, next time watch where you going  
and never put your hands on my woman

I turned back and her arms were around my neck

Me; you ohk?

Amahle; im fine and im sure i can walk put me down

Me; no

Amahle; \*smiling\* i think you were a bit to harsh

Me; no i was not

Amahle; you were papi, plus we were not watching where  
we going so we cant blame the poor guy

Me; already did and he should watch where he rides that  
bike off his

She laughed

Me; what?

Amahle; just you can be harsh when it involves me  
\*imitating me\* never put your hands on my woman

I laughed so loud

Me; that does not sound like me

Amahle; well it does and you now see what i have to put  
up with, but jealousy looks good on you

Me; that means i will be getting more and more jealous ke

Amahle; nothing new there

I kissed her. We got home and checked her up she was ohk.

## INSERT #168

#ANDRE

Woke up the next morning , amahle had already left for work i dialled the numbers themba gave me and it rang

Me; vader

Him; hi is this who i think it is

Me; maybe

Him; turner

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Him; what did i do to deserve this call

Me; papa man theres a friend off mine there adel, he was taken in Saturday or Sunday

Him; want me to help you get in contact with him

Me; yes please il make it worth your time

Him; ohk il call you after a couple off minutes if i find anything

Me; thank you

I hung up. Went downstairs to eat breakfast then my phone rang

Me; vader

Him; turner i found him

Me; that fast

Him; well you contacted the right guy

Me; so how bad is it

Him; well his still in custody he was denied bail this morning

Me; can i please talk to him

Him; sure but it will have to be later

Me; ohk

Got up and went to bath , then left to go to the warehouse

Me; hey man

Nhalanhla; boza yami, ugrand ( sure boy you good)

Me; ngi mnandi ntwana wena unjani ( im good you?)

Nhlanhla; ngi grand

I walked in and went to the floor downstairs where the guys were, they were busy with some car

Me; guys

Them; hey man

Me; and this baby

Jack; he has some type off problem but it shall be ohk

Me; ohk we need to talk

Deon; ohk whats up

Me; they denied adel bail man

Themba; fuck

Me; you can say that again

Dorian; so what you going to do

Me; well i cant sort out his shit while im here il have to go that side

Themba; will go together

Deon; hope you not saying that so you will run away from work

Themba; fuck you man plus it will be more work that side

Me; yeah will leave tomorrow

Themba; cool

We continued with work later on i talked with adel and they found drugs, unregistered gun that was used for some crime i did not even know. Next day packed my

bags and headed out to pick up themba but called amahle  
on my way to let her know

Amahle; baby

Me; hey baby

Amahle; you ohk

Me; not really babe, listen im going to cape town ohk

Amahle; what? For what?

Me; well one off my friends there is in deep shit and i  
need to get him out soon , so i have to leave

Amahle; when are you leaving

Me; right now

Amahle; andre!

Me; im sorry baby , it was a last minute thing and i really  
need to go

Amahle; when will you come back ke

Me; when everything is sorted

Amahle; thats not a straight answer andre

Me; cause baby angazi nami , i have to go manje

Amahle; bye

Me; manje (so) you mad

Amahle; bye

She hung up. Tried calling her back but she didnt answer  
got to themba place and he walked out

Themba; hey man

Me; sure

Themba; whats up with you

Me; amahle

Themba; \*laughing\* whats up

Me; shes mad dont know why exactly , whether ukuthi im  
leaving or i didnt tell her sooner im not even sure man

Themba; thats a woman for you

Me; i love her a lot ntwana kodwa sometimes yhooo she  
drives me crazy

Themba; its not just you man nobuhle does the same shit  
to me but i cant get myself to leave

We laughed

Me; anyway just want to get this shit sorted out with adel  
and go back to my woman

Themba; \*laughing\* soon to be your wife still cant believe  
that

Me; same here, i just want to make it official

Themba; when will that be

Me; we talked about november

Themba; thats like in a year from now

Me; well yeah but she wanted time to plan everything off hers and what can i say i want to give her what she wants

Themba; this means, we have to be careful about your budget

Me; yeah cause like i want a lot off things next year man that require money so will have to work extra and i mean extra hard

Themba; like

Me; il let you know soon man

Themba; you better

The next day we arrived and went to my place well we slept that day and woke up around 2. and we left to go and see adel, well they let us see him

Adel ; yhoooo im so glad to see you man

Me; what happened ?

He leaned towards me

Adel; they set me up man

Themba; who?

Adel; i dont know, do you think i would just be careless with a gun iv used before. That was not even my gun i dont even know the gun including the drugs. It was coke i dont smoke coke

Me; how did they find this

Adel; in my car you see how clear it is that it was a set up

Me ; who did you piss off man

Adel; i piss off a lot of people by working for you , well yeah got into fight at some parties but i dont even think they would go to this extent

Me; ohk yazini , il go sort this out today

Adel; please man i need to get out off here

Me; you ohk?

Adel; well kind of have enermies everywhere man so dont want to sleep on one eye and i only see your friends when i go out

Me; il talk to them just step away from trouble ohk

Adel; ohk man

We got up and left

Themba; its definitely a set up man

Me; but who?

Themba; i dont think will know man what we need to do now is get adel out

Me; yeah eish

I covered my head

Me; where do we start

Themba; evidence needs to be gone

Me; il talk to the detective today, let me call him now

I called him and he said he would pass by my house. We bought food and went back to my place. Past 9 the guy arrived

Him; when did you get here

Me; this morning come on in

He sat at the lounge

Him; been expecting your call since one off your boys was on lock down

Me; i need your help on that

Him; i knew you would but the problem is , im not in charge off that investigation

Me; come on man , im sure you can do something

Him; even if i do , it will be a big risk for me

Me; how so?

Him; im not in charge off the case and i dont know how this detective operates , so just think about it if i ask him to be in charge of the case and after a few days the docket and evidence disappears it will bring attention to me and if i give him something and his one off those holier than thou that shit will also blow on my face

Me; ohk you have a point

Themba; but theres got to be something

Him; at this point i dont know man

Me; he will die in there , i have to get him out man

Him; you know i work with you but this time around its out off my hands

INSERT #169

#ANDRE

The week passed by i was still at capetown , no sign of adel coming out and i was getting frustrated by the minute. Woke up the next day and went for a run around the hood until i was out off breath, went down on my knees trying to get catch my breath back

Someone; you ohk

I lifted my head up and it was some girl

Me; yeah

Her; oh my fucken word

I looked around

Her; arent you turner

Me; turner?

Her; yeah

I shook my head

Her; no you lying

Me; no im not, have to get going

Her; wait

I turned around

Me; what?

Her; you are turner

Me; like i said no im not

Her; are you trying to go undercover or?

Me; \*laughing\* you not going to let this go ne

Her; \*smiling\* no

Me; maybe i am

Her; i knew you were

Me; ohk i am , bye

Her; wait

Me; what now?

Her; id like to invite you to a party im hosting

Me; no thanks lala

I didnt even wait for her to respond i just left

Got to my place and themba was not there. Went to take a shower , rushed downstairs as there was a knock on the door. Wrapped a towel and opened the door and it was the detective with some guy

Me; hey man

Him; hi can we come in

Me; sure let me go get dressed

Rushed upstairs and put on my nike shorts , with white top and all star and went downstairs

Me; can i get you anything gents

Guy; beer would be fine

I came back with 3 and joined them at the lounge

Detective; so turner this is james

Me; ohk

Detective; his in charge off your boys case

I breathed out loud i was so relieved and he laughed

Me; you have to help me out man

Him; sure but

Me; i know how it works so you dont have to worry about that

Him; ohk thats all i needed to know

Me; il just need your banking details

Him; ohk il write them down for you

Detective; thats not all

Me; oh whats up

Him; well wanted to join your team

I looked at him

Him; my 2 kids are at varsity and i need any money i can get

Me; but the thing is you cant both be on my payroll and work at the same department

Him; thats what he told me , but what he cant do i can... I have a few connections in other places that he doesnt have which may come use to you

Me; ohk im listening

Him; if you find yourself in a position like this you dont have to worry cause il get people to be in your side

Me; ohk welcome to the team

They laughed, we shook hands and talked about everything

Me; ohk iv transferred the money to your account

Him; thanks and il push up the process for your boy to be realised by the end off this week

Me; thanks man i re....

The door opened and it was themba

Themba; hiii

Me; hey man

Detective; we better get going

Me; thanks again

Them; sure

They left

Themba; and that?

Me; where were you

Themba; went to see adel , we need to come up with a plan man his getting fucked there

Me; how is he

Themba; not good, blue eye and stabbed on the shoulder

Me; how the fuck can that happen

Themba; his not in the same cell with our guys, they can only protect him when his out and knowing his your boy they not giving him a break

Me; well lets hope by the end off this week it will be done

Themba; who was that

Me; guy in charge off his case , his now on my payroll

Themba; 2 people on your pay roll same department thats stupidity

Me; thats what i thought until he told me he has connections everywhere with these detectives which could come to good use

Themba; ohk he has a point

Me; exactly so he should be out soon but i think we should go back with him

Themba; jozi

Me; yeah man

Themba; this place, the business

Me; a lot off people man, if i dont leave with him they will kill him or who knows what they already setting him up

Themba; ohk lets hope he wont mind

Me; he wont cause il be telling him not asking him

Themba; when was the last time you talked to your girl

Me; shes not talking to me

Themba; ehhhh

Me; yho ntwana i need to do a lot when we go back

We went out to buy food cause no one wanted to cook ,  
then went to bed i called amahle

Me; mami

Amahle; you having fun

Me; what?

Amahle; you oviasly having fun, you dont call nothing

Me; i thought you were still mad at me and it seems like  
you are

Amahle; or so you dont check if im ohk, even if im mad at  
you

Me; no mami i was going to call you just thing were much  
complicated than i thought

Amahle; ohk im going to pass by your place

Me; im not back yet

Amahle; you joking right

Me; wish i was

Amahle; andre its the second week and you not back

Me; like i said things were way complicated than i thought

Amahle; ohk bye

Me; mami come on please talk to me

Amahle; im at work

Me; its like 10

Amahle; yes since my papi is not here , is at the cape i wanted to keep my self busy which ended up on me doing nightshift , if you called you would have known this

Me; but you said you were going to pass by my place

Amahle; when I knock off

Me; im sorry

Amahle; like i said i need to go

Me; i love you

Amahle; bye

She hung up, i just laughed and went to bed.

INSERT #170

#ANDRE

Wednesday he was not back. Thursday had to pick him up , he looked like shit

Me; well they fucked you up in there

Adel;....

Me; you ohk

He nodded his head

Me; you need to learn to fight back man, iv told you this a thousand times

Adel; how can i fight back when im fighting against 5 people

Me; you going back with me

Adel; no man

Me; im not telling you

Adel; i dont even know jozi, i know this place

Me; i dont care if i leave you again here , you will be calling me in the next 2 months cause you will be in trouble again

Adel; what about your place , the business

Me; taken care off , brian will take care off it

Adel; i also have a life here, you cant just expect me to pack and go

I stopped the car

Me; whatever shit you in, dont call me you understand me dont call me, themba, deon or dorian no one cause this is

a warning and im not coming back for you, what ever shit  
you find your self in get yourself out off it

Started the car and drove to my place

Themba; look whos back

Adel; dont man

themba; you look like shit

Me; im going to take a shower

Themba; sure

Went upstairs and went to take a shower , went out then  
called amahle

Me; mami

Amahle; papi

Me; im coming back tomorrow ohk, i miss you

Amahle; its about time i miss you too

Me; i love you ohk

Amahle; love you too, hows your friend

Me; his ohk baby i picked him up today

Amahle; he should stay out off trouble

Me; exactly but i wont have his back all the time

Amahle; you know thats a lie so dont even try it with me

I just laughed

Me; you, hows work?

Amahle; just ohk baby hectic nje

Me; but you coping

Amahle; yes baby wami i dont have a choice nje ,  
ngyakthanda ne ( I love you ohk)

Me; serious

Amahle; hai suka , will talk later

Me; \*laughing\* i love you baby

Amahle; serious

I just laughed and hung up, dressed up and went  
downstairs

Themba; good , you done

Me; whats up

Themba; this idiot wants to talk to you

Me; oh kay

Adel; ohk im going down with you

Me;.....

Adel; themba made me understand everything and i know  
i have to get out off here

Me; ohk we leaving tomorrow morning man

Themba; ohk you miss your girl

Me; like crazy so nje midnight, we driving back to jozi

Themba; sure

We all went to bed , midnight woke up took my bags and left. I sat at the back the entire time. Arrived at jozi

Me; drop me off at amahle place

Themba; sure

Adel; you crazy in love with this girl ne

Me; thats not for you to know

Got to her complex, talked to the security and because he knew me he let me in. Opened her door and slowly waked upstairs and she was sleeping, looked at her for a while and joined her.

## #AMAHLE

I opened my eyes and dre was sleeping next to me. I was smiling so hard i got on top off him and kissed him. He woke up and flipped me over

Me; i missed you

Dre; i missed you so much more

Me; how did you get in here

Dre; i have the keys off this place remember

I kissed him

Dre; you going to work

I nodded my head

Dre; then we dont have much time

I laughed and kissed him again this time deepening the kiss , i took off his top and pushed his pants down , he moved his kisses to my neck and i let out a slight moan, i tilted my head to the side and she sucked and licked making me realise a number off moans. He took off my top and kissed my breasts and squeezed them, he groaned and parted my legs and got in between them , he massaged my clit with his thumb while slowly entering me I held his back so tight against my chest and moaned to his ear. His breathing got heavier and mine too. I moaned to his ear and his pace increased , my legs began to weaken , i kissed and bit his neck and he let out the loudest groan. He went in hard, deep and fast, the faster he went the louder our moans got. Until we both cum.

I got up and left him on the bed. Went to take a shower went out and he was up. Kissed him and took out what i would wear.

Dre; do you really have to go

Me; yes baby i will see you when i get back ohk

Dre; here or

Me; you tell me papi

Dre; ohk il call you and let you know ohk

Me; ohk baby love you ne

Dre; love you too

Took my bags and left

## INSERT #171

### #ANDRE

The month passed by so fast. Adel was settling in with the guys very well, but he was still trying to get used to amahle i think he had a crush on her or something cause he acted weird around her. Me and my baby were perfect i mean perfect i was falling madly in love with her each and everyday. December we were planning what we were going to be up too for the 31st and we all could not wait for it. 25 december my family invited amahle family for christmas lunch and it was the best seeing how great our families connected. 26 we went for a picnic something different with the guys at florida lake and it was nice not

being in a club or something like that but enjoying outdoor activities

The 31st woke up that morning and went downstairs

Me; hey you still here

Ntombi; yes was making you breakfast then im leaving

Me; ohk you good

Ntombi; yes im good you

Me; im good lala

Ntombi; is amahle still sleeping

Me; no i did not come with her

Ntombi; why

Me; \*laughing\* you getting used to amahle ne

Ntombi; yeah but like most of this week and last she was here and today shes not

Me; well she said she wanted to do her hair and a whole lot off things for today

Ntombi; niyaphi vele ( where you going)

Me; wena uyaphi ( where are you going)

Ntombi; some party with my boyfriend

Me; \*laughing\* play it safe

Ntombi; all the time

I ate breakfast while she was busy cleaning then called deon

Me; hey man

Deon; hey where you at

Me; my place

Deon; good, we coming

M; ohk

I hung up after a few minutes they arrived all off the guys in fact

Me; whats up

Themba; arent you going to do something about your hair

Me; I was planning to

Dorian; so what time are we leaving ?

Me; 7 or 8 that will be good ne

Deon; yeah you will come with amahle

Me; yeah then will meet with nhlanhla right, his brother will take my car

Themba; ohk how many buses will they use

Me; 3

Adel; ohk its on today

M; definitely , let me go do my hair  
They all left , went to bath then left

#AMAHLE

ME; so you excited

Unathi; you have no idea sweetie wena

Me; me too have a good feeling about this day

Unathi; me too

Mbali; i dont

Us; what

Mbali; i dont know, i just dont have a good feeling about today maybe we should just stay home and drink in doors

Me; \*laughing\* you not saying that because you dont want to leave thando alone angithi

Mbali; \*laughing\* ai suka wena

Me; his with this granny, lets go out and just have fun

Girl; im done, is it fine

I tilted my head side to side

Me; yes i love it ... How do i look

Them; ohk

Me; haaaaa

Unathi; just joking you know you will be killing em  
I got out off the chair and waited for them to finish. Then  
we did our nails paid and left

We went to look for what we would wear, found  
something and left. We grabbed lunch then everyone  
went to their place the time was 4 got home took a  
shower went out and my heart beat out off my chest

Me; geez you scared me

Dre; \*laughing\* im sorry

Me; you look so good

Dre; did you see the time

Me; im not that late

I joined his legs together and sat on top off him

Dre; we going to have fun today

Me; yes we starting a new year in a few hours

Dre; good

He got up and pinned me against the wall , i got down  
from him pushed his pants down he stepped out off them  
and took off his jacket and top, he picked me and slowly  
directed his way inside off me i shut my eyes as it hurt ,  
he pushed my body against the wall , his hands under my  
thighs and he just went in the pace increasing , nails

digging deep, he was groaning on my ear and i was moaning on his. My body began to shake and he let out the loudest groan as he tossed us on the bed. I got on top off him kissed him and got off

I finally finished dressing up that was to 8. i was wearing a white baggy top, black high knee boots, with a denim jacket on my shoulders. Dre was wearing ripped jeans, black adidas top, black adidas sneakers and nike cap with a black long jacket that had a hoodie. We got to his car and drove to the where will be at. We phoned the guys and themba came to pick us. We got to where they were sitting and it was packed

Me; hey hey

Them; hey lala

Themba; barcadi right

Me; yes please

I joined the girls and it was soo nice, the vibe, the company everything was perfect

We danced, kissed and just had fun, we got drunk others vomited but we had fun. Then there was the countdown,

my baby pulled me to him and we counted down together  
%5 4 3 2 1 HAPPY NEW YEARS

Everyone screamed my tongue was already down my mans throat, but they pulled us apart. I hugged everyone people kissed and it was great

Around 2 i got up cause i was getting cold

Me; im coming ohk

Dre; where you going

Me; im going to get my jacket

Dre; ohk lets go

Me; \*laughing\* im fine you cant go everywhere with me yazi

Dre; ohk go with one off the girls ke

Me; ohk

I kissed him and walked up to nobuhle

Me; lala lets go

Nobuhle; where

Me; I want to go and fetch my jacket its getting cold

Nobuhle; ahhhh what you scared of

Me; no im not scared

Nobuhle; so why you want me to go with you  
Me; \*laughing\* you know what stay with your man

I walked to dre car, opened my side off the door , leaned to take my jacket grabbed it and went out but there was this sudden pain on my head , sharp one suddenly felt something watery run down my face wiped it away and it was blood then black out...

## INSERT #172

#andre

Me; ntwana wheres amahle  
Themba; she said she was going to take her jacket  
Me; who did she go with  
Themba; alone  
I sat down and waited for her to come back but nothing  
Mbali; \*laughing\* wheres amahle she has to see this  
Me; im going to look for her  
Mbali; where?  
Me; she went to get her jacket

Mbali; ohk

Got up and went to where i parked my car but it was not there , i covered my face was i that drunk that i did not know where i parked. Went back to the guys and called themba

Me; \*laughing\* ntwana i dont know where i parked

Themba; when you drunk you fucken irritating

We left and we went back to where i was the first time

Themba; i was sure you parked here

Me; i did ne, i did park here man

Themba; so wheres your car

Me; where is amahle

Themba; call her

I dialled her numbers but nothing

Themba;????

Me; its ringing no answer

Themba; but where would she go

Me; nowhere man, why would she go back to her place or mine

Themba; what if she got a call from someone telling her something about her grandfather and she couldnt come

back to us to inform us so she just left and told herself  
she would call us

Me; thats unlike her ntwana (boy)

Themba; ohk but where is she

They guys came to us

Mbali; where is amahle

Me; thats what we trying to figure out

We all decided to leave since it was morning after all. Got  
to her place and she was not there, warehouse no, my  
place no, mbali no. I started panicking

Mbali; lets call her grandfather

Me; then she knows amahle disappeared that will be too  
much man

Mbali; its worth a chance and its best if you call

I called pa and his phone rang then he answered

Pa; andre

Me; hi pa

Pa; how you doing son

Me; im good and you pa

Pa; im great, whats wrong so early in the morning

Me; nothing we just wanted to wish you a happy new year

Pa; where is she

Me; shes still sleeping but il tell her to call you

Pa; please do

Me; ohk pa i have to go

Then i hung up

Me; shes not there

I began shaking i couldnt even control it

Me; \*shouting\* where the fuck is she

Themba; let me track your car

Me; yeah then will know

Nobuhle; please let her be safe omg

Gave themba my laptop and he got busy

Themba; ohk your car is at .....

Me; lets go

We left everyone and it was just me, themba and deon

Got to that place and it was an underground parking. I took my extra keys and we got out off the car and walked to my car first thing i noticed. My passenger car window was broken i freaked out opened the door and the was no

one it was just an empty car and there was blood on the seats , the gear and steering wheel. I just felt numb , i checked at the back and her phone was there the screen was covered in blood stain. I just got out of the car and went back to the car. Out of the blue i just hit the dashboard until themba pulled me away

Me; where the fuck is she

Themba; i dont know man but we need to think this through ok . I need you to focus

Me; theres blood on my car , blood from my girl themba

Themba;.....

Me; how the fuck should i focus

Dorian; we need to think about this, whats next, who has her , all off that man

Me; lets go

Dorian; we dont need to start trouble with your car i need to take it back with us

Themba; yes take it will meet you back at the house

Got in the car and my mind was just all over the place. Themba kept talking but i could not hear a thing we got there and themba told them while i went to my bedroom. I just heard screams downstairs. I went to take a long shower and iv never been so scared in my life that i just began being emotional. Went out and my hands were

shaking i held them but it was no use. Went downstairs and the girls were not there, it was just the guys

Sat on the couch

Themba; i know this is hard for you but we need to think and use our heads right now

Me; talk to me

Themba; well with lubanzi out off the picture i think ugo or oho could have taken her

Shane; but what if they were trying to take the car

Me; then they would have took the car and left her, dont be an idiot we do this kind of shit have you seen themba go to get a car and come back with someone not a car dont piss me off

Deon; its oviasly someone who knows how much amahle means to you

Me; ugo does not know amahle

Deon; then oho, themba told us he came here one time and amahle was here

Me; well yeah after all i did not give him any money, he saw amahle, he took amahle so i will give him money it has to be him right

Themba; yeah it has too be him

I was shaking, fiddling with everything i couldnt even sit still thats how scared i was

## INSERT #173

#ANDRE

Weeks passed oho was still under my watch. No matter how brutal or whatever we did to him he still said nothing

Me; its not him

Themba; what?

Me; its not him man, he would have said something

Themba; he wont

Me; \*shouting\* i fucken said its not him, clean him up and get him the fuck out off here

Got inside off my car and went to my place where 2 police cars were on my gate. Amahle family knew that she was kidnapped and they informed the cops

Me; can i help you

Guy 1; yes can we talk to you

Me; sure

I opened the gate and drove in they followed. Walked inside and sat on the couch

Guy 2; you andre adams right

Me; yes

Guy 1; i think iv seen you somewhere

Me; i get that a lot from officers especially, now what brings you to my house

Guy2; they gave us your information you amahle ngwenya bf right

Me; more like fiancee

Guy 1; you seem awfully relaxed for someone whos fiancee they just kidnapped

Me; her family is already into pieces , you also want me to be in pieces we cant all be broken down one off us still has to be able to lift their head up and thats me

Them;mmm

Guy 2; did you fight

Me; no

Guy 2; when was the last time you saw her

Me; 1st january around 3 or 4 am

Guy 2; do you know off anyone who would hurt her or hated her

Me; no

Guy 1; would anyone hurt her in order to hurt you

Me; i dont know

Guy 2; we have your statement, should you remember anything any info would be useful

Me; ohk

They got up and left. Took a black label whiskey, sat down and drank my sorrows away until i fell asleep on the couch

Was woken up by cold water

Me; what the fuck is wrong with you

Themba; get up

Me; get the fuck out off my house

Deon; man you need to get your head straight, we wont get amahle if you in this state

Me; i said get the fuck out now!

Themba; you not the only person who lost amahle, we also lost her and want her back and will get her back with or without you

I got up and went to the bathroom and threw up , washed myself up then went down

Me; its not oho stop saying its him

Dorian; it has to be him

Adel; but why are you turning a blind eye with ugo

Me; ugo does not know amahle

Themba; but thinking about it , ugo could have been angry that you threatened her daughter and started following you which is why he saw amahle at the party and he knew we would be at that party and we would be too drunk to notice that she was gone it makes sense man

Me; yes it does but its not him

Deon; why is it not him

Me; then it means he risked being caught, he abandons my car at a parking lot, he takes my car, my car with him. Thats immature work, whoever did this was bought to do this but not ugo or any one off the guys i know

Themba; ohk what if he bought people to take amahle, so he would not get caught

Me; so much better but i still doubt its ugo

Deon; but will have to take a chance

Me; lets go

Themba; right now

Me; yes

We left and got to ugo place

Me; can we talk

Ugo; i thought we said we would stay away from each other

Me; i know i need to talk to you

Ugo; you dont look like you want to talk

Looking at the guys

Me; im coming in alone

Themba; what?

Dorian; no man

Ugo; just you alone

Me; yeah

Them; but! What!

Me; shut the fuck up

They all looked at me and ugo opened the gate. I got in and sat at the lounge with him

Ugo; whats up

Me; i know we said we would stay away from each other

Ugo; yeah which is why im shocked to see you here

Me; im going through something man , im in a fucked up situation

Ugo; cops, delivery?

Me; no bigger than that

Ugo; and you need my help

Me; if you can

Ugo; sure , only if you will have my back sometime if i  
need your help

Me; yeah

Ugo; ohk talk to me

Me; i was suppose to get married this year november man

Ugo; \*laughing\* what? You getting married what the fuck  
happened

Me; let me finish

He nodded his head

Me; im crazy for this woman ugo i mean crazy for her but  
the 31st she was kidnapped

Ugo; what? You dont think its me right

Me;.....

Ugo; no man i have certain boundaries and why the hell  
would i take your woman to get what in return. I dont  
want to be in your bad books as much as you dont for me  
right

Me; right

Ugo; so man listen i didnt even know you have settled down i honestly did not take her i know the consequence even if i did. I would be risking my daughters life and my entire family so why would i want my family to live in fear

Me; i thought so, i just had to make sure

Ugo; i get that but im willing to help you out man

Me; that will mean a lot man.

Ugo; what happened the day she was taken

Me; i dont even know, she was going to get her jacket at the car next thing shes not coming back, they took my car

Ugo; i dont think its someone you know who took your car

Me; but i later found it at some underground parking

Ugo; so they were coming after her

Me; seems that way

Ugo; listen man il find out some info for you, my side off the territory

Me; thanks man

Got up, shook hands and left

WHO TOOK MAMI??????

## INSERT #174

#AMAHLE

My body was so painful , i smelled blood everywhere and other places it had dried out. ,my eyes were swollen that i could only open them half. Ever since iv been here iv been beaten up and worse part by guys. They showed no mercy at all. After i dont know how long i opened my eyes and looked around it was dark like it always was. I never saw the sun shine or whether its day or night. I looked around and there were 2 guys there talking

Guy 1; im out man , im out i dont care about the money anymore im out

Guy 2; come on , no one will know about this

Guy 1; do you have any idea who will be dealing with ?  
Huh im not ready to die

Guy2; just a few more weeks , she gets him and she dies simple

Guy1; do you know whos girl is this

Guy2; yes but he will never suspect us he doesnt even know us so why would he come after us

Guy1; he has connections everywhere, listen i wont tell on you or that you have turners girl but i wont be apart off

this i still cherish my life man. Dont call me or get me involve in this mess anymore

Then i heard footsteps then silence

I looked around and he walked up to me

Guy2; your bf is going to be a problem to us... But dont worry soon you will be resting in peace you wont have to go through this anymore

A tear just ran down my face

Guy2; but before that happens , lets have a lil fun

He moved his hands inside off my top. I joined my legs tight and he grabbed them so tight that it hurt. He kissed my forehead and i moved my head away but he pulled it back to him and suddenly licked my face. I just began crying the disgust i had , he moved his hands inside off me and squeezed my breast i wanted to scream and run away but i could not. I was tied in a chair, my lips sealed and my body still had bruises. He sat on top off me and kissed me kept moving my head left and right until he removed the tape and kissed me i was just crying the entire time. I could feel his hands going up my thighs . He touched my underwear and suddenly the was a sound off the door. He got off me quickly and i was so relieved. The door closed and i cried there trying to get myself out but nothing

The door suddenly opened again and some guy appeared. He looked so innocent. He removed the tape and i just looked at him. He placed a plate on my thighs and untied my hands

Him; eat

I looked at him

Him; you want food or not

Even though i knew they were going to kill me it was rather this way. I dug in and finished in a split second then he gave me something to drink when i was done he covered my mouth again. Looked at me deep in the eyes and got up and left. I waited for like a couple minutes and removed the tape on my mouth and rope on my legs. Slowly got up and looked around i didnt even know this place i went up the stairs and prayed before i slowly opened the door. It was daylight the sun shine from the windows blinded me for a couple off seconds. I got out and looked around the was no one around. Opened the door and ran out i mean i ran barefoot so fast but before i could get far i was knocked on the ground by a sharp pain on my shoulder looked down on it and started bleeding. Even though i was shot on the shoulder it was so hard for me to get up and run again. I heard footsteps behind me and started crying. I turned to see who was coming my way and it was as if my eyes were failing me it was not

who it was it could not be. Questions began running on my mind

Me; you?

Her; yes me bitch

And after that it was a black out

INSERT #175

#ANDRE

The couch had became my bed and alcohol my escape not too feel or overthink. Got up and went to the bathroom and threw up then went to wash up. It has been 2 months since amahle disappeared the police found nothing and so as my connections it was as if she went under the world and there was no trace off her. Took my things and left came back around 8 and there was a car on the gate i got out and just closed my eyes

Helen; hey

Me; what you doing here?

Helen; wanted to check up on you

Me; about what?

Helen; i heard about amahle, i knew you loved her wanted to check if you ohk

Me; im ohk please remove your car i want to get in  
She got in the car , opened the gate and she went in. We parked on the driveway and walked inside

Me; where did you hear that from

Helen; me and mbali still talk so

Me; oh ohk listen you cant stay

Helen; have you eaten

Me; no but im cool

Helen; let me cook for you

Me; no

Helen: im not taking no for an answer

I went upstairs and took a long shower. Got out took a towel and went out

Me; what the fuck are you doing here

Her; i was just checking if you ohk

Me; yes now please get out off my bedroom

Her; ohk

She got off from my bed and left. Dressed up in my sweaters and stayed there for like an hour and finally went downstairs

Me; you didnt have to go through all this trouble

Her; i know but you have to eat

Me; im not even sure if my baby is eating wherever she is  
and you want me to eat

helen; but im sure she would not want you to starve

I looked at her

Me; thanks for cooking , il dish up when im ready to eat  
you can go

helen; i wont cook and not eat

Me; ohk lets eat

She dished up and we went to the lounge. We both ate  
and she washed the dishes

Helen; so when did she disappear

Me; that does not matter, how have you been

Helen; good but kind off missed you

I looked at her

Helen; \*laughing\* what? I do

Me; mmm ohk

Helen; you dont

Me; im engaged to amahle and i love her so why would i  
miss another woman. When i had her in front off me

Helen; i was just kidding i didnt mean that way

Me; ohk

Helen; you engaged

Me; yes i am

Helen; ohk , better get going then

Me; ohk let me walk you out

Walked her out and she drove away , went back inside talked to the guys and still nothing. Took a bottle off whiskey and passed out on the couch

Next morning same procedure and went to the warehouse

Deon; you look like shit

Me;....

Dorian; have you seen yourself lately, you need to get yourself together man

Me; wheres themba

Them;....

I banged the table

Me; \*shouting\* where the fuck is themba?

Adel; he went to meet up with some guy to get information

Me; thank you, thats all i needed not silence

I waited for themba till i just decided to leave

Got home and amahle grandfather with her aunt where there. I looked at ntombi and she just raised her shoulders.

Me; sanibonani (hi)

Amahle grandfather; look at all off these bottles, you drink and have fun while my daughter is being held captive and you do nothing but drink

Me; i....

Him; thula! (Quiet)

I looked at the floor

Him; my child could be dead and buried like a dog because off you and your doings they took my baby because off you , trying to hurt you and you sit here and just get drunk

Me;....

Him; you said you would protect her and would never let anything happen to her but you failed her and you lied to me. \*shouting\* she could be dead because off you, no one would ever want to hurt her but your people. What must i do then if im left alone , shes the only thing i got and you took that away from me. If anything and i mean

anything happens to her its all on you and i hope you can live with yourself

Her aunt; kodwa andre ungayivumela kanjani into enje iyenzeke ( but andre how can you allow something like this to happen)

Me;....

Her; they took our child while you were with her and now the police are not finding any sort off information the case is not their priority anymore

I looked at her

Her; yes , they are she has been gone for 2 months 2 months and theres no sign if shes alive or dead so they dont know what to do. At this point they just looking for her body for the family to heal

Grandfather; how could you let that happen, who knows what they have done to my child and you, you

He started choking. Ntombi and amahle aunt rushed to him and sat him down

I looked at him and he didnt seem ohk at all. He looked like a broken man. They left so he would rest and i just went straight to my bedroom. Kept thinking about pa words and amahle aunts words. They hit me so hard. My

mind was all over the place. Kept thinking is she ohk or not until i passed out.

## INSERT #176

### #ANDRE

More weeks passed, i tried so hard i went all out to try and find my girl but there was no trace off her. I hurt a lot off people who i thought may have took her but nothing. As horrible as that was i was finding comfort with helen, she supported me and was there for me. I was not giving up on my woman but it was march now , the police had given up on the case but not my connections. Me and the guys were going all out but we had nothing too.

Woke up the next morning and went downstairs

Me; where is ntombi

Helen; i told her to go buy us some stuff

Me; ohk and when did you get here

Helen; around 7

Me; so early

Helen; well i was off so thought i should be with you

Me; ohk

Helen ; sit down , il serve breakfast for you

Me; thank you

I sat at the lounge and she gave me my plate

Helen; so any news ?

Me; no just the same news

Helen; its been 3 months now, i know you dont want to hear this but you sho....

Girl; he should what?

I turned and it was mbali

Me; hey

Mbali; he should what?

Helen; he should move on

Mbali; with you?

Helen; i didnt say that

Me; can you stop

Mbali; you so pathetic his fiancee is missing and she could be dead and here you are with your bitchy tendencies and you ready to open your legs for him and as for you crying on her shoulders one off your bitches thats just stupid

Me; she was just helping me out

Mbali; you could have called me, unathi or nobuhle to help you out not her as for you I was informing you cause I thought you were my friend not giving you the go ahead to come after dre

Me; mbali please im exhausted and i dont need this right now

Helen; let me get going il see you later

Mbali; dont even bother

Me; thank you for breakfast

Helen; \*smiling\* sure il call you ohk

Me; ohk

She took her stuff and left , mbali sat opposite me

Me; im not moving on till i find my wife if thats what you want to know especially not with her

Mbali; good, how are you

Me; im ohk and you

Mbali; im trying still no information off her

Me; no lala mina i dont know anymore mbali its like she does not even exist or ever existed

Mbali; you cant give up on her

Me; i dont plan to , what are you doing here

Mbali; came to check up on you

Me; hows the family

Mbali; they ohk but amahle grandfather not so good

Me; im sure he hates me

Mbali; his just mad man come on you know his crazy about you and the thought off him losing amahle its just affecting him bad. His just mad dont stress about him too much just focus on finding amahle and rekindling with him

Me; thanks bubu

Mbali; anytime, wheres ntombi

Me; i dont know where helen sent her

Mbali; ohk

Me; thando?

Mbali; school the way he keeps on asking about aunty amahle , i dont even know what to tell him anymore

Me; i just wish all off this was just a bad dream

Mbali; not you only trust me

We talked about random things, ntombi eventually came back around 1 mbali left to go pick up thando. I went to my bedroom and drank another bottle and passed out.

## #AMAHLE

I slightly opened my eyes i was ready to give up on life. I was just waiting for them to come and kill me. I was so weak. I was dehydrated i smelled off blood, my shoulder hurt like no pain i ever felt.my eyes were swollen that i could not open them wide. The place i was at stunk and i had started my periods a few days ago, at the worst time I didn't even know how cause I was preventing not unless the 3 months period was already over. Which they didnt even care. Until today which they gave me pads to wear But they only lasted for 2 days cause off prevention i was even surprised

Slightly opened my eyes since i could not open them wide. I passed out again but was woken up by someone untying me i looked around but i could not see the guy. He untied me and i tried to get up but he punched me on my stomach and kicked me i suddenly fell to the ground. He lifted my top up and tears just ran down my face , he pinned me to the floor and he was so heavy on top off me . He pushed my underwear down and i begged as hard as it was too talk i think my jaw was broken. I tried fighting him but nothing i got even more weak.

He took off his pants and inserted his D inside off me just like that !

I screamed in silence cause my voice just failed me. I tried pushing him away but he was too strong and i was too weak

That was the end of me that very moment

INSERT #177

#AMAHLE

I was woken up by a sharp pain on my waist and realised i was being kicked

Her; wake up bitch... I see you have moved on wonder how will andre think about this.... Im sure he wouldnt even want you next to him after finding out you busy fucking some niggas and forgot about him then he will leave your ass and see how off a queen i am

Me;.....

Her; just a little bit longer till you breath your last breath

Me;....

It was so hard for me to talk

Her; Im going to make you suffer and regret for taking what was mine bitch, me and andre were good, we looked great together but you had to show off your big ass to him that he was blinded by it and forgot about me. Andre was suppose to be mine from the start and you took that away from me

As i was about to say something, she punched me and i passed out thats how weak i was. I could easily black out

#andre

Got home and 2 minutes off just getting in , helen showed up

Me; i would swear you following me

Her; oh please

Me; im going to take a shower , im exhausted

Her; ohk il sit with you

Me; you dont have too

Her; il be sitting at the bedroom while you shower

Me; ohk

We walked to my bedroom and went to take a shower got out and she was naked. I quickly turned away

Me; why you naked

Her; im sorry i was going to wait for you to get out off the shower before i went in so wanted to undress and wear a towel

Me; ohk please get dressed

Her; its not like you seeing something you dont know

Me; please take a towel

Her; im covered

I turned and she was covered in the towel. She walked up to me and tip toed , he wrapped his arms around my neck and i looked at her . She leaned in for a kiss but i pulled back and removed her hands

Me; please excuse me i want to get dressed

Her; ohk let me go shower

Me; no please leave my house

Her; come on, i didnt want that to happen it was just a moment thing

Me; ohk but please go

Her; fine

She took her clothes removed the towel and got dressed and left.

Laid on my bed until ntombi called me i went silent so she would think im sleeping but my door opened

Ntombi; theres someone at the gate and he says he cant leave without seeing you

Me; who is it

Ntombi; i dont know, i have never seen him before

Me; ohk im coming

She left and i got up. Checked the monitor and it was ugo. I opened up

Me; this time man

Ugo; i think i may have a lead on your woman

Me; come on

We sat at the lounge

Ugo; well i didnt think off this before , and im sure you didnt too but my wife made me come to this

Me; im waiting man

Ugo; so my wife said, your enermies could not possibly gain anything for taking your woman if they did not want anything in return so if it was one off your enermies, they would have let you know they took her and want something you know the kind of shit we go through

Me; yeah i get all off that but im still confused

Ugo; then she said the only people who could gain something from taking your woman without them getting anything like money is an ex

I raised my eyebrow

Ugo; shes right man think about it. Your woman was just taken you didnt receive any phone call that they want money which means its a grudge from an ex, your woman disappears and your ex could move back to your life

Me; they take her and i need a shoulder to cry on

Ugo; which is not difficult for you to move on with someone you already been with

My mind just went all over the place

Ugo; are you listening

Me; i know who took her

Ugo; you do

Me; my woman disappeared and suddenly this girl i used to fuck with comes back to my life, all caring and shit

Ugo; its got to be her

Me; she would take amahle, she gives me her shoulder, she kills amahle, we find her body and i move on with her and just forget about amahle cause she would be there

Ugo; we got her

Me; but you know what this means

Ugo; she might have killed her already

INSERT # 178

We called the guys and they met at my place

Themba; lets just kill this bitch

Me; no we cant , especially not knowing where amahle is

Ugo; and she cant know you suspect her cause if she has not put a bullet on her and she knows you suspect her she will kill her

Me; i need to play it cool with her

Ugo; but not to cool

Me; if i get closer to her and i mean close to her. She knows iv moved on and she will kill amahle cause she wont be any use to her anymore

Deon; and if you dont get closer to her. She might kill amahle let us find the body so you will move on

I held my head i was confused as fuck

Ugo; we need to keep you connected to amahle, that even if she wants to kill amahle she cant

Me; but what can i say to her

Jack; i have an idea

Me; not now jack

Jack; just listen to me

Me; fine talk

Jack; why dont you tell her that amahle is blackmailing you

Themba; like really jack ay man ao

Me; whoa he may have something

Jack; you tell her , that amahle has some sort off information about you and if she dies you will be arrested for a very long time cause only she knows where she hid that information that way if amahle dies, you get arrested and she does not have you

Me; thats perfect \*smiling\* thats perfect , cause if i tell her that she wont kill her she will keep her around asking her about this information but amahle wont know shit so she wont kill her

Ugo; the earlier we do this the better, call her now to come over if you have to

Themba; il get some people to watch her

Me; yhooo \*i breathed out loudly \* please let her be ohk

Dorian; call her now

I dialled her numbers and at the second ring she answered

Me; hey lala

Her; hey you

Me; where are you?

Her; my place

Me; can i come over or you come here i need to talk to you about something that i need to get off my chest

Her; ohk il come over around 7

Me; ohk see you then

Her; bye

Me; bye

I hung up

Ugo; better get going

Me; thank you man and please thank your wife il never forget this and i owe you my life

Ugo; dont worry about that, i know if i was in the same position you would help me out

I walked them all out and i was waiting impatiently on the couch. I wanted to kill her

She arrived and i acted normal as fuck. I asked her to go and talk at my bedroom and she smiled

Me; i need to tell you something, no one knows about this

Her; ohk talk to me

Me; you do know I do some dodgy business on the side  
lala

Her; i know that but i was not sure

Me; yes but amahle has some sort off evidence that could put me behind bars till i die. Me and amahle were not good i mean it wasnt what i thought it would be when we ended things. She knew all my business, when i tried to break up with her she threatened to take the info to the police

Her; what?

Me; yeah and i could not risk losing everything so i had to stay with her and act as though i loved her so i wont bring any attention to us including you which is why i had to act like we were madly in love and all off that so you wont suspect a thing

Her; so all this time you being with her was just a lie

I nodded my head

Her; i knew it, i knew you would not love her what we had was real

Me; im sorry but right now im scared lala

Her; of what?

Me; lets say amahle dies ohk that will be so much relief to me but only she knows where the info is. So if she dies they could find the documents when they go through her stuff and i get arrested never leaving jail again

Her; but if she comes back you will be with her cause she still has the evidence

Me; i think i will have to deal with it that moment but i pray so hard that she is not killed

She looked the other way and i knew we had her

Her; so what will you do

Me; at this point, theres nothing to do but wait

## #AMAHLE

I was woken up by a beating. They kicked and punched me and i had nothing in me , no strength anymore. I just laid there

Guy; WHERE IS IT.... WHERE \*SCREAMING\*

I just laid there i just didnt even know what hewas talking about. They didnt stop till i passed out. I just wanted to die cause this was not the life i wanted for myself. How could i possibly face the world after this

I said a prayer asking god to make me rest in peace and remove this pain from me i prayed for my own death cause i could not take this anymore

#ANDRE

After a week , the last week off march. Themba came back with info

Me; talk to me

Themba; we need to go

Me; where

Themba; lets go il tell you all about it in the car

Me; ohk

We got to his car

Me; so whats up

Themba; we found a guy that might have worked with helen he might know some info about amahle

Me; perfect

Themba; have you talked to her

Me; she called me this morning you

Themba; she is always at home man, my guys follow her but she does not go to a place that is dodgy i want to kill this bitch man

Me; not now boy, not now

We got to the warehouse and walked in. They had tied some guy to the chair. I grabbed a chair sat opposite him and took out my gun. They poured water over him and he woke up. I smiled and he looked terrified to see me

Me; sure boy

Him;.....

Me; you know who i am

He nodded his head

Me; great then this should be way easier

Him;.....

Me; listen boy you know who i am and what im capable off and right now i could kill you and no one would even look for you and i would still walk the streets of jozi but i dont want it to get to that ohk

He looked at me

Me; my girl was taken away from me boy, next week it will be 4 months i miss my woman ntwana and im ready to kill a lot off people for the shit iv been through but you \* pointing him with the gun\* i want to give you a chance that a lot off people wont have but in order for that to happen i need you too tell me everything i need

Him; listen man immediately when i found out she was your girl, i went out i told the other guys i was out and i did not want to be involve in that mess because i knew you and i know what you do so which is why i went out and i did not want to get involve

I turned to adel and stretched my hand to him. He gave me his okapi, i opened it and stabbed him on the thigh he screamed so loud

Me; that was nothing , only did that cause you didnt come to me and tell me of what happened but you say you respect me

Him; im sorry man \*breathing heavy\*

Me; ohk listen i want you to tell me what i need to know

Him; but they will kill me

Me; and i will kill you in front off your mum no scratch that i will kill your entire family in front off you and make sure you become a bitch behind bars , want to talk now?

Him; the last time i saw them and your girl they were at ..... She was at the basement thats all i know

Me; thats all i needed to know

I got up , removed the okapi and he screamed again.

Me; whats the plan ?

Themba; we go in

Me; not daylight man

Deon; midnight

Me; yeah he stays here just so he wont tip them off

I went home, set up everything i didnt even eat i just wanted to see my woman. Around 11;30 took my things and met the guys

## INSERT #179

We arrived at the place the guy told us where they were. Ugo even offered to help and after all he did i didnt even say no

Ugo; lets go in

We got out off the car everyone was armed, we walked to the place it was in the darkest place i doubt anyone would think off what. Themba kicked open the door and this guys were sitting on the couch fucked up drunk the aim was to find amahle , they hit them with guns on the head and i checked each and every bedroom but nothing.

Me; shes not fucken here!

Themba pulled one off the guys

Themba; where is she

Him;....

Themba; i said where the fuck is she?

Him; remove the carpet

I removed the carpet that was on the hallway and it was a door i opened it and walked down the stairs.

I walked out

Me; its too dark in there , have a torch

Dorian threw it at me , themba kicked the guy on the head and he just collapsed. I lighted it and walked down with him. I called out for amahle but nothing. I lighted the torch when we got to the floor the other side and i just dropped it to the floor. I looked at her and she looked dead, there was blood all over the floor, her shirt, her entire body was exposed her dress was ripped. Tears just formed on my eyes and i dropped to the floor. Themba leaned on the floor and also dropped to the floor

We just looked at her. She was not moving at all , the was blood all over her, her legs, her face everywhere i just looked at her from a distance i was even scared to get close to her.

Dorian; guys did you find her

Us;.....

Dorian; whats going on? Whats up

He walked up to us and when he saw what we were looking at he froze. I buried my head to my thighs and cried as if i was a baby i didnt even remember when was the last time i cried like that. After a while i pulled myself together and picked her up and we rushed out. Nhlanhla and a few more off our guys were to remain behind. I couldnt rush her in cause it would bring a lot off attention. I called one of the guys who were on duty they met me halfway and took her, what I was wearing was covered in blood, my hands were shaking

Went back to the car and i lost my temper and i mean lost my temper

I took a long shower were my emotions ran wild i didnt even know if she was alive or dead. Left the shower and received a message from mbali " they found her" she also gave me the address i wore sweaters and rushed to the hospital where everyone was there and i mean everyone had to act like i knew nothing about it.

Me; where is she, is she ok

Her aunt; they have not talked to us

I looked around and everyone looked scared, mbali pulled me to the side

Mbali; where did you find her

Me; huh

Mbali; im not dumb

Me; il tell you all about it , not now

Mbali; ohk

We sat at the waiting room for hours and hours and i mean hours. It was even dark now but still nothing. The nurse came to look for us and told us to go home the doctor will only talk to us tomorrow. We hesitated at first but eventually left. The following day we arrived but still nothing we waited there for a few more hours until the doctor called for us. She came to where we were sitting

Dr; hi are you the girls family

Us; yes/ how is she/ is she ohk

Dr; im going to need to talk to the family only

Mbali; this is the family you can talk

Dr; ohk il advice you to sit down

We all sat, and she sat too

Dr; its was not looking good with her, we tried our level best , we worked on her the whole night, she was not in good condition but what i can tell you, she was hurt and we tried our best

Cause I want you all to sleep

INSERT #180

Mbali; \*crying \* please dont say it please

Dr; no, no she made it , she still breathing right now but we dont know for how long. She is in intensive care unit we keeping a close eye on her a very close eye

Mbali mum; but she will be ohk right

Dr; chances are 95/5

mbali; 95 she will be ohk right

The doctor shook her head

Dr; She had a gun shot wound that was infected , her jaw is broken which is making it hard for her to breath, we have put wires and elastic bands to join her jaws back together. She also has a broken nose . It seems like they have hit her on the head a number off times, we have run a few tests and xrays to see if they did not cause any internal bleeding or fractured her skull. We also run a few tests hiv tests, pregnancy test , will receive those results later on. And sorry you have to hear this but she was sexually abused

I covered my face

Dr; im sorry you have to go through all this , we gave her anti-retroviral . This treatment is called post -exposure prophylaxis which is to prevent hiv infections. It usually works within 3 days and after that it does not so we dont know when did they rape her so we just trying our luck. Cause if this happened for more than 3 days ago then it wont work and she might be infected which means she will need all of your support also she bled inside her V so we need to drain out the cloths inside her V. Unfortunately we cant do it now as she is still unconscious will do it when she wakes up. She will be in a lot off pain and we cant give her anaesthetic. Right now its all up to her to beat this thing and your prayers may help a lot cause right now she needs prayers

I got up and went outside i couldnt take it anymore, i just let it all out

Few days passed and she was still not up. As I was sitting there with her family the dr walked up to us

Me; is there any change

Dr; no I need to talk to you

Me; me?

Dr; arent you her husband

Me; I am

Pa; whats going on

Dr; im afraid this concerns her husband

Them; ...

I stood up and walked with her to some office

Dr; how are you?

Me; why am I here

She gave me an envelope. I took them and it was hiv tests that were negative and pregnancy tests that were positive, I looked up to her

Me; \*shouting\* FUCK NO ! NO

I pushed everything on the table to the floor

Me; \*shouting\* FUCK NO! SHES NOT CAUSE SHE WILL ONLY BE PREGNANT WITH MY CHILD NO

Dr; im sorry

Me; \*shouting\* DON'T FUCKEN SAY SORRY, WILL THAT SORRY REMOVE THAT THAT THING INSIDE OF HER

Dr; I need you to calm down

Me; FUCK Y..

The securities walked in and pulled me back

Dr; the is no baby

Me; what?

Dr; she was but she miscarried, it was not even a baby as yet.

Me; she does not know

Dr; no, nobody knows but us two

Me;....

Dr; mr adams

Me; keep it that way, she wont know she was right

She shook her head

Me; but will she be able to have kids again

Dr; yes

Me; ohk whatever we talked about in here stays in here

Dr; good with me

Me; im sorry about your table

Dr; \*smiling\* I understand

I walked out, I was boiling

Mbali; so ?

Me; she was giving me her results, she is not pregnant or hiv

Pa; thank god for that

Me; I need some air

I went out leaving them there.

Days passed. They had to do a blood transfusion cause she lost a lot off blood. I would go there and just sit on the waiting room with her family but nothing one day we were sitting on the sitting room and the doctor appeared

Pa; how is she?

Dr; still no change

Her aunt; is there no way we can see her

Dr; you can go but not all off you , im going to ask at least 2 strictly family members to go in. The icu does not allow many patients or non family member so who shall i take

Pa; i think her fiancee deserves to see her more than anyone here

I looked at pa and he nodded his head and smiled

Dr; perfect, im going to get you dressed ohk sir

I nodded my head. I walked with her and they gave me theatre garments and we walked in the ward. All the patients there were critical and the thought off my woman being here just broke me. We walked to this room A NGWENYA on the outside. The dr let me go in alone. I stood at the door and just looked at her. Sshe had bruises everywhere, her lip was cut, her eyes were swollen and i

mean swollen. Her nose was bandaged and her head. I was not sure if she could hear me or not. I tried to talk but i held back i didnt even know what i was going to say to her "im sorry" that was not enough. She was laying on that bed because off me , she was hurt because off me and i just had to say sorry that was not enough. I wanted to go through the pain she went through. I wanted her to get up from that bed and lay me instead. I couldnt take it anymore i just left that ward. Went out for air sat on the pavement i kept thinking about what she went through , my thoughts were disturbed when i felt a hand on my shoulder i turned and it was pa

Me; im r....

Him;shhhh let me talk

Me;....

Him; im sorry for everything that i said and i mean everything and i know my daughter would hate me if she ever heard half off the things i said to you. I should have not blamed you for such

Me; but i

Him;let me finish, i should have not said any off those things i was just angry and i needed someone to blame and my easiest target would have been you can we please forget the past and find a way to move on

I didnt even say anything i just hugged him

Him; am i forgiven

Me; i cant believe you even asking me that pa

Him; so how is she

Me; not so good i didnt even know what to say to her ,  
she was just laying there

Him; she will need you more than ever right now , i need  
you to be there for her i know that what happened to her  
didnt only affect her but you as well but she will need  
someone right now and the perfect person we all know its  
you

Me; i dont think i can pa, what if she blames me for all of  
this which she will be right to. I dont think i can be able to  
stand it knowing she hates me

Him; i dont know how she will react , or who will she  
blame maybe you, me or all of us i dont know but one  
thing i do know she would never hate you

Me; thanks pa

Him; anytime going back in

Me; no i think im going home, get this through my  
system

Him; ohk

He stood up and left , walked up to my car and drove to  
my place

Later that day went to meet up with the guys with our hostages. Got in and it was 5 off them. I removed tapes from their mouths

helen; dre im sorry \*crying\* i was hurt i didnt mean for it to go that far. Dre please look at me. DRE! DRE IM SORRY  
She kept screaming and talking while the guys were just quiet

Me; give me a chair

Themba gave it to me and i sat opposite all 5 off them

Helen; dre im

Me; \*shouting\* SHUT THE FUCK UP ! TALK AGAIN AND I SWEAR TO GOD IL CUT YOUR TONGUE OUT DONT FUCKEN TEST ME

She looked at the floor. I tried to catch my breath and moved my eyes to those guys

Me; so how do you know each other

Them;...

Me; ntwana ngaye ibag yami ( boy give me my bag)

They gave me my back and took out everything, took 4 knives and stabbed them on they legs they screams filled the room

Me; i dont like to repeat my self , hope we understand that now

They were breathing so heavily

Me; how do you know each other

Guy 1; me, helen and marcus are cousins. Brandon and jacob we just friends

Me; thank you so this bitch said you must take my girl

They nodded their heads

Me; and you motherfuckers decided to forcefully have sex with my girl

Them;....

Me; ntwana

Themba gave me the baseball bat and i beat them all up with it. I had no mercy for them , i just swung it at them , they fell on the ground and the guys repeatedly kicked them , wherever they could. They showed no mercy i showed no mercy too, the bat i was carrying was covered in blood. I tried to catch my breath and sat down again

Me; listen man i have to go, you will handle this right

Themba; dont worry il handle this

Me; dont make them reach their death as yet

Themba; no no no they will beg for me to kill them before i actually do

Me; sure boy

Took my things and left, i was covered in blood. Got to my place and went to wash up then i went to bed

INSERT #181

Each and every day after work or when i was not working i would go to the hospital and sit on the waiting room and when it was time to leave i would leave. After 2 weeks got to the hospital and they said she woke up

Me; so is she talking?

dr; shes not saying much , shes traumatised and she will need time to deal with everything she faced.

Me; can we see her

Dr;....

Us; doc

Dr; she does not want to see anyone im afraid

Mbali; what?

Dr; yes and at this point we need to keep her happy even if it means you not seeing her

Me; thats crazy

Dr; thats not all

Pa; whats wrong

Dr; she has some sort off fear for light

Us;.....

Dr; she does not want light at all, we had to shut the blinds and switch off the rooms light so it will be dark thats how she wants it. She has been through worst so what i would tell you is we should give her time to deal with her trauma on her own time, dont rush her.

We nodded our heads

Dr; i have to go and i suggest you go home to and rest

Us; ohk

I dropped them off at home and went home

#AMAHLE

I woke up in a hospital bed. I didnt even know how i got there. I was in so much pain and the light hurt me so much. The moment i woke up, nurses rushed to me and doctors. They monitored me and they moved me i realised i was in icu. The doctor told me everything i wanted to know and i told her i didnt want to see anyone. I just covered myself with the blanket and cried thinking about everything just made me cry

It has been days since i have not seen my family , i wanted to see them but i was disgusted in myself that i did not want them to see me. In the morning the nurses came in and helped me wash, ate then they put me back to bed, i pulled the covers up and just stayed under the blankets. The door opened and i thought it was my dr but i did not get out i wanted her to think i was sleeping so she wont bother me

People; mami/ mtase/ lala/ mahle/ angel

They kept calling out for me

Pa; is she always like this

Dr; yes she never moves from this position until it its for her treatment and to bath

Dre; can i talk to her alone

Them; sure

The door opened and it closed

I just froze under the blankets, i knew that voice very well , tears began forming in my eyes but i did not move. He touched me but i shifted. He went silent after that

Dre; you know this past few days iv been thinking about the first time i saw you , how beautiful you looked , i couldnt take my eyes off you and i fell in love with you that very moment. Mami i love you so much and im so sorry , im so sorry for everything that you went through. I

will always blame myself for what happened to you. Im sorry baby im sorry i could not find you earlier im sorry you went through all off this pain if i could we would switch places mami i swear. The thought of losing you terrified me the word sorry could never be enough but baby im begging you , im begging you ohk you dont have to talk to me or want to see me il understand but please talk to your family , they want to see you, you need them to get through this i need you please dont shut us out please

I wanted to talk but I could not talk, he called out for me but there was just silent until he left. Few other days passed. One morning I think, my entire family came to my room I was just fiddling with my hands

Pa; baby

Me;....

Aunt; baby girl

Mbali; hlehle

They kept calling for me but I couldn't even look at them in the eyes, I was just busy with my nails

Pa; we glad you ohk baby, we never gave up on you we looked for you all the time, dre looked for you all the time all off us I prayed for you we all did

Me;....

Mbali; thando missed you

Me;...

Mbali mum; baby girl just know that we love you and will always love you those dogs they will find them and they will rot in jail

Nobuhle; friend im sorry \*crying\* I blame myself everyday for this

Me;...

Nurse; im going to need you all to leave I need to change her

Pa; but we have not talked to her, she has not talked

Nurse; she has been here for months baba but I still don't know the sound off her voice she never talks and I mean ever

Pa; baby please talk to me

Me;....

Pa; I love you so much and im not going to lose you

Then he left

Nurse; how is your head?

Me;....

Nurse; your dr is recommending a speech therapist for you maybe you will start talking

Me;....

Nurse; you have a family that cares for you

Me;....

She cleaned me up, changed my bandages and left. I fell asleep then woke cause I needed to use the bathroom , the nurse helped me with that as we were on with that the door opened it was dre. He was standing there with a blanket, flowers and basket

Dre; mami

Me;....

I sat on my bed, pulled the blankets to my face faced the other direction and slept, I felt the blanket on top off me and I felt so warm

Dre: im not giving up on you

Then I heard the door open tears just ran down my face

INSERT #182

#ANDRE

Weeks passed and she never spoke I mean never spoke, it was like they took her voice away from her, she got discharged for like 2 days cause the dr thought she might

speak if she was in a familiar place but her treatment was not over. She was to stay with me, we walked to my car, she sat at the back, covered her face with the blanket and said nothing. I wanted to say something to her but I didn't even know what to say to her. We got to my place and I parked in the garage she did not want light and that was the only place that was dark, I got out off the car and opened the door for her, she never even looked at me in the eyes she slowly got out. She held the door and opened it but stepped back again causing it to close, I looked at her and she had closed her eyes

Me; I know this is not ideal for you since you don't want light but I cant make the entire house dark

Her;...

Me; mami please talk to me

She stepped back. I was broken

Me; how about I pick you up, we walk upstairs while you cover yourself from the light then il make sure the bedroom is dark

Her;....

Me; amahle you seem so fragile I need you to work with me here, should I do that or not cause im really scared to touch you without you giving me the go ahead

Her;....

She was just fiddling with her fingers

I walked inside leaving her out there, I closed the blinds, switched off the light, switched off the lights outside anything that showed light it was off, it was not that dark but it was something, I went back out and she was sitting inside the car

Me; I tried my level best to make it dark there, you can go in

Her;...

She got up and slowly walked to the door, she pushed it open , squinted her eyes and walked inside. She went to the room that was downstairs

Me; our bedroom

She said nothing walked to that room and closed the door. I went to the kitchen and made her something to eat then opened the door, she was completely naked and just sitting there her entire body was bruised I mean entire body, tears just built up in my eyes. I stepped back closed the door and went out

I didn't know what to do or what to say no matter what I said or did she never spoke I mean never spoke. I called mbali

Mbali; hey

Me; I need you right now

Mbali; im on my way

I hung up, I was sitting outside the door after an hour or so I heard a car drive up the drivetu.

Mbali; \*shouting\* dre

She walked towards the steps

Me; im here

She walked towards me

Mbali; its so dark in here

Me; she prefers it that way

She sat next to me

Mbali; whats wrong

I turned to her

Me; I don't know were to start mbali, I don't know how to talk to her, or what to say to her, im even scared to touch her, its not her mbali, she looks dead its like theres nothing in her anymore no soul no feelings nothing she \*I paused\* I think the woman im suppose to be getting married to is dead and what we have is just a body with no soul

Mbali; don't say that

Me; but its true I have seen her for a while now but nothing changes, no light in her eyes, no sign of life within her nothing no tears nothing mbali, she has the same emotions each and every day I wouldn't even say they emotions cause she just keeps quiet the whole day, fiddle with her hands, never look you in the eyes and says nothing I mean nothing and she wants nothing that has to do with light

Mbali; she needs time dre

Me; and im going to give her that but I need her to show me that my woman is still there mbali

Mbali; let me go see her

Me; she inside here

I moved aside and she walked inside

After a while mbali walked out

Me; so?

Mbali; nothing dre

Me; thank you for coming

Mbali; want me to sleep over

Me; no its fine

Mbali; ohk

She kissed me and left. I made her food even though she wouldn't eat and took it to her, she was sleeping

I placed the plate on the side and sat on the floor. I was so scared that I might have just lost my woman.

INSERT #183

#ANDRE

The next day I woke up, I had fell asleep on the floor. I got up and she was still in bed

Me; mami can you please eat

Her;....

Me; amahle I don't know what to do anymore, you wont eat, you wont talk what must I do, just tell me anything what do you want \* getting teary\* im sorry ohk, im sorry you didn't deserve this i....

She got out off bed and just walked to the bathroom, I tried opening the bathroom door but nothing

Me; amahle!

I tried opening but nothing, I banged the door

Me; amahle

Nothing, I was panicking the door was locked and I did not know what she was capable of doing , I kicked open the door and she was sitting laying inside the tub, her entire body curled, as I was about to touch her I saw blood stains on the tub I was not sure were it was from. I picked her up and she was out off it, I don't know what was wrong with her, I rushed her to the car and drove to the hospital and they immediately took her, I called pa and the rest of the family and guys and in less than an hour they were there

Pa; what happened

Me; I don't know I was talking to her, she went to the bathroom next thing she doesn't come back , the bathroom door closed so I kicked it open and she was laying in the tub with blood I don't know were it was from and she was unconscious I don't know what happened

Pa; what did they do to my baby

I just walked out

Mbali; shes ohk

I turned

Me; she is

She nodded her head

Me; what happened

Mbali; the doctors are still running some tests, they also have no idea but the bleeding was from her private part and she might have affected her gunshot wound as the stitches were out

Me; how do I get through this

Mbali; pray, I also don't see amahle in that girl but I know she is there somewhere

Me; the thought of what she is going through right now is because of me kills me deep mbali

Mbali; and to think I thought that bitch was my friend

Me; deon told you

Mbali; yeah and I blame myself in a way that I told her about your engagement cause if I didn't we wouldnt be here now

Me; don't

Girl; and I blame myself I didn't accompany her to get her jacket

Me and mbali turned and it was nobuhle. She sat next to me

Nobuhle; im sorry dre

Me; you too don't

Themba joined us, then dorian then deon then it was the whole squad sitting outside

Unathi; how can we help her

Me; I don't know I feel so helpless

Nobuhle; they getting her a speech therapist

Jack; whats that

Nobuhle; someone who will help her speak

Dorian; that's what I don't understand why she doesn't talk

Unathi; she went through a lot 3 and a half months of torture dorian more like 4 months and she was r... \*she paused\* she will get through it though.

A month passed and she still said nothing she was back at the hospital, in a dark room, that was always dark I would go there sit down, she would either be sleeping or looking at the ceiling until I had to go without anyone having to talk or say anything. One day the door opened I turned to it and some woman walked in

Her; its so dark in here

Me; yeah who are you

Her; khosi

Me; I don't think I know you

Her; yes I am here for amahle

Me; ??

Her; im her therapist

Me; oh

Her; yes you

Me; husband

Her; im sorry for what you both going through

Me; let me move aside

I gave her my seat and went to the other side

Her; hi amahle, they told me about you afraid of the light  
so I will try by all means to work in the dark

Amahle;....

Her; im khosi by the way

Amahle;....

She looked at me and I just raised my shoulders

Her; I got a picture of you and your mum from your  
grandfather

Amahle;....

Her; he told me you were very close to your parents

Amahle;....

Her; do you ever think about them

Amahle;.....

Her; ohk how about your husband

Amahle;.....

Her; don't you think he wants to be there for you and support you?

Amahle;...

Her; or your grandfather, I know his pretty much the only closest person you have and you have a very special bond with him

Amahle;.....

Her; what about your grandmother

Amahle;...

Her; I heard her death affected you in such a bad state that you almost took your life?

Amahle;...

Her; do you feel like doing that right now

Amahle...

Her; taking your life

Amahle;....

Her; amahle im trying to help you out, but I can only help you out if you work with me

Amahle;....

Her; il come back tomorrow and we try again

Amahle;...

Me; will you be able to help her

Her; I thought I did when I read about her case but right now im not too sure anymore

Me; you have too

Her; she doesn't want to be helped

Me;...

Her; keep well

She took her bags and walked out then went to sit on the chair again 30 minutes later pa walked in with amahle aunt, I made room for them

Pa; baby how are you today?

Amahle;...

Aunt; hlehle

Pa; baby please talk to us

She turned the other way around and pulled the blankets to her face, they both turned to me and I just walked out. I went to my car and drove to the warehouse I had to make that bitch suffer for what she did to my woman.

#AMAHLE

People came in and out, in and out different people, different voices but I couldn't get myself to speak to anyone off them I didn't know what to say and its was as if I could not talk anymore even if I wanted to talk something was always holding me back

#ANDRE

Few days passed went to the hospital and the doctor was walking out off her room

Me; any changes

Dr; no, other medical practioners have diagnosed her with ptsd elective mutism

Me; I don't understand

Dr; because of the trauma she went through she refuses to speak even though she can speak that is called elective mutism

Me; so what can we do to help her

Dr; find a specialist in psychological trauma, attend it all together including her make her feel home again safe again, everyone that she cares about let them be there and maybe im saying maybe mr adams she might not be mute again...

## INSERT #184

-----

#ANDRE

After my talk with the doctor I did not waste anytime, I called out for everyone I mean everyone. Her family, my family and our friends I got us the specialist and since we could not go to her office she had to come to us. I asked at the hospital to organise a room for us and I made it more comfortable for amahle, dark no light whatsoever and the nurse was to go and call her we were all sitting around in a circle. After a few minutes the door opened and we all turned to it, she looked at us all and turned back but the nurse didn't allow her to go back she walked with her and sat her down

Woman; hi amahle im dr cooper

Amahle;....

Woman;I hope you know everyone that is in this room, I don't want you to say anything or talk to anyone I just need you to listen to each and every one off them ohk. Im not trying to pressure you to something you not comfortable with so if you feel like you need to rest I want you to get up and go no one will stop you ohk

Amahle....

Woman; I need you to know that the event that you went through did not only affect you, yes it affected only you physically but it also affected everyone in this room each and every one in this room either blames themselves for what happened or they wish it was them instead of you

Amahle;...

Woman; you know dorian right , your fiancee brother I want you to listen to what he has to say you don't have to make eye contact with him I just want you to listen to him... you can go ahead dorian

Dorian; lala let me start off by saying I care for you deep and I would do anything and I mean anything to protect you just like you always protected me. Remember the was a point in time where we were close you stood up for me with dre and even if I was the one who was wrong you always made sure at the end of the day I get what I requested were im going with this is you have always been there for me and theres no way in hell im just going to let you swim alone in the big ocean il always be here with here, every decision you take but I also want to apologise to you, I ask off you to forgive me for not being able to protect you....

After those words I saw tears drop from her eyes

Dorian; im sorry and I don't think il be ever be able to forgive myself for that but what im willing to do is fix my

mistake from this day one I swear to you il protect you with my life.

Woman; you ohk amahle?

Amahle;...

Woman; deon you want to go next ?

Deon; yes please nana one thing im sure of is that the person im seeing right now is not the hlehle I know cause I know you stronger than this and you would not allow such to bring you down. We have been through way too much bullshit and you have seen it all, you have been hurt but you still managed to get your head up straight and smile so that's what I need you to do I need you to get yourself together I know its not as easy as I make its sound especially not knowing half off the things you went through but im going to hold your legs just for you to stand on your own cause I have your back and im not going to allow you to go though this alone, im going to help you out, we going to help you out and im also sorry nana for not keeping my promise that I will protect you, im sor... \* he couldn't even finish his sentence he just buried his head in between his thighs\*

Kim; amahle im sorry for what happened I really am and I cant even imagine what you must be going through and I know my sorry will not be enough but I just want you to know that I love you so much, you have became my sister from the first time I met you, I loved you and dre knows

that and it hurts me to see you like this cause I know you not like this, im used to you always laughing and smiling with full off life and it scares me that I don't see that anymore so please amahle, let us be there for you lets help one another to get through this and I really really love you I also hope il be one off your bridesmaid .

My gran; ntombazane ka gogo I know that my makoti is there deep down there, no sorry in this room can make you forget what you went through or any words what you going through is the worst thing any girl could possibly go through and one thing each and every parents protects they children from but im ashamed to say we all failed you in this room but most importantly my son failed you and I don't blame you for being mad at him or us.

I stood up, everyone looked at me

My gran; sit your ass down boy

Me; are you trying to make her hate me more, she already hates me, she cant stand my sight and you have to tell her such really ma

My gran; what you want me to say lie to her, you did fail her and its not my business that you cant handle the truth and you know deep down you failed her you just don't want to admit it.

I grabbed the chair I was sitting on and smashed it on the wall, I threw it at the wall with so much power it broke

Me; \*shouting\* NONE OF YOU HAVE ANY IDEA WHAT SHE IS GOING THROUGH OR ME. I HAVE TO LIVE WITH THE FACT THAT WHAT HAPPENED TO HER WAS BECAUSE OF ME

Woman; I need you to calm down andre

Me; \*shouting\* FUCK NO! THIS IS BULLSHIT SHE WAS SEXUALLY ABUSED CAUSE OF ME. LOOK AT HER! LOOK AT HER ! SHE DOESN'T TALK AND ITS ALL BECAUSE OF ME AND YOU WANT TO SIT THERE AND TELL HER I FAILED HER I KNOW I FAILED HER SHE KNOWS I FAILED HER BUT I DON'T NEED YOU TO REMIND ME OFF THAT FUCK MAN

Mum; ANDRE ! CALM DOWN

Me; CALM DOWN, HOW THE FUCK CAN I CALM DOWN I...  
\* I PAUSED \*

I looked at amahle and she was out off it

Me; FUCK

I pushed everything away and just walked out

#MBALI

Me; should I go look for him

Dre gran; no let him take out his anger

I looked at amahle, and tears were running down her face but she was not even making any kind of sound, she got up and walked out too

Woman; I need to talk to andre

Mum; he has always had anger problems that no one has ever been able to get rid off except her

Woman; and for us to help amahle first we need to help him first

Mbali; he wont agree to that knowing him, I know he wont agree

Woman; well il need you all to try

Us ; ohk

We all packed up, went to amahle ward said goobye and left. The drive was silent, I was in the same car as deon, nobuhle and themba

Deon; you need to call dre

Me; il talk to him tomorrow

Themba; iv never seen him that angry, no matter how angry he is he never shows it especially towards his family

Deon; his grandmother boy ever

Themba; amahle and andre need each other right now , not anyone else but themselves cause I feel like th...

I cut him off

Mbali; growing apart

Nobuhle; yeah they definitely growing apart, amahle is pushing dre out, dre is angry and what I think they don't know is they need each other

Mbali; no they don't know that I wish that bitch dies a painful death

Themba; shes praying for her own death and im going to make sure she does not die anytime soon

Nobuhle; lets not talk about such guys please

Themba; sorry nana

We got home, they dropped us off and my baby was already sleeping I kissed him and went to bed.

The next day dropped her off at creche and went to dre place her mums car was parked outside I opened the door at the kitchen and ntombi was there

Me; hey

Ntombi; hey you

Me; where is he

Ntombi; lounge its still tense though

Me; ohk thanks

I slowly walked to the door

Dre was sitting on the couch, opposite her grandmother and I saw something I never thought I would possibly see. He was crying his grandmother and mother talking to him. They were all crying

Grandmother; \*crying\* ayanda that child needs you, she needs all of us do you understand me. I don't care about how you feel at this point I care about her, I care about how she feels, how she is doing I don't care about how you feel cause you have no idea or the slightest clue what she went through and I don't care about if you think we turning you against her I don't cause what I know is I love that girl and I want her to be mrs adams and carry my great grand kids and that's not going to happen if we wont help her out and we wont help her out if we don't admits our faults to her.

INSERT #185

#ANDRE

After a few days we went back to meet with the specialist and everyone shared what they had to say, my mum talked, pa talked, her aunt talked, then she got up and left, the following day it was themba, jack and nobuhle, then she got up and left, the following day it was mbali mum, dad, half of my family and she got up and left the

following day it was only me who was suppose to talk everyone had talked except for me. I was shaking the entire time, she walked in as usual sat down and began fiddling with her fingers

Woman; dre would you like to share something with amahle

I looked at everyone and they were all just looking at me, I turned my face back to her and she was looking on the floor

Me; you look beautiful punka

She stopped fiddling with her fingers and looked at me and that was the first time our eyes actually locked together without me having to force her to look at me but for her to look at me cause she actually wanted to look at me, she just stared at me

Me; you look really beautiful, you didn't do anything with your hair or have that colour lipstick you love on or did something with your eyelashes but you still look so beautiful I don't even know how is that possible or maybe its because im whipped nothing new there right. Ever since we started this session iv been practising what I would say but each and every day they all took my lines whether it was I would always protect you, to im sorry to I love you and I wanted to tell you something that would make you regain your voice back but if I say what I had practised it wont mean as much anymore. Before I

apologise to you let me start off by saying im sorry to your parents the day before I went on one knee I prayed to god to keep me in contact with your parents and I prayed to them and asked them to give me their blessing to marry their daughter I also made an ought to them that I would protect you day and night I made a promise and it hurts deep that I already broke a promise to them cause they may not be here but they are the two most important people I would want them to approve off me and I broke my first promise and its cuts deep punka, I broke a promise to pa and ma and its cuts deep, its cuts deep that it was easy to talk and use words but I failed to show it \* I paused\*

She was looking at me the entire time

Me; this was the biggest test but even after this test I still want to stand opposite you say my vows to you, I still want to hear you scream in pain when you give birth to our beautiful daughter who will look just like you big eyes, I still want to hear your laughter, I still want to touch you and wake up next to you and not because I want to prove to anyone that whatever shit we go through will always end up together well that too but I want all off this because I love you and I know the is no one I will possibly love more than you, I need you to come back to me punka, im so close to my breaking point mama I feel like I am changing without you, the only thing at this point that keeps me sane is the thought of us spending each and

everyday with one another makes me get excited \* I smiled\* the thought that I will see you age, I will get to see someone drain the hell out off you when paris refuses to do something, the way you will be towards our daughter I cant wait for all off that and cause off that I will wait. I told you this before baby I love you and im not going anywhere I will be with you till you ready to face the light again. I will be with you till you ready to talk again cause I love you mama

Woman; amahle

She was just looking at me not even blinking, then turned to everyone in the room. Then suddenly threw up, I jumped to her while they went to take a bucket, mbali called the doctor and they took her away. I grabbed a blanket and cleaned up everything we were all still shocked on what was happening we couldn't see her anymore so they told us to leave

INSERT #186

-----

#ANDRE

I woke up went to take a long shower then went to the hospital. I came across her dr

Me; dr

She turned to me

Dr; mr adams

Me; hi how is she, what happened last night

Dr; im not sure but she is still trying to get used to food, remember she never ate or drank water but now giving her food and its not heavy food cause off her jaws so im not sure what caused her to throw up but

Me; but?

Dr; \*smiling\* she talked

Me;....

Dr; mr adams

Me; what???

Dr; \*smiling\* she actually talked, full sentence it was a struggle for her to talk cause off her jaws but she talked and that is some crazy improvement

Me; let me go see her

Dr; she is washing right now, go in after an hour

I impatiently stood outside for an hour, when the nurse walked out I went in but she was not in the bed. I turned to the bathroom and she froze when she saw me

Me; hi

Amahle;...

She walked to the bed and sat on top off the bed. I sat down on the chair and we both said nothing. I got up left my car keys took my wallet and walked to the door

Amahle; could I please have a yoghurt

I smiled before I could turn, I did not want to show her I was smiling I stood at the door and slowly turned to her

Me; huh?

Amahle; yoghurt please

Me; ohk

I walked out and breathed out with a huge smile on my face I actually ran to buy the yoghurt I even forgot what I wanted to buy and went back, she was still alone

Me; here

Amahle; thank you

She slowly opened it and I sat down

Amahle; when do you go to work?

Me; I work nightshift so during the day I will be here

Amahle; don't you get tired, you always here

Me; no

Amahle; ohk

Me;...

Amahle...

Me; how are you today

Amahle; fine you

Me; im getting there

Amahle; what you mean

Me; I just missed hearing your voice

Amahle; wish I could say the same

Me; \*laughing\* what you mean

Amahle; you constantly talking

Me; oh so I irritated you

Amahle; yeah sometimes but sometimes I enjoyed listening to you talk

She turned to look at me and the greatest thing I could possible ask fOR happened. THEN SHE SMILED. I smiled back to her.

Amahle; why you smiling

Me; im not

Amahle; im looking at you, you smiling

Me; I don't know then

We talked and talked and we both didn't run up on things to say around 7 I had to leave and I didn't want to leave but I had to.

#AMAHLE

The following day pa and andre grandmother walked in I  
didn't even know what they came with

Pa; baby girl

Andre gran; hi baby

Me; hi you two

They slowly turned their heads to me it was as if they just  
saw or heard a ghost

Me; whats wrong

They both shout and scream

Pa; \* baby oh my god thank you god

Andre gran; girl you talking

Me; \*smiling\* yes

They walked up to me and gave me huge hugs our  
moment was disturbed by the dr walking in

Dr; im sorry to disturb

Andre gran; no its fine

Dr; I have someone with me

I looked at the lady she walked in with

Dr; this is luyanda, I want you to talk to her ohk

Me;...

Luyanda; hi

Me; hi

Dr; she will come back tomorrow and talk to you

Me; ohk

After they left a lot off people arrived and they were all so shocked to see me talking. I talked with them until it was time to leave around. Around 7 andre walked in he was still wearing his uniform

Dre; you don't sleep now

Me; cant sleep

Dre; you ohk

Me; yeah im craving for meat

Dre; but you cant eat meat

Me; I know , I just want to get rid of these wires now

Dre; only a few more weeks don't rush it

He sat on the chair

Me; how are you

Dre; good you

Me; fine, some lady came here today

Dre; for what

Me; she said she will be here tomorrow I think she will be my therapist the doctor organised for me

Dre; talk to her

Me;....

Dre; amahle

Me; what?

Dre; I said talk to her

Me; I have nothing to say

I turned around and pulled my blankets up and soon fell asleep

The next day the nurse came and cleaned me up, then went to shower then sat on the bed, the door opened

Girl; is it always this dark in here

Me; yes I prefer it that way

Girl ; you still remember me , im luyanda

Me; amahle

She sat down

Luyanda; so Im here to help you, I need you to talk to me about anything ohk

Me;....

Luyanda; so tell me about your childhood

Me;....

Luyanda; how about your fiancee

Me;...

Luyanda; ohkkk

Me; instead off going back and acting as if you actually want to know about my past why don't you ask me what you came here to ask me. How do you feel amahle knowing the fact that they sexually abused you. How do you feel that you were treated as if you were a dog, how do you feel about the fact that every part off your body is bruised instead of going back to something that had nothing to do with what happened

Luyanda; im trying to help you

Me; you would be helping me if you were not here and not making me reminisce abouT what happened cause I don't want to relive any of those days

Luyanda; but I wouldn't be helping you

Me; and reminding me what they did to me is helping me

Luyanda; ...

Me; I know you doing your job but im old enough to handle this on my own and deal with it

Luyanda; that's were you wrong

Me; oh really

Luyanda; I was raped at a young age and I never wanted to talk about it I just wanted to forget about it and you know what happened I might have forced myself to forget but the pain was still there , the anger was still there, I pushed away the one guy who loved me cause of the anger I had, I hurt a lot off people with intentions to hurt them just like I was hurt. I might have smiled each and every day but each day it cut deep and the bigger the wound became and what you doing is pretty much normal in fact I know what you feeling cause you were me when I was 17 but now im just wondering are you willing to lose everything because of the anger that will develop just because you failed to talk about what happened question yourself on that

She packed her bags and walked out

#AMAHLE

Luyanda words were going through my mind the whole night, I was not comfortable with what I would be doing but I knew I had to do it for my sake. The next day was just the usual dre arrived

INSERT #187

#AMAHLE

Dre; hey

Me; hi

He sat down

Dre; im sorry about yesterday

Me; ohk

Dre; im really sorry

Me; and I said ohk

Dre was just irritating me

Dre; so what did you decide

Me; I don't know

Dre; are you ohk

Me; do I look ohk

The door opened and it was luyanda

Luyanda; oh im sorry I didn't know you had visitors

Me; I don't, he was just leaving

He looked at me, took his things and walked out. Luyanda walked in and sat down

Luyanda; hi

Me; hi

Luyanda; are we giving this a second chance

Me; \*smiling\* yeah

Luyanda; let start with intro`s

She started and so did I , she questioned me with a lot off things

Luyanda; your husband

Me;....

She looked at her papers

Luyanda; ayanda andre adams right

Me; yeah can we not talk about him

Luyanda; that's exactly who I want to talk about

Me; I don't want him near me

She looked shocked

Luyanda; but you looked happy with him here yesterday

Me; yesterday was yesterday today is a new day

Luyanda; you angry with him

Me; no

Luyanda; do you blame him

Me; no

Luyanda;...

Me; no in fact I do blame him, I am angry with him and I don't think I will be with him ever again cause if it was not

because of him, I would not be here \*crying\* I would not be talking to you, I would not be looking like this and I would not be raped

Luyanda; but he didn't call those people to come for you

Me; \*shouting\* that's what you don't understand, it doesn't matter if he called them or not fact is its all because of him.

Luyanda; lets end it here today

She gave me tissue to wipe my tears, packed up and left and I just slept.

After luyanda left I was just in my room the entire time. The guys came to visit me and I just put on a fake smile until they left, around 9 I had covered my entire face , the door opened

Dre; mami

I just pretended to be sleeping cause I did not want to see him. Then the door closed. The next day I was served breakfast

Nurse; your husband was here last night

Me; his not my husband

Nurse; your bf

Me; something like that

Nurse; wow his actually your bf but the way he is going all out for you, you would swear you were married

Me;...

Nurse; anyway you don't say he is a paramedic, they brought a patient in and after dropping them off, he came to see if you needed anything

Me; I might have been sleeping

Nurse; I wish I had a guy like that

Me; don't

She raised her eyebrow

Nurse; hao why

Me; I need to use the bathroom

She helped me up and we walked to the bathroom, when I was done the dr showed

up, gave me my medication I drank It, went to shower then my bed. After an hour or so the door opened and it was pa I actually gave him a genuine smile

Pa; hi my baby

Me; hi pa

He kissed me on the cheek and sat down

Me; what did you come with

Pa; taxis everyone is at work and I didn't want to bother anyone

Me; im sorry

Pa; what you sorry for, I do know how to use taxis

I smiled

Me; how you feeling today

Pa; im good baby, especially seeing you smiling like this, these flowers are from dre

My smile just faded away

Pa; and whats that

Me: what

Pa; you have never talked about dre and a smile not be there, but the moment I mentioned his name

Me; its nothing

Pa; you know you can talk to me right...

## #ANDRE

I walked to amahle room and slightly opened the door in case she was sleeping but she was talking with pa

Amahle; I cant be with him anymore, I just cant and I definitely wont marry him...

INSERT #188

#ANDRE

Me; so you letting her win?

They both turned to the door

Pa; andre

Me; hi pa

He got up

Pa; you two need to talk

And he walked out

Me; you seriously going to let her win, give up everything we ever had

Amahle; I just cant

Me; you cant marry me, what kind of bullshit is that

Amahle; I said im not marrying you dre, fight it all you want but I wont change my mind

Me; what you want me to do

Amahle; nothing, I just want us to go our separate ways

Me; that's the kind of shit I cannot do

Amahle; well that does not concern me but im done, we tried not once or twice\*shouting\* WE TRIED DRE cant

you see it, people don't want to see us together I almost got killed for us being together and now I have to sit in a dark room cause im scared for my life, im scared of being with you how can I be with someone im scared of being with

Me;...

Amahle; it could have been helen this time, next time who will it be, you might kill helen today but it does not mean it will stop. It will never stop and im not willing to put my family through that again

Me; amahle please

Amahle; I need space dre, space away from you

Me; you actually need me

Amahle; \*shouting8 EVERYTIME I LOOK AT YOU! I ONLY SEE SOMEONE WHO IS RESPONSIBLE FOR WHAT HAPPENED TO ME

Me; what?

Amahle; yes now go

Me; fuck no

Amahle; dre go

Me; no you always want to take the easy way out

Amahle; you think this is easy for me you know what think whatever you want to think but im done

I looked at her and just walked out

I gave her space cause I thought that might change her mind after a week I went back to see her

I walked to her ward, opened the door and it was a full house

Them; hey andre

Me; hi ma

I looked at her. Well I found myself a seat and got busy with my phone around 5 they all left

Me; so how you doing

Amahle;....

Me; why you want punish me

Her; \*shouting\* cause you the reason im in this bed

Me;....

Her; I want nothing and I mean nothing from you now leave

Me; what you want me to do

Her; take back those four months, take back everything that happened

Me; you know I cant do that

Her; then leave

Pa; baby

I turned to the door

Pa; you cant expect him to do that

Her; no pa if he cant do that , then I don't want him here

Pa; baby calm down

Her; \*shouting\* no his the reason for all of this HIM!

I looked at her, the hate on her eyes just scared me,  
knowing I might have just lost her forever this time

Me; pa don't worry I will leave

Pa; im sorry

Her; go

Me; I know this is not enough but im really sorry

I took my things and walked out. I stood outside her ward  
and just covered my face I have never been so scared in  
my life. I walked out , went to my car and drove to the  
warehouse

Themba ; hey man

Me; clean yourself up

Themba; im not done, you ohk

Me;....

I walked downstairs, took out my gun and pulled the slide.  
Grabbed a chair and sat opposite helen, her entire body  
was covered in blood, everywhere

Me; \*shouting\* because of you, I lost my woman

I pulled the trigger. Her scream filled the room. The guys  
rushed downstairs

Themba; boy

Me; \*shouting\* she wants nothing to do with me because  
of you

I pulled the trigger again. The screams got more louder

Adel; you don't want to kill her right now

Me; \*shouting\* I fucken do

Themba; not so easy ohk , just go home and get some  
rest

I turned to look at her again and just walked out. Went  
home, ntombi made me something to eat then just

INSERT #189

#AMAHLE

After andre walked out , pa also left then luyanda walked  
in

Luyanda; hi

Me; hi

Luyanda; how you doing today

Me; im ohk yourself

Luyanda; good your day

Me; cant say much

Luyanda; ohk lets talk, I have not seen your husband

Me; his not my husband

Luyanda; bf, fiancee

Me; andre

Luyanda; ohk I have not seen andre

Me; yes

Luyanda; why

Me; cause I don't want to see him

Luyanda; don't you think you need him

Me; no

Luyanda; ohk , don't you think he needs you?

Me;...

Luyanda; amahle

Me; I don't care what he needs

Luyanda; that's called being selfish

Me; im not selfish

Luyanda; yes you are, you pushing away a guy that loves you, had nothing to do with the kidnapping and you punishing him for something he didn't ask for

Me;...

Luyanda; is it because his the easiest target to blame

Me; I don't know

Luyanda; only makes sense, you punishing him because you angry he didn't come sooner to save you

Me; why didn't he ?

Luyanda; it doesn't matter , what matters is they found you before they killed you

Me; and I should be grateful for that

Luyanda; arent you

Me; I am but it does not mean I should just accept that he found me before I was dead cause he was suppose to find me minutes after they took me

Luyanda; his human, you were asking him to do the impossible

Me that's what you don't understand , nothing is impossible when it come to andre

Luyanda; what you mean

Me; I don't want to talk about it

Luyanda; when you get discharged where will you go

Me; home

Luyanda; where is home

Me; cape town

Luyanda; andre?

Me; why do you keep bringing him up, did he pay you to do this

Luyanda; no

Me; I ended things with him, im not marrying him anymore

Luyanda; so h...

Me; enough about andre ohk

Luyanda; ohk

Me; good

Her; moving along so why are we still talking in the dark

Me; .....

Her; i need you to talk to me amahle

Me; iv been in the dark for way too long that iv became scared off the light

Her; why?

Me; fear

Her; off?

Me; its just i feel like they will know what happened to me , everyone will know how i was treated, they will know what they did to me

Her; so you hiding from the world

Me; if you put it like that , yeah

Her; what happened to you is not written all over you, or your forehead all off that is in your head and for you to get through this , you need to remove that mindset that everyone knows what happened to you. Or you will never be able to face the world ever again. You a survivor you just take pride in that. There are many rape victims out there and you dont see them hiding. Your story could help the next person but if you teaching other rape victims to step back , stay away from this big world hide then you not helping anyone

Me; so you saying i must scream to the world that im a rape victim

Her; no you dont have to. You dont have to be a motivational speaker and tell the whole world but what im saying is . You need to stop hiding

## INSERT#189 continuation

#AMAHLE

Few days passed I wanted to open up the blinds but i was not ready just not today especially

Someone; why is it so dark in here

I turned to the door and it was a police officer

Me; can i help you?

him; amahle?

Me; yes

Him; im officer maake, i was put in charge off your case just a few days ago. I was suppose to come see you earlier but i know youv been through trauma so i wanted to catch you at a better time

Me; oh ohk

He sat on the chair

Him; do you mind telling me how you got here

Guy; she does not remember

Checked the door and it was andre

Officer; \*laughing\* what are you doing here

Dre; well detective maake thats my wife you questioning there

The officer looked at me and back at dre, the way they reacted to each i knew they knew one another

Officer; well convict i want to speak to the victim ALONE

Dre; \*laughing\* convict \*he said that rubbing his hands\* iv not been sentenced yet but im called a convict only a pretty shitty detective would say that

Me; whats going on

Officer; can you ask him to leave

I looked at dre

dre; let me give you your statement you are here for it right. They found her on the streets and brought her here, we all dont know who and so does she the only thing she remembers is waking up on the hospital bed

Officer; dont spite me turner

Dre; this is not about me or you but my wife. Instead off holding on the grudge you have on me you should be writing down what im telling you. Its my wifes life we talking about here why the hell would i not give it you straight i also want to catch the motherfuckers

Officer; you trying to protect them so you will , take the law on your hands and believe me. I will sentence you for that for life

Dre; \*laughing\* i see you still have a wild imagination but im not the only one who will tell you that ask the doctors

Officer; mam will you tell me what happened

I looked at dre, he just looked at me

Me; to be honest i dont remember anything . The last thing i remember i was being on the cold floor off this place i dont know the next i woke up to a hospital bed

Officer; did you see the people who did this to you

Me; no they wore masks at all time

He looked at me for a while

Officer; ohk il let you know if we find something

Me; thank you

He looked at dre and left

Me; what are you doing here

Dre; don't ask me that

Me; well I am

Dre; act however you want to act amahle but im not giving up on you

Me;...

Dre; I hear you getting discharged today, I sorted out everything for you

I looked at him

Dre; we may have not said I do but you are my wife and your family cant deny me that so you going home with me

Me; im not

Dre; you are

Me; \*shouting\* WHY YOU DOING THIS

Dre; CAUSE I FUCKEN LOVE YOU THAT'S WHY

Me; I need time dre, time away from you, time away from jozi

Dre;....

Me; give me that im not saying give up on me ohk this is too much to carry for me \*crying\* I just need time

Dre;...

Me; let me go home, be surrounded by something im longing for then maybe, maybe I might come back ohk and we fix things

Dre;....

Me: give me time

Dre; 2 months amahle that's it 2 not more than 2

Me; thank you

He walked to the door and stopped right there

Dre; im only doing this cause I love you, so I really hope you don't play with that

Then he walked out. I just broke down

I gathered myself up, my family came and they dropped me and pa to the airport. Landed in cape town and took a taxi to the house. I went to sleep on pa room and I quickly zoned off.

## INSERT #190

Weeks passed I was going crazy without her especially not knowing if she will ever come back again. By two months I was close to my breaking point, I prayed each and every day asking him to make her walk through our bedroom door but nothing. I kept my self busy by going to work all the time not wanting to take a day off or anything like that. Friday after work went straight home and themba car was parked outside, I walked in

Themba; hey man

Me; sure

Themba; you good

Me; whats up? Something is wrong

Themba; nothing is wrong just wanted to make sure you  
ohk

Me; im ohk

Themba; ohk lets go out just us guys drink beer and forget about our worries

Me; cant im working tomorrow

Themba; you said that last week

Me; and im saying it this week too im working tomorrow

Themba; will you ever take a break man

Me; I always take breaks and I would be taking a break now if you were not here

Themba; you not thinking of going back to drugs right

Me; are you crazy

Themba; I know nothing about you these days so don't blame me for asking a simple question

Me; im not taking drugs, im not drinking im just working satisfied now

Themba;...

Me; what now?

Themba; helen

Me; what about that bitch

Themba; don't you think its time

Me; it will be time when I say its time

Themba; shes half dead

Me; is she breathing

Themba; yeah

Me; then shes good

Themba; well ohk, when will you do it

Me; when I get my woman back

Themba; she will come back

Me; boy im going to work tomorrow

Themba; ohk will talk

He took his keys and left

Ntombi; your supper is in the oven

Me; thanks can you please warm it up for me , im going to take a shower then I will eat

Ntombi; ohk

Went upstairs, took a long shower, went to eat then bed.

Saturday went to work and knocked off at 21:00 went to the warehouse fixed a few things then went to the house. I stayed in the car for like an hour thinking about everything and only went in 00:00. I walked upstairs

Girl voice; have you moved on already

I turned

Her; hi

The biggest smile must have appeared on my face

Me; hi

She walked closer to me

Her; how are you ?

Me; I don't know

Her; can I hug you

I opened my arms and she just went in between them

I was glad she was back, few weeks passed but nothing intimate happened between us , not that I didn't want to I just wanted her to heal.

## #AMAHLE

My wires were finally removed but i still could not eat solid food. My time in cape town gave me some sort of hope again. But I was disappointed as I thought when I go back to jozi me and dre will just go back to the way things were but it was not the same one afternoon Went downstairs and ntombi was cooking

Me; what you cooking

Ntombi; rice, chicken stew and veggies

Me; wena you like going all out ne

Ntombi; \*laughing\* but then amahle

Me; it's the truth

I sat at the lounge

Ntombi; you hungry

Me; yeah but im craving mcd

Ntombi; so will you go buy it

Iv never been out in public for a while now was not sure i should

Me; im not sure

Ntombi; ohk

Me; you know what il go

'ntombi; serious

Me; yeah

Went up and changeD into jeans, top and all star with jacket. I took one off dre car and left. Got to one off the drive thru. Parked and went in. It was a full house i bought food for me and ntombi then walked out. Got home, and dre car was on the driveway i knew i was never going to hear the end off this. Took our food and walked in

Dre; where were you??

Me; out!

Dre; \*shouting\* why the fuck would you leave alone?

Ntombi; she ju....

Dre; stay out off this

Me; stop treating me like a child i wont coop myself in this house, if i want to go out i will ... Ntombi heres your food im going to eat mine upstairs

He followed me

Dre; im...

Me; save it i dont want to hear it

Dre; well im sorry for snapping

Took out my fries, lighted the tv and ate my food. He went to take a shower

Dre; i have to go

Me;...

Dre; want anything

Me; no

He took his jacket and left

INSERT #191

## #AMAHLE

Woke up the next morning and dre was still sleeping.  
Went to the bathroom and washed up. Then went to  
make breakfast for myself i camE back up with my plate  
and he was up already up i sat at the edge of the bed

Dre; morning

Me; why were you fighting for me when you actually  
didn't want to be with me

Dre; what?

Me; yeah or maybe you were feeling sorry for me and my  
family

I stood up but he roughly pulled my hand causing me to  
break the plate and I flinched

Dre; im sorry i scared you

I kneeled on the floor and gathered the glass

Dre; amahle stop... \*shouting\* AMAHLE

Me; what?

Dre; why do you think I fought for you just because I was  
feeling sorry for you

Me; \*shouting\*because its so clear you dont want to be  
with me anymore

Dre; \*shouting back \* what? Are you crazy ? I love you , i  
engaged you for a reason not because i didnt know what

to do with my life. Theres no one i want more in my life  
but you when will you ever understand that

Me; please andre spare me that bullshit , ever since iv  
came back you have showed no affection towards me.  
You hardly spend an hour with me . Always leaving

Andre;....

Me; you have not seen me for months have you ever  
kissed me or anything like that, have you ever touched me  
the minute I try to be intimate with you, you always  
running away telling me you have to go, you fucken love  
sex and you never say no to it but now you can I don't  
see why you should be fighting for someone you  
disgusted by

Andre;.....

Me; just leave me

Took the plate and walked out before i could get far from  
the bedroom. He shouted from the bedroom

Dre; im scared mami ohk im just scared, im scared , im  
scared to touch you , not that im disgusted by you but im  
scared. I wanted to touch you when you have healed and  
got over the trauma you faced \* he teared up \* i want to  
kiss you so bad and touch you and do so many things to  
you but i didnt want to push you to do something you  
were not ready for , i dont know what they did to you . So  
i didnt want to kiss you and then you see those

motherfuckers kissing you. I wanted you to just heal babe  
i swear im not disgusted by you

I went back to the room

dre; i would never be disgusted by you, especially for  
something you didnt ask for. I wanted to make love to you  
from the time you came back

Me; make love to me now

He came to me and held my hands

dre; i cant shawty, you still scared by everything that goes  
on around you. You freaked out right now by dropping the  
plate. I want you to cry out my name in this bed out of  
pleasure and not cry because you remembering what  
happened to you i love you so much that i cant risk  
hurting you more than what those idiots did to you. please  
dont do this to us im begging you

Me; i was just scared you didnt love me anymore

Dre; thats never going to happen mami want a hug  
\*opening his arms\*

Me; \*laughing\* no

he pulled me to him and the hug was so tight

Dre; please talk to me if something is bothering you, dont  
just want to leave me ohk

Me; ohk

He kissed my forehead

After a few days i went back to work. Dre was not comfortable with it but i was tired off staying at home doing nothing. They had a welcome back party for me and it was nice. Dre was so protective that he wanted to drop me off and one off the guys would come and pick me up. I still saw luyanda twice a week. One week went to work but knocked off early. I used a cab cause i did not want to bother the guys. Went to take a shower

Dre; mami !.... Mami...

He kept calling for my name but i couldnt come out he was going to see me when he walked in anyway. Continued with my shower. Closed the tap and walked out. I stood at the hallway that led to the bathroom and stared at dre

Dre; i called out for you, why didnt you respond

Me; i i i was in the shower \*stuttering\*

He was covered in blood, his shoes and pants it was just blood

Me; whos blood is that

Dre; im going to take a shower ohk

Me; dre whos blood is that

Dre; no ones

Me; dont piss me off

Dre; fine its \*he paused\*

Me; who?

Dre; the guys that took you i didnt want you to see this im sorry

Me; dont come near me

Dre; ohk let me just take a shower

I made way for him to pass and sat on the bed to lotion myself. After few minutes he walked out towel wrapped around his waist his tattoos all over his chest and arms, water dripping down his body, his hair dripping wet. I bit my lip and looked on the floor cause i didnt want him to see me drooling over him

Dre; what did you come with

Me; cab i called it

Dre; why didnt you call me

Me; didnt want to disturb any one off you

Dre; ohk and work

Me; fine cant complain just busy as always

Dre; want to eat out?

Me; nah why dont you buy us food and will lock ourselves in here

Dre; im only going with you, so lets go

Me; ohk

I just wore a dress, sandals and we left

Walked in at the mall and headed to the food courts

Me; now im craving for a lot off things nje

Dre; well we can buy anything you just have to chose

Me; pizza and ribs would be nice

Dre; where

Me; spurs

Dre; ohk

We bought the food we wanted and wanted to buy some sneakers well he bought them for me and we headed home. Cuddled in bed. Watched movies until we both fell asleep. The next few days were just the same but i was at work most off the week as well as

INSERT #192

#AMAHLE

The weekend arrived and the girls decided we need to go out, just girls. I wore black formal pants, black top that went above my shoulders with white and black heels and black clutch. Curled the weave and applied my makeup not too much but sexy

Dre; you look beautiful

Me; thank you, you going somewhere today

Dre; im just going to sort out some things then il come back here

Me; ohk il see you when i get back

Dre; take my card

Me; why

Dre; to spoil yourself

Me; no

Dre; i work for you lala and the money i make is for you to spoil yourself so if you dont want to use it why the hell am i working

Me; \*laughing\* save it

Dre; its too much for me to save it here

Me; well thank you

Dre; pleasure

I took it and went to my car and met up with the girls

Me; hey hey

Them; hey lala/ mahle/ hey babe

Me; you goo

Nobuhle; yes wena

Me; im good

Mbali; lets go tu , we have a lot to do today

We went to the saloon

Me; do i have to undo my hair kodwa

Unathi; yes you knew we were going to do our hair but you decided to curl it

Me; but then guys

Girl; what will you do

Me; give me a short one, i always have on long weaves never short one

Girl ; how many inch

Me; 10 will be fine

Girl; ohk

They began doing our hair

Me; so hows your man

Nobuhle; we great. This guy makes me want to settle down with him if a girl proposing was not called desperate i would have yazi

Mbali; woo bantu that deep vele

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* yeah you guys

Unathi; im just happy man i mean i dont think iv ever been this happy

Me; love is in the air

Mbali; with gangsters

We all laughed. The girls doing our hair raised their eyebrows

Nobuhle; has he popped the cherry

Me; no and his making it hard me for me

Mbali; \*laughing\* tell us about it

Me; like he will walk out off the shower half naked, he will sleep naked like how the hell am i not suppose to get turned on

Girl; your man aint sleeping with you

I looked at her

Girl; come on we girls

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Girl; maybe his cheating, guys always want sex if they dont want to give you either gay or cheating

I didnt want to tell her my situation so i just went with the flow

Me; cheating never

Mbali; definitely , his not that type off guy

Girl 2; what type ke

Nobuhle; his shy , a nerd i think his just afraid to touch a girl cause he feels like his out off my girls league

I just laughed the girls were being hilarious. Dre was nothing to what they were describing

Girl; you need to show him the V , so he wont be afraid off it

We all laughed , after our hair, they did our nails and we left

We bought shoes and i took out dre card

Mbali; thats dre card

Me; \*laughing\* ay miss know it all , he gave it to me

Nobuhle; seems like they feel the need to shower us with their money

They all took out their cards. We just laughed about it and bought things like there is no tomorrow. Sneakers, heels, skirts, dresses, jackets, jeans and jewellery then went to eat

Unathi; so you and your man you good

Me; we ohk but these days

Mbali; his what?

Me; secretive

They all looked at each other

Nobuhle; what??? Ahhhh come on lala maybe its just you

Me; no ey , his always whispering on the phone . Always going out without me i dont know whats up with him i think i should start following him

Mbeli; \*shouting\* NO!

Everyone suddenly looked at us

Me; whats wrong with you

Mbali; i meant why do you want to follow him

Me; i want to see where he is going

Unathi; what if he finds out , he will think you dont trust him and that will end you guys

Me; ohk maybe but i just want to know whatsup

Mbali; il ask him and il get back to you

Me; ohk and you

Unathi; already told you im happy

Mbali; same here my kid is growing up so theres no reason why i should not be happy

Me; how is my baby vele

Mbali; his growing up yho, sometimes i cant believe it nje

Unathi; i think im ready to have a baby off my own yazi

Us; what?

Unathi; \*laughing\* yini you know i love kids so dont start with me

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* slow down tiger

Unathi; dont worry im not getting pregnant any day and you lovy your family

Nobuhle; nothing has changed. They constantly asking me for money but themba has my back

Me; but then they really think you dont have a life ne

Nobuhle; yho you would swear they think I don't have responsibilities or bills but anyway im just doing this for my mum i hope she will wake up and stop drinking

Mbali; why dont you take her to a rehabilitation centre

Nobuhle; then she ends up hating me i dont think so sweedy

Mbali; but lala its for the best and you doing that for her nobody else

Nobuhle; i will just have to try her out yazi

Me; yeah to help her and yourself

Guy; excuse us

We lifted up our heads and it was 4 guys nje

Mbali; yes

Guy; hi these are my friends , we not from around here

Us; oh kay

Guy; yeah we from pretoria and we saw you guys. We were wondering if you would like to go clubbing with us

The look we gave to this guys. They were old. Big bellies i mean they looked like they were in their 40s and they want to go clubbing with us

Nobuhle; excuse us

Guy 2; yeah, we just want to have fun with you guys

Unathi; you mean , you hoping to get us drunk and then go sleep with us

Guy ; \*laughing\* no thats not what we were thinking

Me; well we aint interested and we aint looking for any sugar daddies thank you very much

They left and we just laughed

After our lunch. We all grabbed takeaways and headed to my car since they were dropped off. As we were driving my phone rang

Me; papi

Dre; where are you?

Me; where are we?

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* just say you about to join soweto

Dre; \*laughing\* how can you be a driver though. Meet us at themba place

Me; ohk

I hung up

Me; we meeting the guys at your boyfie place

Unathi; they have no idea we tired ne

Me; yho but im full so im cool with it

Mbali; lets go have fun tu

We arrived parked on the driveway, and walked in, the guys were having a braai. Walked up to the guys and their jaws dropped

Went to sit next to dre. We greeted them and got ourselves drinks

## INSERT #193

Next day it was andre birthday, i went to ntombi room to pick up the gifts i bought for him and went to take the birthday cake. Blew out balloons about 20 off them and was carrying paper bags and walked upstairs. He was still fast asleep. I let the balloons go and they went to the ceiling and bed

Me; \*slowly\* happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you \*singing\*

He turned and peaked at me and just smiled. He sat up straight and the balloons were all over

Me; happy birthday to you, happy birthday to you baby

I walked up to him and kissed his cheek. He held my waist and pulled me to the bed

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

Dre; so what do we have here

Me; open up and see and may i just say you one guy that is hard to please

Dre; you know whatever you buy for me is way more worth than anything i could possible have

Me; im glad you feel that way

He took the first bag and it was a black ralph lauren top,  
black ralph lauren cap. The other guess jeans and jacket.  
The other paper bag was a watch and a pair of shoes.  
With cosmetics.

He looked at me

Me; \*smiling\* you like?

Dre; thank god for the day i met you

Me; will i get a kiss

He kissed my cheek. You will think im lying but ever since  
i came back iv kissed dre on the cheek , and so has he.  
Whenever i went for the lips he pulled back i dont even  
think he was giving me time manje. He reached for the  
cake

Dre; we eating this right

Me; its yours after all

It was a chocolate cake with different layers of chocolate

Dre; thank you ohk

Me; my pleasure

Dre; and i love you so much mami

His phone rang

Me; well your people are calling

I got up and went to the bathroom , went in the shower and was there. Got out and dre was in the bathroom . It was weird being completely naked around him. He just stared

Me; towel

Dre;.....

Me; \*shouting\* dre!

Dre;hmmmm

Me; towel

Dre; oh he \*stuttering\*

He turned around and looked on the sink

Me; \*laughing\* on the hanger next to you

He calmed down , grabbed it and gave it to me

Me; thank you

wrapped it around my body and left. Lotioned my self

Dre; so i have plans for us

Me; was i not the one who was suppose to say that

Dre; you know thats not how it works with me

Me; well whats up

Dre; we going out , we going classy on them for the weekend

Me; mmm ohk

Dre; just look beautiful ohk , like you always do

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

He kissed me and left. He was going to work just imagine.

I went downstairs and ate breakfast with ntombi. I watched tv the whole day around 6 went to bath. And wore a red dress that revealed my body perfectly, i also put on a lingerie dont know why just felt the need to be sexy in a way. red lipstick and red heels, with my black clutch as i was doing my final touch ups. Dre stormed into the room and rushed to the bathroom walked out and changed into a black slim fit trousers, white shirt and black blazer with a touch off red on the pocket off the blazer. He fixed his hair and he looked yummy af

He kissed my cheek

Dre; sorry i was late ready

I nodded my head. Got up and we walked out. Got to his car and we got to this restaurant in sandton we wined and dined and just had fun. Its been a while since that happened so it was fun. Then we left

Me; arent we going home

Dre; no

We got to this hotel and i just looked at him. Classy as fuck at rosebank. We walked in and he checked in then headed to our suite

Me; when was this ever your style

Dre; what can i say sometimes i just want to surprise my woman.

We got to the door and he closed my eyes

Dre; ohk take slow steps

Me; \*laughing\* ohk dont make me fall

Dre; i got you ohk stand here close your eyes mami

Me; they closed

Dre; they better

Me; can i open them now

Dre; wait.....ohk open

The room was dim. With rose pedals and flowers everywhere, candle lights my eyes just went wide open.

Dre was on his knees with a box

Dre; i know im doing this for the second time now but i know the bitch took what belonged to you and the was no way in hell i was going to give you what she wore on that finger so i bought you a new one. Please accept to be my wife again

I smiled

Dre; you are my queen , i dont even know what i would do without you mami i love you so much that im not afraid to tell the entire world. We came across a lot off obstacles but here we are we made it lala can you believe it

I let out a slight laugh

Dre; do me the honours again

Me; of course

I gave him my hand and put on the ring it was beautiful and big. He stood up and tried to kiss me but i pulled away. He looked at me shocked

Me; let me use the bathroom can you go get me pads im on my periods i didnt think we wont be going home

He looked disappointed

Dre; ohk

He took off his blazer and left

I rushed to the bathroom. Took off my dress and i could have not been more pleased that i wore a lingerie the moment iv been waiting for is finally happening. I fixed my hair and i looked sexy as fuck. I leaned against a table that was facing the door

After a while

Dre; babe i fo... \*he paused \*

The look on his face was priceless. I looked at him and he slowly walked up to me, throwing the pads on the floor.

## INSERT #194

He got so close to me i could hear him breath and he was breathing heavily. He tilted his head and got a clear view off my body , touch the hair and moved it to the side and planted a kiss on my neck. I bit my lower lip. He softly touched my waist and moved his hands down to my thigh and my V it was like he was exploring me before he could actually touch me. He touched my lips with his thumb and kissed my ear. Every touch i felt turned me on. He stepped back and looked at me. He kissed me and the moment our lips touched i had forgotten how soft his lips were. He bit my lower lip and my eyes rolled at the back off my head. He broke the kiss, picked me up and lay me on the table. He went on his knees , placed my left leg on his shoulder and opened my legs. He kissed my thighs and kept teasing me , i placed my hands on his head and run my fingers on his hair but he still wasnt going near were i wanted him. He kissed my underwear , held it on the side and ripped it apart. My eyes were wide open but he didnt care. He softly kissed my clit and i shifted back but he pulled me back to his face , he moved his tongue up and down my clit that sent shivers down my spine. I grabbed

his hair so tight and moaned out so loud then he fingered me with his tongue that immediately sent my body to shake, my toes curled up, my grip got tighter and moaned so loud. He got back up " you taste so good" and he kissed me. I grabbed his shirt and ripped his shirt apart and his buttons flew all over the place. I unbuttoned his jeans and pushed them down with his boxers. I wanted to please him but he whispered to my ear " im making you happy today!" i smiled and he picked me up and walked up to the bed. He slowly laid me there and kissed my neck that was going to leave a mark. I was dripping wet he slowly entered his D but it was too painful i moved back " you tight" he tried it again and it slowly went in ,not even half off it. I closed my eyes so tight cause it was painful " look at me " i looked at him and he tried it again " i love you" i said to him and he kissed me. Slowly he went in and out then he locked our fingers together so tight that i could not even push him back. I sucked his neck and he groaned on my ear. I screamed off pleasure and he picked up he pace. He went in hard non stop and its the wetter i got with each stroke i screamed his name " turner , turner". I wrapped my legs around him so he couldn't pull out, he held my thighs so tight he let out the loudest groan. He entered the last inch and i gasped for air and he let out the loudest groan silently. Our breathing got heavy and we tried to catch our breath " i love you " he whispered to my ear. Then we both zoned off

Woke up with a big smile on my face. Turned to look at my future hubby and he was standing at the door with a towel. He was holding flowers and talking with some guy. I pretended like i was sleeping. After a few minutes

Dre; mami

Me; hmmmm

Dre; i think these are for you

He shoved the flowers on my face and i laughed. I got up and took them

Me; it wasnt my birthday

Dre; but you are my wife right

I smiled and kissed him

Dre; breakfast is served

Me; this looks really nice

Dre; try it

It was yoghurt, strawberries, and berries with juice on the side and strawberries covered in chocolate . I bit my lower lip

Dre; dont do that or i might just eat you

I pushed him away. And dug in

Me; so your birthday?

Dre; couldnt be more perfect do you know that you my weakness though

Me; really?

Dre; yes baby im nothing without you

I kissed him and pulled away got up and put the plates on the tray. Went to the bathroom and used the toilet as i was about to leave the man himself was standing on the door frame checking me out.

Dre; how is it you keep your body looking like that when you go to gym once after 2 months

Me; \*smiling\* cause my baby makes me workout already

Dre; come here

Walked up to him,he pulled me to him and pinned me to the wall facing the wall

Dre; I don't like this short hair, you know I love to pull and you made me get used to pulling your hair now i cant

I just laughed but he still pulled it and he entered me from the behind. We got naughty again

We were in bed the whole weekend just having time to ourselves. Sunday wore one off the tops he bought for us downstairs and we left. Got home and to our surprise the

was some guy sitting on the couch. Me and dre looked at him and he quickly got up

Dre; and who the hell are you

Guy ; i i i

Ntombi; so ngith..... Andre, amahle

I just laughed

Dre; whats going on

Ntombi; n n

Dre; yo....

Me; sorry to disturb you lala, we should have told you we coming

Dre looked at me. I pulled him by the hand and we walked upstairs

Me; dont be like that

Dre; like what?

Me; its not like we found them having sex. She just got company her bf , we left her alone ao

Dre; not in my house

I raised my eyebrow

Me; ntombi is always making you happy for once make her happy

Dre; mara mami you know i like my privacy

Me; his not a cop im sure he doesnt even know who you are. His a church guy

Dre; how do you know that

Me; me and ntombi talk give her a break

Dre; fine

I smiled

Me; shower?

dre; nope have to go

Me; where?

Dre; I have to sort out some things

Me; ohk

He left and i just went to bed. Woke up and he was still not back. Went to take a shower. Went to eat supper

Me; woooo wena

Ntombi; dre is going to fire me

Me; relax he wont , i talked to him

Ntombi; serious

Me; yes now relax. Thats nkululeko

Ntombi; yes \*smiling\*

Me; his so cute, so he was here the whole weekend

Ntombi; yes but i swear we were in my room

Me; \*laughing\* i know so relax

Ntombi; and nina , how was your time away

Me; could have not been more perfect

Ntombi; I can see and that stone

I just laughed

Me; im going to sleep mina ne

Ntombi; night

Went up and went to bed

## INSERT #195

### #AMAHLE

Monday went to work. Did my rounds and it was tea time  
then went back to work. Lunch time nobuhle was not  
around so i called mbali

Mbali; no no no thats ugly , i want something big and  
classy too but also sexy

Girl; this?

Mbali; yes yes that

Me; mbali

Mbali; \*shouting\* amahle!

Me; \*laughing\* what's wrong

Mbali; i didnt look at my call log what you want

Me; yho i wanted to check up on you

Mbali; no i mean you good

Me; yes where are you

Mbali; m m some store nje. Im giving one off my colleagues advice on which dress to buy

Me; oh ohk we have a lot to talk about

Mbali; ohk lala let me call you later so will talk when im in a better position

Me; oh kay

Mbali; serious i will call you

Me; ohk

I hung up and went back to work. When it was time to go home. I packed up my things and dre was already waiting for me. He was on the phone

Dre; yeah I need to give stephen his stuff but he must give me the money or transfer it then ke it can happen.... Yeah i know but do as i say.... You know what im coming there right now... Sharp

He hung up then kissed me

Me; hey you

Dre; you good

I nodded my head

Me; everything ohk

Dre; yeah just a tiny bump nje will pass at the warehouse  
ohk

Me; ohk id love to see the guys anyway

Then he went silent and smiled

Me; and that

He looked at me

Dre; i was just thinking about our weekend

Me; \*smiling\* it was great wasnt it

Dre; too much but theres something i cant get out off my  
head

Me; whats that

Dre; \*laughing\* do you realise you called me turner ,  
when i was making love to you

I laughed so loud

Me; no i did not

Dre; thats what i thought at first and i was like no man  
you imagining this but i wasnt

Me; \*laughing\* mxm that's what you always focussing on  
He looked at me and laughed

Me; what

Dre; \*laughing\* im just shocked with myself that i can  
fuck you so good that you call me with my gangster name  
, thats a fucken turn on

I punched him and just looked out the window

We got to the warehouse, he disappeared and i remained  
with adel and jack

Me; so how you doing

Adel; im ohk and yourself

Me; im fine, why you always act weird around me

Jack; cause he was a crush on you

Adel; shut up jack

I smiled

Me; really

Adel; i dont know

I raised my eyebrow

Jack; he does , he just wont say it he always tell me

Me; \*smiling\* ahhhhh thats sweet

Adel; really

Me; yeah i didnt think it was possible

Adel; actually its impossible not to, you just beautiful

Me; when did all off this start

Adel; from the first time i saw you, when you came with turner where i lived

Me; \*laughing\* for real You didnt even look at me once

Adel; thats what you think

Jack; turner is going to kill you

Adel; stay out off this

I laughed cause they kept on arguing

Dre; i wonder why you laughing

Me; \*smiling\* nothing

Dre; ready to go

Me; yes bye guys

Them; bye

I hugged them and we left

Me; everything ohk

Dre; i hope so

Got home and ntombi had already dished up for us. She was not there so we just knew she was sleeping. Took our plates and sat at the lounge while watching tv.

Dre; mami do you want us to get married

Me; yes i do why

Dre; im just asking

Me; i will start planning maybe next year baby

Dre; what do you want

Me; indoor, simple but classy decor

Dre; and what will be our colour

Me; i dont know yazi, which colours are nice joined together

Dre; \*laughing\* ahhh baby I don't know

Me; i love blue , so i dont know which colour i would mix with blue

Dre; you like light blue ne

Me; \*laughing\* AHHHHH!, you actually know something about me know like the colour i love

Dre; \*laughing\* i know everything about you mami

Me; really?

Dre; ask me anything

Me; ohk how many times do i use the toilet

He laughed so loud

Dre; \*laughing\* a week i would say 3 times not counting each day cause for one day you would go 2 times morning and night

Me; \*laughing\* favourite song

Dre; i wanna luv you, has been for a while

Me; nail polish on my toes

Dre; \*laughing\* you dont have any nail polish, andyou never wear it unless you going to wear shoes that will reveal your toes

Me; \*laughing\* you observe ne

Dre; everything about you

Me; i also know you

Dre; \*laughing\* i love you baby but i doubt

Me; just ask

Dre; car i love the most

Me; \*laughing\* thats not fair, you love all your cars

Dre; then you dont know me

Me; wait..... Its the bmw 3 series coupe (e92)

He raised his eyebrow

Me; it is papi

Dre; why you say its that one

Me; you dont drive it often , and when you drive it. We either going somewhere or you meeting with one off your clients

Dre; \*laughing\* ohk you know me

Me; \*smiling\* of course i do

Dre; our daughters name

Me; \*laughing\* thats so easy

Dre; say it then

Me; you want us to name our daughter paris when we get pregnant right

Dre; kiss me

Me; no

I stood up and he pulled me to him and we kissed

INSERT #196

#AMAHLE

Few months passed. I rented out my apartment cause dre did not want me to go back home.

#OCTOBER

Few days passed the first 2 weeks off october passed by fast none interesting it was just work. And i was with pa

one off the weekends. One Saturday woke up and dre was not in bed walked downstairs and ntombi was busy with breakfast

Me; morning

Ntombi; morning, dre told me to tell you he had to leave early business

Me; ohk im so tired even though i just woke up

Ntombi; why

Me; I hardly get a break from work maybe that's why shame

I sat at the lounge and she came back with my plate. I looked at it for a while , quickly placed it on the table and rushed to the bathroom and threw up

Ntombi; whats wrong, you dont like it

I literally threw up, worse thing I had not even eaten anything. I went back downstairs

Me; im going to bed ne, please make toast and coffee for me

Ntombi; ohk

I walked upstairs and i felt like shit switched on the tv and ntombi came with my food. I ate but i just threw it all out. So i just pulled up the blankets and went to bed

Dre; mami

I slowly opened my eyes

Dre; you ohk

I shook my head and sat up straight

Dre; whats wrong

Me; i think I need to clean my stomach iv been vomiting the whole day

Dre; what did you eat

Me; nothing

Dre; you want anything now

Me; well im hungry but i cant keep anything down

Dre; ohk let me go check what i can give you

Me; ohk

He left and came back after a few minutes with kellogs. Well i was able to eat them and then went to bath , then left wrapped a towel around my waist and looked myself on the mirror. My breast were so sore and tingly . I was rubbing them when dre walked in

Dre; \*laughing\* what you doing?

Me; get rid off that mindset off yours

Dre; \*laughing\* i didnt say anything

Me; mxm

He walked to the toilet, closed the door and shouted from them toilet

Dre; well if you must know, they getting bigger

I looked at them and they did look more fuller, he flushed

Me; you think they getting big

Dre; yeah

He squeezed them

Dre; they definitely getting bigger

And he walked out , i . Lotioned myself and walked downstairs

We watched tv until late then went to bed. Next Sunday woke up early and went to church with ntombi. Around 13:00 we drove back home and dre mother was there

Me; hi ma

Her; hey baby , how you doing

Me; im ohk ma

Her; i came here for you

Me; oh what did i do to deserve this visit

Her; haha just being the perfect future daughter in law off mine i came to take you out for lunch

Me; ohk can i change

Her; of course

I ran upstairs and dre was taking a shower . I greeted him and changed into a black tight short dress, high knee black boots, black baseball jacket with shades and walked downstairs and left. We got to a restaurant and they showed us our table

Me; so how have you been

Her; good, the business is going very well

Me; and kim

Her; well she does not have time for anyone nowadays

Me; \*laughing\* shes all grown hasnt she

Her; you have no idea and you baby how are you

Me; im ohk ma, me and andre are just too perfect

Her; im glad to hear that

Me; so next year i want to start planning for our big day

Her;oh woowwww really

Me; \*laughing\* your wow ma , it sounded so

Her; \*laughing\* weird i know, i just realised that now but you should. The big day must be here already

Me; i cant wait for it ma. Im just ready to be with andre for the rest off my life

Her; and it makes me so happy to hear that

I began crying

Me; its just we have been through a lot

Her; \*laughing\* i cant believe you even crying thinking about it

Me; i cant help it

Her; you can be so emotional when you want too, dont you

Me; \*laughing\* cant control it at times

We talked about random things, shared laughs then she dropped me off and dre was with the guys and they were talking oviasly business. Dressed up and went upstairs

## INSERT #197

The week passed by none interesting happened. All my friends were distance i mean distance whenever i asked to meet up with them they were always busy or never answering my calls. I worked with nobuhle but i hardly saw her and that broke my heart. One Saturday dre picked me up from work i was just down opened the door and went in. He tried to kiss me but i just pushed him away

Dre; so you wont bel....

Me; \*crying\* you know it hurts me that my friends are now going out without me , its like i dont exist what did i even do to deserve this

Dre;....

Me; do i bore them or something like that huh?

Dre; are you really crying right now

Me; did you even hear me

Dre; no baby i was just distracted that you crying over something so dull

Me; \*crying\* how can you be so cruel? Am i also boring you

Dre; no baby i didnt mean it like that im sorry

Me; dont even touch me

Dre; want me to talk with them

Me; no i dont care what you do

I removed the seat belt

Dre; what you doing

I jumped to the back

Dre; be careful. Dont hurt yourself

Me; im sure you dont even care nxa

I took my earphones and listened to music

Got home and went in

Me; hi ntombi

Ntombi; hey you!

Me; can you please give me 6 slices put peanut butter , ne  
jam and fish fingers

Dre; thats disgusting

Me; and you wont be eating it. Why you still here

Dre; why are you mad at me exactly sthandwa sami

Me; leave me alone wena

I walked upstairs , changed and went in the shower. The  
shower door opened

Dre; \*smiling\* im sorry

Me; for what

Dre; everything

I smiled

Me; get in here

He was already naked. He got in and closed the door i  
wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed him. He  
pinned me to the shower glass and lifted my leg up. He  
circulated his finger on my V and i moaned to his ear then  
he suddenly entered me. I gasped for air and he groaned

to my ear. He began with a slow pace and increased the pace the water going down our bodies. He held my other legs and picked me up. I dug my nails deep into his back. He went faster, harder and deeper " babyyyyy slow down" he didnt and i was glad he didnt. He pushed in the last inch and i let out the loudest moan and he cum too. We both dropped to the floor and laughed

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; love you too. Lets get out off here the water is getting cold

He stood up and helped me up and left.

I wore my pjs and went downstairs . Took my plate and sat on the couch with dre and ate

Dre; how does that taste

Me; really , really good want a taste

Dre; no. I have to go

Me; where

Dre; mmm buy us food for later

Me; ntombi cooked

Dre; and then go to the warehouse

I looked at him

Dre; call themba after 15 minute and ask to talk to me

Me; i will

Dre; ohk i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

He took his car keys and left

## #ANDRE

Drove up to themba place and everyone was there

Nobuhle; about time you get here

Me; yho guys i was in the most awkward situation

Mbali; the wife

Me; \*laughing\* yeah and you guys

Unathi; what did we do?

me; you distancing yourself from her and she gets emotional very fast and i have to deal with it

Themba; \*laughing\* serious

Me; yeah , shes constantly crying and its too much for me sometimes i dont even know what to do

Mbali; she will be so happy when she finds out what we planned for her

Me; but can you guys please try and spend time with her

Nobuhle; we would love too but we cant dre. We only left with a week , next week then the first week off november this is it. We have to make the final touch ups

Dre; \*laughing\* eish that means i will have to distract her ke

Deon; yeah so the other surprise

Dre; all done!. Payment down. Got the keys yesterday

Nobuhle; i hope she does not get a heart attack , too many surprises

Me; me too ohk lets talk whats done

They let me know about everything that was going on then i drove back home. She was already sleeping

Woke up the next morning , and she was gone. Went downstairs and ate breakfast with ntombi

Ntombi; so shes still unaware off whats happening

Me; yeah and keep it like that

Ntombi; hao iv been doing a pretty good job havent i

Me; \*laughing\* yeah let me go

I went upstairs and took a shower, then wore my clothes. Took all the things i needed and left. Arrived at midrand

Me; the gents

Them; the big guy

I sat down and ordered myself a drink

Stephen; so how is it

Me; im great man how about you

William; we hanging in there

Me; im glad

Owen; may i just start with thanks for the invite man

Me; come on, you one off my biggest paying friends why wouldnt i invite you

William; i dont care im just glad il be there , so does she know

Me; no we still keeping it safe

Stephen; shes the most deserving off this surprise

Me; i have to agree anyway lets get back to business

Jake; i have a new machine

Me; have it with you

Jake; of course

He reached for his bag and took out the steel

Me; ohk let me see this baby

I took it

Me; shes beautiful

Jake; yeah and more off your style, all the way from the us still new. Not many have this baby no actually here in mzansi no one has it

I looked at him

Me; stop fucking with me

Jake; you know i dont kid. Im giving it to you straight

Me; how much will she cost me

Jake; 100

Me; 100 come on jake thats insane

Jake; i had to get it over the deep oceans man. I was suppose to give it to you for at least 180

Me; i get that but 100 man il give you 40

Jake; 75

Me;hmmmm fine 75 , you getting expensive

Jake; its not me but the economy man

Me; mxm

Stephen; can we talk about the real problem now

Me; ohk let me give it to you straight our suppliers had a tiny problem with the shipment stephen. The cops raged on them and took all their shit. Now they called me letting me know they back in business and i should be getting the shipment by week after next and during that week i wont

be available , most off my guys and you so we have to wait for the other week. But still i wont be there so one off my guys will take care off that and Saturday morning you will get your stuff

William; we have buyers, waiting for this

Me; i know that but at this point its not in my hands

William; well i think you should give it to us by half price

Me ; what?

Stephen; yeah man we have to wait for 2 full weeks to get the stuff. During those 2 weeks our customer will be craving this and move to other sellers

Me; thats crazy guys, half price do you have any idea how much i will lose

William; and if we lose our customers , what use are we to you cause we wont purchase the stash and you wont have money at all

Me; you pay me half. The rest off the cash goes to the suppliers and what will i get. That means the entire shipment was free from me to you cause i wont even get a cent from it

Stephen; thats good business having to make such decisions

Me; thats shitty business theres no way im agreeing to this

Owen; then what do you suggest we do

Me; i dont know but make a decision cause if you willing to pay me half theres no way you getting your stash id rather find new buyers and the stash gets kept at my house i dont care

William; come on you know you bullshitting us

Me; well then try me . Make a decision now

Stephen; so you willing to lose us your biggest customers and look for new people to trust

Me; it does not have to get to that

William; but man listen to me. We have not received our stash for a month right and now it will be extra 2 weeks. Our customers always coming down to us looking to get high and we have nothing for them. You expect us to pay you in full for not delivering on your promise how is that fair

Me; and how is that fair im getting punished for something that was not even my fault

Stephen; you work with them so if they screw you up. We screw you up

I breathed out loudly

Me; you know what fine. Half price just so you know i want my money in full the next time i give you your shit. I

dont care if you having money problems or any sort of shit like that

William; thats business and we understand

Me; good

Jake; so the bmw we talked about

Me; its waiting for you cause i was still sorting out the documentation

Jake; so i can pick it up by the end off this week

Me; yes make it Friday

Jake; perfect

INSERT #198

#ANDRE

Monday was at work, knocked off around 8 with unathi and went to deon and mbali place. We arrived and everyone was already there

Mbali; i think everything is sorted , iv got samples for us that we need to taste and \*she paused\* good thing you here

Me; whats up?

Mbali; you need to taste this and say which one you like.  
The people there are waiting for me to tell them which  
one i want

Me; how about i take this and try it out with her and find  
out what she like best then i will tell you

Nhlanhla; that will be perfect

Nobuhle; ohk and i need your songs

Me; ohk let me write them down for you

I wrote them down for her

Themba; ohk today i paid the full payment. Its done and it  
will be delivered to your new home

Me; they did not give you any problem

Themba; no but you need to go sign for it

Me; ohk i will go tomorrow

Mbali; and i have the 2 best gifts she will love ready  
payment done

Me; for the both off them

Mbali; yeah

Me; can i see them

Nobuhle and mbali; no ! Thats not going to happen

Deon; ohk seems like everything is sorted but what i ask  
is how you going to get her to the hotel

Me; kgontsi said he had that covered

Mbali; he better

Me; ohk need to get going guys

Them; ohk byee

I left them there and left

Got home and the lights were already off. Walked upstairs and the queen was watching a movie in tears. I looked at her

Me; hey baby

She waved her hand

Me; whats up?

Her; this movie baby sit here

I took off my clothes and sat next to her. May i just say this was a animated movie and she was crying like it a real movie

Me; you ohk

She nodded her head

Me; i bought us some cakes

Her; ohk let me taste

I gave it too her

She enjoyed, the sponge, red velvet loved the chocolate  
and ate the carrot cake

Her; this are all nice let me try this one

She took the bite off the carrot cake then jumped out off  
bed and rushed to the bathroom i followed her and she  
just threw up, rinsed her mouth

Her; ohk that one definitely no but i like the 3

Me; i thought so too

Her; where did you buy them

Me; some new bakery was open so wanted to try it out if  
we ever wanted some cakes

Her; hmmmm ohk

Me; baby im sleeping im tired

Her; ohk

She kissed me and carried on with the movie and i just  
zoned off

The next day. We woke up together. Bathed and went to  
eat. kissed goodbye and drove separate ways well the rest  
off the week i was working and whenever i came back i  
was just tired so i would just go straight to bed. Then  
there was the weekend i took my girl out for lunch and  
movie. We came back late and went to bed. Sunday

morning she went to church and i had a talk with the guys  
later that day her and ntombi arrived

#AMAHLE

Monday i was working. Went to work and my aunt  
brought lunch for me. We sat at my office

Her; whats wrong you dont look so good

Me; i dont feel good at all ma

Her; whats wrong

Me; i dont even know i just keep on vomitting cant keep  
anything down

She looked at me with a raised eyebrow

Me; what?

her; could it be

Me; could it be????

Her; umithi (you pregnant)

I laughed so loud

Me; \*laughing\* no thats impossible im a doctor i would  
know

Her; dont you know the one thing you specialise with.  
When it comes to you , you fail to be good at it

Me; theres no such

Her; just like a lawyer cant represent herself in court a doctor can never know whats wrong with herself unless she consults another doctor

Me; \*laughing\* mama im not pregnant

Her; uandre uyalifaka ijazi ( does andre wear a condom)

Me; ncane (aunty!)

Her; \*laughing\* yini siy 2 phela la ori uya abstainer  
(whats its just us two, or are you abstaining)

Me; do i have to talk to you about such

Her; yebo ori uzokhuluma nobani ( yes or who will you talk to?)

Me; sometimes he wears it mama

Her; uya preventer ( do you prevent)

Me; yeah... no since this year i have not

Her; uyabo (you see)

Me; im not even ready to be a mother , but i doubt im pregnant

Her; you a doctor , check yourself

I left my office with my aunt and went to the dr . Cause i had an access card they could do things easy for me. She took my blood and said i should stay there for a couple off

minutes i was freaking out. What if i was pregnant was i ready. Was dre ready this was too much how could i have not seen this from the start as my mind was all over the place the gynae walked up to

## INSERT #199

Her; well i got your results and you pregnant. 2 months to be exact

Me; 2 months

Her; yeah you must have conceived during the month off august

I thought to myself. Dre birthday weekend away and i just closed my eyes. My heart was beating out off my chest

Aunt; you ohk baby

Me; i need to sit down

I took my results and we sat outside

Aunt; woooo ngizoba ugogo ( il be a granny)

I just laughed

Me; i have to tell dre

Her; \*shouting\* NO

Me; huh

Her; I mean why dont you surprise him

Me; kanjani ncane ( how aunty)

Her; maybe like Saturday , take him somewhere then give him the results as a gift. Where you get a small box nje place the pregnancy test then you give It to him the best gift he will ever receive

Me; ncane but i didnt do a pregnancy test I have these papers

Her; just buy it and do it , it will be so nice and give it to him Saturday

Me; so i should plan something for us

Her; yes

Me; \*smiling\* ohk thats a good idea but im scared

Her; of what

Me; what if his not ready ncane. Dre is constantly busy so to bring a baby in his life

Her; well its too late now and if he was not ready bongeke adubule ( he would not have shot )

I laughed so loud. I walked her to her car and she left and carried on with my rounds

After work drove home. And the smell of whatever ntombi was cooking hit my nose so terribly i was craving for

peanut butter more than anything. Went up to change and sat on the couch with the jar off peanut butter in between my legs i kept touching my stomach lol. I went to bed before dre came back

Wednesday he was still sleeping i figured he was not going to work. I went to take a shower and theres nothing more i loved more than my boobs. Then went out . Dressed up and left. On my way to work. Bought blueberry muffins with tea the thought off not drinking coffee for the next months terrified me. Ate while i was driving. Got to work and began with my rounds and to my surprise bumped into nobuhle

Nobuhle; hey you \*smiling\*

Me;....

Nobuhle; you ohk?

me; im just surprised you still know me

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* come on baby , i was just kind off busy

Me; with mbali and unathi i know anyway bye

I walked passed her

Nobuhle; \*Laughing\* so you mad at me

Me; why would i

Nobuhle; exactly il make it up to you i promise but right now i have to go to work

Just walked passed her and continued with work. I constantly used the toilet. I always wanted the bathroom around 9 i knocked off and drove off to some burger place

Me; can i please have 2 cheese burgers , a lot of fries , with chocolate milkshake and nah thats all

Guy; ohk coming right up

My phone rang and it was dre. I took my food and walked to the car ate while i called him back

Dre; where are you

Me; 15 minutes away from the house il be right there

Dre; ohk

Arrived. Took my food and walked in.

Me; i wanted some junk so i passed by the burger shop

Ntombi; you eat these days

Dre; yho ntombi you can say that again

Me; so what you saying?

Dre; nothing

Me; good

I left my food on the kitchen counter. Went to change into comfortable clothes and went downstairs. Dre was

watching some movie, took my food and peanut butter. I dipped my fries on the peanut butter and tomato sauce and it was the bomb

Dre; you need to stop with the peanut butter mami, not everything goes well with it

Me; it does to me, watch the movie

I carried on eating, even though i tried to control myself i could stop myself from going to the bathroom, getting emotional and cravings it was like i was controlled. I fell asleep on dre legs

Woke up in my bed Thursday none much happened. Just went to work and it was the usual. Friday morning dre was not in bed, i called him

Dre; mami

Me; where are you

Dre; work

Me; oh ohk bye

Dre; why

Me; i was just asking bye

Dre; ohk i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

I stayed in bed half the day around 11 people just barged in my room. It was mbali , unathi and nobuhle

Me; what do you want

Them; we here to make it up to you

Me; no

Mbali; well its too late, clean up and meet us downstairs

Me; why

Unathi; you will see

I got up , washed up quickly and went downstairs and there were like 10 woman there which i did not recognise

Me; whats wrong

Mbali; we going to pamper ourselves

Me; why

Nobuhle; our way of saying sorry. Now sit and enjoy

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

I sat down on one off the chairs

Girl; so what do we do hear

Nobuhle ; long ass weave, with a full frontal closure

Me; what?

nobuhle; yes ao

Me; who is paying for this

Unathi; dont worry about that just enjoy this

Girl 2; nails

Mbali; long make them clear

Me; why dont i have a say

Mbali; cause im paying

Me; yhooo wena ke

Mbali; \*laughing\* keep quiet and let them do what i want them to do

Well i wanted to tell my friends i was pregnant but i was kind off scared. They did my nails , hair and toes. We even got a massage oh and kim showed up

Me; so theres something i need to tell you guys

Them: what?

INSERT #200

I wanted to tell them but it was not the right time

Me; ay never mind

Nobuhle; no yini

Me; i just thought you didnt want to be friends with me anymore but i see i was just crazy

They just laughed. Later that day they all left and i sat with ntombi just talking. Then i left her

I wrapped up the pregnancy test just like my aunt said it was weird off me doing this and it felt stupid. I planned a picnic for me and dre and i was excited to show him what i had for him. Put it on my drawer and i fell asleep.

Next day people were just making noise in my dream others calling me. But i was not dreaming i slowly opened my eyes and it was my aunt

Me; ncane (aunty)

Her; \*smiling\* vuka (wake up) baby

Me; no why?

her; just wake up

I sat up straight and dre was not besides me

Me; wheres dre

Her; i dont know, did you wrap the gift

I nodded my head

Her; where is it

Me; ncane, you came all the way here to ask me about the gift, its still dark outside mina ngifuna uklala (I want to sleep)

Her; no man wake up

The door opened and suddenly ntombi and kgontsi (dre gay friend\* walked in)

Me; like really whats going on , ngifuna uklala mina (I want to sleep)

Ntombi; wear something you wont regret it

The was even a white gown on my bed. I got up wore it and went to take a shower then went downstairs. There were so many people there i was confused as fuck what the hell was going on

Kgontsi; asambe (lets go)

Me; NO! Im not going anywhere unless you tell me something and tell me where dre is

Kgontsi; i cant tell you

Me; why not

Kgontsi; cause its a surprise

I raised my eyebrow

Kgontsi; they planning andre grandmothers birthday party so its a surprise, he had to leave early cause he had to do the final touch ups

Me; so why didnt he tell me

Kgontsi; he said you not good with secrets

Me; what im good with secrets

Kgontsi; ohk can we leave now, we need to get there before miss party and we need to get you ready

Me; oh ohk \*smiling\* this is so nice, dre planned all off this for her grandmother

Kgontsi; nodded his head

We walked out and it was range rovers nje. I got in and it was a long drive well they did not understand my situation of wanting to use the bathroom.

We got to this huge building which was a hotel. The cars parked just outside the entrance and i had to walk in with my gown just imagine how embarrassing that was. We went up with the elevator and to one off the rooms. I went in and it was just me alone. The room was huge and i was just there with my gown. I tried calling dre but it just rang. Then kgontsi came in carrying a hanger with those clothes cover thing and it was big i mean big 2 off them

Me; and that

Kgontsi; what you going to wear

I got so excited. He unzipped the cover and it was the most beautiful, big white dress iv ever seen i looked at him and he just smiled. My stomach began tying in knots

Me; whats going o....

I was disturbed by a knock

Kgontsi; come in

The door opened and it was pa , my eyes were wide open, i was shaking and i got more confused. I ran to him and hugged him

Me; pa what?

Pa; how you angel

Me; im happy now that im seeing you

Pa; you look beautiful

Me'; what you doing here, whats going on look at what im suppose to wear im just confused look at you. You in suit

He was in a black and white tux. He sat me down then mbali mum came in , with mbali father and my aunt, my eyes just grew bigger they were all dressed up

Me; no like really whats going on

Mbali mum; you havent told her

Pa; i was about to?

Me; tell me what

Pa; today is your wedding day, you getting married baby.

INSERT #201

I just froze there

Pa; baby

Me; huh

Pa; did you hear me

Me; no i thought i heard you say something else what did you say

Pa; you getting married

I stood up

Me; its not possible, i didnt plan my wedding day i dont know anything about this day this is so unr...

Kgontsi walked in with 3 other guys

Kgontsi; we need to do your make up

I covered my face

Me; i need time to myself , please everyone leave

Mbali mum chased everyone out and it was just me and pa. He came and sat next to me

I looked at him

Me; its my wedding day

Pa; \*smiling\* yeah , this boy did something special for you , just to show you how much he loves you

Me; am i even ready pa

Pa; yes , you have been ready , you just scared right now but if you dont want to do it. We can just go home

Me; \*smiling\* he really did this

Pa; yes sweetie and so much more. I want to die knowing i left you in such great hands

I hugged him

Me; you not going to die anytime soon

Pa; you ready to do this

Me; \*smiling\* yes but i need to tell you something first

Pa; ohk what

Me; you will be a great grandfather

His eyes just popped out

Pa; \*laughing\* really

Me; yes but dre does not know yet

He hugged me again so much tighter and i began crying.  
After our moment the guys walked back in

They did my makeup, my hair everything then it was time to put on my dress. It was a dress i would have chosen

for myself it was a ball gown. With the longest tail of a veil. The details, the stones. It was beautiful and i looked beautiful i looked like a bride. My dress was white and my bouquet was sweet pink the flowers were beautiful. Then we walked out. Headed to the car and i got in. After 10 minutes my girls walked out and i just covered my mouth mbali, unathi, nobuhle , thandek and neli in powder blue dress, with bling down their dresses, it was shaped as ball gowns, with strips, they carried blue and white flowers and had same hairstyles they looked beautiful i began tearing up

We go to this venue and i walked in went to some room where i had to wait until it was time. The thought off my parents and ma not being here broke my heart

Girl; the bride

I turned to the door and it was my bridesmaids lol

Me; \*laughing\* i cant believe all off you

Nobuhle; we sorry but we had no choice

We all got together for a hug

Me; thank you so much guys \*holding my tears back \* like really thank you

Unathi; anything for you and you deserve this more than anymore

Well they kept making me cry until pa came to pick me up. We walked out and the brides maid and groomsman first walked on the aisle. The guys were wearing black tux, white shirt, white bow tie, white west coat and powder blue belt over the shirts. They looked stunning.

I breathed out and my song came on started playing i looked at pa, he kissed my cheek and we began walking down the aisle. The matrimonial area was breath taking. The room walls were our colours. And the were blue and white flowers everywhere , the end off each row and where andre was standing. He was wearing a black and white tux with a touch off powder blue, there was glass hanging from the ceiling the view was so beautiful i began tearing up. Got to dre and they handed me over to him. I could see he was trying to hold back his tears and i smiled to him

Pastor; we gathered here, to witness the reunion of these 2 that stand before you. Before we began with the service is there anyone who thinks this two should not be joined together

Them;....

Pastor; then we should continue. They will be sharing their very own vows \*pointing at dre \* you may go ahead. And be romantic

We all laughed. He leaned towards me for a kiss everyone laughed and the pastor held him back

Pastor relax we still have a lot off time

We laughed

Dre; may i just say you look beautiful mami On this day i give you my heart , my promise. I take you as my wife, acknowledging and accepting your faults and strengths, as you do mine. I promise to be faithful and supportive and to always make our familys love and happiness my priority. I will be yours in plenty and in want, in sickness and in health , in failure and in triumph. I will dream with you, celebrate with you and walk with you through out off our lives together. You have been my best friend mami , my playmate and greatest challenge but most importantly you are the love of my life, you know me better than anyone in this world, what i do , what im capable off but you still manage to love and i will forever be grateful for that. I know i dont go to church or pray a lot but i pray to god starting from today to protect our marriage, bless us and remove any kind off temptations that may come our way. I love you and only you i promise you that i will never stand here again with any other woman besides you i love you so much

He leaned in for the kiss

Pastor; not so fast young man, stand back

I laughed

Pastor; well put, beautiful and romantic like i asked now your turn lady

Me; \*i breathed out loudly\* i didnt get to practise or write my vows down so all off this is from the heart. First time i met you was not sure about you \*he laughed\* and i got more and more un sure off you but despite all off that i managed to fall in love with you each and every day i spent with you, whether we were just friends, or just acquaintance. You made parts off me weak without even having to touch me, you made me smile like no one ever did , you played a big role in my life. You were my comforter, my friend, my weakness and i could go and on but the biggest one is having to show me genuine love, loving me for who i was , accepting my flaws but embracing everything i came with which is why its not difficult to be promise to be your love, companion and friend. Your partner in parenthood, your ally in conflict , your greatest fan and tough adversary, your consolation and the big one cant believe im about to say this your accomplice in all your doings

The guys laughed , so did he

Me; i want to be your wife , your only wife to be exact i love you so much \* wiping my tears\*

Pastor; this was beautiful.moving on Ayanda Andre Adams wish to.....

Themba cut him off

Themba; pastor include the name turner

We all laughed

Pastor; do you ayanda andre turner adams wish to take amahle ngwenya as your lawfully wedded wife

Andre; i do

Pastor; and do you amahle ngwenya wish to take ayanda andre turner adams as your lawfully wedded husband

Me; i do

Pastor; can i have the rings please

They gave him the rings, prayed for them and gave dre

Pastor; repeat after me and slowly put ton the ring as i tell you.... I ayanda andre adams take you amahle ngwenya to be my wife in sickness and in health , poor and wealth , good or bad , i promise to cherish you, respect you and be faithful to you till death do us part

Dre; I ayanda andre adams take you amahle ngwenya to be my wife in sickness and in health , poor and wealth , good or bad , i promise to cherish you, respect you and be faithful to you till death do us part

Pastor; I amahle ngwenya take you ayanda andre turner adams to be my husband in sickness and in health , poor

and wealth , good or bad , i promise to cherish you,  
respect you and be faithful to you till death do us part

Me; I amahle ngwenya take you ayanda andre turner  
adams to be my husband in sickness and in health , poor  
and wealth , good or bad , i promise to cherish you,  
respect you and be faithful to you till death do us part

Pastor; i now present you mr and mrs adams

They all screamed and clapped

Pastor; man now you can kiss your bride

I laughed and he pulled me to him and gave me the most  
passionate kiss ever

## INSERT #202

We went to take pictures at emmarantia. Then went to  
the reception venue, when we walked in it was packed.  
Everyone was there my family, my colleagues everyone  
immediately when we got there, they told me i had to go  
and change. Well i changed into a mermaid dress that was  
also beautiful walked back to andre

Me; i cant believe you

Dre; i just wanted to show you how much i loved you

Me; when did you even start planning this

Dre; for months, the time you got back

Me; i love you ohk

Dre; i love you too mrs adams

Me; \*laughing\* im finally mrs adams unbelievable

He pulled me into a kiss and we listened to the mc which was dorian. Speeaches were made, tears were shed. I had a one on one dance with pa that brought tears. I danced with my husband it was an unforgettable experience.

When it was time to eat i feasted. Dre got up and went to the floor

Dre; so i have a surprise for you my wife

People were like wooooo "wife"

Me; \*laughing\* what

Dre; come down here

I go up and walked to the floor, he held my hand

Dre; you know i always take whatever you say seriously right

I raised my eyebrow. Themba gave him a box and he gave it to me

Me; whats in here

Dre; open it

I slowly opened it and it was car keys mercedes benz car keys

Me; \*smiling\* no you didnt

Dre; maybe

People; what is it?????

Me; \*laughing\* G

He nodded his head. I just couldnt control myself i just gave him the biggest hug and showed our guests they went crazy. Then my aunt showed up with a paperbag as dre was going to sit down

Me; not so fast you not the only one with surprises

He looked confused

Me; this is for you?

i gave him the bag

Dre; for me?

Me; \*laughing\* yes

Dre mum; OPEN IT !!!!!!

I laughed

He put down the paper bag , took out the box and opened it

I didnt remove my eyes from his cause i wanted to catch his reaction and the video guy as also facing the camera

on dre face. He lifted his head and looked at me, i bit my lower lip. He looked back at it and looked at me again

Dre; \*smiling\* no

Me; yes

Dorian; what is it ?????

I could see tears building up

Dre; baby

Me; \*smiling\* you know what this means

He bended and covered his face

Guest; whats in the box/ i wonder what it is/ this got him happy/ did she buy her something/ talk to us guys

Me; you happy?

He stood up straight and gave me a big hug and whispered to my ear

Dre; thank you so much baby , i have no words that can possibly describe this moment im going to be father

That word just brought tears to my eyes

Them; can you tell us already

Dre; \*laughing\* no this is between me and my wife

I laughed

Dre looked at me and kissed me again, the video guy, showed whats in the box and it appeared on the big

screen then people suddenly began screaming. We moved our eyes to the screen and it was a pregnancy test with 2 strips. Our families came to us and congratulated us

Rest of the night dre was just fragile with me, he wanted to go everywhere with me. The dessert was really nice I asked them to bring me more and they did. While eating I could feel dre was looking at me I turned face him

Me: \*laughing\* what?

Dre: you my wife

Me: \*smiling\* you do know im going to make your life a living hell right why you all smiles about that

Dre: I think I prefer you making my life a living hell

I smiled

Me: are we ready for it all

Dre: I know we are. Fuck im going to be a father

I laughed

Me: who would have thought and I know they are lucky to have you as a father

He pulled me in a kiss and I continued eating when I was done

Dre: lets go

Me:.where?

Dre: I have a bet to win, guests

Me: \*laughing\* you still remember that

Dre: yes now lets go

I got up and walked next to him

Dre:lets see who is the most popular

We started on one table. Where all my colleagues were sitting

Them: dr adams

Me: yes

They laughed

Me: thank you all for coming let me formally introduce you to my husband, andre adams

Them: nice meeting you

Prof: beautiful thing you did here

Dre: thank you

They also introduced themselves to dre and we. moved to another table and another and it was all my guest

Dre: I cant wait for. you to spoil me

Me: say that when you have actually won

We walked to one table. They were old guys

Guy1: the mighty turner himself

Dre: big m

They laughed

Guy2: I dont care about you I just want to be formally introduced to mrs turner

Dre: listen to that mrs turner

I laughed

Dre: big guys this is amahle my wife of course no scratch that dr amahle adams

They all. cheered

Guy 3: how the fuck can you score a dr you

We laughed

Guy: dr adams im honoured to be in your presence

Me: \*smiling\* thank you for coming

They kissed my hand and we left the next table only recognised 2 people stephen and one guy who once came to the house

Dre: my guys

Stephen: the married man himself

I laughed

Stephen stood up

Stephen: mrs turner

Me: \*laughing\* hi stephen

Stephen: how you doing mrs turner

Me: im good and yourself

Stephen: good...sit down big man il do the intros

Dre laughed and sat were stephen was sitting

Stephen: the big guys this is dr adams from now on but for you its mrs turner

Me: \*laughing\* why am I mrs turner to them

Stephen: so they will remind themselves not to catch feelings

We all laughed

Stephen: .mrs turner this is jake

We shook hands, william, also shook hands, and owen

Me: nice meeting you all gentlemen

Them: great to finally meet you

Dre got up and wrapped his hand around my waist

Stephen: and congratulation on your pregnancy Us: thank you

William: im actually looking at somebody's father geez

Dre: \*laughing\* piss off

We moved to another table and well I forfeited cause I knew I lost the bet each and every table we passed it was turner or andre. we danced, the whole night away I only slept around 2 am. Sunday it was the traditional wedding although dre mother father was married in a coloured family they were still traditional and believed we should do embeso so we did then it was lunch by the end off that day i was exhausted that when we got home i slept

Tuesday morning we left for our honeymoon and got back after 2 weeks, my tiny bum was now visible. friday afternoon we landed and themba and his woman picked us up

Me; heyyyyy

Nobuhle; hey you, you look so beautiful

Me; i try \*laughing\* look at you you so beautiful

Nobuhle; ai suka hey dre

Dre; hey lala you good

Nobuhle; im great

Themba; hey nana

Me; hey you

We hugged

Themba; ready to go

Me; yes

We got in the car and i sat at the back with nobuhle. But we were not going at home

Me; im really tired guys cant we go home

Dre; we are

Me; this not the way

They kept quiet. The car went up the mountains and got to the security. Dre handed him his id and he opened up i just knew something was going on. Themba parked outside this huge wall. The gate opened and he drove in after a few seconds i finally saw the house and my eyes just went wide open. The house was huge i mean huge it was black and white mostly white with the tint off black with alot off windows and sliding doors i looked at nobuhle and she smiled. They parked on the driveway. They got out and dre opened the door for me

Dre; welcome to your new home

I looked at dre

Dre; \*smiling\* i know this is the last surprise

Me; \*laughing\* are you for real

He nodded his head

Me; \*laughing\* you crazy this is house is huge

Dre; and its for us and our family

I hugged him

Me; its enough now, please stop with the surprises

Dre; il try

I began tearing up

Me; what did i do to even deserve this

Dre; \*smiling\* by sticking with me through my bullshit  
come here

I went in between his arms and cried in between his arms

Dre; ready to go in

Me; yeah

He opened the door and the was a welcome home party

INSERT #203

#AMAHLE

Woke up to this huge bedroom , the sun shinning down  
my face , i opened my eyes, and the curtain off the sliding  
door was open and it was a beautiful view. I sat up  
straight and my husband was not there. As i was about to  
get out off bed. The door opened and he was carrying a  
tray. The smile that appeared on my face and his priceless

Dre; morning mami

Me; morning papi

He placed the tray next to me and went to open the sliding door and joined me

Me; this does not look appetising

It was just veggies

Dre; mums orders

Me; \*laughing\* no baby please

Dre; \*smiling\* good thing i have plan b

He got out off bed and came back with another tray just sweets

Me; this is more like it

(ntombi made use off her qualifications and she was no longer with us just after the wedding , i heard she got a job and work at human resource department. So it was just me and andre we were still looking for someone to help us around someone old especially"

I ate my food and we cuddled in bed

Dre; so you think boy or girl

Me; boy

Dre; i say girl

Me; \*laughing\* cause you have always wanted a girl why vele

Dre; im just scared ukuthi if we have a first born thats a boy , than chances are he will be like me and i dont want that

Me; you were not the first born but you turned out like your father when he was young

Dre; i know but its just something within me lala

Me; so if its a girl

Dre; paris any day

I laughed

Dre; boy

Me; fenty

Dre; not usual but nice

Me; i know papi ao paris and fenty \*screaming\*

Dre; \*laughing\* so why you screaming

Me; i just got excited

We remained in bed for a while and ordered our supper then it was bed. Well i kept using the bathroom . Sunday i went to church and left him, after church i spend time with my friends and family then went home. Dre was with some guy i did not know but i saw him at our wedding

Me; afternoon

Dre; hey mami

Guy; hi

Dre; come here

I walked up to him

Dre; i want you to meet ugo

Me; nice meeting you ugo

Ugo; nice meeting you too , you looked beautiful on your wedding day

Me; \*smiling\* thank you , let me leave you two

I walked upstairs and walked to our bedroom i changed into something comfortable, and walked downstairs dre was not at the lounge walked to the kitchen and took out everything i would need. He wrapped his arms around me

Me; you missed me

Dre; you have no idea

Me; i have never seen your friend before

Dre; and i doubt you would have met him ever

Me; why

Dre; we werent the best of friends to be exact

I turned to face him

Me; like to explain further

He sat at the kitchen counter while i got busy

Dre; well he was the only competition serious competition  
i had in this business , of drugs

Me; oh

Dre; yeah, i knew what he was capable off and he did too  
so we promised each other we would stay away from each  
other and he would stay at his side off the territory and i  
would too. Then last year he got dorian involved in some  
shitty stuff i paid him back the money dorian owed him.  
Then i said something to him when i left. So when you  
disappeared i figured it was him even though i knew he  
would not stoop so low to take you away from me  
because he had a family too . The guys convincied me it  
was him i confronted him and he told me straight he didnt  
but he would help me out. So he did and his wife is the  
one who came up with the theory that my ex may be the  
one who took you thats how i found the lead to , you  
know who

Me; hmmmm so you friends now

Dre; you could say that, well we work together now and  
we began this project together that we hoping for it to  
bring a whole lot off money

Me; thats the weirdest way a friendship can start

Dre; tell me about it, what you want me to do

Me; well you can roast the meat so i was thinking

Dre; ohk talk to me

Me; i was hoping we could throw a christmas lunch here , our families together. They got a long really well on our wedding day

Dre; ohk i like that you will set it out right

Me; \*laughing\* with your help

Dre; il try my best sthandwa sami and when is your doctors appointment

Me; Thursday and then Friday im meeting with the women who could possibly be helping us out

Dre; ohk you dont need me there anyway right

Me; i do , so you will find the right woman for me

Dre; \*laughing\* no you dont mami but the only appointment i will be with you is the one on Thursday

Me; and dont be late

( alex was dre personal doctor, for if he was doing a heist and something went wrong , alex would fix him up. He is also the one i used to take my prevention injection with and now he was my doctor even though i was a doctor i know weird)

Dre; i wont be nana how far long are you

Me; next week since its december 4 months

Dre; so maybe you will give birth june or july

Me; or may

Dre; \*laughing\* how weird will it be , if you give birth on your birthday

Me; \*laughing\* i wish that happens

Dre; do you have an idea how hard it will be for me , my wife and kid sharing a birthday

Me; the money you will spend

He just laughed

We got finished with the cooking dished up and ate. Then went to bed. The rest off the week i was working so was andre

INSERT #204

#AMAHLE

Thursday went to work and left around 12 to meet up with alex. Got to his office and he was there already

Me; hi dr alex

Him; hi dr amahle

I laughed

Me; how you doing

Him; im good and yourself

Me; fine, andre has not arrived

Him; not yet

Me; let me call him

I called him and the second ring he answered

Dre; im there

Me; stop ly....

The door opened and i looked at him

Dre; come on im not that late

Alex laughed

Alex; ohk lets begin

He examined me first, asked me a whole lot of questions then we moved to the bed. He placed the gel on my belly button which was cold. And the was the heart beat i just fell in love yet again. Dre face was priceless

Dre; oh my god this is so unreal

Alex; i cant believe you going to be a father with such a beautiful woman , things that happen in this world

Dre; \*laughing\* dont start with me man

Me; \*smiling\* can you tell the gender

Alex; yes want to know

Dre; yes

Me; no

Dre; we dont

Me; no papi we want it to be a surprise

Dre; ohk

Me; or

Dre; or?

Me; alex can tell you the gender as long as you promise it wont slip with me

Alex; ohk i can do that

Dre; ohk\*smiling\* lets do it

I got out off the chair, and got my ultra sound photo

Alex; any questions

Me; predictions, when can i possibly give birth

Alex; minimum april but sure thing i have to say may

Dre; can she give birth 1st may

Alex; yeah or 31st may , will just have to see with your baby

Me; ohk thats all let me leave you 2 ke

I took my bag and went to wait for andre outside. I knew if it was a girl he would be happy and i would see right through him. He walked out and he looked just ohk

I looked at him

Dre; what

Me; im waiting for you to crack

Dre; \*laughing\* forget about it. Get back to work

We kissed and he walked me to my car and went back to work

Nobuhle; you back already

Me; yeah

Nobuhle; so how did it go

Me; perfect im due may

Nobuhle; you going to share the same birth month with your child

Me; i hope so , it will be sweet

Nobuhle; and gender

Me; surprise but dre knows it

Nobuhle; did he crack

Me; \*laughing\* no and in a way i was hoping he would

Nobuhle; cant wait to meet this bundle off joy

Me; not as much as me, lets go

We went back to work did our rounds and left for home.

Went to take a shower ate then bed

Friday woke up and dre had already left for work. I went to shower, made myself breakfast. Around 12 the women arrived and they were all not what i was looking for around 2 i was done and went to get something to eat for myself. I was stuck n traffic when this woman approached my window. She looked rusty and she was dirty i grabbed my wallet and opened my window

Her; sawbona sis noma yini yokudla ( hi sis I just need something to eat

When i looked at her. I just got emotional i dont know if it was the pregnancy or it was me

Me; nayi ma ( here ma

I gave her 50 rand and she thanked me and walked away. As i was about to go the robots closed for me. I rolled down my window and called her again

Me; ngizo phuma manje la ma ungakhona ukungimele lapha ( il be leaving here soon can you wait for me there

She nodded her head and the robots opened. I went to buy myself food and left. She was where i asked her to

meet me. I got out off the car and gave her food , she began eating

Me; ma ungathanda umsebenzi ( ma would you like a job

She looked at me shocked

Me; if uyawufuna ( that's if you want it

Her; ngingawu thokozela sisi (I would be happy to get a job

Me; ungahamba nami manje ( can you go with me now

She backed away

Me; i promise you , i wont do any evil deed, im doctor im married and im expecting my first child. Me and my husbaand we live in this big house and ngihlale ngi busy naye so ngi dinga umuntu uzongi siza endlini ( im always busy so as he so I need someone who will help me out ). Washing, cooking, cleaning ironing and if possible to live with us when i saw you, i knew i needed you as much as you need me

Her; ngempela (are you serious)

I nodded my head

Me; or do you have family

She shook her head

Me; kunezinto ofuna kuyozilanda (are there somethings you would like to collect

She shook her head

Me; well can....

My phone rang and it was my baby

Me; baby

Dre; hey mami where are you

Me; not so far from home

Dre; eish i needed some stuff from home , so was hoping you could help me out

Me; give me 5 minutes il be home

Dre; ohk

I hung up

Me; ma mele ngihambe angazi kuthi ngibuye ori kanjani ( ma I need to go I don't know if I should come back or

Her; ngingahamba nawe ( I can live with you

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

She wanted to seat at the back. I did not know this woman but i trusted her so much that i was going with her to my house. We got home and i rushed inside and sent dre everything that he needed. Dre was going to freak but he told me to find someone and i did. She was still outside

Me; ngena ma ( come in ma)

She slowly walked in

She looked around

Me; inkulu ne its big you see

Her; kakhulu too much

Me; want me to show you around

Her; its too clean , mina benga nginjani ( look at how I am )  
i dont want to get the place dirty

Me; ohk let me show you if you agree with me where you will stay

Outside the was a cottage. Not too far from the house but she would have her own space. I opened water for her and took the clothes she was wearing while she was bathing i cleaned them and dried them. Gave them back to her and made her something to eat.

Her; so ask me questions since you offering me a job i think i deserve an interview

Me; if you comfortable

She nodded her head

Me; ohk age

Her; 48

Me; kids at all

Her; yes but my husband turned them against me

Me; so you were married

Her; yes from the age off 23 till 35

Me; how long you have been living the way you leaving

Her; 11 years

Me; can you cook

Her; yes everything

Me; iron and clean

Her; yes, its been a while since iv done any off those but the last time i was good at it

Me; can you take care off a child

She looked at me and i laughed

Me; \*laughing\* im a first time mum and i know i will learn a lot but i need to know if you will help me out or not when it come to the baby im going to have

She laughed

Her; \*laughing\* yes i can help you out , im very good with children but should your mother not be the one helping you out with such

Me; my mum passed away

Her; oh ngyaxolissa ( im sorry

Me; its fine , ohk my side im giving you the job but my husband is a hard nut to crack his very secretive so his the one you will have to deal with

Her; ohk i will try

## INSERT #205

Around 8 dre arrived. He found me at the kitchen

Him; hey beautiful

Me; hey baby we need to talk

Dre; ohk about what

Me; i found someone

Dre; \*smiling\* thats perfect

I took his hand and we walked to the lounge

Me; baby this is sebenzile sibiya

Dre; oh hi its nice meeting you

She stood up , they shook hands

Her; its nice meeting you too

Dre; so those agencies actually work

Me; not really

He turned to me

Me; can we talk in our bedroom

Dre; ohk

We walked upstairs then i closed the door

Dre; whats up

Me; the ladies from the agency arrived and i did not like any off them. So as i was going to buy food i came across mam sebe on the streets , she was a street begger

Dre; WHAT???? And you brought her here

Me; shes a decent woman, who was just unfortunate at a time in her life

Dre; geez mami , how irresponsible can you be. Do you have any idea the shit we have in this house thats valuable and we left her down there alone

Me; \*shouting\* STOP IT OHK , if she wanted to take something she would have she just wants a job and thats what i gave her. You asked me to find someone and i did now you complaining

Dre; and you found some woman who lived on the streets , im sure she does not know shit

Me; what do you think she will do ?

Dre; i dont know anything

Me; can we give her a chance please

Dre; no mami , she needs to go

I walked towards the bed and sat there and began crying

Dre; oh great

Me; \*crying\* why do you have to be so cruel. She just needs a job and shes a nice woman

Dre; ohk fine , just dont cry. Will give her a chance but if my stuff disappears she go

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

I got up and hugged him. Tears can get you anything

We walked downstairs and she was still in that position

Me; ohk ma you get the job

Her; \*smiling\* thank you so much

Dre; but first we need to get a few things out off the way

Her; ohk

We sat down

Dre; whatever that happens in this house its between us 3 , whatever you see or hear you dont go tell anyone about it

She nodded her head

Dre; the woman of this house will give you the codes off the gate and alarm and dont see some opportunity because of that. We making things easier for you. Another

thing dont let anyone in, in this house you will see the people you allowed to let them in but if we both not here dont let anyone in

Her; ohk

Dre; you have family?

Her; no , its just me

Dre; you dont have any kids

Me; il explain everything to you later

Dre; ohk il give you 15 for everything

Her; 15?

Dre; 15 thousand a month for everything since you will work and cook

Her eyes just popped out, and she got teary. I smiled at her. She couldnt even control herself she got up from the sofa and hugged dre and me

Dre; you will live here right

Me; yes

Dre; ohk thats sorted

Her; thank you so much i will never forget this

Her room was already sorted, we all ate and then she left and we went to our bedroom

Me; so?

Dre; shes seems like a good woman

Me; you see , she is you wont regret this i swear

Dre; i better not

We talked until we both zoned off. The next day woke up to dre arms around me, i turned and he was fast asleep, i was able to get away from his grip. Went to the bathroom washed up, took my gown and went downstairs. Mam sebe was busy with the dishes while making porridge the way i craved for it

Me; morning ma

Her; morning sisi

Me; thank you for this, iv been craving it for a while now

Her; \*smiling\* im glad i did not know what to make

Me; anything you comfortable making just check the fridge , cause thina we eat anything that you make as long as we can eat it

She nodded her head

Me; let me show you around ke

I showed her all the bedrooms, bathroom, laundry room , entertainment room, all the rooms that were there and showed her my bedroom but we didnt get in since dre

was still sleeping. We went back to the kitchen i sat on the chair. Dre came down and kissed my cheek

Me; morning baby

Dre you ohk

Me; yes you

Dre; yes mami

Mam sebe; morning

Dre; morning ma

She placed our dishes in front off us, brought everything i would need and oviasly mina ke a lot of sugar, butter and milk, mixed and dug in.

Me; im going out ohk

Dre; where exactly

Me; \*smiling\* to the mall, mam sebe has nothing so we just going to get her a few stuff

Dre; ohk want a driver

Me; \*laughing\* no i can still drive

Dre; i have to make sure, il also go for like 30 minutes but il be back

Me; ohk want anything

Dre; dont think so or il just call you

Me; ohk

I went to bath and just wore a black high waist skirt , that went above my knees, with black body suit and black high heels and took my back, combed the weave and went downstairs. Mam sebe was done i took my g wagon and we left. She was not comfortable at first but eventually she calmed down. We bought her clothes, did her hair, bought her cosmetics, things she wanted in her room. She loved flowers and good thing we had a huge garden back home. We went to grab lunch then left

Themba and dorian were there

Me; hey guys

Them; hey lala/ nana

Me; this is mam sebe

Them; hi ma

Mam sebe; hi

Dre; well these are 2 off the people you can let in , in the house

Mam sebe nodded her head

Themba; she will be helping you out

Dre; yeah

Themba; cool how you doing lala

Me; im ohk but im exhausted now

Dre; go and rest

Me; i plan to ma you will be ohk alone

Her; yes sisi

Me; ohk

I walked upstairs, changed into dre top , and shorts and took my fleece blanket and took a nap.

## INSERT #206

### #ANDRE

Me; did the guys receive their stuff

Themba; yeah but they all did not pay the full amount

Me; that was the deal they pay half

Themba; how can you agree to that

Me; they pushed me in a corner and in a way , the points they made were kind of right

Themba; ay cool man, at least you know what you did

Me; that i know believe me

Themba; so with ugo

Me; cants say much about that

Dorian; but you think its a good idea , getting involved with ugo involving diamonds

Me; no but will have to see ey

Themba; but you cant be taking such risk especially if you have a lot to lose

Me; dont start with me , nothing is going to happen just relax

Dorian; ohk

Themba; so are you having a girl or boy, nobuhle told me you know

Dorian; you know

Me; yeah but im not going to tell anyone especially you 2

Themba; you have it all man

Me; im fucken blessed

Dorian; way blessed, anyway we better get going

Themba; yeah man

Me; il see you when i come around at the warehouse cause il be working the whole week

Dorian; ohk, will keep you updated

Me; sharp

The guys left

Me; so how was your outing ma

Mam sebe; it was great your wife is a guardian angel i tell you

Me; \*smiling\* i should know trust me

Mam sebe ; would you like anything right now

Me; a cup off coffee would be nice, 3 sugars, 1 and half teaspoon of coffee, you know where to find it

Her; yes

Me; ohk you can bring it up to my bedroom

Her; ohk it will be right there

I walked up and my wife was snoring , i laid next to her and turned on the tv. Mam sebe knocked i let her in and took my coffee continued with watching soccer highlights but it was those i knew got busy with my phone

Me; man i need a favour from you

Kgontsi; whats up this time

Me; lol mxm i pay you a lot off money for this so dont complain

Kgontsi; im not even complaining sweedy

Me; good, you know my wife is pregnant right

Kgontsi; arent the friends suppose to be throwing the baby shower

Me; i aint throwing any baby shower , i want you to start preparing my kids room but it has to be a secret to her cause she does not know the gender but i do

Kgontsi; oh you want me to do a nursery for you , according to the gender since you know

Me; exactly

Kgontsi; will be working at your house, wont your wife know

Me; you will have to try your best to hide it dont you

Kgontsi; ohk il come check out the room and you give me money to buy everything i can possibly buy and the babies gender

candice; congratulations i heard you got married

Me; thank you and yeah

candice; i didnt even think it was possible

Me; me too but when you found her , you found her and you hows p. E

candice; great i love it here

Me; im glad

Kim; i cant believe you going to be a father

Me; better believe it

Kim; that kid will be spoilt rotten im jealous already

Me; lol thats hard to believe you jealous nahhhh

Khaya; ntwana please work for Saturday , then mina I will work for you anytime you want

Me; ay ntwana , where are you going

khaya; there are somethings I need to fix

Me; ai sure, you owe me

Khaya; thanks man

Mbali; i need to ask you for something

Me; ohk whats up

Mbali; my parents are going out and me and deon have plans after christmas can you and your wifey babysit for us

Me; id love too lala but il be working but i know for sure amahle wont say no but il confirm with you

Mbali; please we really need this, me and deon

Me; ohk il talk to her dont stress

Mbali; thank you

The woman herself woke up and rushed to the bathroom,  
walked back in

Me; i thought you were done with morning sickness

Amahle; me too papi i guess not

She got on the bed and cuddled next to me

Me; i wonder if you even going to sleep later

Amahle; i hope so

Me; how was your outing

Amahle; \*smiling\* great. We got her clothes, shoes,  
cosmetics everything she needed to make her feel  
comfortable

Me; you an amazing woman

Amahle; and your an amazing husband

I pulled her leg to my body and kissed her

Amahle; make love to me

I pulled her to me and she was on top off me. I removed  
her top and she was left naked. I grabbed her neck and  
kissed her. She pulled my top and i stood up straight to  
remove it, i kissed her neck and she let out a slight moan  
on my ear. I bit my lower lip cause her moans weakened  
some part off me , i sucked on her neck until she pulled  
back. Her breathing was heavy, she unbuttoned my pants

and pushed them down and my underwear, then went to lock the door. She tip toed back to the bed and i was just looking at her sexy self. She held my legs and moved her hands up my thighs and kept brushing them up and down then kissed my D and did her magic after moments off happiness. I pulled her back up flipped her over and went down on her, licked , sucked and fingered. She insisted on taking control and i was going to let her. She kept grinding on my balls and i wanted her so bad " baby" was the word i could say " patience is virtue baby" she looked like she was having fun making me want her. She dug her nails on my chest i shouted "enough!" she laughed and i finally entered her , i started off with a slow pace and increased it, the deeper her nails dug i pounded her fast, hard and deep till she could not take it anymore and let out the loudest scream , flipped her over and breathed heavy on her neck

Amahle; i love you sooo much \*breathing fast \*

Me; \*laughing\* not as much as me mami

Amahle; \*smiling\* get off papi, i need to help mam sebe

Me; come on shes ohk

Amahle; no its her first Sunday im sure she doesnt know what to cook

Me; fine kiss me ke

She kissed me and i got off he

## INSERT #207

#AMAHLE

Andre was watching tv while i got busy with mam sebe  
Me; so ma , if you dont mind can you tell me about your  
kids

Her; after all you done for me , you deserve to know more  
than anyone else. I had a boy and a girl spesihle no  
simphiwe

Me; uban umdala (who is the oldest)

Her; simphiwe

Me; so what happened ma , why would someone be so  
cruel to take children away from their mother

Her; my father loved money more than anything baby , he  
would give up money for his family if he had to. So when i  
was 20 he married me to this family because they had  
money. It was hard at first but after 5 years i had gotten  
used to that life then my father schemed that family from  
their money stole from them and guess what i got  
punished for my fathers doing. He chased me out off the  
house , told my kids me and my father stole from them  
and i never loved my kids cause if i got away with the  
money i was going to leave them

Me; thats horrible ma, you have not seen your kids since then

Her; no, once i went there but they had sold the house i dont know if they still in johannesburg or no

Dre; you want them back

We turned to the kitchen door. Then mam sebe looked to the floor

Dre; im sorry i just couldnt help but listen

Me; would you ma

Her; yes more than anything , just to know if they ok and clarify everything for them

Dre; i can help you find them

Mam sebe eyes grew so big

Her; really , they could be anywhere

Dre; leave that to me, il just need a few details

Her; i dont even know how i could thank you

Me; you dont have too ma \*smiling\*

We continued cooking , then i sat the table. We ate together, mam sebe was older than us way older than us but she looked like she was scared off dre big time.

Whenever i would talk to her she would look me in the

eyes and connect with me but with dre she would either look down or be speechless. After supper me and my baby cuddled on the couch

Me; will you really help her out

Dre; you want me to

Me; id love for you too

Dre; then i will

Me; but they could be anywhere

Dre; and i have connections everywhere

Me; konje wena ke im going to bed, im really tired

Dre; our punka is working you out already

Me; ai suka

I hit him and got up

Me; goodnight

I kissed him

Me; goodnight ma \*shouting\*

Her; \*shouting back\* night!

The next day , woke up and headed to work it was a busy day for me and nobuhle was not around. Did my rounds and went out for lunch then left. The robots closed for me and suddenly i was hit so hard at the back off my car, the

car spinned and hit on the side .I began panicking luckily i was wearing my seatbelt. People began coming to my car and trying to help me out, they popped the air bag and i was crying like crazy , i could feel something watery down my leg. I could not open the door so i grabbed my phone at the side

People; are you ohk?/ are you hurt/ wait will get you out off there

I dialled dre number, i was crying but i just wanted my baby

Dre; my beautiful wife

Me; dre \*crying\*

Dre; baby whats wrong

People; the paramedics are coming

Dre; baby where are you what happened ? Baby where are you

Me; \*crying\* im not far from where i work please come

He just hung up, they got me out off the car and they panicked more when they saw i was pregnant, the ambulance was nowhere to be seen. I was not that hurt but i had a scratch on my leg and my car nje. The ambulance arrived and they were dressing me and they wanted to take me to the hospital to check on my baby that was the most scary part when a black benz pulled up.

2 guys got out. Dre saw me and walked up to me. Kissing me everywhere

Dre; are you ohk

Me; yes

Dre; you bleeding

Me; its just a scratch but they taking me in they want to check on the baby

People began screaming and themba was hiting the driver that bumped into me. Dre kissed me and in front off everyone took out a gun and walked up to them. I began shouting

Me; \*shouting\* dre no!

The driver was drunk but immediately got sober

He pulled the slide back and i got out off the stretcher, the medics let me cause they knew if they didnt someone was going to die

Me; dre no !, his not worth it

He turned to look at me

Me; his not worth it papi leave him and look at me im ohk, im ohk baby

I walked up to him and wrapped my arms around him. He was literally shaking

Me; im ohk baby

He returned the hug so tight and i took the gun away from him and handed it to themba

People were just staring

Me; lets go to alex ohk, im ohk just to check on the baby

And that very moment the cops arrived. Well one off them knew dre. The paramedics left, and they took the guy in , it was as if dre did not even take out a gun in front of everyone they just shut that issue nje. Dre called some guy to pick up the car and left themba there cause he wanted to rush me to alex. I called in at work and told them they were fine with it.on our way dre called alex

Dre; cancel all your appointments man, il be there in 15

We got to alex and they checked my baby and everything was fine. Then we left

Me; you ohk

He nodded his head

Dre; you sure you ohk

Me; yes now stop worrying and you need to stop this thing off yours taking out your gun for everyone to see

Dre; if it was up to me i would have killed that motherfucker

me; i know i love you ohk

He kissed my hand

Dre; i love you too mami

We got to the warehouse and my car was there. Everyone  
nje was so concerned asking me if i was ohk and stuff

Dre; you have an insurance right

Me; yeah but you can fix it

Dre; yeah i can but that means you would be paying your  
insurance company just for fun so you have to claim it

Me; ohk , this whole thing got me hungry

Dre; jack can you get her something to eat

Jack; what you want

Me; burgers with fries and strawberry milkshake and  
mcflurry

Jack; thats all for you

Me; jack dont even start

He laughed

Jack; lets go adel

They left together

INSERT #208

Few weeks passed and it was a day before christmas. Me and dre were so busy that was the only time we were able to go do our christmas shopping. My bump grew bigger in 3 days i would be 22 weeks . I went to bath then wore a grey dress , with a slit going up my thigh and grey nikes. We left with mam sebe and headed to clearwater. We bought all the groceries we would need for that whole month , my peanut butter. The cashier was making crazy eye contact with dre, then we left. But we passed ackermans and i had to go in

Me; this is so cute

Dre; mami im hungry and im pretty sure mam sebe is hungry too, so buy it and lets go

Me; wait, theres a lot id like to buy

They both went to sit on the couches while i mixed and matched after the best moment i went to pay and we left. Got to spurs and we ate then left for home

Andre dropped us off and had to leave. Me and mam sebe decided on what we were going to cook for christmas. I went to change to more comfortable clothes and helped her out. Dre arrived home past 9 we talked and he went to bed i finished off with ma around 1 am. Then went to bed. Woke up the next morning and dre was not there.

Went to wash up , wore my gown and went downstairs.  
Mam sebe had already done everything

Me; ma uvuke nini kodwa yeh ngoba silala ekseni (ma  
when did you wake up cause we only slept this morning)

Ma; you know I am a light sleeper

I laughed

Me: where is dre

Ma; uhambe ekseni akashongo kuthi uyaphi ( he left this  
morning he didn't say where he was going)

Me; ohk we still need to do the gifts ne

Ma; yes sisi

I went to sit at the lounge on the carpet took the  
wrapping paper and began wrapping up people gifts

Pa; my beautiful angel

I quickly turned with the biggest smile on my face and it  
was pa. I jumped up and went to hug him

Me; \*smiling\* you have no idea how happy i am to see  
you pa. What happened to your arm/ why didnt you call  
me/ why didnt you tell me

Pa; because off your reaction right now. Its ohk

Me; i need to check it out

Pa; yes dr adams

I laughed and pulled him in a hug again

Me; i missed you so much

Pa; i missed you so much more

Woman; helo baby girl

Me; hi mam rejoice

Mam rejoice; and how are you and that beauty

Me; not good, why didnt you call me about this

Mam rejoice; he threatened me not to, cause as he says  
did not want to worry you

Me; never again, whatever happens you call me please

Her; i will

Me; andre picked you up

Pa; yes he wanted it to be a surprise and it was ,was it  
not

Me; \*smiling\* definitely come on i want you to meet  
another special woman in our lives

We walked to the kitchen and i introduced them to mam  
sebe , who was more than happy to meet pa

Pa; i forgot how big this house is, im going to get lost nje

Me; no you wont, you know i made it easy for you so you  
dont walk up the stairs

Mam sebe helped me with the bags. I continued wrapping the presents while dre was just too busy with everything

Pa; so how have you been

Me; good pa, everything is just fine

Pa; and when should i expect my great grand daughter

Andre; thank you pa , shes carrying a girl isnt she

He walked in the lounge

Me; \*laughing\* pa no, its a boy

Him and dre looked at each other

Them; nahhhh

Me; \*laughing\* i cant believe you joining forces and whats with men in my life. Other men would pray for a boy but nina no a girl

Pa; \*smiling\* it would just be nice seeing a duplicate off you

Andre; exactly pa

Me; arent you tired off me

They just laughed

Me; mxm, im going to take a shower before people get here

Dre; \*laughing\* bye

Me; and you mr still need to shower

Dre; i bathed when i went to pick up pa i just need to change even though i dont see the reason for that

Me; sies you so filthy

Pa just laughed at us arguing

After my shower. I wore a pink sweater, pink cap and denim shorts with sandals. A lot off people were there already and dre had changed

Themba; looking beautiful as always

Me; thank you \*smiling\*, wheres your woman

Themba; she had to start at her families, she will be here later

Me; ohk

I greeted everyone there and offered to help mam sebe but she insisted i go talk to people. Dre family arrived and they brightened up the room lol they were all light literally all

Me; hi ma

Dre mum; hey baby, look at you

Me; growing by the day

Her; still nothing yet

Me; i dont even want to think about it

Dre grandmother; sthandwa sami  
Me; \*smiling\* i just need a hug from you  
She opened her arms and i got in between them  
Her; ngiyenza siyakhulu (I can feel we growing)  
Me; kakhulu gogo (too much)  
I greeted the entire family , cause it was too hot inside we set everything out, kids were swimming and everyone sitting at the garden with their camp chairs plus music  
Jack; helo helo helo family  
They all just threw their hands at him  
Jack; geez this is the love i get  
Me; \*laughing\* hi jack/ adel  
Adel; hey you  
Jack; i know only you can show me love  
Me; anytime just tell me when  
Jack; you have to meet my mum  
Me; i know your mum jack  
Jack; yeah but i need to formally introduce you to her  
Jacks mum and dre mother were family  
We walked up to her, her beautiful blonde hair going down her back

Jack; mum

She turned

Her; helo baby

Jack; i want you to meet amahle

Her; but i already know amahle

Jack; but you dont know her as my friend

We just laughed and hugged again

The party continued , people were handed their gifts by 10 dre was fucked up drunk and most off the people had left. It was just me , mam sebe , thando (mbali kid mbali had plans with deon so they needed someone to take care off him and i was glad to ) , dre, pa, mam rejoice and dre grandmother. She didnt want to go cause she wanted to spend time at her grandchilids house and that made me so happy. I put thando to bed and having a huge house was not a burden when it came to this everyone slept in their bedroom. Dre had passed out on the couch with adel and themba. Dorian i had no idea where he was. I gained my strength and helped dre up mam sebe helped me and we put him in bed. I undressed him and went out, i put everyone lese to bed but dorian nothing. I went outside and he was drunk as hell doing what i dont know

Me; papa get up, lets get you to bed

Him; who are you?

Me; \*laughing\* amahle

Him; ohhhhh my greatest fantasy

My eyes grew wide

Me; oh kay lets go

I wrapped his arms around my shoulders and went in

Him; do you know that i love you?

Me; yes i do

He removed his hand around me and tried to stand on his own

Him; no no no i mean love you \*eyes wide open\*

Me; no i dont now lets go

We walked up again

Him; iv been jealous off dre since he got your heart and i didnt and i dont know what you see in him. His just sm sm \*stuttering\* small boy.

I opened the door off the bedroom he would sleep in

Him; you needto give it to a man not a boy, il always make you happy

I pushed him on the bed

Him; one day , one day you will be mine and will be together and that baby you carrying will raise together

Me; bye dorian

Him; bye future wife

Then blackout i dont know if the saying a drunk mind speaks a sober mind or what but i was hoping he was just saying all off that cause he was drunk

## INSERT #210

Themba; what? Is this some kind of joke

Me; no he came here to send me a message but came across shane, they beat the living hell out off him and he left shane with the word " tell turner im coming for whats mine" you know what this means

Themba; amahle

Me; right my wife

Dorian; we need to sort this out, before something happens

Jack; hold on didn't you say you took care off him the last time

Me; I did I just didn't send him to his grave

Themba; your wife cant know about this

Me; yeah i dont want to be stressing her out

Adel; do you think he knows that you married and expecting a child

Me; im not sure yet but it seems like he was keeping tabs off me and her so maybe he might know

Themba; this shit needs to be sorted by today

Me; yeah make some calls and lets find this bitch

After 2 hours or more i found out he was back few weeks ago and had teamed up with my enermies, to take me down and enermies that were so weak for me

Me; i need to go but sort this out guys

Jack; go home

I left for home. Got there and ugo was there

Me; surprising visit

Ugo; iv been waiting for you , for an hour

'me; had some things to sort out lets talk outside

We walked out

Ugo; \*shouting\* i thought we were over this vendetta and we had settled this

Me; what you talking about

Ugo; why the fuck would you send cops to my house man, they fucked my entire place and my daughter had to watch that shit, why did we even start doing this if you knew you were going to fuck me up like this. You fucken don't play fair and since that's how you want to play it il give you a fight

He walked passed me, I grabbed his arm

Me; whoah i dont know what you talking about man

Ugo; you telling me you have no idea that cops came to my house and kept telling me that turner sent them. Also trying to reach out for my coke clients what kind of shit is that

Me; fuck no!, why the fuck would i even do that

Ugo; cause...

Me; cause what and worse part let the cops know who said they must search the house how stupid can i be. I already have high paying customers why would i want to steal yours and we still doing a project together that can make me lose millions why the hell would i want to screw you up come on man

Ugo; then who is it

Me; i think i know who it is , he also fucked up where i work

Ugo; lets talk

Me; when me and my wife had the longest split, she got involved with this dr lubanzi he was still trying his ways in the big world and used my wife to get close to me. One time he kidnapped her and wanted me to hand everything that i owned to him but i fought for what mine. I hurt him but did not kill him. Yesterday he crashed my place and messed up one off my boys and said he was coming for what was his

Ugo; your shit or wife

Me; wife

Ugo; but how do i fit in , all off this im not part of your past man why is this nigga getting me involve in your shit

Me; he was keeping tabs on me , must have known we reconciled and knew he could not fight us together so best way separate us and move his way slowly to you so you can try and take me down cause thats his aim man. Take me down and take my wife

Ugo; so who are we dealing with here

Me; at this moment i dont know. His got cops on his payroll if they kept saying my name oviasly. I dont know who taught him what when he left jozi but seems like he is a way smarter man than i met a few years ago

Ugo; so you know what this means right if he was keeping tabs also on me he might have followed me here

Me; yeah he was going to know where i live sooner or later but now i have to protect my wife even if it means i will have to go and use the bathroom with her

Ugo; get your guys and il get mine we oviasly need to deal with this shit

Me; yeah lets do it tomorrow will do it over lunch so it does not seems like we scheming

Ugo; ohk

Me; thanks man

Ugo; you got my back only fair i get yours

Me; all the time sorry about what your daughter had to witness

Ugo; soon you will know how I feel

I just laughed

I walked him out and went back in. I went up stairs and mami was bathing. I sat on the floor

Me; so tomorrow you going to work

Her; yes

Me; from now on, adel will drive you

Her; what? For what?

Me; he just has too

Her; no

Me; yes

Her; i said no dre and thats final

Me; i said yes and what i say goes which means adel will drive you each and everyday

Her; \*shouting\* im not a child i dont need to be watched 24 /7 ... Pass me the towel

I gave her and she went out

Me; listen i dont care what you think but adel is driving you and i never said you were a kid

Her; then why do i have to be driven around

Me; because i want you to be safe

her; the accident was a once off thing dre and it was not my fault why do i have to be punished for that. I bought myself a car and you bought me a car so i can drive it on my own not have someone drive it

Me; \*shouting\* cause you not safe ohk , do you get that you not safe

Her; what you mean im not safe \*screaming\*

Me; LUBANZI IS BACK AND HIS BACK FOR YOU !

She just froze there and looked at me

Her ; what

Me; lubanzi is back and his willing to go out to get you back on his life

She walked passed me i grabbed her hand

Her; \*shouting\* DONT TOUCH ME!

She opened the door and walked out

I pulled myself together and followed her. She was with her grandfather and thando. As i was watching tv mbali and deon walked in they picked up thando and left i did not want to stress deon out. The next day i dropped off pa at the airport and went back home. The woman herself was eating breakfast

Me; adel is outside

Her;.....

Me; or you want me to take you to work

Her; ma see you when i get back ohk

Mam sebe; bye baby

She took her bags and walked out. I walked out with her.

She got in the car

Me; boy get yourself breakfast inside

Adel; oh kay

He got out off the car and went in

Me; im sorry ohk, im sorry for the bullshit you have to deal with but at this moment this is the only thing i can say mami

Her; now i must leave in fear because off a bitter ex

Me; no i wont allow you , dont stress yourself out im going to sort out this thing

Her; for how long will this keep on andre

Me; at this moment i dont know mami but im asking you im pleading with you to please let me deal with this. But please dont stress out im going to solve this

Her; ohk

Me; can i get a kiss

Her; \*laughing\* no

I jumped at the back and kissed her then called adel. I decided to go drop her off with him

Me; i love you ohk

Her; i love you more, il tell you when i knock off

Me; ohk

We left and did some thing then went to the ware

## INSERT #211

#AMAHLE

Days passed my bump was growing by the day. New years eve it was just us friends , they drank while i just stayed sober. January the 27 i was 6 months pregnant. Following day woke up and headed to work lubanzi was still on the loose but i paid no attention whatsoever. Drank tea during my tea time and went to do my rounds. Got to this patient, he was involved in an accident

Me; so how you doing this morning mr khumalo

Him; so much better , just call me ntando ao you making me feel like im old

Me; \*laughing\* sorry ntando , so your leg

Him; well it tends to pain at night but the nurse gave me painkillers

Me; ohk , did they give you what we talked about yesterday

Him; i think so

Me; ohk

I was writing down everything down

Him; so how old are you? Arent you a bit young to be a dr

I lifted my head up

Me; arent you a bit old to be getting involved in dumb accidents

He laughed. I just stared at him as he laughed. He laughed like my father i mean exactly like my father it just got me thinking

Him; \*laughing\* yini? (What?)

Me; nothing you have a nice laugh

Him; thank ou, a lot off people hate it shame

Me; askies

Him; kunomuntu ongifanelu naye yazi ( you look like someone you know)

Me; ubani (who?)

Him; im not sure as yet

Me; il check up on you tomorrow , you might just be getting out before the end off this week

Him; il be glad

I went to my other patients then went to eat lunch was just a sandwich

Dr khan; good day dr adams

Me; good day dr khan

Him; and how are you this afternoon

Me; exhausted my feet are killing me

Him; and the baby is not making it any easier

Me; thats right and you

Him; im trying my best good thing i came across you today , the training program of surgical department is on

Me; oh my god really

Him; \*laughing \* yes i knew you would be happy to hear that

Me; im definitely going to register

Him; please do they need you in the theatre

I laughed

Him; will see you ohk, have to go

'me; thank you so much

Him; no problem

Me; bye

I was so excited , went back to do my rounds and later that day dre arrived. Got home and we walked straight to our bedroom

Me; can you please help me with my shoes

Dre; ohk, your feet are swollen mami

Me; yeah i was way busy today , i mean way busy

Dre; lets run you a warm bubble bath ohk

Me; thank you papi

He went to the bathroom but i zoned off just there nje.

Was woken up by dre the next morning

Dre; come on you need to eat, you didnt eat last night

Me; what time is it

Dre; its still early , il drop you off before i go to work

Me; ohk

I walked downstairs and there was a full breakfast for me . I was hungry so i dug in until i could not take anymore i went to shower but i was taking too long and dre would be late. He called adel and he left. I wore a black dress, with black tekkies and joined adel

Me; so how you doing?

Adel; im good you?

Me; im ohk so can i ask you something

Adel; ohk

Me; how is the search with lubanzi

Adel;.....

Me; please adel

Adel; fine , he was not lost, he comes to see dre whenever he can just to provoke him . I dont know about

other times ke but whenever his there its always about "she has always been mine and all those stuff"

Me; can you do me a favour

Adel; what up

Me; can you get me in contact with lubanzi

Adel; \*shouting\* what? No dre would kill me

Me; i just want to settle this with lubanzi talk to him  
please adel

Adel; im sorry but il be risking my life if i did that

Me; ohk bye

I got out off the car and walked in at work

Began my day with a milkshake. Lunch time headed to my patients and examined ntando

Ntando; still looking beautiful

Me; does your wife know how flirty you are with woman

Ntando; yeah and which is why i married her cause she accepted my bad manners

Me; really bad manners, how you feeling today

Ntando; good but i had all sorts of pains , and headaches are still giving me problems

Me; tomorrow i booked you in for a scan around 10 am when i get those results. We may find the cause off the constant headaches

Ntando; could my brain have been affected

Me; at this point i dont know and the tests will tell us everything also remember the headaches being there could be coincident so dont stress about it too much it could be nothing

Ntando; ohk

Me; il tell the nurses to give you few off the medications i wrote down

Ntando; ohk

Me; ohk bye

Ntando; wait

I turned and looked at him

Ntando; you remember when i said you looked like someone

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Ntando; well i finally figured it out. You look like my mother

Me; \*laughing\* really ntando

Ntando; no im being serious , my wife is coming and i told her to bring my mothers picture. You will see her , you look exactly like her

Me; ohk bye ntando

I walked away and attended my other patients

## INSERT #212

Friday i had a short day and i was about to knock off , leaving the ward i bumped into ntando

Ntando; great you here

Me; im not seeing you today

Ntando; i know some male doctor came to see me but i wanted to show you my mothers picture

Me; you still on about that

Ntando; yes i want you to see how serious i am

Me; fine i need to get going so lets do this fast

We walked to his bed, he got on it and opened the drawer

Ntando; here

I took the picture and i suddenly could not breath , i tried to talk but only silence. I just stood there looking down at the picture looking at my mother !!!

Me; this cant be

Ntando; \*laughing\* you see , i told you , you look like her

Me; where did you get this picture

Ntando saw how freaked out i was

Him; are you ohk? You sweating

Me; \*shouting\* where did you get this picture

The ward just went silent and everyone looked at me

Ntando; calm down whats wrong

Me; i need air

I dropped the picture and ran out , when i got out it felt like i could breath. My breathing was heavy , my heart beating fast

Ntando; dr adams ! \*shouting\* dr adams

Me; leave me alone

I walked away

Ntando; can you please talk to me ? You really scaring me here

Me; where did you get this picture

Ntando; my parents gave it to me

Me; how can your parents give you this and you say she is your mother

Ntando; my adopted parents

I looked at him but i just could not take it so i just left him there. He followed me until security stopped him because off the garments he was wearing. I went to quickly change and dre was already there with a box of pizza on his legs

Dre; hey mami

Me; .....

I was still trying to control my breathing

Dre; are you ohk? Is it the baby

Me; just get me home

Dre; whats wrong? Did you see lubanzi

Me; \*shouting & crying \* no just get me home

He looked at me and started the car. The drive was silent the whole time. Got home walked upstairs changed into pjs and slept

Me; please give me time to myself

Dre then left the room , my mind was running all over the place and i just cried. My emotions were running high but i zoned off. I woke up and just laid in my bed thinking about everything , dre walked in and cuddled next to me

Dre; ready to talk

Me; yeah

Dre; whats wrong

I turned my body to him and got way close to him, his arms around me. And told him everything from ntando laugh, to him recognising me, the picture and what he told me

Dre; WHAT?

Me; just imagine its not even possible papi, my mum had never been married before my dad i was the only child. I think they lied to him about his real birth parents and found my mothers picture and gave it to him in order to get closure

Dre; if thats the case, that is just fucked up

Me; thats the only explanation for the photo

Dre; im sorry to bring this up but lubanzi can also be involved in this

Me; you think?

Dre; all of a sudden mami, you have a long lost brother

Me; I think you right

Dre; but again I could be wrong as I know he would not go to such trouble

Me; how you know

Dre; I know cause I wouldn't do such

Me; not everyone is like you and you know lubanzi is good with this lying thing especially about family

Dre; ohk on that point you may be right

Me; exactly

Dre; but can I say what I think

Me; what dre

Dre; I doubt lubanzi is behind this and if he is then will deal with him and the guy but what if his not then you may just be turning your back on your half brother

Me; no his not ! I was the only child first and last born , pa would have told me. My dad would have told me why would they keep him a secret its impossible that he may be my brother. Geez its even hard to say that know why cause i dont have a brother

Dre; ohk i hear you but will you talk to him

Me; i dont know if i tell him the truth. It might hurt him knowing his adopted parents lied about his biological mother but again he cant be going around telling people my mother is his mother

Dre; you know what confuses me

Me; everything

Dre; yeah that and you said he had your fathers laugh so it can be possible even lubanzi cant fake that and were would he get your mothers picture

Me; says someone who can get my picture when I was still in my mother womb

Dre; \*laughing\* geez woman

Me; but its true

Dre; yeah but you also need to know lubanzi is way far from being someone like me or having the connections I have which I know, if he did have those type of connections they would have informed me

Me; dre you always act like you know everything

Dre; that's cause I do and im definitely sure his not behind this entire mess but its possible mami

I sat up straight

Me; are you crazy? He may have my fathers laugh thousands off people have similar laughs and what you mean

Dre; i mean he could be your brother not even half

Me; dre are you only smart when it comes to illegal stuff yeh ? That will mean he was the first to my parents and when i was born where did they take him and all those stuff it does not make sense

Dre; ohk that does not make sense but i say talk to the guy , hear him out who knows it might be a family reunion

Me; thats not going to happen , I don't trust him

Dre; ohk give me his name and before you meet with him I find out who he really is if he is not part of lubanzi gang which I will know if he is then you meet him if not we kill him

Me; don't say that

Dre; sorry

Me; im hungry

Dre; food coming right up

He left and as much as i tried forgetting about everything it was hard not too. Dre came with my food. We ate together watching tv then got a bit naughty

## # ANDRE

The next day I met up with one off my guys who works at home affairs and told him everything he said I should come back tomorrow or he would come back to me later at my house I was cool with it. I got home and was kind of lonely since mami was at work. Later that day masebe called me and I went downstairs only to find it was derek

Me; \* smiling\* you never disappoint do you

He was dead serious

Me; ohk I have a feeling you have bad news for me

Derek; worse than just bad news

Me; ohk

Derek; you know this guy

Me; huh?

Derek; here look with your own eyes. Why you researching him? His done with you why don't you do the same

I opened the envelope I immediately just covered my face

Me; you sure its him? It cant be the guy im looking for ?  
Im sure there are many ntando khumalo in sa and you just mistaken this

Derek; well his the only ntando khumalo who matches with what you told me and this nigga was adopted so it might be a family reunion as for you, you might not be here to see it

INSERT #213

i couldn't think I kept going up and down in our bedroom around 8 the door opened

Mami; my feet dre

Me; you here

Mami; were you expecting someone else

Me; we need to talk

Mami; ohk oh and I want to talk to you

Me; you start

Mami; after everything you said im going to meet with him  
ntando I mean

Me; you cant meet with him

Mami; huh?

Me; you just cant, I need you to forget about him

Mami; is he working for lubanzi

Me;....

Mami; dre

Me; yes he is and I don't know what they planning so I  
need you to stay away from him

Mami; you ohk?

Me; il be ohk if you promise me to stay away from this  
guy

Mami; ohk I will

I hugged her

Me; I don't want to lose you

Mami; you wont , dre you sure you ohk

Me; yes baby now your feet

Mami; yes they swollen

Me; lets give them what they deserve

She quickly changed and laid on the bed, I massaged her feet until she said she was ohk. Then we went to eat supper.

#AMAHLE

Next day i was off worse thing I was seeing ntando, dre didn't want me to see him again but I was seeing him in my professional capacity. I walked up to her bed and there was a woman and 1 girl and boy, I breathed in and walked towards them

Me; sorry to interrupt your visiting time

Woman; you are the spitting image of her

Me; how you feeling today

Ntando;.....

Me; I hope you good, you should be discharged by this week. I took his file

Ntando; I just need an explanation that's all

Me;....

Ntando; is that woman your mother?

Me;...

Woman; for someone who is a dr you one selfish person

I lifted up my head and the young girl was looking at me straight in the eyes , next to her mother I think

Woman; we just need an explanation

Me; they will take you to your last sc....

I got cut off

Ntando; please im begging you

Me; who are you working for?

Ntando; huh

Me; who are you working for

Woman; his not working for anyone , he has his own business, his own family why you painting him with the devils brush by failing to give us a reasonable explanation.

Me;.....

Ntando; darli let me

Woman; norrr man shes very selfish yet she calls herself a dr

Me; you making a scene

Woman; voestek ( piss off)

Now all eyes were on us, tears were building up and I just wanted my husband

Ntando; mpumi no, take the kids and get some air

I finished up with ntando and placed his file back

Ntando; im sorry

I walked to the next patient which was a bed next to ntando

Ntando; shes just sensitive

I couldn't take it anymore although I was working I just placed the patients file on the bed and left the ward. I ran to my office and cried there then fed myself with food after I had finally calmed down I took everything and went back to were I was.

Ntando; thank god you back

Me; can you leave me alone im trying to work

Ntando; then talk to me

Me; about what

Ntando; about this \* showing me the picture\*

Me; fine ntando we can talk as long as this is not some kind of joke to you

Ntando; I swear to god its not

Me; im still on duty

Ntando; but you know I cant leave here

Me; you getting discharged Friday, will meet that time

Ntando; thank you

I carried on with what I was doing when I was done, adel was there to pick me up I was quiet the whole drive. He dropped me off and I went to bed, was woken up by dre

Dre; you have puffy eyes

Me; ...

Dre; whats wrong/ don't tell me you were crying, mami you stressing yourself and the baby

Me; h.....

I cut myself short

Dre; what?

Me; nothing its just I met up with a woman that was so harsh towards me calling me names

Dre; at work?

I nodded my head. He touched my face

Dre; what I say should be the only thing you worry about not other people and you want to know what I say

Me; \*smiling\* yeah

Dre; you the most beautiful woman in this world, the sweetest, most sensitive, cry baby

I laughed

Dre; and the best thing that has happened to those patients and me and the guys and your parents and your entire family and mine so stop caring about what people think just be like me

Me; I cant be like you

Dre; why

Me; you not emotional and that's not me

Dre; well I need to teach you so you wont be bothered by what people say

Me; il try

Dre; I love you ohk

Me; I love you too

Dre; and we love h...

Me; him

Dre; no her

Me; him

Dre; her

Me; h...

Before I could finish saying the word he kissed me.

## INSERT #214

Friday after work I went to the nearest mall for ntando, that where he said he would be able to meet me and I was fine with it, I was shaking the entire time, he walked in the restaurant and I stood up, he was travelling with his wife. They sat down and so did I

Me; you going to have to excuse me im hungry

Ntando; totally understand

We all ordered

Ntando; can i start

Me; sure

Ntando; no interruptions please

Me; ohk

Ntando; i grew up with 2 people that i thought were my parents nathi and esther. They were your ordinary parents man nothing funny, we were not rich nor poor. When i was sixteen i got really sick and i needed a blood transfusion i thought my parents would do it but thats when i got the saddest news they sat me down and told me i was adopted i didnt believe them at all and i said we run test which came back negative. They gave me this photo \*placing it on the table \* telling me that was my biological mother but they did not know her whereabouts

they had no name or last name just a picture so even if i wanted to look it would have been impossible to find. One time when you were at the ward busy with other patients my wife saw you and she was like" that doctor is the spitting image of the woman who is supposedly your mother" that was after i told you, you look familiar and thats when i asked her to bring the photo thats all i know

I took a deep breath in then out

Me; ohk the photo you showed me ,the woman is my mother

His eyes grew big

Me; yes iv been with her from birth and i have pictures to prove that. Her name was lungile msibi and my father was tshepo ngwenya. I grew up as the only child ntando i had no brother or sister. We lived in cape town but when i was doing grade 8 my mother died

His head just dropped

Me; i know you think my mother is your mother but it is impossible , my mother had no child outside her marriage. I dont know where you got that picture and im sorry they had to lie to you about such. I really hope you find your mother

I stood up and he lifted his head up he was crying and tears just build up

Him; but what if

Me; it cant be ntando and why would they give you up for adoption , they were financially stable its impossible im really sorry

I tried to walk away but he grabbed my hand

Ntando; cant we do a dna test an elder who might have some information

Me; the only elder there is , is my grandfather and he is old he cant be dealing with this ntando im really sorry but it cant me

Ntando; dr adams please lets find a way to this

Me; theres nothing to find here just like i said they just lied to you i need to get going

I took my bag and i walked out

I felt bad but what he was saying was impossible. Few weeks passed i was now 7 months pregnant i was going on my maternity leave next month so i will be able to spend more time with my baby after he/she was born. Ntando tried reaching up to me but i just shut him off i even ended up blocking him. Saturday morning i had plans with the girls. I wore a white baggy top, legging and one off my adidas sneakers, wore a cap and they picked

me up. We got to the saloon and they got busy with our hair

Nobuhle; so what happened with that guy

Me; i blocked him, he was becoming annoying cause i kept telling him this but he told me that so nje i just cut him off

Unathi; but what if his your brother

Mbali; that would be impossible if people knew about him, they would have said something but they didnt which means what

Me; exactly mbali

Thandeka; and the only people who can tell you the truth are no more

Me; yes so i cant just believe anyone who has a picture off my mother that he might be my brother

Unathi; kodwa friend what if he puts you on those shows of missing people and dna

We all laughed

Me; then the joke would be on him cause they would be negative

Nobuhle; or you can talk to pa

Me; no man, pa is old i cant be stressing him over such

Nelisiwe; but his the only one who could help you out and the only person who can confirm if this is true or not

Unathi; or your aunt

Me; lets just forget about this ohk and never talk about it, this topic just exhausts me

Them; ohk

Mbali; how are the kicks

Me; \*laughing\* beautiful but they keep me up all night, its like my baby knows when im going to sleep nje then it goes down

Mbali; \*laughing\* that i wont forget

Unathi; im really getting pregnant this year you know

Me; ai suka and dre just goes crazy

Mbali; the way you have weakened dre kodwa

Me; \*laughing\* no i have not

Unathi; i have to agree , when i met him for the first time he was nice but as i got to know him i found out he was the completer opposite until he was with you

Me; the effect i have on him is way too strong

Nobuhle; but like how did you react when you found out what they really did

Me; yhooo mina first time i was like im not doing this

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* for real

Mbali; for real she came back to me telling me how dre was such a criminal and how she could not possibly be with him and i was standing there like " bitch you know the safest arms you could possibly be in between is the arms off a gangster"

Me; \*laughing\* now i get it that the safest place to be is in the arms of a gangster

Lady doing my hair; how i would love a gangster in my life

We all just laughed

Nobuhle;i never thought it was possible but i have to agree

Thandeka; but like whats so interesting with gangsters

Me; i personally think no let me say with me the fact that he knows when to be a gentleman and when not to be a gentleman

Nobuhle; \*biting her lower lip \* wooooo dont get me wet wena

Everyone at the saloon laughed

Me; but come on its true when his with you he becomes this huge tattooed teddy bear but when his interacting with other people he just becomes mmmm you get me right

Them; \*shouting\* hell yes

Lets me just say everyone at that saloon we all began talking to each other

Girl; but like g are sexy as fuck but not romantic

Me; no no no talk for yourself , my g is romantic as fuck

Mbali; like nami my babe is not romantic ne but i know dre is romantic as fuck

Me; yhoooo that one he will just go all out

Girl 2; ncela simshare umuntu wakho ( can we please share your man)

Me; \*laughing\* shukuthi siyenza isthembu ( that means will do polygamy)

'she laughed

Girl 3; but how do you know you with a real g

Unathi; the size off his pocket, im no gold digger but the only way to differentiate between a wanna be g and a real g is their pockets

Lady doing my hair; usho kanjani ( what you mean)

Unathi; wanna be wont have more than 200 in his pocket, you ask him that he says he is a g but he doesn't have money he will be like im hustling

We all laughed

Unathi; im being for real , they always say " im hustling, im hustling" real g he does not say im hustling he shows you that he is hustling not tell you

Girl 4; \*laughing\* friend I agree with you

Unathi; yes friend like the lady over here \*pointing at me  
\* how much cash does your hubby have in his pocket

Me; \*laughing\* how the hell am I suppose to know

Thandeka; uyasaba ukukhuluma ( she is scared to talk)

Nobuhle; but like i agree with you nathi yazi , cause they always have money by them and i mean real money to show you their hustling

Girl 1; i feel like , my life would be good if i had a g ey

We talked for hours, others did not want to leave. When we were done we paid and left to go eat

## INSERT #215

Pregnancy had turn for the worst. I had back pains , swollen feet, heartburn, shortness of breath, leaking breasts and stretch marks. My baby kept me up all night cause of the kicks and constant peeing. I took a glucose test with alex and everything was fine i was always tired

but still strong for work. One weekend i flew to cape town to see pa. My cab arrived and took me home and i just slept

The next day went down for breakfast and it was porridge

Me; morning everyone

Pa; morning baby

Mam rejoice; morning baby

I sat down

Mr; you 2 are good

Them; yes

We ate breakfast and mam rejoice began cleaning

Me; pa can we talk

Him; ohk come

We went to sit at the lounge i was scared to ask , i kept rubbing my hands

Pa; is there a problem with you and andre

Me; no pa its just something happened a few weeks ago

Pa; ohk what is it

Me; i met a guy , he was one off the guys i was treating. He had the same laugh as daddy and he told me i looked like mummy . But then i did not believe how possible it

would be for me to look like his mother so he brought a picture for me , the thing is the woman in the picture, her mother was my mother is that even possible i told him that ma did not have any children and they lied to him just imagine

Pa eyes were wide open

Me; crazy isnt it

Pa;.....

He looked on the floor

Me; pa, whats going on

Pa; baby i think the boy you met was really your brother

Me; what? Thats crazy

Pa; your father had your mother fall pregnant at the age off 15 , they were both still in high school and both the families were struggling financially bringing a baby was not a good idea. Abortion was not even considered so the only plan was for your parents to give their child away for adoption. So they did everything they had to do gave the baby away with your mothers photo and the name ntandoyenkosi

I was tongue tied

Pa; when your mum was pregnant with you , her and your father set out to look for ntandoyenkosi cause they could

support him now, they were matured and were financially stable but they looked till they gave up

My breathing got heavier

Pa; baby are you ok?

i started choking, pa called for rejoice to get me water, she helped me drink it and i felt so much better but tears began running down my face

Me; so his not even my half brother but my brother same mother and father

Pa; im sorry baby, you had to find out like this, they said they would tell you when the time was right but i guess time was not on their side

Me; i have a big brother

He nodded his head

Me; no this is not possible pa maybe you making a mistake, or they lied to you

Pa; i was there baby, when your mum was pregnant and gave birth i still remember 20 september 19.... Gave birth to a healthy baby boy. Your mum wanted to keep him after the birth but she couldnt cause everything had been processed

Me; who does that \*shouting\* who lies about having another child , this is crazy

Pa; baby calm down

Me; no pa i wont they left you to deal with this and they never said anything even my father never said anything

Pa; they knew it would hurt you but they didnt lie baby , they just didnt tell you and they were planning to tell you

Me; iv heard a big brother all this time and i didnt even know. I called the poor guy a liar over and over again what does that make me

Pa; get in touch with him. He will understand your rage and why you said that, you were unaware so he cant blame you

Me; i cant deal with this right now

I got up and went inside

Mam rejoice; are you ohk baby

Me; no

I walked up to my room and had a nap

Next day i went down for breakfast

Me; morning

Them; morning

Pa; you leaving today

Me; yes

Pa; baby please dont leave here , being angry at me i dont think i can stand that

Me; im not angry at you pa, this is not your fault

Pa; we all made mistakes angel , also dont have anger over your parents

Me; the anger i slept with last night. Today is a new day im not angry i understand the situation they were in what i need to do right now is get in touch with ntando and get to know him

Pa; i will love to meet him some time

Me; let me talk to him first. Im sure he will be freaked out to know he now has a sister and grandfather

Pa; \*smiling\* thank you ohk angel

Me; sure pa its ohk

I kissed him and went to the shower. Dressed up and they dropped me off at the airport

Arrived and dre was already waiting for me hugged him and headed to the car

Dre; so how was your trip

Me; i have a big brother

Dre; what? Ntando!

Me; yes my mother got pregnant at 15 and gave the baby away for adoption with my father

Dre;

Me; dre

Dre; his your brother, you sure mami why did you carry on looking for this I thought I told you to forget about it

Me; I did I just told pa and he told me everything. Why you so freaked out about this

Dre; im not

Me; you are

Dre;....

Me; dre whats going on, youv been acting strange when I mention ntando name

Dre; nothing

Me; we married meaning no secrets

Dre;...

Me; dre

Dre; its nothing

He kissed me and started the car

Dre; dang your parents have been together since high school

Me; yeah i have to talk to ntando

Dre; ohk

I looked at him

Dre; don't look at me like that

Me; let me just call him now

I unblocked his numbers and called him. As i was about to hung up

Him; i thought you wanted nothing to do with me

Me; can we meet i really need to talk to you

Him; ohk where

Me; can you come over to my house

Dre looked at me. Dre was a secretive and private person sand he did not want people invading his personal space. He grabbed my phone and held the speaker

Dre; no!

Me; dre I cant go out like this I might pop

Dre; mami he cant come to our house

Me; geez dre, relax his not some kind of criminal or cop

Dre;....

I took the phone

Me; helo

Him; yes ohk the address

Me; il send it to you

Him; ohk bye

I hung up

Me; im going to need you there

Dre; sorry mami I cant

Me; dre

Dre; mam sebe is there

Me; ohk

Dre; ohk

He dropped me off at home and left after an hour or 2.  
the buzz went off and it was ntando i let him in

Ntando; how much do you earn if you live in this kind off  
place and have this kind off house

Me; mostly my husband

Ntando; or konje mrs adams

Me; would you like anything to drink

Ntando; just juice

Me; mam sebe can you please bring us juice

Her; ohk

We sat down , then our juice came

Me; firstly i want to say im sorry for the way i behaved it was inappropriate but i was just confused

Ntando; i totally understand all is forgiven

Me; thank you. So this weekend i went to capetown to see my grandfather i told him about you and he confirmed that my mother got pregnant while she was in high school and because they were struggling they had to give the baby away for adoption , they left the baby with his mothers photo and the name ntandoyenkosi

His eyes grew wide

Me; they looked for you , when they got back on their feet but they could not find you. So what im saying is you my big brother

Ntando; you my little sister

I nodded my head

He lifted his head up, holding his tears back and so was i

Me; im really sorry ntando \*crying\*

He got up and just hugged me . I think he forgot i was pregnant lol but i returned the hug

Him; \*crying and laughing\* i have a sister, the same blood

Me; \*laughing\* who would have thought

## INSERT #216

Me; they both died. Mum was really sick i mean really sick she had cancer. And dad on his way back he got involved in a car accident and died. I stayed with my fathers parents but our grandmother died now its only just pa, that our grandfather thats what i call him

Her; any other family

Me; we not a big family i dont want to lie. Yes there are uncles and aunts

Ntando; and our siblings

Me; its just us 2

Ntando; can you make time and we go to cape town

Me; sure but now its not safe for me to travel

Ntando; \*smiling\* now im going to have a niece or nephew

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Ntando; tell me about you and i mean everything

Me; ask me questions so much easier

Ntando; your husband

Me; andre, his father died but his mother is still around. His family is a mixture of white, black and coloured. First

baby , his a paramedic , his a family man you will meet him some time

Ntando; your childhood

Me; it was amazing , but i started school early and finished my matric when i was 17 then went to varsity uct until dad , so our grandparents were too old for them to look after me i moved to jhb and lived with family members , graduated med school and became a doctor

Ntando; thats amazing

Me; you could say that and you

Ntando; well im married with 2 kids boy and girl, the boy is only a year older than a girl. I started my own business that's booming before that I did something that made me almost lose my family

Me; what you mean

Ntando; story for another day. My adopted parents are still alive i had 2 siblings lesedi and lesego. School years i was a nerd \*laughing\* not too nerdy kodwa

Me; \*laughing\* i doubt

Ntando; yhooo you have no idea

As we were talking and laughing

Jack ; wheres ma.... Oh helo

Me; \*smiling\* hi jack

Ntando;s ure

jack; su re

Me; dre is not here

Jack; yeah i was loo... Who is this

Me; jack this is ntando my brother

Jack ; brother since when you have a brother

Me; since a few weeks ago

Jack; ohhh like a long lost brother

Ntando; \*laughing\* yeah

Jack; you better not be scheming this queen

Ntando; i would do no such

Jack; good anyway welcome to the family big brother

We laughed

jack; but we still need to talk... Mami man

Me; what?

jack; i need a bag thats in here

Me; does dre know

Jack ; il tell him

Me; no call him

He dialled his numbers and put it on loudspeaker

jack ; dre , do you know mama is with his long lost brother here

Dre; \*laughing\* you called me to tell me that and yes i do  
Jack; why didnt you tell me about this guy

Dre; cause its not a must you know every shit about me and my wife

Jack ; ohk so im with your wife on loudspeaker i came to take the bag can she give it to me

Dre; mami

Me; papi

Dre; give him the bag thats on top off the table on my study ohk

Me; ohk

Dre; you ohk

Me; yes we ohk

Dre; ohk boy will talk

Jack ; bye

I left them and went to collect the bag and gave it to jack

Jack; bye mami and long lost brother

Ntando; you have a lot off guys in your life

Me; well they are my husbands friends , so im close with them too

Ntando; id love to meet your husband

Me; i think we should set a date , where will introduce the people in our lives with each other

Ntando; that would be great. I need to get going right now

Me; ohk let me walk you out

I walked him to his car and he left

INSERT #Iforgotsorry

#march

I was 8 months pregnant i was due the last week off april. I was on maternity leave. I was huge, moody had breathing problems and the worst i would pee whenever i coughed or sneezed. Woke up Friday morning , mam sebe brought me breakfast and i sat in bed watching tv. Papi called me

Me; hey

Papi; hows my beautiful wife

Me; im ohk

Him; what you doing

Me; watching animals

Him; \*laughing\* well get your pretty ass out off bed and get ready

Me; where are we going

Him; im taking you out for a movie , spoiling you before the princess herself arrives

Me; or prince

Him; or prince ohk

Me; ohk what time will you pick me up

Him; around 5;30

Me; ohk

I hung up and went to take a bath the time was around 4 i wore my nike leggings, black adidas baggy top, black cap and nike sneakers i just took my small bag. I looked kind of beautiful. My baby arrived at 5 and we left. The movie we would be watching was starting at 6 ending at 8. i bought large popcorns , large coke and sweets. The movie was the best i ever watched. When it was over , we walked out

Me; i need to use the bathroom ohk

Dre; you ohk

Me; \*Laughing\* im just going to the bathroom

Dre; ohk mami

I went to the bathroom, did my business and went out only to see dre standing with 4 girls.they were laughing and shit They were beautiful and had tiny waists i walked up to them

Me; hi

He turned

Dre; you done

I nodded my head

Girl 1; yhooooo you so huge , you ready to pop ne

If it was up to me i would have smacked the fuck out off that bitch

Dre; thats my wife you talking about here

Girl 2; wife, you dont say

Dre; yes wife

Girl 3; \*smiling\* the way i wished and prayed each and every day to be mrs turner

I raised my eyebrows

Dre; that would have not happened

Girl 1; so she is carrying your child

Me; what do you think? Im carrying his brothers child

Girl 2 ; \*laughing\* no need to be defensive

Dre; wa....

Me; when a bitch is trying to smooth her way to my husband dick i can be as defensive as i want

Dre laughed

Me; are we going or you will find me at the car

Dre; \*laughing\* lets go baby wami

I turned and they were just standing there

Dre; the way i want to rip your clothes

Me; dont start

Dre; come on baby they aint shit and you know that

Me; you looked excited talking to them

Dre; no i was not

Me; whatever plus you were staring and i dont blame you with those figures

Dre; one theres only one woman i stare at and thats my wife two i have a thing for woman carrying beautiful things nje

Me; \*laughing\* you have a thing for pregnant women ?

Dre; mrs adams to be exact

Me; mxm

He pulled me closer to him and placed his hand on my butt

Some guy; grab whats yours man \*smiling\*

Dre; you know i will

I punched dre

Dre; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too , what are we going to eat

Dre; ribs would be nice

Me; yeah

We walked to spurs and ordered what we going to eat and some old guy walked up to our table

Him; if it isnt the big man himself

Dre; \*laughing\* mr cresswell

Him; its good to see you out and about

Dre; have to treat the wife once in a while

He looked at me

Him; mrs adams? \*looking at dre \*

Dre; one and only

Him; its great finally meeting you

Me; im pleased to meet you too

Him; shes beautiful man

Dre; she is, isn't she

I just smiled

Dre; when did you get back

Him; february and i was planning to come see you

Dre; do just that and will talk about everything

Him; ohk better get going

Us; bye

Me; that

Dre; business

Me; ohk so kgontsi is finally done with the room

Dre; he is, that was fast

Me; yeah i just cant wait to see it

Dre; but you know , it will be after you give birth right

Me; i know alex said it should be april the last week

Dre; you nervous

Me; a tiny bit but excited too going to meet our baby for the first time

Dre; im really scared

Me; off what?

Dre; everything baby will be responsible for another human being

Me; will get through that together ohk

Dre; ohk ready to go

Me; yes

He took my bag and we walked out. Got home and i just went straight to bed

Next day dre had gone to work. Went to bath then watched tv that was my schedule most off the time. I kept in contact with ntando. We have not met our families as yet.

Mbali; helo helo helo

Me; \*laughing\* hey you

Mbali; you look beautiful

Me; ohh thank you

She laughed

Mbali; i missed you so much

She sat on the couches that were next to the sliding door

Mbali; i wish i had a bedroom like this

Me; you do so i dont know what you talking about

Mbali; mxm so how you feeling

Me; heavy mbali as in really heavy

Mbali; shame , im sure you dont leave this bed ne

Me; i do yazi, just last night i was out with my baby

Mbali; where did you go

Me; watch a movie

Mbali; this man off yours

Me; your best friend to be exact

Mbali; i taught him well ne i know

Me; \*laughing\* you did shame , arent you suppose to be at work

Mbali; im on lunch actually thought i should check up on you

Me; well thank you lala

Mbali; when was the last time you talked to your brother

Me; yesterday

Mbali; are you connecting

Me; yeah we getting there ey. His trying and so am i

Mbali; thats nice and his family

Me; i havent met them. We going to meet after i give birth

Mbali; when are you due

Me; last week ka april

Mbali; next month nje

Me; \*laughing\* yebo ao dont make it worse im already freaked out by the idea

Mbali; well it will be painful but it will be worth it trust me

Me; i know it will.

## INSERT #218

### # APRIL

Sunday woke up late only because i was hungry. I washed up and went downstairs and the guys were there

Me; hey guys

Them; hey

Dorian; you look...

Me; dont say it cause i will freak

Jack; you look beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* thank you jack

Dorian; \*laughing\* thats exactly what i was going to say

Me; whatever

Dre looked pissed i dont even know why

Dre; lets talk outside

They all walked out , i made food for myself cause mam sebe was busy. I peaked at the guys and dre was shouting at them he looked angry. I went to sit at the lounge and they got in

Dre; \*shouting\* GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY HOUSE

Themba; you overreacting man

Dre; IM OVERREACTING I LOST 500 K AND YOU TELLING ME IM OVERREACTING THE SHIT IM DOING NOW IS OVERREACTING GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY HOUSE

Me; can you keep your voices down

Themba; WHO THE FUCK DO YOU THINK YOU ARE TEELING US TO GET THE FUCK OUT ITS NOT ONLY YOU WHO LOST THE MONEY WE ALL DID

dorian; THEMBA IS RIGHT MAN , YOU BEING A BITCH RIGHT NOW

Adel; MAYBE IF YOU HELPED US OUT

DRE; YOU \*POINTING AT ADEL \* YOU SHUT THE FUCK UP I BEGAN THIS BUSINESS ALONE AND I WAS DOING A PRETTY GOOD JOB WITHOUT ANY OFF YOU SO I DONT NE...

ME; ahhhhhhh \*screaming\*

I felt a sharp pain below my stomach. They all stopped shouting and looked at me

Dre; whats wrong

Me; \*screaming \* all off you

Dre tried to touch me

Me; dont touch me

Themba; but you in pain

'me; and its all because off you, leave me alone dont even come near me

I helped myself on the couch and dialled the ambulance. I was so annoyed with all off them i was angry. The were like 5 cars outside but i chose to wait for an ambulance thats how pissed i was. Help was on the way i kept breathing in and out walking up and down

Dre; ma....

Me; dont come near me

After few minutes the paramedics walked in and they took me in

Alex; how you feeling mummy

Me; so much better

Alex; it was a false alarm

Me; it felt like i was ready to give birth let me guess braxton hicks

Alex; \*laughing\* so much better when you deal with a doctor

Me; thank you so much

Alex; pleasure lala

I went out and they were waiting for me outside i walked passed them

Dre; im sorry mami for everything ohk

Themba; yes we all sorry

I looked at them

Dorian; that will never ever happen again , whatever shit we go through will take it somewhere else

Dre; you wont see such anymore

Me; fine

Adel; are we forgiven ?

Me; yes

We left and i just went to bed

The week none much happened. Saturday morning dre was off and i had to use that opportunity

Me; papi

Dre; hmmmm

Me; can we go to cradlestine today

Dre; for?

Me; i need to buy a few stuff before he/ she gets here

Dre; not more clothes mama

Me; just a few and bottles, those types

Dre; ohk baby . Listen baby i need to go right now ne but wena bath and il pick you up at 12

Me; dre if you cant make it just say it cause i really need this

Dre; i will pick you up at 12 mami

Me; ohk

He went to take a shower and left. Mam sebe brought me breakfast i ate and went to shower i wore a blue long dress and sandals since it was hot i went to wait for him outside near the pool. I waited for him but nothing. I called him at first it rang then it just went to voicemail. I wanted to breakdown and just cry. But i still sat outside waiting for him but still nothing around 6 i went in and just went to my room

INSERT #219

Mam sebe; im sure he just got held up sisi

Me; \*smiling\* thank you mama, im going to bed

Mam sebe ; awulambanga ( arent you hungry)

Me; not really mama

Mam sebe; ncela udle tu, awudleli wena uy1 ( please eat, you not the only one who is eating)

Me; mama just order e pizza mina I want etriple deck meaty , double cheese ne

, you will also order yours

Mam sebe ; ohk sisi

I took off my clothes and wore my pjs, got in bed and put on a movie , mam sebe came with my pizza and juice and i just sat there alone.

Around 11 i was on my third movie. The door opened and i looked at the door and he was standing there then i moved my eyes back to the tv

Dre; mami

Me;.....

Dre; mami the thing is i got held up and i could not leave

Me;.....

Dre;baby im apologising here im sorry

Me;....

He tried to touch me

Me; dont even touch me

dre; please dont be like this

I looked at him

Me; like what? You are selfish you know that

dre; selfish , i just said i could not leave

Me; but you could leave me here and your son or daughter but you cant leave your friends

dre; its not even like that

Me; i asked you so nice andre , so nice and you agreed you could have just said i cant make it and i should have gone with mam sebe than making me wait for you for hours and hours let me remind you this baby in here is your priority now , you will have to leave your business to attend to him or her as for me i dont even care . What if right now i go into labour and we have nothing.

dre; i said im sorry

Me; your sorry wont do anything right now andre just leave

dre; nana cmon

Me; go back wherever you came from since they more important than us

dre; sha...

Me; leave andre

Dre: im really sorry

Me: learn to prioritize

Dre:....

Me: close the door on your way out

He left, I switched off the tv and slept. Around 3am I woke up since I needed to use the bathroom. Then went to the kitchen, I passed the lounge and he was watching soccer highlights, got to the kitchen and made myself something to eat. The chocolate sauce I was using was over, the new one was on top of the food cupboard, I took a wooden spoon but it just came back to my face.

Dre: what do you want?

Me:...

I looked away, he looked at what I was eating and moved his eyes back up, and took the sauce

Dre: here

Me: thank you

I took my bowl and walked away

Dre: im really sorry

I walked upstairs ate and slept again.

The next day i slowly opened my eyes and my ass was on his knees carrying a tray

Dre; please just listen to me

Me; yini ( what?)

Dre; mami im sorry ohk , im really sorry the shit i did yesterday i will never do it again and i promise you i will never leave you for business

Me:..

Dre: the guys messed up and I had to sort out their mess

Me: never again

Dre: I promise never again

Me; get in here

Dre; \*smiled \* wish i can but you need to get up and get ready

Me; for

Dre; buy the things you needed

Me; let me eat this first

I took my bowl and dug in then went to bath. I wore nike legging , black baggy top, black cop and wore my back slippers and he was wearing blue jeans, black top , black cop and black nikes. We left and got to cradlestone

Me; this is cute

Dre; \*laughing \* doesnt junior have enough clothes  
kodwa

Me; no baby

Dre; ohk take it

Me; but what if junior is a girl

Dre; what if junior is a boy

Me; ohk let me just take it

Dre; ohk will we need these

Me; yes but kgontsi said he bought it so we dont have to  
worry about it

Dre; ohk but we need car seats right

Me; yes

We got to that aisle

Dre; how many will we need

Me; baby kodwa 1

Dre; why one

Me; you want 2

Dre; yeah, if you going with him we dont have too keep  
on changing seat

Me; ohk lets take 2

Guy; can i help you

Dre; my man get me 2 of these

Guy; ohk these

Me; yes please

He grabbed the 2 boxes and placed them on the trolley

Guy; what else

Dre; mami

Me; sterillizes

Guy; ohk come with me

We walked behind him and the guy helped us out shame.

When we were done we went to pay

Me; lets go in here

We went inside sportscene and i bought 2 pairs of sneakers and dre. We bought food and left

Got home and i just sat on the floor at the lounge eating my food. I was in between dre legs

Dre; punka

Me; \*smiling \* baby

Dre; i love you ohk

I turned to look at him. He placed his hand on my cheek

Dre; you mean so much to me and im going to do anything to protect you and make you happy

Me; \*smiling\* i just need you to keep reminding me off that

Dre; come here

I kissed him

Me; i love you too

I said in between the kiss and carried on watching the movie

Dre; i have not told mam sebe but i think i might have found her kids

Me; what? Really/

Dre; yeah they in durban but i still need to make sure its really them before i tell her so dont let it slip ne

Me; i wont thank you for doing that

Dre; she has been the best so i think she deserves this little thing

Me; but still thank you baby

INSERT #220

The day alex predicted for my birth 29 the was no sign off any contractions. Me and dre drove to him and said im overdue but it should be this week. We went back home

Me; like junior why you doing this to me?

Dre; \*laughing\* just hold on ohk

Me; im tired baby

Dre; dont stress ohk

He kissed my hand. We got home and i just went to take a nap. Woke up after my nap and dre was not there

I called out for dre and the door opened but it was mam sebe

Her; baby he left

Me; did he say where?

Her; no baby want anything

Me; just yoghurt would be nice and ice cream

Her; ohk baby

She left and got back with the ice ream and yoghurt. I ate it while watching tv and dre came in

Me; \*smiling\* hey you

Dre; hi

He didnt look fine

Me; you ohk

Dre; yeah

He went to the bathroom and i heard water i figured he was taking a shower. After a while he walked back in with a towel wrapped around his waist.

Me; you ohk

Dre; we need to talk

Me; ohhh kay

Dre; i need to leave/

Me; leave?

Dre; yes i need to go to cape town for like 3 days

Me; you kidding me right

Dre; i wish i was baby, you have mam sebe and alex said you should be going to labour next week

Me; you joking andre !

Dre; its only 3 days

Me; \*shouting\* a lot can fucken happen in 3 days

Dre; \*shouting\* nothing is going to happen i need to do this job

Me; how dare you shout at me

Dre; im sorr...

Me; fuck you and get the fuck out off my house

Dre; why you acting like this

Me; why am i acting like this im about to give birth and you want to go do a job that you might not come back from how stupid can you be

Dre; watch yourself

Me; you promised me andre, you promised me that you would not put your job before me and you willing to break that right now

Dre; amahle im coming back in 3 days or maybe even sooner. I will be back before you know it

Me; you willing to leave me andre here with your kid to go to your death

Dre; why the hell would i die

Me; anything is possible

Dre; im not going to die

Me; \*shouting\* get the fuck out off here

Dre; you really pissing me off right now

Mam sebe ; buti please

Dre; stay the fuck out off this sebe

Me; \*shouting\* i never want to see you here ever again, you leave for this stupid job never ever come back here

dre; i have been dealing with this moods of yours for months now, im sick and tired of this

Me; \*shouting\* i said get the fuck out of my house now  
\*crying\*

He took his car keys and left , i calmed down and he walked back in

Dre ; you better sort out your attitude ... Oh and you might just want to start buying pink clothes

He banged the door and left. Mam joyce came to sit in front of me calming me down i was crying

I guess baby paris is on her way

## INSERT #221

The next morning i ate breakfast and sat on the floor watching tv. Then i heard themba voice

Themba; hey lala

Me; hey dre is not here

Themba; m i know that

Me; oh kay

Themba; i actually came to pick up his clothes

Me; ohk his suitcases are in his closet

Themba; suitcase?

Me; yeah pack all his clothes while you still at it

Themba; kod...

I cut him offf

Me; ma please show themba dre closet and help him pack  
dre clothes

They went upstairs and i wiped my tears away. After a  
while they came back down

Themba; lala he loves you

Me; no he doesnt , if he did he would be here right now

Themba; he will be there

Me; i dont want him there and tell him that , i dont need a  
selfish person next to me

Themba; bu...

Me; bye themba and travel safe

Themba; \*smiling\* hold that beauty in ohk

Me; no i hope today is the day actually

Themba; he/she knows they have to wait for their father

Me; girl

Themba; you having a gi...

Me; bye themba

He smiled and left

I carried on feeding myself with food. Got a call from ntando

Me; hi buti wami

Ntando; hi sis wami

Me; how you doing

Ntando; i should be asking you that

Me; im getting there, im just tired

'ntando; get all the rest you will need it

Me; i will and you

Ntando; im ohk , was not working today

Me; why

Ntando; was just tired

We talked about random stuff . Then went to take a shower and nap

The 30 still nothing, why does my baby want to stay inside off me. The whole day there i was at bed was watching rom coms and eating. Woke up around 8 and

went to bath got out past 10. switched off the light and went to bed.

Was woken up by a tough sharp pain on my stomach. I screamed so loud but i was alone in the house. I got out off bed and reached for my phone. The pain was coming in fast and painful i took my phone and dialled mam sebe number but nothing i tried it again

Her; helooooo

Me; ma please come in the house now, now ma

As i said that water ran down my legs. I dialled alex numbers and he quickly answered

Me; im in labour

Alex; where are you

Me; im at home alex

Alex; stay put im going to set up the department and send medics for you, breath in and out ohk

Mam sebe rushed in wearing her gown. I grabbed mine and i kept walking up and down i tried so hard not to push

Mam sebe ; let me call ubu...

Me; \*shouting\* NO !He does not deserve to be here

after minutes off being in pain the medics arrived and they took me in. It was my birthday and i was in labour i dont know if it was a good day or not

I arrived at the hospital and alex was already waiting for me.

Me; \* breathing in and out\* its time alex

Alex; im afraid not, epidural right

Me; yes

I sat up straight and the nurses came , and placed needles on my back when they were done i laid back. I was still in pain though i kept tossing and turning, tossing and turning they woulnt even allow me to go take a shit. As i was tossing and turning squeezing mam sebe hand . My aunt and mbali mum barged in i was so happy to see them i hugged them both and they were just with me through that process. Pa was flying in first thing in the morning the pain was so unbearable i was crying. Around 5 am doctor alex walked in with 3 nurses in scrubs

Alex; lets meet our baby

He separated my legs and they had to leave i had no support system and that hurt me but mbali mum and my aunt insisted on staying so i agree

Alex; oh; im going to count you down to 3 and push ohk

I nodded my head

Alex; 3... 2...

I pushed while letting out the loudest scream...

Alex; again 3... 2...

Me; ahhhhhhhhhhh

The nurse walked to the door and opened andre barged in breathing heavy

Dre; im here , im here oh my god i made it

I could not help but scream again

I wanted to be mad at him but it was not the time, mbali mum and my aunt left the room. He held my hand i squeezed it

Alex; 3 2 1 push

I did as told , we did that a number off times and i was ready to give up now. Dre was in pain cause i was squeezing too tight but i did not care

Alex; ohk i need you to give me your biggest push ohk

Dre; you doing great give this one your all ohk

They count me down and i gave it my all and i could feel my baby getting out. I heard her cry my eyes were shut and it was so hard to open them that how exhausted i was. I smiled hearing her cry and finally opened my eyes but she was not crying. They were pumping her i began

shaking , when they pump her it was ovias she could not breath on her own

Me; \*screaming\* alexxxxx

They rushly took her away and they sedated me and i zoned off

Woke up the next morning and the thought off paris came back again , dre everything. He was laying next to me. I shook his head

Dre; hmmmm

Me; wake up and get out

He slowly lifted his head up

Dre; what?

Me; what you doing here

Dre; i cant believe you even asked me that

Me; you have the ordesity to say that after everything you have done

Dre;....

Me; i told you i dont want you here

Dre; baby i made a mistake by thinking i can control time. Im deeply sorry ohk you can be mad at me any other day

not today please. Just imagine welcoming our daughter while we angry at each other please can we forget it

Me; fine

He stood up and kissed me

Dre; \*smiling\* happy birthday

Me; \*laughing \* i even forgot its my birthday

Dre; what i was hoping for not to happen, happened the 2 most important woman in my life share a birthday

Me; where is she

Dre; since they took her , have not seen her

Me; im scared papi

Dre; she is way stronger than that ohk , she will be ohk

He hugged me

PARIS ADAMS

INSERT #222

Later that day people came in showering me with gifts and paris and wishing me a happy birthday. I was not even excited for my birthday i just wanted to see my baby. Dre helped me out and we walked to the baby icu.

Tubes were all around her. She was in a incubator. Dre left to do her birth certificate, we both signed it and it was confirmed. I could not help but cry when we got to my ward. Later that day people left and it was just me and dre.

Next morning woke up and dre helped me out. He also showered there then went to see our baby. We were there for a while until alex came

Alex; how are you

Me; not so good, how is she

Alex; well at this point i cant say. She had difficulties breathing on her own so we had to help her but now will remove the tubes tomorrow and out off the incubator lets hope she will be breathing on her own

Dre; you have to do each and everything in your power to save her

Alex; iv done all i could at this point. Its up to her

I just felt weak and my knees failed me. Dre took me back to my room i couldnt even eat and i was not in the state to see people. The next day dre was sleeping on the chair

Me; baby

He slowly lifted his head

Dre; this chair is painful

Me; \*smiling\* come sit here

I shifted for him and he joined me in bed

Me; how did you know

Dre; alex called me and soon after that mam sebe

Me; did you finish the job

Dre; yeah we scored 30

Me; mil?

He nodded is head

Me; what job were you pulling

Dre; forget about that lets just focus on our princess

Alex; and here comes your princess

My eyes grew wide, my eyes were filled with tears and he slowly placed her on my arms. It ws love at first sight. She was so tiny i was so scared i would break her

Alex; shes a fighter just like her parents

She was beautiful , light as andre i mean i thought i had given birth to a white kid.

Dre; seems like trouble

Alex; one thing for sure man, you need to keep them boys away

I laughed

Alex; il see you later he left

Dre; shes so beautiful

Me; take her

Dre; ohk, how do i even hold her

Me; just adjust her neck. Just like that ohk you got her

Dre; yeah

I let go and the look on dre face was just beautiful

Dre; we created some princess here

Me; we have havent we

Dre; and her name suit her just perfect

Me; paris adams

He looked at me

Dre; i love you so much

Me; \*smiling\* i know baby i know

Someone; is this my great grandchild

With that voice my smile just grew big and i turned to the door and it was pa

Me; \*smiling\* one and only

Pa; oh my word

He sat down. Dre gave paris to pa  
Pa; shes beautiful just like her mother  
Me; \*smiling\* really  
Pa; yes really , helo princess helo baby... This is all yours  
you better protect it  
Dre; i will protect them with my life  
Pa; congratulations, you a father  
Dre; \*laughing\* that word has not sinked in yet , im a  
father  
I laughed.  
Dre mum; omg my grandchild \*smiling\*  
We all laughed in that room. She rushed to pick her up  
Dre mum; she is so beautiful  
Dre grandmother; then she is definitely from this family  
Our families arrived. Everyone was excited to just touch  
paris. I fed her , burped her, then put her to bed  
The next day i was discharged and my baby. Dre picked  
us up and we left for home

I still had on stiches i went straight to my bed. I breast  
fed paris

Dre; get yourself rest

Me; paris

Dre; il be ohk, you exhausted

Me; you sure

Dre; yes im sure , you pumped the bottles so i will be fine

Me; ohk

Immediately when i closed my eyes i just zoned off

## #ANDRE

I did not think it was possible for me to fall in love with another girl besides my wife. I changed her nappy, they taught me how to do that while she was in the hospital then tried to get her too sleep after minutes off her going crazy she finally fell asleep. Then went to place her where she will be sleeping the room was beautiful, and warm kgontsi out did himself. Slowly placed her on the cot and set the baby monitor and went downstairs.

I sat on the couch

Mam sebe ; your daughter is really beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* thank you ma

As she was about to leave

Me; ma can i talk to you

Mam sebe; ohk

Me; sit down

She sat opposite me

Me; i know you already told me a few things about your kids but i need you to help me out with something

Mam sebe; anything

Me; like can you tell me something that you can identify them with that even though they grow older you can still identify them with maybe a scar or birthmark

Mam sebe; mmmmm \*she paused\*

Me; anything

Mam sebe ;Sphesihle has a birthmark on her left hand near her thumb and she had a scar just below her knee i remember that very well cause off the bicycle and simphiwe he has scars on the knees and below legs but theres one that goes across his forehead it not big but you can see it, he did not have a birthmark but i know he has black spots on the side off one off his eyes

Me; ohk that may come in handy

Mam sebe; but you think you will find them

Me; i hope so

I thought i had found them but i had to make sure before i get her excited. Then my angel cried went up to her

room and she was crying like crazy tried to settle her down but she wouldnt

Mami; let me

I gave her to her

Mami; whats wrong my angel

She said that going to sit on the chair and fed her

I just took out my phone and took a pic

## INSERT #223

Few weeks passed. None of us slept. Paris would cry at 3 and back again at 5 then 7 . My baby was exhausted and at times i could not help her out cause maybe the next day i had to go to work. 1 june she turned one month and the cries had become so much better. Woke up at 5 cause she was crying walked up to her room. I took her bottle and took her tested it and it was fine. She took a lot off my features but one everyone was in love with was her eyes they were the same colour as mine. My genes were way too strong. She had the longest eye lashes, pink pouty lips , big eyes, and big curly hair. She was only one month but her hair was big and it was curly. I fed her then burped her

Me; why you want everyone to wake up with you

I took her down with me downstairs and made myself coffee. I placed her on the swinger that was on top off the kitchen counter and she was just looking at me with those big bright greenish and blueish eyes

Me; how can one being be so beautiful kodwa daddy is going to kill some boys

sHe laughed

Me; daddy will, wont he right baby, right my princess

She kept on laughing. Took my coffee and we went to sit at the lounge turned on the tv and the time was past 6.

Mami; was wondering where you 2 were

Me; should you not be resting

Mami; yeah but im used to waking up early so when i heard the princess herself not crying i just got up to check up on her but you both were not in your bed

Me; you look beautiful

Mami; \*smiling\* mxm what you talking about.... Helo my baby , mtana ka mama yena \*she picked her up\* you fed her

Me; yes everything relax

Mami; \*laughing\* i am you not working today

Me; no for the rest off the week actually but i need to run some errands

Mami; great iv invited ntando family for dinner tomorrow , so make sure you here

Me; what???

Mami; yes I promised him that after paris was born

Me; I cant make it

Mami; no dre, im doing this in order for him to meet you please don't do this to me

Me; tomorrow

Mami; yes they need to meet paris and you need to meet each other

Me; ohk il be back before 7

Mami; perfect let me go take a shower while i still can

Me; ohk

Mami; you going to bath her right

Me; ohk but you know you need to be there

Mami; yeah when im done ke

Me; ohk

I kept thinking about this whole dinner thing and I knew that I could not come or things will not go well

She left and mam sebe walked in the lounge

Her; morning

Me; morning ma

Her; can i get you something right now

Me; no ma im ohk, what you going to make for breakfast

Her; i was not sure as yet

Me; if it wont be too much trouble can i have toast, half done eggs and all the other things i prefer eating

Her; \*laughing\* ohk

We bathed the girl herself and her mother dressed her up , mami took great pride in paris hair i mean she always kept it in place and tidy. We ate breakfast and the rest off the day i was with my family. The next day around 12 i left for the warehouse

Me; ohk I need to talk to you

Themba; whats up

Me; im suppose to be meeting with mami brother

Themba; ahhh that's nice, well you need to get going

Me; theres something I never told you

Themba; what?

Me; lets talk in there

We walked to the room I usually work in. I gave themba the envelope. He opened it

Themba; why the fuck are you investigating him ? Dre no  
Me; that's mami brother

His eyes grew wide

Themba; \*laughing\* this is not something to joke about  
dre

Me; Im suppose to meet this guy today , with my wife and daughter. How ?

Themba; dre you cant go there and I mean you can never meet this guy

Me; his mami fucken brother, pa grandson sooner or later il meet this nigger

Themba; or we can just take him out

Me; are you fucken crazy? You know how mami is sensitive she will lose it

Themba; and you willing to risk loosing your family after all the shit you did to keep it together

Me;....

Themba; he will destroy you? And you married to his sister ! Just imagine what he will tell mami, this guy fucken hates your guts , all of us in fact, if he tells mami

anything we done, she will be done with us turner. You ready to lose everything for that.

Me;....

Themba; you don't have to do it but I can personally take him out. Im not willing to lose mami, I don't know about you

## INSERT #224

ME; we not taking him out

Themba; use your head

Me; I am and theres no way in hell we taking him out, his mami only sibling, only sibling may I remind you and should she find out about this will lose her forever and paris

Themba;....

Me; what I need now is to buy time, to think what im going to do

Themba; what will you do, you think you can just go to this guy talk to him and all shall be forgiven fuck no but let me break it down for you if he founds out you married to his sister and we her sisters boys, he will go back to her sit her down and tell her what went down between me,

you, him and the guys and we the reason he lost everything then mami will pack her bags and paris and walk out and you will never see either off them ever again

Me; shut the fuck up

Themba; b...

Me; \*shouting\* shut the fuck up ohk, I don't need you rubbing salt in my wound our wound actually cause im not in this alone

Themba; dre we cant run away from this

Me; I think I nee....

My phone rang

Me; it's mami its 7 I was suppose to be home for this dinner thing

He took my phone and answered it

Themba; mami... listen his grandmother called him like 2 hours ago, he forgot his phone cause he had to rush to her so I know he was suppose to meet your brother so im not sure how you will get ahold off him but if he gets here il tell him to come home immediately ... ohk sharp... enjoy

He hung up

Me; that's fucked up

Themba; we doing this for her

I took my phone and we walked out. Deon and the other guys looked at me

Me; what?

Deon; whats going on?

Me; with what?

Deon; why is there 2 off you keeping things from us

Me; we not

Deon; whispering in there

Me; just drop it

Themba; we just working on something new

Them; oh yeah

I walked to my car

Themba; where you going

Me; I have to go to my grandmothers house in case she calls

Themba; will get through this

Me; I have to deal with lubanzi now this , how the fuck will we get through this

Themba; I don't know but we will

Me; oh maybe I should just tell mami everything that way she wont have to find out from him

Themba; il fucken kill you myself if you do that

Me; fuck you man

I left and drove to my grandmothers house

Her; ayanda

Me; hi my love

I kissed her cheek and sat down

Her; are you o....

Her phone rang I just jumped

Her; your wife

Me; ma I need a favour, I need you to tell her you called me cause you had an emergency please

Her; why am I lying to her

Me; ma please

Her; talk why am I lying to her

Me; il tell you after

She answered and told her what I told her to tell her then I talked to her and ended the car

Her; I don't have an emergency, and you just go here you did not get here hours ago. Il beat your pale ass right now if you unzipping your pants for every women

Me; no ma im not cheating on her never

Her; then what?

Me; long story my love

Her; its not a long story for me to call her back and tell her everything I just told her was a lie

Me; I was suppose to meet his brother today

Her; why you so selfish , you should have been there for her

Me; I know ma ohk but I cant

Her; why

Me; I knew her brother even before I knew I was going to be married

Her....

Me; ma im not comfortable talking to you about this

She took her phone

Me; fine.... I slept with his wife and he saw me

Her; ayanda this thing off yours, off putting your pants down for everyone wearing a dress this is exactly what happens

Me; so it will be awkward ma

Her; then you better talk to my makoti and explain it to her, her brother will probably kill you but maybe your wife will forgive you

Me; ohk let me go sleep im tired

Her; ohk want anything

Me; no ma

There was no way I was going to tell her the truth, she does not know what I do and it was best that way for my entire family.

Later on that day woke up and left for home. I walked in and went to the lounge. She was sitting on the floor breastfeeding paris

Me; mami

She lifted her head up

Amahle; hey how is ma?

me; uhm she is ohk sorry I couldn't make it today

Amahle; its ohk, ma needed you

Me; and you needed me to

Amahle; I understand as long as she is ohk

I sat next to her and kissed her forehead

Me; how was the dinner

Amahle; went well but I knew it would have been perfect should you have been here

Me; big family

Amahle; no 2 kids and his beautiful wife, 1 boy and 1 girl  
thando and Iwandle his wife name is mpumi

Me; that's really nice

Amahle; they fell straight inlove with her, shes full please  
burp her

Me; sure

I took her and rub her back

Amahle; im coming

She got up and went to clean herself up and came back  
down

Me; so what did you talk about

Amahle; his family, my family

Me; was I ever mentioned

Amahle; you the man of this house of course

Me; and how did you represent me

Amahle; \*smiling\* good, told them nothing but truth and  
no nothing about what you love doing

Me; I know you wouldn't spill the beans

Amahle; mxm

Me; and him, whats interesting about him

Amahle; not much , he runs his own business, family man  
only

Me; that's all

Amahle; \*laughing\* yeah why

Me; no secrets in the closet

Amahle; you one uptight guy you know,if I didn't know better id say you ran away in order for me to research him for you

Me; \*laughing\* maybe

I kissed her

Me; I love you so much, I love you both

She burped. We laughed

Me; yes you too nana

Amahle; you both are everything to me

Me; lets finish this once and for all

Amahle; \*laughing\* im still healing so no

Me; \*laughing\* you love sex so much, that's what you thinking about

She punched me

Me; I don't remember saying anything that would make you think about that, but your mind is already forward

Amahle; \*laughing\* you lying

Me; mama like things ne baby \*talking to paris\* I never said anything about making you a brother

Amahle; \*laughing\* punka stop, what is she suppose to think about her mother manje

Me; \*laughing\* the truth

She stood up

Me; where you going

Amahle; nowhere im just feeling hot, she removed her tights

I just stared at her

Amahle; \*laughing\* then you say I like things, you already drooling... is she already sleeping

I checked her out

Me; daddy magic hands ne

Amahle; mxm go put her to sleep

I got up and went upstairs and took the monitor

Amahle; switch off the lights

Me; what are we watching

Amahle; evil dead

Me; ohk

Amahle; so why did you come here empty handed

Me; you the one who is in charge of snacks

Amahle; I chose the movie and did this entire setting but papi

Me; I was suppose to do this but you chose to do it so snacks

Amahle; you evil mr adams

Me; and you love my evil self dr adams

She walked to the kitchen and i waited for her, she got back and we started the movie

## INSERT #225

The next day, woke up and went for a jog around the block, when I was done clearing my head went back and texted themba that im telling her everything , he immediately called

Me; im telling her

Themba; boy don't

Me; no man

Then I just hung up

I walked upstairs and she was already up in paris room

Me; mami I need to talk to you

Her; everything ohk

Me; just come

She called masebe and gave her paris

Her; ohk lets talk

Me; not here

I took my car keys

Her; dre im not even dressed

Me; lets go

We walked to the garage took my car and went out,  
closed the gate and headed out

Me; you know I love you right

Her; yes and I love you so much more

Me; do you really

Her; yes dre why would I even be here with you if I didn't

Me; do you love me in such a way, you would give up  
everything for me like I would

Her; dre you scaring me now, and can you please slow  
down

Me; do you

Her; yes everything. I did vow that in front of everyone

Me; what if I did something in the past that could possibly  
end us

Her.....

I looked at her

Me; would you still love me

Her; dre you going way to fast now and you asking me questions that are scaring me

I joined a street that went up the mountains and when we were at the top, I stopped and got out off the car, it was a clear view of jozi. She also got out

Me; i need you to listen to me ne mami

Her; whats going on dre

Me; just listen

Her; ohk

Me; i love you, i love you so much, you and our daughter both. You know i did some things before i met you, i did some crazy shit, i did some fucked up shit, i did horrible things mami and they all coming back to me now

Her; what do you mean

Me; your brother

Her; ntando?

me; yeah

Her; what about him

Me; we have a history me and him, which is why i refused and always made excuses when i had to meet him

Her; dre...

I walked away from him and stood on the edge

Her; can you please talk to me

Me; he was a cop, he was obsessed with me mami i mean obsessed with me, would get in trouble at work because of me, he went all out to try and put me behind bars.

There was a year he finally got me mami, he had everything that would put me away but i couldnt let him, i just couldnt mami, he had a daughter

Her; dre what about her daughter

Me; i had to use her to let go off this mami i had no choice

Her; what happened to her

Me;...

Her; \*shouting\* DRE!!!!

Me; i was still young that time, i wanted power, i wanted money i didnt care about anything but myself and my family

Her; dre can you just talk

Me; we all made mistakes in the past right some we can fix and some we cant just fix

Her; what did you do

Me; im the reason he lost his first born daughter, he almost lost his wife and his entire family and on top off that he lost his job as cop

INSERT #226

#AMAHLE

Me; what?

Dre;...

Me; ntando had a first born and you you...

I couldnt even finish what i was saying

Dre; things happened, it was not suppose to get that far, it was not suppose to happen

I just got teary

Me; dre

Dre; mami im sorry this was the last thing i wanted to happen

Me; what if he does something to paris, revenge

Dre;...

Me; \*shouting\* DRE does it ever stop with you, the pain, the fear , the secrets and more enermies will it ever stop

Dre;....

Me; now my only brother, only dre you made him feel the worst possible pain any man can ever feel, now how do you suggest i look at him, because of you i migh....

I just held back

Dre; im sorry

Me; thats the only thing you good at, saying sorry all the damn time

Dre; what you want me to say, i cant take back anything

Me;....

Dre; do you know the shit i will have to go through, you possibly packing your bags and taking our daughter with, having to face ntando worse part him knowing i am your husband. Knowing pa and your entire family could hate me. Knowing that everything iv tried so hard, iv shed sweat and blood protecting might have been just a waste

Me;....

Dre; i know this is hard for you, and im sorry i had to do you like this especially with your brother and im sorry we have to constantly live in fear but i wont be sorry for who i am cause you...

I walked away

Dre; \*shouting\* Cause you stood in front of everyone and the big man himself and you took me as your husband knowing what i am, and what i come with as for our daughter she can hate me all she wants when she finds out everything about her father cause she didnt choose me but you did

I turned to look at him

Dre; you chose me mama, you left all the lawyers, the dr and you went for this idiot and il be forever grateful for that but i need you now, i did not tell you this cause i wanted you to leave. I told you this because i wanted to be honest with you and i want you to stick with me

Me;...

Dre; this is just another test that we can pass

Me; can we really

Dre;...

Me; i need to go back to paris

Dre; no

Me; take me back

Dre; can we finish this

Me; \*shouting\* You will call ntando, ask him to come and then you will tell him everything

Before he could respond, i went in the car and looked outside the window. After 20 minutes or so he got in and he drove us back home. He parked in the driveway i went to shower, when i went out he was sitting on the bed

Dre; his coming

Me;...

I wore my gown and went to my babies room. I didnt even know if what i was about to do was the best thing or if i will just regret everything after that. I was scared and i kept thinking about my parents, after bathing paris, i dressed her up and went back to my room. Dre was not there i placed her on the bed while i dressed up. After few minutes dre walked in. He just looked at me and i looked at paris the whole time

Dre; i want you to know i would do anything for you

Me;...

Dre; but i cant force you to stay with me as much as i love you

Me;...

I stood up and went downstairs, as i was coming down the stairs the buzzer rang and i told masebe not to answer it.

Me; ma please take paris and go to your room or for a walk please

Mamsebe; everything ohk baby

Me; after here i really hope so

Masebe; im worried about you baby

Me; \*smiling\* il be ohk ma just take her

Masebe; is andre ohk

Me; yes ma

The buzzer rang again

Me; please ma

Masebe; ohk

She went to take a few things for paris, i waited for her then opened the gate, the car parked in the driveway and my heart was beating out off my chest. They knocked i opened and let them in, my hands were shaking the whole time

Me; im sorry to invite you so late

Ntando; its completely fine, your husband was eager for us to come

Wife; yes and we would not say no especially since, we could not meet him the last time

Me;...

Wife; i still cant get enough off your house

Me; \*smiling\* would you l....

Ntando; What the fuck is this?

I turned and dre was coming down the stairs. I just closed my eyes asking god to give me strength. Ntando came running towards dre and i just ran to stand in front of dre

Me; STOP OHK I NEED YOU TO STOP AND SIT DOWN

Ntando; IS THIS SOME KIND OF JOKE ? WHAT THE...

As he walked to me and dre direction his wife pulled him back

Me; i need you to calm down

Ntando; CALM DOWN, HOW THE FUCK DO YOU WANT ME TO CALM DOWN INFRONT OF THIS ANIMALS PRESENT

Me; d...

Ntando; THIS IS YOUR HUSBAND , THE MAN THAT GOT YOU ALL THIS, THE FANCY CARS, THE FANCY HOUSE ALL OF THIS BY BLOOD . YOU FUCKEN DISGUST ME

Me; ca....

Ntando; HOW CAN YOU BE WITH SUCH AN ANIMA....

Me; \*shouting\* GET THE FUCK OUT OFF MY HOUSE IF YOU GOING TO TALK TO ME AND MY HUSBAND LIKE THAT. I BROUGHT YOU HERE TO TALK LIKE DECENT ADULTS, IM SORRY ABOUT WHAT HAPPENED BUT I CANT DO ANYTHING TO CHANGE THAT OR HIM AS MUCH AS I WOULD LOVE TO HATE HIM FOR THE PAIN HE BROUGHT

TO YOU AND YOUR FAMILY, BUT THE IS NO WAY IN HELL IM JUST GOING TO STAND HERE AND ALLOW YOU TO SPEAK TO MY DAUGHTERS FATHER AND HUSBAND LIKE THAT S...

Wife; you speak like you no mother, he is a murderer , who is the father of your daughter

Me; you can say i speak as though im an animal too but i protect whats mine and his mine and im willing to lose a brother for him.

## INSERT #227

Ntando; i wonder what will your daughter think o...

Dre; now you pushing it dont involve my daughter in this

Ntando; \*shouting\* What about my daughter ? My job, my ex wife. I lost everything because of you

Dre; it was not suppose to get that far

Ntando; well it did

Me; can we just sit down and talk

Ntando; i have nothing to say to you

Me;...

Ntando; i hope you come into your senses and you open your eyes to see you have married the devil himself

He held his wife and they walked out

Dre; im...

I just raised my hand up and walked upstairs. I went to take a long shower, fixed paris things and went to bed

## #ANDRE

I didnt know what to say to her i wont say i was not glad he chose me over his brother but i kind of felt guilty too. And i didnt even expect her to have said that. I went to take paris from masebe and went upstairs, i slowly opened the door and she was crying. I walked up to her side and she looked the other side. I squeezed my self next to her

Me; i know this is not enough but im sorry i had to make you go through that, im sorry you might have just lost a brother because of me but we really thankful for that cause we love you mummy, dont we nana we love mummy right

She slowly turned facing us

Me; \*smiling\* we happy aint we

Paris just laughed causing mami to smile to

Me; im sorry my baby

She sat up and kissed me

Mami; i would do it again if i had to cause i love us so much, and you and paris are the only people i need

I pulled her in a kiss and the princess herself felt the need to pull our hair, mami took paris and i got in next to her. What i had in front off me was all that i needed and i would die protecting no matter what.

Me; mami

Mami; hmm

Me; what about pa, your family

Mami; will cross that bridge when we get there it wont be easy but we have each others backs right

Me; il always have your back

Mami; then thats all we need

Few days passed mami didnt hear anything from ntando and we were both ohk with it.

Next day I headed to the warehouse and called the guys in, we had to talk about business

Jack; first when are we meeting mami brother

Themba looked at me

Me; why do you think you can just take part in everything that goes on with my family

Jack ; cause we also family that's why

With that said i just laughed and sat down

Dorian; ohk the thing with this guy

Me; who

Dorian; cresswell, well he wants to deal with you and i mean you only

Me; ohk il take care off that leave him to me

Dorian; yeah but he needs to know that you will not always be around and that may cause trouble for him cause if he wants to be like that , then when he has issues he must not expect us to solve them for him

Me; il talk to him, leave him to me il ask to meet up with him

Dorian; ohk

Shane; brandon did not deliver

Me; what?

Shane; yeah and when i call him or his friend it just goes to voicemail and clients are waiting for their stuff, our buyers too

Me; does this nigga know that his making us lose money

Shane; im not too sure, so i thought maybe i should go down to eldorado to look for him

Deon; i heard he moved

Shane; no he didnt

Deon; im telling you, the money is coming in hard he bought a car and house

Me; at the same time

Deon; yeah

Me; \*laughing\* this idiot is new and his already bringing eyes to himself. The cops will be on top off him like a hawk

Shane; and this bitch we dont know how loyal he can be , what if he sells us out

Me; dont worry it wont have to get to that boy. do you know where he resides manje

Deon; nope but il ask around his hood then il let you know

Me; yeah even if you dont tell me, then you go to him ohk

Deon; ohk

Themba; the polo was sold at the auction ne , the people paid in cash

Me; only the polo

Themba; no but the polo is the only car they bought in cash the rest they will settle the payment in 3 months maximum a year

Me; i cant take a year man

Themba; then it will be 3

Me; yeah lets work around 3

Dorian; well im sorry to be the barrier of bad news but lubanzi wants to meet with you

Me; you saw him

Dorian; no but he sent me this

I took his phone and read the message " big brother tell your little brother i want to talk to him and if he feels he does not want to then his starting a war"

Me; where did he even get your numbers

Dorian; that i dont know and he knew very well who he was sending it too

Me; let me call that number

I dialled the number and it rang

Guy; helo

Me; can i speak to lubanzi

Guy; speaking

Me; this is turner

Lubanzi; \*laughing\* iv been waiting for this call

Me; you wanted to meet with me

Lubanzi ; let me start with congratulations

Me; on what?

Lubanzi; your marriage and your baby

Me;.....

Lubanzi; she made you so weak that you put the ring on it  
not that i blame you she is fi....

Me; \*shouting\* DONT FUCK WITH ME LUBANZI

Lubanzi; im sorry did i press the wrong button

Me; what game are you playing

Lubanzi; come on arent you having fun cause we are

Me; we?

Lubanzi; yes we , meet me tomorrow at 2 im taking you  
out for lunch my treat

Me; you will sms me the details

Lubanzi; most definitely

I hung up

Themba; and nou?

Me; his working with other people and i will know those  
people tomorrow

Deon; but who

Me; that i dont know, i need to go

Themba; so you will sms us the details

Me; no im going alone

Deon ;are you fucken crazy

Me; nothing is going to happen relax il let you know everything tomorrow when i get back

Got home and went upstairs, mami was undressing paris

Mami; good you here please bath her

Me; ohk

After a few minutes , she came back with paris bath water. I bathed her , then put on her nappy, the heater was on and it was hot so i didnt put her clothes on. I fed her then burped her. After a few moments she got out off control but got calm again and fell asleep. I put her to bed while the wife was bathing. Then went to my bedroom

Mami; dre!

Me; hmmmm

Mami; come here

I went to the bathroom

Me; yes mami

Mami; come join me

I bit my lower lip and she just laughed. I joined her and she was busy turning me on , only to say no

mami; can we go out tomorrow?

Me; tomorrow i cant mami, lets make it next weekend ohk

Mami; ohk are you working

Me; no i have a meeting with potential new clients

Mami; ohk then Sunday we going to church

Me; with who

Mami; you of course ao

Me; \*laughing\* no mami

Mami; why dont you want to go to church

Me; ay mama it will be weird for me nje

Mami; god be with you

Me; \*chanting\* hallelujah pastors wife

She splashed water on me. We both laughed

We got out and went to bed

Saturday morning ate breakfast with my princess and my wife. Left them went to shower and just dressed up nice and simple. Went to where i was suppose to be meeting

lubanzi. It was some restaurant it must be new cause i did not know it. I walked in and the hostess led me to their table and i just laughed

Me; wow the whole gang hey

Said that grabbing a sit

Lubanzi; as you can see

Me; \*laughing\* so you need all off these people to take me down wow

Lubanzi; dont flatter yourself

Me; let me get myself a drink first before we talk

## INSERT # 228

Me; so where did you find these 2

Lubanzi; its easy to find your biggest enermies

Me; and you think , you will get what by joining forces with these 2

Orlando; everything

Me; as for you, werent you suppose to be in the cape

Orlando; you can see that im here , so why you asking me such

I raised my eyebrow

Me; and you, where the fuck is the shit you suppose to have given it to me weeks ago

Brandon; i dont supply for you anymore

Me; \*laughing\* you supply for him \*pointing at lubanzi \*

Brandon; yeah

Me; well good luck trying to buy another car well iv met your team the others i dont need to know what is this about

Lubanzi; amahle

Me; what about my wife

Lubanzi; she will be my wife soon

Me; \*laughing\* i dont have time for this

I got up and he placed his phone next to me

Lubanzi; i dont know whether its the married life or you have just became so weak

Me; ....

Lubanzi; you have became weak and clumsy, doing shit in front of everyone to see and they say you the best in the industry, do they say that cause of the drugs you sell

Me; ...

Lubanzi; cause its so clear there is no way in possible that you could be the best

Me; you wasting my time boy

Lubanzi; difference between me and you is im the smartest those tattoos dont mean shit if you cant use your head in this game. Those tattoos are just ink and its unfortunate you had to choose that life instead of a clean one, be a smart g man

Me; \*smiling\* if you ever disrespect me and what i stand for il take you to your grave sooner than you think

Lubanzi; always the talk

I stood up

Lubanzi; before you leave let me show you, how smart i am have a look you might want to change your mind about leaving so soon

I took the phone and it was a video off me killing helen, i sat down

Lubanzi; im sure amahle is not worth you getting arrested for life, and cops are always short off evidence but this takes you away for life, your money gone, your business gone, your reputation gone even your wife will leave you for this shit then you will just be a miserable bitch

Me; so you planning to take that to the cops

Lubanzi; if i have too yeah

Me; so wena you want my wife

Lubanzi; and your kid

Me; oh so you want my wife and my kid in return for that  
Lubanzi; yeah

Me; why? I thought you did not care about amahle  
Lubanzi; iv always cared about her if it was not for you. I  
would have put the ring on it but now i have leverage  
over you and i can get what i want

Me; i dont have time for this bullshit

I got up

Brandon; do you know detective maake, no you do know  
him

I turned and looked at him

Lubanzi; i send this to him and its over for you i mean  
over

I sat down

Lubanzi; good this will be so much easier

Me; how do you plan i do this

Lubanzi; well thats up to you, cause i know you have  
already spoke shit to her about me. So you will fix that  
and i will sweep her off her feet again

Me ; ohk

Orlando; ohk???? His bullshitting you man, he would never give up amahle just like that

I turned to him i was not pissed , my blood was boiling

Lubanzi; thats what i think too

Me; so what the fuck do you want me to do, get on top off a building and shout im divorcing my wife or maybe you accompany me as i break the news to her

Brandon; im not buying this at all

Me; i dont give a fuck what you buy or not

Abel; well you will have to prove to us , that you will actually do it

I quickly stood up, causing my chair to fall

Me; \*shouting\* I ALSO DONT HAVE TO PROVE SHIT TO YOU \*pointing at his forehead \*

Waitress; sir im going to need you to calm, you making our customers uncomfortable

Me; il deliver your future wife soon , dont even contact me

I took my shit and walked out

I took off with such great speed if i was not a good driver i would have probably died. Beside the fact that bitch disrespected my wife and my kid. I knew i had a bitch ass nigga in the warehouse that was fucking with me. I was

so pissed that i could not control my anger i pulled up in my driveway and walked in. Went upstairs and mam sebe was with amahle in our bedroom

Amahle; hey you ohk

Me; \*shouting\* FUCK NO!

Amahle ; ma can you please take paris

Mam sebe; ohk baby

I left to go to the closet, took one off my gym bags and went to the study

Amahle; whats wrong

I walked up to her and she stepped back hitting the door behind her

Me; \*shouting\* your fucken boyfriends are whats wrong with me

Amahle; what? What you talking about

I banged the door just next to her face

Me; \*shouting\* im talking about your boyfriends, orlando, brandon and lubanzi

Amahle;....

Me; have nothing to say now

Amahle; whats going on andre

Me; YOU , YOU thats whats going on.

Amahle; you speaking in riddles

I got even more frustrated i kicked my glass table that broke, pushed my laptop and other gadget on the counter onto the floor i was so angry i could not even control my anger

Me; \*screaming\* YOUR FUCKEN BOYFRIENDS ARE THREATENING ME , THEY HAVE EVIDENCE OFF ME KILLING , KILLING FOR YOU ! \*pointing at her \* I COULD BE TAKEN AWAY FOR YEARS. NO CONNECTION OFF MINE CAN SAVE ME FROM THIS BULLSHIT YOU UNDERSTAND THAT , THEY HAVE ME WRAPPED AROUND THEIR FINGER DO YOU HAVE ANY IDEA HOW FUCKED UP THAT IS

Amahle....

Me; \*shouting\* AND ITS ALL BECAUSE OF YOU! I COULD LOSE EVERYTHING BECAUSE OF YOU, NEVER SEE MY DAUGHTER BECAUSE OF YOU. YOU HAVE JUST LITERALLY DESTROYED EVERYTHING THAT I HAVE WORKED SO HARD FOR... ALL THOSE YEARS BEING STUCK IN A JAIL CELL, NEVER GETTING A CHANCE TO BURY MY OWN GOD DAM FATHER BECAUSE I WANTED THIS LIFE, ALL THIS MONEY, THIS KIND OF HOUSE, I GOT SHOT A NUMBER OF TIMES , PAIN AFTER PAIN, BLOOD TO GET ALL OF THIS AND ALL OFF THIS COULD BE TAKEN AWAY BECAUSE OF YOU FUCK MAN!

She just got teary

Amahle; dreee

Me; I SWEAR TO GOD IF YOU CRY IM GOING TO LOSE IT

Amahle; why you doing this?

Me; just leave

Amahle; \*shouting\* well at least my exes wont have you raped

She tried to open the door i ran to the door and closed it before she could

Me; DONT FUCKEN PISS ME OFF

Amahle; remove your finger out off my face and get yourself out off my face

I left the door knob and she left

I packed all the things i would need and walked downstairs. Amahle was holding my baby i tried to kiss my baby

Amahle; dont even kiss her

I looked at her and left. Drove to the warehouse and called out for themba

Themba; hey whats up

Me; lets walk

Themba; ohk

Me; some shit happened today

Themba; what?

Me; lubanzi has a video off me killing helen

Themba; what?

Me; he said i give her amahle and my kid he wont send the video to maake

Themba; as in detective maake

Me; that one

Themba; that guy wants any tiny little thing to take us down man

Me; so just imagine if he got this video, not even one connection off mine can get me out off this mess

Themba; fuck i really think we fucked this time around

Me; way fucked man

INSERT #229

Themba; so you think someone is a snitch there

Me; what other explanation

Themba; yeah cause they may have took the video

Me; yeah but who

Themba; oviasly no one can know about this

Me ; no one man

Themba; so what we going to do with lubanzi

Me; i will kill him this time im not turning back

Themba; it has to be done

I did what i had to do and left

Went home and went to my bedroom. My girls were on my bed i got in and went to the shower was practising what i would say. Got out

Me; can we talk

Mami; yes you beautiful, arent you mummy loves you doesnt she

Paris was just laughing looking down to her mother

Me; i know you mad at me but i need you to understand that i was just angry , i was not thinking about what i was saying mami. They threatening to take everything from me and in both situations i lose everything including you and paris i was just frustrated that i had no power whatsoever i always have power or other options but in this case i have nothing mama they have power over me and i hate that

Mami;....

Me; im really sorry about what i said, you were the only person that time who i can take out my frustration on

She got up, i held her arm

Mami; \*shouting\* Dont touch me, after everything i did for us, everything and this is your way of saying thank you spitting on my face

Me;...

Mami; you ungrateful b...

She looked at paris, and back at me tried to walk away

Me; i did not mean all of that, you always say things you dont mean everyone does, today was just my day im sorry mami. I really am that kind of frustration will not happen when i cooled down i realised i went to far ohk, im sorry

She looked at me

Me; i understand if you angry with me

Mami; im not angry that you shouted and screamed no but angry that you think im the cause off your problems no actually our problems. If thats the case why did you even bother to marry me if you going to blame me for each and every ex off mine that threatens your life or tell you some shit. You dont hear me when you make me angry talking about what your ex did to me and blaming you for what happened to me or the things i face blaming you i never do that

I sat on the bed and she handed me paris

Me; i know that baby. I was out off line and i know that

Mami; yes you were out off line

Me; im sorry

Mami; instead of coming down on me , shouting screaming and telling me all that you should have just sat me down and told me what lubanzi said since this is our problem will have to deal with it again

I pulled her in for a kiss

Me; im really sorry ohk

She nodded her head

Me; but im going to handle this so dont worry about it

Mami ; bu....

Me; no baby, let me put our princess in bed

I got up and went to put paris in bed

Went back and she had zoned off, tucked her in and went to bed. Next morning she was not next to me, walked to paris room and she was feeding her

Me; morning queen and princess

Mami; morning king can you burp her

Me; come to daddy you, you want to come to daddy dont  
you

I picked her up and placed her no my left shoulder  
rubbing her back

Mami; so you busy today

Me; i dont think so why

Mami; i wanted you to drive us to the clearwater i need a  
few things there

Me; ohk have you talked to your brother

Mami; no

Me; if...

Mami; if nothing , we fine just like this

Me; you happy

Mami; could not be more happy papi. I feel like everything  
is perfect now

Me;.....

Mami; whats wrong

Me; nothing

I was glad she thought everything was perfect but only if  
she knew that we were not even close to being perfect.  
The princess herself burped and gave her back to her  
mommy but she refused so i just went down with her

Me; morning ma

Mam sebe; morning cup off coffee

Me; yes please ma make it strong

Mam sebe; ohk

I went to sit outside near the pool and bonded with my only daughter. We all ate breakfast and went to bath

The queen looked beautiful and sexy you would swear she was not a mother and her body was juts too lit. We drove off to clearwater and headed to pick n pay we did our shopping she bought few things for paris and we left. On the car her phone beeped and it was like she saw a ghost

Me; whats wrong

Mami;....

Me; baby

Mami; hmmmm \*quickly tuning to me \*

Me; whats wrong ?

Mami; nothing my mind i just all over the place

Me; you sure you ohk

Mami; yes what will you eat

Me; what do you want

Mami; id like fish and chips wase fishaways

Me; ohk will go buy them

Mami; you cant turn the car, drop me and paris off then wena you can go on your own

Me; ohk

I dropped them off and drove away

#AMAHLE

I put paris to bed and grabbed my phone. And read the message over and over again " i really need to talk to you, explain things to you , fix things i miss you nana and i know you miss me dont tell me you forgot about the year we spent together. Meet with me so i will explain everything love you lubanzi"

First thought that came to my mind was where did he get my new numbers cause my numbers changed after i got kidnapped and what did he want from me. Would i meet with him or not

Dre arrived with our food and we ate

Me; are you going to work tomorrow

Dre; yes and knocking off at 7

I knew tomorrow was my chance to go and talk to lubanzi to stay away from us

Me; eish ohk

Dre; what?

Me; no i was just asking , kind off miss work

Dre; not enjoying your stay at home

I punched him

Dre; \*laughing\* what im just asking

Me; i love my stay at home. If it was possible i was going to be a stay at home mum and became a housewife

Dre; then why dont you

Me; i didnt go to school for almost 10 ten years to stay at home

He laughed

Dre; but i can provide for us our need and just want

Me; i know that but still i wont do that maybe at the age of 40 i can take an early retirement

Dre; 40?

Me; yes 40 baby not less than that

Dre; will we be done by the age off 40

Me; with?

Dre; our babies

Me; \*laughing\* that i dont know , 3 is enough we only need 2

Dre; \*laughing\* thats not going to happen 5 kids , 1 adopted right

Me; definitely one has to be adopted

Dre; you see

Me; im not going to get pregnant four times baby forget it

I stood up and took our takeaways , checked up on paris and went to bed

## INSERT #230

The next day paris woke me up then woke up dre up. He wenrt to take a shower, ate and left for work. I dialled the number that smsed me

Guy; helo

Me; lubanzi

Lubanzi; baby

Me; what do you want

Lubanzi; a chance with you, just meet with me

Me; meet me at honey dew

Lubnazi; ohk you will sms me the details

Me; yeah, dont try and do any fucked up shit

Lubanzi never

I went to shower and wore a denim skirt, with black top and black sneakers and dressed my baby up and we left got to that place and walked in. Paris was laying on her stroller and she fell asleep. Ordered myself juice and lubanzi walked in good looking. He was wearing a tux black tux, all formal and sat opposite me

Him; this is your baby

Me ; yes

He turned the stroller to him

Him; she is beautiful

Me; thank you \*turning it back\*

Him; so you wont allow me to hold her

Me; no

Him; please

Me; for what?

Him; i do love kids and i would not hurt her , you know

Me;.....

he removed the belt and picked her up but she was still sleepy

Me; you going to wake her up

Him; no i wont just relax

He pat her back and the waitress came back to our table

Her; \*smiling\* you all look just cute

Me; n....

Him; thank you, i have a beautiful family dont i

Her; yes sir definitely

My eyes grew wide

Her; can i get you anything

Him; i will have this t bone and this baby

Me; just ribs, greek salad, chips and juice

Her; ohk

She left

Me; never say that ever again. What do you want exactly

Lubanzi; i wanted this and explain to you everything

Me; start talking

I took paris and put her back

Lubanzi; im sure your husband did everything to turn you against me, told you lies and all types off bullshit but the truth is i loved you from the time i first saw you nana and everything we had was real

Me; thats bullshit

Lubanzi; ohk i lied about a few things, my parents and few other stuff

Me; your name

Lubanzi; and my name

Me; important stuff. You never loved me you just wanted to get close to dre

Lubanzi; did i want to get close to dre yes. Before i met you they told me turner was madly in love with this girl, a girl he would give up everything for , he would die for but that they had broke up and the girl hated him

Me; who told you all off that

Lubanzi; your love life was not that private. So i was keen to meet you i knew you would not be able to say no to a dr until i found out you a dr too. They showed me your pictures and i asked for a transfer at bara. When i bumped into you for the first time at the cafeteria that was not suppose to happen i was not suppose to meet you that day but it happened and when it did for those few hours i forgot it was all a job but i felt some kind off way

Me; but you carried on

Lubanzi; i had to the 11 months i was with you was because i wanted to be with you. And you also know i only asked you about your ex at a later stage cause i was

reminded it was a job they were not aware it was no longer a job for me i fell in love with you

Me; you kidnapped me at my own home

Lubanzi; i was forced too nana i dont work alone you have to know that

Me; why do you even do crime , you a dr for fuck sake

Lubanzi; but i also love crime

Me; this is just bullshit and i wont stand for this

I stood up

Lubanzi; do you really love dre

Me; yes

Lubanzi; more than me

Me; yes. His my first love and still is

Lubanzi; you see your first love of course everyone is hung up on their first love. You just gullible

Me; say whatever you want to say that man i love with my entire soul and if i could i would give him the world. I loved you but what we had was nothing compared to what i had with my husband and still have

Lubanzi; .....

Me; now stay away from me and my family. Im happy lubanzi not that you care

Lubnazi; i do care

Me; no you dont cause if you did, you would leave me in piece and my husband and kid

Lubanzi; i just know he will hurt you

Me; then its my mistake if he does thats my problem to deal with not yours, you need to stop meddling in my life and even if he hurts me im sure it wont even come close to how you hurt me

Lubanzi; im sorry amahle

Me; all is forgiven. Now stay away from my family

Lubanzi; his not what you make him to be you know a guy like him does not deserve you

Me; funny how you want to be like him but you want us to be together , that means you also dont deserve me

Lubanzi; rather no one gets to be with you

I moved my hand to his on the table

Me; you a really great guy if you not acting crazy. Move on get yourself a nice girl leave this life ye crime does not suit you lala. Il always care for you which is why i came here and let me make my own mistakes ohk. Thank you for the lunch

I got up, kissed his cheek and pushed the stroller as i was about to reach my car he called out for my name

I turned

Me; hmmmm

Lubanzi; let me help you in the car

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

She placed paris on her car seat and closed my door

Lubanzi; goodbye kiss

Me; cheek

Lubanzi; \*laughing\* ohk

I got closer to him and he kissed my cheek and walked away. Was kind off hurt but glad that was sorted

Drove to dre mum and she was indoors. The excitement on her eyes when she saw paris

Her; hi baby

Me; hi ma

We hugged

Her; look at you all grown up \*talking to paris \*

Me; hi ma

Masesi; helo baby, you ohk

Me; im ohk ma and you

Masesi; what will you eat

Me; im full ma but juice would be nice

Masesi; ohk

She went to the kitchen

i stayed there for a while and later that day went home

The next day was just the usual. Taking care off paris and helping my hubby prepare for work. Around 1 went to take a shower, went to my bedroom and lotioned myself when the was a knckok on my door

Me; yes

Mamsebe; baby themba is here for you

Me; ohk im coming ma

I just wore a gown and went out

Me; hey

Themba; hi

My eyes just grew wide

Me; whatsup

Him; can we talk in private

Me; oh kay lets go outside

We walked out and sat down

Themba; \*shouting\* WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU

INSERT #231

Me; what?

Themba; WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU? HOW STUPID CAN YOU BE

Me; what are you talking about

Themba; this , this \*throwing an envelope to me\*

Me; whats this

Themba; open the fucken envelope

Me; stop shouting ohk

He breathed out loud. Opened the envelope and it was pictures off me and lubanzi, kissing his cheek, him holding paris, kissing paris, holding his hand. It was like we were a family

Themba; what is this amahle?

Me; you following me

He banged the table that was separating us

Themba; dont fucken start with me. I was following lubanzi only to find out his going to have lunch with my best friends wife. You fucking this guy

Me; fuck no!

Themba; then explain this. Turner will kill you

Me; you going to tell him

Themba; i have to give him feedback and this is the feedback

Me; pl...

He cut me off

Themba; what the fuck where you thinking, with our biggest enermy amahle are you fucken insane and the most disgusting shit. You let him hold turners daughter , play happy daddy with our daughter do you have any idea the risk you put her , yourself, and turner in

Me; i j...

He cut me off again

Themba; i dont fucken care what you have to say you want to go around fucking this guy. Fine just keep paris out off your shit

Me; she is my daughter seems like you have forgot

Themba; then start acting like her mother

Me; what?

Themba; keep your niggas hands off paris including yourself. You lucky im not going to tell turner about this cause if i do. We might be laying you to your final resting place stay the fuck away from lubanzi

Me; you seriously wont let me explain

Themba; explain what? Everything is here here amahle. You went to meet with this nigga after everything dre told you. You allowed him to hold turners daughter. You fucken kissed him on the cheek and held his hand is the shit im seeing blind siding me

Me;.....

Themba; khuzeka this aint no game. People die and wena being the queen off all of this being the queen of a crime lord you might want to know your place and stop playing nice to every guy. Im not saying this because of some shit im saying this warning you cause i care about you and i dont want shit happening to you cause i know it will destroy my boy just stop this madness when he says stay away. Just stay away

Me; so you wont tell him

Themba; no im going to destroy this pictures, hope this is the last time we fight

I nodded my head

Themba; come here

I went in between his arms.

Themba; i did this cause i care dont hate me

Me; i know

When we got back inside. He left and i went to sit with my baby. later that day hubby was not back as yet so i took an early night with paris. In the middle off the night i felt cold hands wrapping themselves around me i turned.

Dre; sorry i woke you

Me; its fine , what time is it

Dre; 3am

Me; where were you?

Dre'; i knocked off at work at 9 then rushed to a meeting with my new client cresswell that took forever around 12 as i was about to come home. The guys called me begging me to come there and here i am

Me;mmmmmm

Dre; \*smiling\* what?

Me; good thing you dont smell any woman perfume or you would be sleeping on the couch

Dre ; maybe i washed

Me; did you?

Dre; \*laughing\* maybe

Me; you wouldnt even look at another woman even if they paid you to

Dre; \*laughing\* got that right come here

I got closer to him and we kissed. I got on top off him , never breaking the kiss. He squeezed my butt . I grinded his d and his breathing got heavier. He flipped me over and looked down on me we stared at each other he was sexy as fuck his tattoos still made me go crazy, his body and his lips before i pulled him back into a kiss he held my top and took it out leaving me naked i pushed his boxers down with my legs and kissed his neck " DONT BE GENTLE" I whispered to his ear. He immediately held my waist and pulled me closer to him, he was in between my legs and laid on my chest joining our fingers together pinning them down to the sheets so i dont get out off his hold , he kissed my neck and i let out a moan he sucked , licked and i was trying so hard to get out off his grip but i couldnt

Dre; dont move

He got off me and i checked him out, he took his jeans removing the belt, my eyes grew wide and walked back to me getting on top off me he was hard af pulled my hands above my head, took the belt and wrapped them with it and tied it to the bed i was just staring at him

Dre; kiss me

I tried to get up but it was hard, then he kissed me and began rubbing my clit , i separated my legs wide for him , his rubs got faster and faster and the louder my moans got then he entered me i gasped for air , he held my legs tight going in and out, his groans got heavier , my moans got louder. I could not feel my body and the fact that he tied my hands made things even more pleasurable and hard for me. The faster and deeper he went the closer i could feel myself coming. He untied me picked me up and pinned me to the wall and was not gentle at all. I came and he came i tried to catch my breath but it was so hard i could not feel my legs and my knees were failing me he picked me up and laid me on the bed

Was woken up by paris at 5 i felt like i didnt even sleep. Papi was still fast asleep, took my gown and went to the princess room. Fed her and noticed my wrist was bruised and found myself smiling i burped her and tried to put her down but nothing i tried everything but nothing until i had to go to her daddy

Me; baby.... Baby

Dre; hmmmm

Me; wake up

He turned and faced me and looked at paris crying and immediately got up

Me; please take her , maybe she will calm down

Dre; come here angel, you want daddy dont you

I gave her to him , laying her on his shoulder patting her back . After 2 minutes she settled down

Me; thank you

Dre; did she eat

Me; yes i guess she just missed you

Dre; \*smiling\* you ohk?

me; me?

said that walking in the bathroom , went to wash my hands on the basin

Dre; look at me

I looked up on the mirror and he was standing behind me

Me; what?

He wrapped one arm behind me since the other he was holding paris and looked at my hands. I just kept quiet

Dre; i did this?

Me; no

Dre; mami talk to me

Me; it was not you papi, but us but it does not hurt

Dre; it looks like it hurts

Me; no it does not

Dre; im sorry ohk im never doing that ever again

Me; \*shouting\* NO!

Dre; huh?

## INSERT #232

Me; i mean this is nothing , plus i told you it does not hurt

He smirked

Me; what?

I turned my back on him and washed my hands

He laid his head on my shoulder , his arm around my waist

Dre; is it me or my baby enjoys being freaky and enjoyed herself like hell even though the were consequences

Me; is she sleeping

Dre; answer me?

Me; answer you what?

dre; you loved what i did to you this morning , tying you up \*he bit his lower lip \*

Me; \*laughing\* papi

Dre; mami

I tip toed and whispered on his ear

Me; i loved it now go put the princess on her bed

Then I walked out. I could hear him laughing and i laughed too walking downstairs

Me; morning ma

Masebe; morning baby, unjani? ( how are you)

Me; ngyaphila ma wena unjani (im good ma and you)

Masebe; ngi right baby bengiyobeka intombazane ( im good I was going to go and check on the girl)

Me; yho phela ma today bekangangifuni bekafuna ubabakhe ( you wont believe but she wanted nothing to do with me today she wanted her father)

Masebe; \*laughing\* ay intombazane umtana ka baba from kdala futhi ( she is daddys girl and has been )

Me; kakhulu ma ( too much ma)

Masebe; bokumele nithi u ntombikayise ( you were suppose to name her ntombikayise)

Me; \*laughing\* belizomufanel ma ( it was going to fit her perfectly)

We laughed, took everything i needed and went back upstairs

Went to take a long bath , went out and wore denim shorts and just top and went to join my family. Few weeks passed i blocked lubanzi number cause i wanted peace in my marriage. Paris was growing up and it made me so happy. Pa visited us for 2 weeks and it was great being with him always is

## #ANDRE

August paris turned 3 months. I eventually found out who was selling me out and it was the silent worker i was not even aware he was there i didnt even hesitate to put a bullet on his head. I was meeting up with lubanzi to get done with this once and for all. Kissed my wife and daughter and left didnt even tell her were i was going

Got to the place where we were suppose to meet and got out off the car

Lubanzi; you failed man

Me; no i didnt. Shes at home with our daughter, you give me everything i need and you go to my house

Brandon; that simple

Me; that simple

Themba; whats funny is, all you mother fuckers want the queen , but you willing to give her up for him?

Them;.....

Lubanzi; dont even try it

Themba; try what?

Lubanzi; making them go against me its not going to work

Themba; im not was just asking

Me; you want to make the deal or not

Lubanzi; you know i cant trust you , giving her up just like that

Me; what you want me to do?

Lubanzi; here \*handing me a phone\*

Me; want me to call her

Him; yes

Me; are you crazy

Him; actually you right, you going to keep your phone on call , go to her and talk to her tell her you leaving pack your bags if you have too then you have the video

Me; are you crazy?

him; are you doing it or not

Me;.....

Themba; turner!

Me; \*shouting\* what?

Themba; tell me you not thinking off doing that shit, you will break her

Me; i cant risk losing everything i worked so hard for

Themba; you choosing this life over her

Me; will you follow me home

Lubanzi; \*smiling\* yes

Themba; turner dont do this kill this bitch

Me; just go home, this is my shit to deal with lets go man

We drove with lubanzi car and left themba there

Got to my place and he parked outside the gate. Breathing in and out

Lubanzi; take the call now

I took it and placed my phone on the pocket and walked in

Masebe; bhuti

Me; hi, where is amahle

Masebe; room, is everything ohk?

i just left her and went to our bedroom , she was busy with paris

Amahle; baby, you back early

Me; can we talk?

amahle; ohk you ohk?

Me; yes can you put paris on her bed

Amahle; are you ohk

Me; just do it

She left and came back

Amahle; ohk lets talk

Me; we had some good times babe, i really really loved you and our daughter

Amahle; loved? wHat you mean loved

Me; i mean \*i paused\*

Amahle; \*\* dre!!!

Dre; i cant do this

Amahle;\*laughing\* you a bad liar, im hungry want anything to eat

She walked away i pulled her with her arm

Me; im not kidding do you honestly think i was having late meetings really use your head

Amahle;...

Me; i met someone and iv been with her for a wh....

Before i could continue, she slapped me

Me; i cant keep lying to myself. I want nothing to do with you including paris i want to start a new life wi....

Amahle; \*shouting\* are you fucken kidding me

Me; shout all you want, im not doing this anymore

Amahle;...

Me; i want to start on a clean slate with her , no kid just us so you can take paris

Amahle; \*crying and screaming\* PARIS IS NOT A DOG THAT YOU CAN JUST GIVE TO ME AND FORGET SHE IS YOUR DAUGHTER YOUR ONLY DAUGHTER , YOUR BLOOD RUNS ON HER VEINS WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU!

Me; il pack my bags

She began hitting me, throwing stuff at me

Me; STOP IT!

Amahle; HOW CAN YOU DO THIS TO US, DRE YOUR CHILD. I LOVE YOU , LOVE YOU PLEASE DONT DO THIS, IL FORGIVE YOU FOR CHEATING BUT LEAVING THATS

JUST CRAZY DRE PLEASE YOU CANT DO THIS YOU NOT  
DOING THIS

Me;...

Amahle; im sorry ohk, im sorry for meeting with him

I turned to look at her

Amahle; themba said he was not going to tell you but  
punishing me like this dre, i just went to talk to him. You  
just blowing this out off proportion

Me;...

Amahle; dre please

I left everything i was touching and walked up to her

Me; you met up with lubanzi

Amahle;...

She stepped back as i got closer to her

Me; im going to kill you, \* shouting\* im getting sick and  
tired of your bullshit after all the shit i told you and you  
went to meet him

Amahle; can we talk about this

Me; theres nothing to talk about

I walked up to my closet and started packing

Amahle; dre can you think about paris even if its just for a  
minute, please. You cant tell me you love me today and

the next you packing your bags telling me about a woman or you mad about lubanzi why you really going, you forced to do this arent you

Me;...

I took my bags and walked to the door she ran there first and stood in front of the door

Amahle; just please put your bags down and lets solve this

Me;..

Amahle; you giving up everything, us just got some hoe you leaving your daughter just for some hoe that will call you turner. Your own flesh and blood

Me; move

Amahle; what the fuck am i suppose to do now dre

She was just screaming, crying begging me not to go

Amahle; andre please dont do this to me please. I gave up so much for you for you just to give up on me like this dre please

Me; i need you to let go of me , keep everything but im going

Amahle; \*shouting\* I DODNT WANT ALL OF THIS I WANT YOU OHK. I WANT YOU DRE... DRE, LETS JUST TRY TO SOLVE THIS PLEASE DRE

She was holdidng me so tight, i removed her arms around me, picked her up and threw her on the bed and walked out, the door quickly opened. She grabbed my top screaming my name, masebe appeared from the kitchen holding paris. I pushed her hands from mine and walked out...

## INSERT #233

When i walked out Lubanzi handed me the phone and left.  
I drove to the warehouse and themba was there

Me; how the fuck can you keep this from me

Themba; just stay the fuck away from me

Me; you knew amahle went to see lubanzi

Themba; i said stay the fuck away from me

Dorian; whats going on

Me; stay the fuck out of this

Themba; why dont you tell them that you chose money over your wife and daughter

Me;...

Themba; \*shouting\* TELL THEM

Deon; what?

Jack; what?

Me; instead of focussing on me and my family you should do your job

Themba; fuck you and this job. I aint jack seems like you forgot that

Jack; why do you all have to involve me , always about jack

Me; stay the fuck out off this

Themba; i always do my job what about you, you all about this place and money what about your wife your daughter, the moment you did what you did you broke her and maybe lubanzi deserves her more than you

I threw the bag i was carrying on the floor and went for him. I threw the first punch as i was about to throw the second he moved away and hit me. we literally fought and no one was getting involved. I was hurt he was hurt. We were both hurt

Me; fuck you

Themba; fuck you too nxa

Deon; is it true man

Me; all off you stay outta my business

I went to wash my face cause i was bleeding on the nose. Took the bag and went to my place i went to take a long

ass shower. The next morning woke up around 5 , 07:40 i was on the bus heading to capetown

## #AMAHLE

Weeks passed i was losing my mind, i cried each and every day every second i got i would just cry. I did not know whether paris was eating or what thank god for masebe. I was losing my mind i could not think the thought of men disgusted me. Dre birthday haunted me even more

September paris turned 4 months i was getting better. No one knew about my separation with dre i didnt even know were to start telling people about it. Woke up one Friday and went to see my lawyer to draw up divorce papers i stayed there for hours i wanted to take everything from him and leave him with nothing. Got home went to take a hot shower until masebe disturbed me

Me; yes ma

Masebe; can you please eat baby , you have not eaten for weeks

Me; im not hungry

She walked in. Paris was sleeping next to me. She sat on the bed edge

Masebe; i dont know what happened but one thing i know is that he loves you

Me;...

Masebe; i know it hurts believe me i know the pain of losing the man you had hoped you were going to die with

Me;...

Masebe; but if you have plans of getting him back, laying here and not doing anything will not bring him back, not eating and losing weight will definitely not make him come back. Baby you have lost so much weight and its not good for you or paris

Me; i try but i cant mama

Masebe; i know its hard but think about that princess next to you

Me;...

Masebe; we need some meat so when he sees you, he will know what he left make him beg to come back

Me; \*crying\* i just dont understand how we got here mama i just dont understand. It hasnt even been a year since we got married but we already divorcing

Masebe;...

Me; i was nothing but good to him, everything was good  
ma usually married people cheat either because the  
partner is too busy, the bedroom business is not good but  
we were perfect ma, we were still excited about our  
addition next thing he tells me i can keep paris he wants  
to start on a clean slate with another woman... How ma?  
How did we get here?

I just broke down. She rubbed my back i cried so much, i  
got masebe top soo wet and unfortunately i woke up the  
princess.

Masebe; sleep ohk , il take care of her

She took paris, gave me pills and i immediately zoned off

Woke up after a few hours and went downstairs. They  
were siting on the floor mamsebe was playing with her

Me; ma

She turned to me

Masebe; you ohk baby

Me; thank you so much ma \*hugging her\*

Masebe; im here for you baby

I sat next to them and she got up to cook for us. Looking  
at paris just reminded me of dre, her eyes , her dimples

Me; its just me and you now ohk... I will never ever leave you and thats a promise im not willing to break to you... I love you so much my angel

I pat her back. Later that day we ate and we went to bed

After a few days i was sitting outside right next to the pool with paris

Masebe; baby there is a man for you

Me; who is it ma

Masebe; he said its shaun peterson

It was dre lawyer

Me; you can let him in ma

I removed my legs, as i was about to grab a towel he showed up, i placed paris on the chair took the towel and picked her up

Me; shaun

Shaun; mrs adams

Me; what brings you here

Shaun; this, what is this

He threw the envelope on the table

Me; my lawyer sent you this

Shaun; yes, your demands are just crazy...turner wont agree to this

Me; did he

Shaun; i have not talked to him yet, he will take you down if you think you can just take away everything of his

Me; well we will

Shaun; can you think this through, will give you 50%

Me;i will take my 50% oviasly

Shaun; thank you

Me; then paris will also take her 50%

Shaun; what you get is what paris gets

Me; yes and i get a 50 and she gets a 50

Shaun; you being unreasonable

Me; does he know you here

Shaun;...

Me; im not changing anything and if you want to go to court, cool with me lets see what the judge will say about your dealings

Shaun; you pushing it

Me; please leave my house

Shaun; if i were you, i wouldnt want it to go to court, knowing your soon to be ex husbands connections

Me;...

He left i was so angry i just wanted to die so i would have peace in my life

INSERT #234

#andre

I was in a meeting when my phone kept ringing

Me; can i take this

Chris; go ahead

Me; shaun im busy

Shaun; i received divorce papers from your wife

Me; \*shouting\* WHAT?

Shaun; yeah and she is taking everything from you

Me; fuck that, make sure those papers dont get processed

Shaun; what? Did you hear what i said

Me; and did you hear what i said fuck that, make sure those papers dont get processed, make them run after you il keep my distance so she cant get a hold of me.

Shaun fucken make sure those papers dont get processed

Shaun; what are you planning

Me; call me when there is a problem

I went back to the table

Me; sorry about that

Chris; its fine man

Me; as i was telling you. What his giving you will be nothing to what i have to offer you when we start working together

Chris; iv been with brandon for years now

Me; and what do you have to show for it

Chris;...

Me; lets make money its not just about me here we in this together

Chris; 55/45

Me; yeah with the figures i gave you, imagine the money you will make a month. Forget about bringing it here il take care of that meaning you dont have to spend more money trying to get it here

Chris; ohk

Me; we on

Chris; \* smiling\* we on

Me; perfect. It was nice meeting you chris

Chris; nice meeting you mr turner  
We shook hands and i walked out...

#AMAHLE

Masebe; theres a man wanting to see you

Me; im coming ma

Got out , dressed up and went out , checked the screen monitor and it was lubanzi

Me; hi

Him; hey may i come in

Me; what do you want?

Him; i want to talk to you?

ME; what do you want?

him; to talk

Me; no now leave

Him; just 10 minutes

Me; no

Him; im not leaving until i know you ohk

I opened up for him and he came in. We sat at the lounge

Me; what brings you here

Him; i thought me and you were good, no fighting anymore we sorted this

Me;...

Him; or i got the wrong impression

Me; want anything

Him; just beer if you have

Me; ma

Masebe; il bring it

Me; so what brings you here

Him; i heard what happened

Me; heard what?

Him; dre, mistress , leaving you everything

Me; im the joke off the town arent i

Him; no of course not, his the idiot in this situation

Me; so why you here comfort me or something like that

Him; just because we cant be together does not mean i cant comfort you

Me;.....

Him; can you let me , i know you need someone lala

Me; im ohk lubanzi

Him; i knew he does not deserve you

Me; and you do?

Him; yeah

Me; oh please lubanzi i just want to be alone can you please leave

Him; no im cooking for you tonight

Me; masebe is here for that

Him; send her home

Me; this is her home

Him; send her to bed early or tell her to relax will eat together

Me; no

Him; his probably with his mistress having the time of his life and you just sobbing

Me;...

Him; im just saying

Me; why are you here

Him; im trying to be here for you

Me; maybe i dont want anyone to be here for me cause i want dre to be here

Him; \*shouting\* WELL HIS NOT

Me;...

Him; im sorry its just you need to forget about him now i dont want to fight can i just cook for you thats all

Me;...

Him; its just dinner not sex

Me; fine

Went to talk to masebe and she said she will be in her room with paris and i agreed

Lubanzi took out his jacket, folded his shirt, took masebe apron and wore it.

Lubanzi; come sit with me

I went to sit on the kitchen counter

Me; so how have you been

Him; good ey, business is good, work is even more good

Me; love life

Him; dont have any?

me; ohk

Him; you

Me; well going back to work next month, so happy , my baby is growing up those are the only great things happening in my life

Him; you need to move on

Me; its going to take more than 2 months for me to forget what happened between me and my soon to be ex husband

Him; ohk but can i ask you something

Me; sure

Him; will you ever forgive me for what i did and maybe even give us a chance again

Me; i dont know , how far

He looked at me

Me; what?

him; \*smiling\* you just beautiful

Me; thank you now food?

him; just relax , im done

He dished up and we ate together around 11 it was time for him to go.

Him; can i see you again?

Me; i dont know

Him; ohk can i get a hug

Me; sure

I tip toed and hugged him, he leaned in for a kiss and i just pulled back

Me; forget about that happening  
And walked back in, he drove off and i closed the gate,  
went to bed

## INSERT # 235

Lubanzi was still snooping his way back into my life and my daughters but i was not having it. Mbali, nobuhle , nathi supported me all the way pa was still unaware of what was happening only because i knew it would kill him. Dre mother supported me also his entire family actually i was getting better each and every day and paris would also frustrate me cause she would cry none stop missing her father , videos and photos sometimes made it better not all the time.

one morning woke up, went to bath, bathed paris and we left i needed to be outdoors. We went for a picnic i just wanted to be with her. I thought about going back to dre and begging him to come back although i convinced myself i was over him to be honest i was not even close i wanted him here and i felt so empty, yes i was there , yes i was with paris but i felt so empty without dre. We were there for hours then i drove us back home.

#ANDRE

After a week, i was back at jozi. Everything of mine was set and everything was going according to plan. I went to visit some guy

Him; turner

Me; hey you the guy im suppose to be meeting

Him; yeah you can sit

I sat down

Me; so will you be able to do this

Him; yeah dont worry about it

me; ohk il leave you to it

I gave him space , with everything he needed of mine. I called ugo

Ugo; turner

Me; ugo

Ugo; everything going according to plan

Me; yeah but id rather here from you

Ugo; dont worry your girls are ohk, they actually went out for a picnic today

Me; did you see her

Ugo;...

Me; how bad is it

Ugo; let me just say, its not hard to spot out that she is in pain

Me; i need to finish this

Ugo; dont rush into this, in order for everything to work remember you need to take your time

Me; i cant spend another day without her

Ugo; we doing this for them

Me; ohk il give you feedback later on

Ugo; wait and themba and the guys?

me; dont worry about them. Il deal with them on my own time

Ugo; ohk

Grabbed lunch and everything was sorted. The guy was able to hack into all the relevant pcs that had all the information we needed and he removed everything on them, through some virus.

Him; done

Me; you sure?

him; its squeaky clean trust me. You a free man

Me; theres no chance it could be anywhere else

Him; no, including on their emails

Me; \*smiling\* thank you man

Him; anytime

We finalised things and i headed out. Immediately when i got home i received a call from marlene

Me; tell me good news

Marlene; your boy is taken care off

Me; they agreed

Marlene; after what i told them they had no choice but to believe me. Its out he will be taken out today

Me; by his people right

Marlene; the only people who can take him out

Me; ohk 2 more 2 go

Marlene; need my help

Me; the 1 i can send jack to do it. The other i want to do it for myself.

Marlene; but why did you want orlando to die like this

Me; for him to die knowing what we stand for and not disrespect us like that

Marlene; you really stand for what you are

Me; il talk to you later on today

Marlene; ohk.

The next day. Went to take a shower sat on my bed and took my phone

MARLENE: HIS IN PEACE

After that message i called ugo to make sure if the other bug was were he needed to be

Ugo; i was just about to call you

Me; give it to me

Ugo; drug dealer, robbed of his drugs and shot dead in the head

Me; did it look that way

Ugo; yeah the papers shall disappear in a weeks time and no case will be opened

Me; does the boss know

Ugo; not yet, we keeping the news of both his employees on the low

Me; keep it that way

Ugo; the last shot?

me; today im ending this today

Ugo; need backup

Me; i got everything covered, the security of the complex  
,keys, im good

Ugo; dont miss

Me; \*laughing\* my wife would confirm i never miss

He laughed...

## INSERT #236

Later that day , left my apartment and went to rivonia already talked with the security guards there so they just let me in, walked in and got myself in the house. No one was there made myself at home around 1am heard the car on the driveway. Took out my steel , he opened the door , hit him with the gun and he fell to the ground. Dragged him to his bedroom and just cuffed one arm of his to his bed. I went to make myself something to eat when i went back he was awake

Me; good you awake

Lubanzi; what do you think you doing? how the fuck did you get in here

Me; we meet again dont we

Lubanzi; how the fuck did you get in here

Me; thats your problem, you always think me and you are on the same league , same level

Lubanzi; ...

Me; and you think you this big guy in suits that can just threaten me take whats mine and think you smarter than me

Lubanzi; i get killed , you go down

Me; but what you dont know is im way smarter than you boy, iv been doing this literally all my life. Iv met chancers like you thinking you will have your finger wrapped around me just by having one thing over me

Lubanzi; you a dead man

Me; but you fail to think cause you an idiot. Let me share this with you, give you knowledge about this kind of life cause you lacking

Lubanzi; fuck you

Me; the minute you got that video, you should have taken it to the cops detective maake as you know it, make a deal with him you could have either did that anonymous or go straight up to him. That shitty cop would have probably made a private investigation were all the cops would not know what was happening. He was going to gather up everything. Then you strike but you dont strike maake strikes for you, i get taken into custody. My

connections dont know any shit about that they cant take me out because everything will be confidential i go to court it becomes a confidential cases, parties unnamed resulting in people and my connections knowing nothing about that. Straight up murder probably get 25 years. I lose everything my buyers business goes down the drain. My wife sobs 2 years 3 years i dont know after a year you move your way to my wife life, dont push it trying to get on with her show her you just being there for her. After a year who knows you would have probably put a ring on it and id be dead. Boom you win

Lubanzi; ...

Me; \*laughing\* but because you pathetic and low life chancer, you show me the video, ask me to leave my wife. I put on some act towards my wife she reacts to it and you think you have won . Not even after 2 weeks you already trying to get with my wife. Do you know the shit we have been through and you think she is just going to get over that in 2 months time or 2 weeks. She will just forget then you an idiot on top off that. You let your guard down no longer checking your back cause your focus is on my wife. Your focus is on my wife so much that you dont even know when your partners die cause you just trying to hit it

Lubanzi; what??

Me; you lose your focus that you dont even notice if your pcs has been hacked with

Lubanzi; what the fuck you talking about? what you talking about

Me; i stayed away from my family for months ,months not seeing my daughter or making love to my wife

Lubanzi; wheres brandon

Me; oh dont worry about that, you will see him again

Lubanzi; get the fuck out

Me; i need you to know that whats mine is mine and no fucken man can have whats mine

After that last word i pulled the trigger...

I called ugo

Ugo; its done

Me; its done

Ugo; the guys are on standby to clean up that mess, get out off there

Me; where are you

Ugo; my warehouse

Me; il be there in an hour

Ugo; see you then

The week flew by so fast. Well they found lubanzi body and it was not much off a deal cause it looked like a suicide. The next Saturday had a meeting with my entire family

Grandmother; ucwele ngododi yazi mfana ( you full of shit boy)

Me; ma

Grandmother; fusek man, uyafebe wena uzogula ayanda uyangizwa , uzogula ( piss off, you busy sleeping around you will get sick ayanda do you hear me you will get sick)

Me; nc....

Grandmother; fusek wena uyangnyanyisa yazi. Ngiyagula ayanda ngine high blood manje ufunu ukungbulala ( piss off, you disgust me. Im so close to my death but you in such a hurry to kill me)

Me;.....

Aunt shiela; yini la manyala owayenzayo ( whats this shit you doing)

My uncle; let the boy speak

Me; ngyabonga baba...the thing is they were blackmailing me

Them; ini ( what?)

Me; yes blackmailing me that if i didnt break up with amahle, they going to get me arrested

Grandmother; for ini? ( for what?)

Me; it does not matter

Grandmother; voetsek man for ini why would they do that

Uncle; ma

Grandmother; no let him speak

Me; I did something bad ma and someone knew about it

Grandmother ; what?

Me; it does not matter

Grandmother; I think theres the devil within you

Aunt; ma!

Grandmother ai suka man

Me;....

Grandmother; talk boy

Me; ma it does not matter but the important thing is i did not cheat on amahle and i had to do it cause i was going to get arrested for life

Ma; so now?

me; everything is sorted , everything can go back to normal

My uncle; manje uyazi umakoti ( does your wife know)

Me; no bengifuna ukhuluma nani cala ( no I wanted to talk to you first)

Grandmother; manje uzoyilungisa kanjani lento le ( so how do you think you will fix this)

Me; I don't know ma , but i had to talk to you guys first

Aunt shiela; fix this ayanda, fix your marriage before it ends

Me; yes ma , thank you for coming

Them; sure just make sure you fix this

Nodded my head. We had lunch then i left

I thought about what i was going to say to my wife. She sent divorce papers to me i was scared that i might have just lost my wife and daughter. I kept tossing and turning in bed. Trying to think off something but nothing came up zoned off around 4 am

INSERT #237

#AMAHLE

After church dropped off paris at dre ma place and went to meet up with the girls to go out for lunch. Arrived at the restaurant and they were all there

Me; hey ladies

Them; hey lala

I sat down and we ordered

Nobuhle; you look beautiful

Me; thank you, went to change after dropping off my baby , you all look beautiful too

Nathi; of course we do

I laughed

Mbali; wena how have you been

Me; good

Them;....

Me; what?

Nobuhle; are you really good

Me; yes as long as you wont keep reminding me about my soon to be sham of a marriage

Mbali; you know thats not true

Me; ohk can we end this conversation

Nathi; but nana he loved you

Guy; still do, always will

I quickly turned and it was andre looking all sexy holding flowers. I turned to face the girls

Me; you set this up

Mbali;.....

Me; i cant believe you

I packed my things and got up

Dre; can we talk?

Me; thanks for the lunch

Stood up and pushed my chair back

Dre; please just give me 2 minutes

i passed him and he held my arm. I took the flowers on his hands and threw them on the floor gaining stares

Me; leave me the fuck alone

Nathi; baby please just calm down

Me; let go off me

Dre; give me 2 minutes

Me; i said let go off me

He let go and i walked out, walking back to my car

Dre; can you let me explain

Me;.....

Dre; please talk to me please

I turned to face him

Me; ;lubanzi did not commit suicide did you kill him

Dre;.....

Me; i never want you near me or my daughter ever again

Got in my car and he stood in front off it

Dre; might as well kill me , if thats going to be the case

Me; what do you want from me?

Dre; i want my wife back

I just broke down and cried

Dre; \*shouting\* I never stopped loving you dont you get that. What happened the other day was just an act i know i should have told you the plan but he had to feel your emotions real emotions something you could not act im sorry baby , im so....

Me; \*shouting \*you always sorry andre always

I removed the keys and got out off the car

Me; you have always been sorry \*crying and screaming\* YOU SO SELFISH, YOU THINK THIS IS A TV SHOW , OUR LIVES ARE A GAME TO YOU, MY FEELINGS THAT YOU CAN TELL ME SHIT TODAY AND TELL ME OTHER SHIT THE NEXT DAY AND IM SUPPOSE TO BE OHK WITH IT

He walked towards me

Me; DONT COME NEAR ME

Dre; i know you mad but i need you to understand why i did it

Me; you did it because you selfish , you abandon our daughter. Your so called princess

Dre; dont say that

Me; WHY THE FUCK NOT CAUSE ITS TRUE , LEAVE ME THE HELL ALONE IM TIRED OF YOU THINKING OUR RELATIONSHIP IS A GAME. IM UP TO HERE AND I WONT TAKE THAT BULLSHIT ANYMORE

Before he could answer got in my car and drove to pick up my baby then we went home

While masebe was bathing her i prepared things for tomorrow i was going back to work. Then took a shower. Went downstairs to eat and she was wearing her pjs. Fed her first , then she immediately fell asleep. Ate my food and went to bed. Next day prepared for work and leaving paris was the hardest thing ever i was used to being with her most off the time and now nope.

Arrived at work and everyone wanted to see paris.

Showed them pictures and headed to work started at hr

and then went to work. Knocked off at 9 and went home  
was just excited to see my baby. Went to take a long bath  
then went to bed cause i was tired. Next day the usual  
went home and saw dre car parked on the driveway.  
Breathed in and walked in

Dre; you missed daddy didnt you? Daddy missed you too  
im never leaving you again ohk

Paris was just smiling and laughing throughout

Me; what you doing here

Dre; hey mami, how was your day

Me; what are you doing here

Dre; i live here

Me; not anymore please leave

Said that taking paris from his hands and walked upstairs.  
I heard footsteps behind me went in my room and he  
followed

Dre; ma can you please come take paris

After a few minutes she came and took paris

Dre; im trying here

Me; trying what ?

Dre; to fix my mistake

Me; its not a mistake but a choice you made now leave me and my child alone

Dre; mami ple.....

I opened my drawer, took the envelope and gave him the papers

Me; sign !

He took the papers and looked at them and back at me

Me; \*shouting\* SIGN !

## INSERT #238

Dre; you want me to sign this bullshit ?

Me;.....

Dre; im talking to you

Me; here \*handing him the pen\*

Dre; you giving up on our marriage like that

Me; you gave up on our marriage. YOU !

Dre; i did not give up on our marriage cause if i did i would have not done all the shit i did in the past month, i would have not took the risk of lying to you but i did all off that because i did not want to give up on our marriage

and here i am trying to make it up to you, paris us and  
you throw this on my face

Me;.....

Dre; you want me to sign this

Me; yes

Dre; you dont love me anymore

Me;....

Dre; il sign these papers after you make love to me

I looked at him , my eyes grew wide

Me; you crazy

Dre; then im not signing

He said that walking towards me

Me; dont come near me

Dre; why?

He placed his hand on my cheek and got closer to me  
whispering on my ear

Dre; i love you more than anything in this world , only you  
and my baby. Im sorry for the tears i brought on those  
beautiful big eyes but its over now. No more lubanzi no  
more threats at least thats what i think lets just be happy.  
Lets not make that nigga smile on his grave for breaking  
us apart

Me; dre

Dre; just forget about it mami please

I looked at him and before i could talk. He just kissed me and i did not hesitate to kiss him back. He held my butt squeezing it and picked me up i wrapped my legs around his waist not breaking the kiss he laid me on the bed. I removed his top and unbuttoned his jeans , pushed them down with my legs.i pulled back

Me; no you not getting away with this easy

Dre; then dont make me scream your name

He pulled me up, my legs on top off his thighs he removed my top and unclipped my bra and kissed my neck i held him tighter and closer to me. He went on his knees and removed my pants and underwear" open for daddy" he said i bit my lower lip and opened for daddy. He kissed my center and i closed my eyes in pleasure, he made circular movements with his tongue on my clit. I grabbed the sheets in a fist and moaned he used his tongue and fingers and that drove me crazy , he fingered me while licking and soon after that my body trembled and was still trying to catch my breath i pulled him up and he flipped me over he was behind me. He tied the weave around his hand pulling it and entered me. The grip to the sheets got tighter , his grip on my waist and hair got tighter. His groans filled the room , my moans filled the room he did not make love to me but fucked me till my

body weakened and his. After the most breath taking moment. We laid next to each other and cuddled and fell asleep

Woke up around 1am cause i was hungry. Dre was sleeping and there were pieces off papers on the floor. He must have torn them when i zoned off. Took his top wore it and went downstairs. Masebe must have slept with paris cause she was not in her room. And thats what i loved most about her . I took my food from the oven as i was warming up he wrapped his arms around me

Dre; \*laughing\* you dont even get scared

Me; for what?

Dre; i could have been anyone

Me; for a thug to get in here would be difficult its not even possible and you the only man in this house so thats why

He turned me around

Me; kiss me \*pouting\*

Dre; no \*squeezing my lips\*

Me; mxm

Turned to the oven and took out my food

Dre; mami

Me; hmmmm

Dre; we ohk right? Me and you

Me; lets go and talk

He warmed up his food and we sat on the kitchen counter eating

Me; dre you need to stop with these games of yours , hurting me as if i dont feel anything and expect to come back and everything will go back to normal

He nodded his head

Me; if you planning something i want you to tell me about the plan so i will know what to expect not just get me out off the blue and scare the shit out off me and my daughter ohk

Dre; il do just that im really sorry but i need you to understand i did this for us

Me; i get that

Dre; but i need to ask you something

Me; ohk

Dre; did something happen between the 2 off you, kiss something

Me; we kind off had sex

He looked down on his plate and scratched his head

Me; \*laughing\* im just joking not even a kiss. He made moves but i just pushed him away its not easy to forget my husband like that even if you just a rebound

Dre; thats the greatest thing iv ever heard and did you tell pa about us

Me; no it would have killed him so decided to stay silent with it

Dre; \*smiling\* ohk can i move back in

Me; you know you can. I hope its the last time we go through this procedure

Dre; me too baby i love you ohk

Me; love you too

Dre; now i can kiss you

Me; \*laughing\* no

He pulled me to him and kissed me. I was laughing during the entire kiss

Dre; lets go to bed , you going to work tomorrow

Next day headed to work, the mood was a way better mood than the first day. After work headed home and my family was back together

Me; when are you going back to work

Dre; the following week

Me; ohk im going to take a long shower

Dre; want me to join you \*taking his tongue out\*

Me; \*laughing\* no bond with your daughter its been a while

Dre; she missed me didnt she

Me; you have no idea

I left them there and went to bath

## INSERT #239

Few weeks passed it was already november things were perfect with my family yet again. I wished things could stay like this forever and i prayed about it each and every day. January i would start attending a training program of the surgical department i was so excited about that. Woke up one hot Saturday and headed downstairs paris was already up with her daddy

Me; morning

Hubby; morning baby

We kissed

Me; helo my princess, how are you baby

She just smiled and kept jumping we both laughed

Hubby; that tired

Me; you have no idea it was a long night yesterday

Hubby; good thing you wont be going back any time soon

Me; unless they short on staff baby

Hubby; baby you on your day offs

Me; yeah but it dont mean anything if you a doctor

Hubby; well you not going anywhere im telling you

Me; of course not

I wrapped my arms around him and paris

Me; i love you both so much

Hubby; we know you do

I laughed and went to the kitchen

Me; morning ma

Masebe; morning mtanam

Me; unjani ma ( how are you ma)

Masebe; ngyaphila wena baby ( im good you baby)

Me; im good ma breakfast

Masebe; you will see

Me; \*smiling\* take it away

She laughed and went to sit were the table was set

Me; you going anywhere today

Dre; nope il be with my family today

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

We were by the pool the whole day, paris fell asleep and mamsebe took her in. I wrapped my arms around dre.

Dre: one sexy mummy

Me; one sexy daddy

Dre; \*laughing\* dont you think its time

Me; for what dre

Dre; ayanda andre junior

Me; \*laughing\* what? No

Dre; mami come on

Me; dre paris is not even a year old

Dre; so you want us to wait till she turns 8

Me; no but

Dre; mami

Me; lets try january

Dre; \*laughing\* what dif...

Mamsebe; bhuti

She said that loudly and nervous as if she was running

Me; whats wrong ma

Mamsebe; theres someone at the gate and i dont think you will like it

Dre got out and went in wet as he was

#ANDRE

I rushed to see who it was on the monitor and it was ntando. I pressed the speaker

Me; helo

Ntando; hi

Me; can i help you

Ntando; can i come in

Me; what brings you here

Ntando; i want to talk

Me; come on in

I went back out

Mami; who is it

Me; ntando

Mami; ntando

Me; yes, his coming in

She got out and threw her the towel she covered herself and we both walked in the house to go and change after a few minutes, we walked downstairs and it was him, his wife and some woman

Me; what do we owe this pleasure

I sat down and mami sat next to me

Old woman; you must be andre, and you amahle

Mami; yes

Old woman; im sbongile, ntando mother uhm i mean adopted mother

Us;...

Old woman; we decided to come here to fix what has been broken

Us;...

Old woman; and as much as sometimes we dont choose our own families fact is we still need our families and when ntando told me what had happened and the man who married his sister. I was fuming with anger but there was nothing we could do, cause the most important thing at this moment is family

Us;...

Old woman; we have forgiven you an...

Me; forgiven us?

Mami pulled my hand

Me; mami they came here for you, let me leave you to it  
call me if you need anything

Mami; dre

Me; talk to them ohk

I kissed

Me; i love you, dont allow them to turn yourself against  
me

Kissed her again and left

#AMAHLE

I honestly didnt want dre, but i knew he had to especially  
knowing dre and the shit he would have told all off them

Old woman; amahle you have a brother and i would love  
more than anything than for you to accept him and be a  
family that would make me die in peace knowing ntando  
is with his family

Me; i wanted that but he does not want that so i cant  
force him towards me

Ntando; not that i did not want that, its just your husband

Me; ...

Ntando; he took away half off me, so you could have not expected me to forgive and forget as if he stole a pen from me, back in high school. How do you expect me to put up a smile for a killer a thief a low life criminal

Me; now thats the shit that got you out off my house the first time and it will be the second time. Im telling you this for the last time. You will not speak about my husband like that not infront of me and not in his house. Before you came here, you should have rehearsed what you were going to say cause im not going to take that shit in our house

Old woman; no need for swearing

Me; yes there is no need for it ma and im sorry for that as i have great respect for my elders but id appreciate it if you give me the same respect me and my husband give you if you come into our home.

Ntando; im sorry

Me;...

Ntando; things happened in there past and some we cant change but i have a sister, same blood and i dont want to lose that when i have lost so much. So im asking you to give us a chance just for us to get to know each other, our families

Me; my husband?

Ntando; it wont be easy, but i cant allow the past to block the future

Me; we put everything behind us

Ntando; if you ohk with it

Me; im ohk with it as long as we respect my husband

Ntando;i understand

Me; ohk

Ntando; ohk

Old woman; so you will both try, talk more often

Me; yes

Ntando; yes

Old woman; \*smiling\* im glad can you hug it off

I laughed, i got up and we hugged it off. After an hour they left

The next day was a Sunday, i told dre everything and well he said he will try if ntando tries as well but he did not trust the whole thing and i was with him on that. I went to bath and headed to church. Arrived at church and the service began i thought going to church was going to go well but paris needed my attention ke the entire time but it was all good cause my girls were there and we would exchange with her. After church drove back home

Me; well the squad is all here

Deon; \*laughing\* sorry to disturb your home

Me; haha its fine

Tyrone; being a mother suits you well yho

Dre; watch it man

Tyrone; its just a compliment relax

Themba got up to take paris

Themba; this guy though , he doesnt even want other men to compliment whats his

Dre; yes

I just laughed

Me; let me leave you in peace

Dorian; will be gone anytime now

Me; no rush

I walked upstairs changed to clothes that were comfortable

## INSERT #240

Monday morning got up, dre had already left for work. I went to eat breakfast and went to watch tv. Dre called and we talked until he had to go back to work.

After paris zoned off went to bath and just wore shorts with top. Watched tv until nobuhle walked in

Me; helo to you

Nobuhle; hey lala

Me; masebe let you in

Nobuhle; of course brought you lunch

Me; wooo at least you think off me at times

Nobuhle; mxm i need advice from you?

Me; lets eat first

Nobuhle; wheres dre princess

Me; \*laughing\* why do you guys think paris is dre child only yeh?

Nobuhle; eish we used to it that way where is she

Me; she is sleeping , maybe she is going to wake up nje anytime soon

Nobuhle; ohk

Me; you how have you been

Nobuhle; good, work is way too busy

Me; shame im only going back Thursday

Nobuhle; 7 days off

Me; yep and im going to enjoy them so talk to me ke

Nobuhle; its themba

Me; \*laughing\* what about him

Nobuhle ; i think his cheating

Me; why would you even think that

Nobuhle; his so secretive lala, his phone has passwords

Me; dre phone has passwords

Nobuhle; and that does not concern you

Me; no should it?

Nobuhle; yes why the hell would they have passwords if they have nothing to hide

Me; why are you trying to go over his phone

Nobuhle; to see who is messaging my baby

Me; then what? Cause the only thing thats going to happen is you will hurt yourself and you will find what you looking for

Nobuhle; that his cheating

Me; no, his not cheating you need to relax were would he even get the time to cheat. The guy is always with you

Nobuhle; still but i need to confirm his not

Me; just ask him about it dont fight with him

Nobuhle; ohk

Mamsebe came down with paris, with teary eyes

Me; she woke up

Mamsebe; yes i think she woke up a long time ago

Me; cant be the monitor wa.... \*i paused\* its off omg my baby has been up for a while now come here baby

I took her and she calmed down then fed her

Nobuhle; this kid kodwa

Me; \*laughing\* what about her

Nobuhle; shes the spitting image of you and dre in a weird way its as if she is a doll

Me; ai suka wena you need to make your own now

Nobuhle; i will the minute he stops playing around

Me; \*laughing\* but lala you know his not , i dont even know why you suddenly insecure

Nobuhle; im not

Me; ohk if you say so

Nobuhle left then i helped masebe prepare dinner for us. Around 8 dre walked in and he went to shower then we ate together.

Dre; so?

Me; \*laughing\* your so comes with a problem i know

Dre; \*laughing\* no baby you avoiding the topic

Me; whats up?

Dre; dre junior

Me; dre though

Dre; ohk tell me why now is the wrong time

Me; january im starting training for surgery, paris is only 6 months, im always busy, you always busy. I dont want ma to raise dre junior while we at work

Dre; ohk

Me;...

Dre;...

Me; you ohk

Dre; yeah

Me; punka

Dre; im cool

Me; i dont want you to be just quiet about this i want us to talk

Dre; whats the use you already made up your mind

Me;...

Dre; my point exactly

Me; can we wait till paris turns one then

Dre; whatever you say

Me; punka come on. Paris turns 1 next year may then we start trying for dre junior

His phone rang, he answered it

Dre; sure

He got up and left me there. I knew this meant a lot to dre but it was still early for us. I carried on watching the movie it ended and he was not back yet, i switched off everything checked on paris and masebe had fixed everything for me. Went to my room and dre was under the covers, i changed and went in and cuddled next to him

Me; i know you want dre junior now but im asking for 6 months dre just 6 months

He turned to face me

Me; please

Dre;..

Me; please

I got on top off him and began kissing him

Me; just 6

Dre; 6

I nodded my head, he pulled me closer to him, turned us around and got on top off me...

## INSERT #241

The first week off december went back to work around lunch time got a call from my husband

Me; ayanda!

He laughed so loud

Dre; \*laughing\* wooooo eyyy wena dont make me laugh tu

Me; \*laughing\* what it is your name angithi

Dre; not to you, my beautiful wife

Me; ai suka , how you?

Dre; way happy now im on my way there

Me; here at bara

Dre; yes nana

Me; you sick?

Dre; you got jokes i see, im taking you out for lunch hope you have not eaten

Me; lucky no

Dre; good i need to talk to you about somethings

Me; about?

dre; will talk when i get there

Me; ohk

Rounded up everything and waited for dre. He arrived and we went to maponya got to spurs and ordered

Me; so whats going on

Dre; i found masebe kids for real this time

Me; what? Where

Dre; they still in durban though

Me; how did you do that

Dre; connections but now i dont know if we should tell her

Me; i think we should but the last time you said you found them

Dre; yeah but i was not sure and i soon found out it was not them but this time around its really them

Me; how old are they

Dre; siphesihle is 29 while simphiwe is 34

Me; oh ohk so should we tell masebe

Dre; all up to you

Me; do you have their numbers

Dre; yes everything off theirs i have

Me; ohk let me get back to work will talk when i get home  
ne

Dre; ohk

## #ANDRE

After dropping off the queen went home to pick up my princess. Placed her on the car seat and left. Got to the mall got out off the car but struggled with paris belt

Guy; sure can i look after your car while you gone

Me;.....

Guy; do you want me to or not?

I removed my head from the car and turned to look at the guy only to see a kid

Guy; oh sorry i thought you black

Me; im not white

Him; haaaaaa \*laughing\*

Me; you want to guard my car

Him; sure

Me; wait a minute

I finally managed to take paris out, picked her up, closed the door and locked

Me; how old are you

Him; ayyy for what now

He was a kid

Me; lets go and eat inside then il pay you

Him; \*he paused \* noooo im good im not hungry

Me; ay ohk

I walked away

Him; woahhh

Rushing to me

Me; what?

Him; you will buy me food and pay me after that

Me; yeah as long as you dont steal from me

Him; do i look like a thief

Me; \*smiling\* lets go

We walked inside the mall and people just stared

Me; im andre, this is paris and you?

Boy; sanele

Me; where do you live?

Sanele; are we eating or not

Me; sure

We got to spur and i ordered my usual. He had a tough time choosing

Me; what will you eat?

Sanele; i dont know

Me; girl listen get him this and coke

Girl; ohk

Sanele; your kid is beautiful

Me; just like her mother

Sanele; shes also this beautiful?

Me; yeah exactly

Sanele; you only have one kid

Me; yah

Sanele i live here on the streets

Me; why

Sanele; my mother died, i dont know my father. After my mum died they sent me eh home but it was just a joke there so i left

Me; \*laughing\* what do you mean it was a joke so do they know where you at

Sanele; i dont even know

Me; so who you with here on the streets

Sanele; my friends

We talked about anything and everything my baby was behaving throughout shame after eating. Took all my things and we walked out

Sanele; thanks for the food

Me; sure you always here

Sanele; yeah this is the only way i get too make money  
\*he looked on the floor\*

Me; whats up?

Sanele; nix let me get going

Me; hao your money

Sanele; nah its fine, you already bought me food

Me; but i said i would pay you

Sanele; its fine

Me; just take it

I gave it to him  
Sanele; thanks man  
Me; pleasure  
I left for home

## INSERT #242

Got home and gave masebe paris while i went to shower.  
Around 8 amahle came back

Amahle; ma can we talk  
Masebe; ohk is everything ohk. My job. Did i do som...

Amahle; ma everything is ohk

Masebe; ohk  
Amahle; ma andre found siphesihle and simphiwe

Her eyes grew wide

Masebe; no \*shook her head \*

Me; yes ma

Dre; they in durban right now i got their numbers  
everything

She buried her face in between her thighs and just cried. I  
knelt next to her rubbing her back

Me; its ohk ma, you will be with your kids, you will see your kids

She was crying so much and that made me cry too. After a while she calmed down

Masebe; buti thank you so much. I dont know what to do or say thank you so so much

Dre; \*smiling\* you dont have to thank me, you have done so much for my family this is the least i could do

Masebe was so happy she just got up and hugged dre i was shocked and so was dre

Masebe; im so sorry

Dre; \*laughing\* its ohk ma, you just happy

Masebe; \*smiling\* so what now can i meet them what?

Me; first ma will have to contact them, bring them down here then will take it from there

Masebe; oh my god im so happy

Me; we glad if you happy so baby should i call them or

Dre; i think it will be best if you call them cause if ma does it that will freak them out

Me;but what will i say

Dre; i dont know make something up babe

I took the papers from dre and dialled the numbers

It rang twice and a woman answered

Her; helo

Masebe could not breath

Me; hi am i talking to siphesihle

Her; yes

Me; hi im dr amahle from johannesburg

Her; ohk

Me; sorry to bother you at this time , i know you in durban

Her; yes may i ask what this is about im getting really scared

Me; no need to be scared theres just something personal id love to talk to you about but not through the phone

Her; then how cause you in durban and im in johannesburg

Me; i was hoping i could buy you a plane ticket and you come here

Her; whats the personal matter about

Me; i cant tell you over the phone

Her; dr amahle if this is not a prank, you expecting me to fly and come to jhb yet i dont know you. You do know the kind of world we live in right now you could kidnap me or

even kill me try to understand im going to need more than personal to make me fly over there

I panicked

Me; i think you might be my sister

Dre looked at me

Her; what?

Me; y yes my mother was sebenzile and i know she had kids before me which is you and simphiwe

Her; you know my brother

Me; not really just the name now you know why i need you to fly down here i have a new born so i cant fly down there

Her; is this a joke

Me; no who was your mothers name

Her;.....

Me; sphe please i need answers and only you and your brother can answer me

Her; my father wont like his

Me; you dont have to tell him just please meet with me

Her; ohk il do it but il inform someone off my visit to you in case something happens to me

Me; thats fine with me

Then i hung up

Dre; geez long lost sister

Me; \*laughing\* that was the only way

Masebe; it is her, her voice is still the same

Me; really ma

A tear just left her eye it was a just a emotional moment for her and i let her be. We ate dinner together then bed.

Next day on my way to work i called pa

Pa; angel

Me; pa \*smiling

Pa; how are you my angel

Me; im good pa just miss you

Pa; i miss you more angel

Me; christmas you coming this side right

Pa; where else would i be

Me; \*laughing\* good

Pa; where will you be this time

Me; im not sure i still have to ask dre mother

Pa; ohk

Me; when will you come pa

Pa; when is good for you

Me; can you come on the 20th or 15th then you will leave january

Pa; \*laughing\* what?

Me; pa please please please

Pa; will your husband be fine with it

Me; you know he loves having you around and just imagine you will be having christmas for the first time with your great grand daughter this time around

Pa; seems like a perfect christmas

Me; exactly pa so you cant miss it

Pa; i wouldnt

Me; ohk i just arrived at work il call you later to confirm everything ohk

Pa; ohk love you ohk

Me; love you too

Hung up and walked in

After work headed straight home, walked up to my bedroom . Dre and paris were watching cartoons. I placed my bags on the floor and jumped on the bed, kissed the princess herself then punka

Me; what you watching

Dre; shawty what are we watching

I laughed. I left them there and went to shower. I walked out and paris had fallen asleep

Me; i need to talk to you about something

Dre; let me PUT her to bed first

Me; ohk

He left and came back soon after that

Dre; talk to me

Me; ntando

Dre;...

Me; im not comfortable with him meeting pa punka

Dre; how do you think i feel

Me;...

Dre; pa is ntando grandfather something we both cant change

Me; i dont have a good feeling about him dre, i just dont like him does this make me a bad person knowing that he is my brother

Dre; you only feeling like this because of me , and your fear of losing me. Reason why you dont like him and dont want him near you

Me;...

Dre'; if you feel like that, imagine how i feel. Your whole family can turn against me and to be honest i dont have a good feeling about him to. This whole situation is way to good to be true

Me; my point exactly. One moment his ready to kill us next he wants us to be a happy family

Dre; shit dont make me sense

Me; shit really dont make sense

Dre; but whatever happens you know im going to protect you guys ohk

Me; i know but im not worried about us, im worried about you

Dre; im a big guy

Me; dre!

Dre; i dont care what happens to me as long as you both are safe

Me; can you ask the guys to keep an eye on him

Dre; if thats going to make you sleep il do just that

Me; thank you

Dre; come here

Me; \*laughing\* no

Dre; i think today is the day we conceive

Me; \*shouting\* dre

Dre; \*laughing\* im just joking geez relax

INSERT #243

#ANDRE

Woke up the next morning mami had already left for work. I went to take a long shower, went downstairs and paris was refusing to eat. I helped masebe when we were done I had somethings i needed to do at the warehouse, masebe gave me her bag and we left. Got to the warehouse and the whole squad was there.

Themba; amahle makes you soft, she makes me soft

He said that taking paris from me

Me; \*laughing\* time we got your princess around dont you think

Themba; i know for sure that shit aint happening anytime soon

Deon; \*laughing\* whats up?

Themba; well shit went down last night with the mrs

Jack; \*laughing\* tell us all about it

We all turned to look at him  
Themba; get the fuck back to work  
Jack; why do you all treat me as if im the child here  
Us; thats cause you are  
Me; \*laughing\* so what happened  
Themba; well in her eyes im cheating  
Me; fuck  
Themba; you know why boy  
Me; why  
Themba; because of stupid passwords  
Us; passwords?  
Themba; she almost killed me . Forcing me to open the phone for her so you know me vele  
Me; \*laughing\* you didnt?  
Themba; exactly i have nothing to hide. I fucken love her but i did that to torture her so she will learn to trust me  
Jack; i know you dont want to hear this but thats the biggest mistake you did  
Me; what the fuck do you know about girls  
Dorian; you can say that again. Your biggest fear are girls

Jack; say whatever but truth is themba you will never hear the end of this. She is probably telling his wife what you did, his wife will freak and come for you

Me; what?

jack; yeah cause in nobuhle head themba cheating. Nobuhle talks with amahle, and i know your phone also has passwords she will check your phone and find passwords go back to nobuhle then shit goes down for you

Us;...

Jack; trust me i may be scared of girls but i know girls I turned to themba

Me; i swear to god if she comes for my phone tonight im going to fight with you

Themba; what the fuck does jack know forget him

We walked to the other side

Ty; lets talk money now

Me; yes

Jack; can i pick her up

Me; dont be confusing my kid now

Themba; ay you dont even know how to hold a kid

Jack; dre

Me; boy man

Themba; \*laughing\* you see why we treat you like a kid

Jack; fuck you

He took paris

Me; have you talked to stephen

Dorian; yeah this morning, he placed his order

Me; william

Dorian; all of them and they told me you have a meeting

Me; yeah in an hours time actually

Themba; i got two new babies and we have a job for us and morris

Me; me and you

Themba; yeah only me and you can do this. Jack aint ready

Me; you will fill me in

Themba; yeah on our way to meet the guys

Me; ohk

Deon; ugo

Me; im meeting him the following weekend

Deon; ohk

Me; let me go

Jack; before you go. You might want to change her nappy

Me; go fetch her bag

I took paris, jack came back, took the towel placed it on the table

Ty; really turner

Me; she will inherit this place meaning she needs to leave something to remind you all niggas she is your boss

I changed her business, gave her bottle and we left with themba. She fell asleep on the car

Me; so lets talk?

Themba; heist

Me; when is this

Themba; im still gathering up everything but im predicting february

Me; why you need me its not a big heist

Themba; i never told you that

Me; heist that needs 2 months of preparation we both know it does not bring in real money

Themba; its big dre. I mean im talking about possibly more than 6 0

Me;...

Themba; im being for real

Me; a big heist as you say in 2 months

Themba; we can do it

Me; will we be able to do everything in 2 months 2  
months hay man themba

Themba; 2 months is all we got

Me; what do you mean

Themba; they only carry this much money once after  
years and i finally know the time which is february and we  
cant lose this man

Me; what do you have so far

Themba; the road, the day

I looked at him

Themba;...

Me; thats all

Themba; yes

Me; you fucken kidding me right

Themba; we can do this

Me; im not denying that just time man

Themba; lets use it wisely i need this

Me; why

Themba; i want to make my woman happy

I raised my eyebrow

Themba; \*laughing\* make sure you dont wake her up  
when picking her up

He said that opening the door. I followed behind him with  
paris. Walking inside the restaurant.

## INSERT #244

Got home and dre was not back with paris went to take a long hot shower when i felt the shower door open i turned and saw my husband i smiled and just stared at him. He undressed and got in i wrapped my arms around his and he squeezed my butt picking me up i wrapped my legs around his waist and he pinned me to the shower door

Me; lets get out off here

Dre; ohk he put me down

We walked out and i threw myself on the bed. His towel was still wrapped around his waist. He locked the door and stared at my naked self on the bed

Me; come here

Dre; let me get something for you first

Me; which is

He disappeared on the closet and showed up with a belt i bit my lower lip and handed my hands to him

Dre; obedient i see

He tied my hands so tight i could not move them i laid on my back again

Dre; im coming

He left the room and he left me tied on the bed got back with a dish placed it next to me and it was blocks off ice i looked at him

Dre; just relax

He kissed my neck and i shivered , felt like i was running out off air it was cold yet so pleasurable he moved his kissed down to my V and wanted to grab his head but i couldnt

Me; dreeeee \*heavy breathing\*

My eyes rolled at the back off my head. I let out a slight moan , he made circular movements with his cold tongue on my clit, my breathing got heavier and heavier moans got louder. He got up and we kissed he kissed my neck and whispered to my ear in the most seductive way

Dre; im going to fuck you so hard , im not making love to you tonight

I bit my lower lip hearing that made me even more wet, the movement he made on my V drove me crazy i sucked,

licked his neck and that weakened parts off him he suddenly entered me not even starting on a slow pace the faster and deeper he went the louder and weaker my body got i could feel his d on my stomach as i was about to come he flipped me over and i rod his dick until he screamed like a girl lol. He came and i came and zoned off

Woke up past 10 and my hands were still tied. Dre also woke up and untied me and we went downstairs took our food from the oven and sat at the lounge

Me; so i called pa today

Dre; and i got a call from my mum

Me; you first

Dre; well they were wondering if we could have the christmas lunch here this year

Me; really \*smiling\*

Dre; yes

Me; thats even perfect

Dre; and pa

Me; thats what he asked me and i asked him to stay here from the 15th or 20th till january with us is that ok with you

Dre; how can you even ask me that

Me; i need to make sure baby

Dre; he can stay here permanantly if it was up to me

Me; me too but you know how he gets

Dre; yeah

I took my phone and noticed i had missed calls from  
siphesihle

Me; sphe called me

Dre; sphe?

me; masebe daughter

Dre; ohk call her

Me; no need she sent a text

I read the text and she was telling meshe would love to  
meet with me and if it was possible the 16 i smsed back  
and told her i would send her the plane ticket and pick her  
up at the office

Dre; you sure about this

Me; yes i just cant wait to see how she react when she  
sees her mother

Dre; i hope everything turns out good not for the worst

Me; me too anyway , this means we need to go for  
grocery shopping

Dre; eish dont even remind me

Me; and invite our friends

Dre; they would not miss it for the world

Me; and new years eve we going out right

Dre; no!

I raised my eyebrow

Dre; will just get drunk here at home

Me; will always sit home on new years eve now

Dre; i didnt say that

Me; thats how it seems

Dre; if we have too then yeah

Me; you want to stay at home stay but im going out

Dre; like hell you are , im not having what happened happen again

Me; and you just had to remind did you

I got up and threw the remote at him

Dre; mami

Me; leave me alone

I walked upstairs and went to my baby room

## INSERT #245

Woke up and went to take a shower when i went back to my bedroom dre was up

Dre; you still mad at me

Me; ....

Dre; mami im sorry

Me;

Dre; mami come on is it wrong to get worried when the day i almost lost my wife arrives

Me; do you constantly have to remind me ? Im trying to forget about what happened and move on face my fear on going out on new years eve but you not letting me

Dre; how can i help you face your fears when that is also my fear

Me;.....

Dre; im sorry i reminded you ohk but it's not just you who had to go through the trauma off the 31st i too went through it, its hard for me to forget at times its just in me i cant help it

Me; stop dre ohk stop you want us to stay indoors fine we will

Dre; thank you

Me; whatever

Dre; \*shouting\* AMAHLE!

I turned to face him

Me; what?

Dre; watch how you talk

Me; ....

Dre; that tongue off yours loses control at times

Me; ....

Dre; we staying in

Me; yes andre

Dre; so much better

He walked to his closet and i walked downstairs

Me; morning ma

Masebe; morning your breakfast will be ready in a few minutes

Me; im not having breakfast bye ma

I took my bags and left

Drove to nobuhle place, knocked and then themba opened half naked

Themba; ma ma \* looking around\* sorry

He shut the door and i just stood outside after a few minutes he opened dressed

Me; you ohk now

Themba; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; where is your woman?

Themba; shower

Me; oh ohk let me go

Themba; no come on in, you will wait for her inside angithi

Me; ohk

I walked in and sat on the couch

Themba; everything ohk

Me; yeah im ohk i just need to talk to nobuhle

Themba; ohk let me tell her to hurry up

Me; please do

He rushed to the bathroom sat there my phone kept ringing and it was dre just rejected the call nobuhle rushed down wearing only a towel

Me; and you could not get dressed

Nobuhle; ai suka whats wrong

Me; dre!

Nobuhle; hmmm passwords

Me; \*laughing\* no

Nobuhle; then whats up

Me; he just frustrates me lala, he keeps on reminding me about what happened to me, he refuses for me to go out on the 31st not only me nakhona all off us he just wants us to stay indoors all the time

Nobuhle;....

Me; what?

Nobuhle; so you mad cause his trying to protect you

Me; \*shouting\* NO! IM MAD BECAUSE HE DOES NOT WANT ME OR HIM TO FORGET

Nobuhle; this is not something you can just forget

Me; wow i get away from one dre and go to another dre thanks nobuhle

I got up and took my bag

Nobuhle; babe come on dont be like this im just saying we all dont want to go out and party we just want to be at ones house get drunk and sleep not be at some club or wherever

Me; bye

Nobuhle; amahle !!!

Walked out, got in my car grabbed breakfast at mc d and went to work

Did my rounds , for lunch just had a sandwich after work drove to dre mum place

Dre mum; hi baby

Me; hi ma

We hugged

Dre mum; how are you

Me; im ohk ma just a bit tired

Dre mum; just got back from work

Me; yes dont feel like going home

Her; whats wrong

Me; nothing

Her; you like my daughter i know when something is wrong talk to me

Me; nothing ma can we just talk about something else

Her; ohk christmas lunch

Me; yes that

Her; need my help

Me; well i dont have a menu so i might need help with that

Her; ohk lets sit down

Dre called and i ignored it

Her; thats your stress

I looked at her

Me; maybe

Her; fight

Me; you can say that but it will be ohk

Her; i hope so but you can only solve the fight when you talk

Me; il try but im not in mood to argue with him cause i know for sure it will end in an argument

Her; baby you are worrying me

Me; its just im trying so hard to forget what happened and i was doing just fine, i had totally forgot about everything until dre reminded me what happened to me

Her; you know his just concerned about you right

Me; if he was he would stop trying to remind me

Her; baby come on

Me; im tired ma i have a daughter and i dont want to be acting crazy around her because of remembering what

happened. I dont want her to know what happened to her mother

Her;....

Me; \*crying\* i dont think i can take that knowing that her mother was raped almost killed no ma i cant take that im trying to close that chapter i already did but dre just keeps on going back there over and over again does he think this is like being mugged i will just forget even if you remind me it will turn out to be a joke. I will be scarred for life because of what that bitc\*I paused \* she did to me so i cant take this from dre i just cant

After the last word buried my face on my thighs and cried

Dre mum gave me painkillers and i just zoned off

INSERT #246

#ANDRE

MY mum had called me letting me know my wife was not in a good state and she was at her place , took my car keys and rushed there got home and rushed in

Me; where is she

Mum; baby calm down

Me; what happened

Mum; she just busted out in emotions heavy emotions, i gave her painkillers and she immediately zoned off

Me; its because off me isnt it

Mum; yes because off you

Me; she is just sensitive about the whole topic

Mum; what do you expect, that she would be cool with the topic joke around with it are you insane

Me;.....

Mum; it may look like she is over the trauma and maybe for a day forget but fact is she is scarred and you cant just get rid off the scar so stop trying to cut open the scar

Me; im sorry its just i cant let myself allow her to go to a party on the 31st

Mum; will she be going alone?

Me; ...

Mum; exactly with you

Me; and i was with her the time it happened

Mum; dont even go there you wrong and you need to fix this with the mother off your child

Me; where is she

Mum; your old bedroom

Me; thanks mum

I walked upstairs and slowly opened the door she was fast asleep

Me; baby.... Baby.... Mami wake up

She slowly opened her eyes

Me; hey

Her;....

Me; listen baby i owe you an apology ohk im sorry , i know how sensitive you are with this topic and i was stupid off reminding you. I love you so much and i would never try to hurt you ohk

Her; im also sorry for overreacting

Me; its ohk you had every right to

Her; i love you dre and i dont want us to fight

Me; i know baby, i know can i get a kiss

Her; \*smiling\* no

Me; well you leave me with no choice

I got on top off her and kissed her she just laughed but kissed me back eventually

We got home and the princess was up , her mother just took her and they headed to the bedroom. Ate dinner then went to bed. Next day headed to work then went home around 8

Me; hi ma

Masebe; hi boy

I went to the lounge and they were watching tv

Me; my girls

Amahle; hey papi

We kissed

Me; hows daddy girl

She smiled showing off her dimples. I picked her up and sat on the floor with her mother

Amahle; so tomorrow is the day

Me; for what konje baby

Amahle; sphe masebe daughter

Me; shes coming tomorrow

Amahle; yes babe

Me; geez time flies

Amahle; yes then on the 20th we going to do our grocery shopping ne

Me; ohk im cool with that

Amahle; how was work

Me; busy , never a dull moment was in with nathi today

Amahle; \*smiling\* shes good

Me; yeah she said she is definitely coming on the 25 she will ask sandile but i know his coming so those 2 are coming

Amahle; i still have to talk to nobuhle, the last time i talked to her not good terms

Me; eevrything ohk

Amahle; yes i just need to apologise thats all

Me; ohk let me go take a shower, you joining me

Amahle; nope you cant bath alone manje ne

Me; no i want my baby

Amahe; \*laughing\* ai suka hambo geza

Went to shower , wore my sweaters and joined my family but we soon went to bed. Next day mami went to work and so did i but had to meet her around 2 to meet up with siphesile. I picked her up

Me; you nervous

Amahle; a little

Me; her flight has already landed right

Amahle; yes she should be with this group , i dont even know how she looks

We stood there until this woman walked up to us, she was attractive not more than my baby of course but she was attractive and beautiful body

Her; hi, dr amahle

Amahle; \*smiling\* you dont have to call me dr but yes amahle

Her; siphesihle

Amahle; nice meeting you

Her; same her

She looked at me and bit her lower lip

Amahle; and this is my husband andre

Her; husband? \*eyes wide open \*

Amahle; yes husband

She looked disappointed

Me; nice meeting you

Her; \*smiling\* likewise

Amahle; can we

Her; sure

We walked to the car and went to a nearby restaurant so will be able to break down everything for her before she

meets her mother. She was making deep eye contact and it made me uncomfortable like hell, she was sitting at the back off my seat and would look at my side view mirror or the middle mirrow. Got to the restaurant and we walked in ordered everything

Sphe; so you really my sister

Amahle; actually i lied

Sphe; huh?

Amahle; i lied to get you to fly down here

Sphe; is this some kind off joke what do you want from me

Amahle; nothing i do need to talk to you about something personal

Sphe;....

Amahle; your mother works for us, she has became more like family than someone who cleans up after our mess

Sphe; my mother? I want nothing to do with that woman

Amahle; please listen to me. Your mother told us everything about what happened in the past and she has been trying to reconcile with her kids but she could not find you until my husband managed to find you

She looked at me

Amahle; the only thing i ask is talk to her and listen to what she has to say thats all. If you not taking anything thats she says its fine you can be on the first flight that leaves jhb just talk to her please

Sphe; why you doing this

Amahle; cause that woman is like my mother and im just trying to make her happy like she always made me happy

Sphe; my father would kill me knowing what happened here

Me; your father is not here why would something he does not know hurt him

Sphe; ohk il meet up with her

Amahle; thank you so much can we leave

Sphe; ohk let me use the bathroom first

She got up and went to the bathroom

Amahle; she likes you

She said that sipping on her juice

Me; \*laughing\* how do you know that

Amahle; the way she cant keep her eyes off you. I will kill her if she tries anything stupid

Me; il give you the gun baby

She punched me

Amahle; \*laughing8 i think its about time i get my own gun

Me; will have that talk another time not now

Amahle; but you not saying no

Me; and im not saying yes

Amahle; but dr.....

Sphe; we can go

Me; ohk

## INSERT #247

#AMAHLE

We parked in the driveway

Me; you ready

Sphe; yes

We got out off the car and walked in the house , her eyes were all over the place

Me; \*shouting\* MA!

THE was no responce i figured she was busy with paris we sat at the lounge and she came down holding paris. Her eyes grew big so as sphe, i took paris cause ma was in

shock. She began crying and rushed to her but she did not allow her

Sphe; \*shouting\* WHY? WHY DID YOU LEAVE ME AND PHIWE NO SCREW THAT WHY DID YOU STEAL FROM DAD FAMILY WHAT DID YOU HOPE TO GAIN. AND NOW YOU CALL ME AFTER YEARS HOPING I HAD FORGOT AND EVERYTHING WILL GO BACK TO NORMAL

Masebe ; no baby let me explain

Sphe; i did not come here to listen to you talk bullshit i came here to give you a piece off my mind

My eyes grew wide

Masebe; sphe please

Sphe; dont , dont you just self.....

Me; siphesihle i brought you here to listen to her and thats what going to happen

Sphe; you wont tell me what to do

Dre; but you will do whatever shit we tell you to do in our home

Sphe;.....

Dre; now ma over here is trying to explain to you what happened , you will sit your ass down and listen to her

Sphe;....

My eyes grew wide this girl behaviour towards dre was unbelievable

Dre; ma will be at the kitchen if you need us dont hesitate to call

Masebe; thank you boy

We left and went to our bedroom

Me; the way that girl is obedient to you

Dre; jealous

Me; no

Dre; \*laughing\* because you never listen to me

Me; exactly so why would i want to be so obedient to you

Dre; \*laughing\* mummy is naughty ne baby

Me; oh wow now you involving her

Dre; she must not be like you

Me; and our boy must not be like you

Dre; yho baby that scares me yazi

Me; what?

Dre; i dont want my son to be like me mami

Me; how do you want him to be like

Dre; smart

Me; you smart

Dre; yeah but i mean smart for varsity baby

Me; bu....

Dre; can i continue

Me; ohk carry on

Dre; smart, good kid does not get into trouble , gets into varsity is not about this life i live

Me; whatever he does babe im sure he will be a good kid

Dre; yeah

Me; i love you ohk

Dre; i love you more can i just say something

Me; ...

Dre; dont you want to see luyanda again

Me; im fine dre

Dre; you sure

I nodded my head. I kissed him

Me; really im fine

After hours in our bedroom we had totally forgot we left masebe and her child downstairs. We walked downstairs and all seemed good

Masebe; i would never do that to you or your brother you are my kids , i carried you in my womb why would i even do such

Her;.....

Masebe; i just want my kids back , i know i can try and win them back as for your father i dont know. Even though it was arranged marriage i ended up loving him and still do but i know it may be too late with him but with you guys its not

Her; dad never got married again i dont know if his still mad or what that you need to find out on your own

Masebe; im sure he wont come down here

Her; but we could leave together

Masebe; no no no i cant leave them, they need me

Me; but you need your family more ma

She turned to look at me

Me; as long as you not gone forever \*smiling\*

Masebe; i dont think i can, you sure i can leave with her

Me; yes as long as she promises me you will come back the way you left, 2 legs and 2 hands no scratch

Sphe; i think i can do that

Masebe; but paris and work?

me; i will have to talk to dre mother

Masebe; baby are you sure

Me; go and start packing, you leaving tomorrow right

Sphe; then i better go look for a hotel

Me; are you crazy? Theres enough rooms here

Sphe; thank you

Me; my pleasure

Later that night. We all ate supper together , the girl still made deep eye contact with dre but it did not bother me anymore. Later that day they went to bed and paris fell asleep while me and my hubby stayed up all night watching movies until i fell asleep

Next day masebe and sphe left early in the morning , dre dropped them off while i dropped off paris and dre mum was ohk with looking after her if she would be at work mam rejoice was fine with it. Few days passed that Saturday dre was working and wanted a few thing for paris. Just wore a dungaree white short sleeved top and chucks and headed to the mall. Bought everything i would need and walked back to dre car i was driving dre car that day, as i got closer to the car i noticed the was a kid

leaning on the car i paused for a second and walked up to him....

## INSERT #248

#AMAHLE

Me; helo

Him; sure

Looking the other way

Me; can i help you

Him; with?

me; you leaning on my car so i figured

Him; \*laughing\* this is not your car

Me; \*laughing\* what you mean its not my car

Him; i know the driver off this car and I'm waiting for him

Paris began crying, i picked her up and patted her back.

His eyes grew wide

Him; yho sorry i eish sorry

He moved from the car and walked away

Me; woahhhhh where you going now?

Him; my mistake

Me; im still waiting for you to tell me why this is not my car

Him; seeing paris i know you her mother and wife of the owner of the car

My eyes grew wide

Me; paris ?

Him; yes your kid, you are her mother right

Me; \*laughing\* yes wait im lost can you explain everything to me

Him; \*smiling\* ohk i know your husband andre, and your kid so i thought it was him so i was waiting for him

Me; ohhhh im sorry

Him; ahh ku right

He walked away

Me; wait, let me call him

Him; serious

Me; yeah if you want to talk to him

Him; ohk

I dialled dre number and put it on loudspeaker

Dre; mami slash my beautiful wife

Me; \*smiling\* hey baby

Dre; you good

Me; im ohk, im with \* i paused

Him; sanele

Me; sanele

Dre; sanele??? Sanele

Him; yes sanele mall you forgot me

Dre; \*laughing\* ahhhh boy, no i just have too many friends so i thought it was one off them... You with my wife

Him; \*laughing\* yeah and you were right she is beautiful

I smiled

Dre; you good

Him; yeah iv been waiting for you but you never came la again so when i saw your car and plate i thought i would talk to you

Dre; eish im at work right now

Him; ay ku grand im good now though everything is sorted

Dre; you sure

Him; yes

Dre; listen take my numbers, if you need anything you will call me

Him; serious

Dre; yes babe can you do me a favour

Me; yeah give him something nyana and buy him food

Him; no no im ohk

Dre; no you see this is exactly what will make us fight

Him; \*laughing\* but im good

Dre; for later then

Him; eish ohk

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

Dre; il talk to you later

Me; bye

I hung up. Sanele was cute omg i just fell in love with him right there and then

Me; i also didnt buy anything to eat so let me pack these and we go eat

Sanele; let me help you

We packed the stuff i bought and went to eat

The whole drive i kept thinking about sanele he was only 15 , leaving on the streets, no family nik. Got home and put paris to bed. My mind was all over the place i kept

thinking about sanele over and over and over again. Dre came back

Dre; my beautiful wife

Me; hi

Dre; hi! What did i do

Me; mxm

Dre; no seriously what did i do

Me; nothing bad im just down , your food is in the oven, paris is sleeping im going to bed ne i was just waiting for you

I stood up and he held my hand

Dre; whats wrong

Me; nothing

Dre; i know my wife now sit down and lets talk , cause im not letting you go to bed in this state

We sat down

Dre; ohk talk

Me; sanele

He just scratched his head

Me; what dre, his just a kid living on the streets. He deserves a family

Dre; damn woman , you get too attached yazi

Me; no i dont

Dre; yes you do, you have a good heart way too good sometimes. So what you want me to do

Me;....

Dre; no !

Standing up

Dre; no can do i love kids , you know that i do but if we do that , thats kidnapping

Me; then will report it to child welfare

Dre; and you think they will just give you the kid

Me; you have connections

Dre; oh wow mrs adams, wow

Me; ohk tell me you not attached to him

Dre; ....

Me; tell me you not then i will never bring this up ever again

Dre; we cant babe im sorry but we really cant

Me; dre you said we would adopt our fifth child remember

Dre; we still on 1 and you said it yourself we not ready for another child

Me; we dont need to be on number 5 as long as we adopt

Dre; will you want to adopt every kid you come across on the streets

Me;....

Dre; i didnt think so, so why you attached to him

Me; cause i sat down with him, listened to him talk he has so much potential. He has dreams baby please

He leaned towards me and kissed my cheek

Dre; im sorry baby, you know i would do anything for you but we cant

I just stood up and went to bed and he let me be

## INSERT #249

Next day woke up and dre was at work picked up paris and we went to make breakfast together until i heard the door i peaked and it was masebe i ran to her and hugged her

Me; im so happy to see you ma

Her; \*laughing\* me too baby you still good

Me; yes ma let me help you so you will tell me everything

Her; ohk baby

We packed her bags, finished up making breakfast, put paris on her rocking chair and we talked

Me; so so?

Masebe; baby relax

Me; ohk im relaxed

Masebe; we arrived ethekwini , and went to her place

Me; is she married

Masebe; no, and no child. The following day we met up with simphiwe same procedure as sphe but he eventually listened to me and i bonded with them i think they were more excited than me \*smiling\* the following day they both went to talk to their father and he came where i was his face baby

Me; what mama?

Masebe; nothing happened, he was just glad to see me

Me; after all this time all is forgiven? What?

Masebe; well we both sat down and he told me after a year they left. My father came back to them explaining everything to them the money and that i knew nothing about

Me; wait ma im lost but your husband turned your kids against you till this day which is why sphe came here attacking and all off that

Masebe; thats what i asked him. He told me he was embarrassed to tell his kids the truth and he knew they would hate him so even though he knew the real truth he kept it to himself cause worse part they looked for me and they never found me so it would have been worse if they knew that what he had told them was a lie

Me; so how did sphe and simphiwe react when they found out the truth

Masebe; baby they were angry. But i managed to get everyone calm

Me; so you and your husband?

Masebe; \*smiling\* my life is here baby. I talk with him but thats all as for sphe and simphiwe. Im hoping to be spend more time with them

Me; but if you need to go , you can you know that right ma even though that would break my heart

Masebe; im not going anywhere

I smiled and gave her a big hug

Masebe; can i speak with you and andre

Me; everything ohk

She smiled and nodded her head

Me; il tell him ma

She went to bed cause she was exhausted. I went to bath paris then we both zoned off in my bed, was woken up by her and did the usual with her and just laid on the bed, decided to order pizza for dinner. Dre walked in took paris to bed. I followed him

Me; can we talk

Dre; masebe or sanele

Me; sanele

Dre; mami please

Me; just tell me why

Dre; his a teen mami 15 may i remind you , his 15 years old

Me; so ?

Dre; if i agree to this , there are some things you need to know mami, like you need to know he wont call you mum cause his grown , he knows you not his mother

Me;...

Dre; you need to know you will only act as his guardian and not like his mother. In 5 years time he will be gone, moving out own apartment is it fine with you spending 5 years with him or less. People will ask questions about him and they will know you not his mother even if you might want to hide that

Me;...

Dre; think about all off that. What you have in mind may not be what you get. Hearing mum from him may not be what you get. Treating him good does not mean he will behave as paris. I need you to know that

I wiped my tears

Me; masebe wants to talk to us

I turned and went downstairs

Masebe; you ohk baby

I nodded my head. I sat down and dre sat next to me

Dre; will talk about this

Me;....

Masebe; i dont even know were to start

Us;...

Masebe; i want to thank you both so much , thank you for all that you did for me , for giving me purpose in life when i had given up. For making me the person i am and for seeing someone a whole lot of people failed to see. Thank you for everything that you have done for me and i know my thank you is not enough but im really thankful for you too

Me; \*smiling\* your presence is enough for us ma and thank you

Dre; yeah ma thank you for sticking with us, we know we make you go through hell from seeing us fight, moving in and out. Making you see things others would not wish to see and thank you for being loyal to us, keeping everything that happens in this house between us 3 and for that we could never thank you enough

Me; yes ma so you might think we helping you here but what you dont know is you helping us and what we doing for you is the least we can do for the torture your eyes and ears go through.

Dre; so i really hope this is not a good bye cause i know we still need you

Masebe; \*smiling and crying\* im not going anywhere

Me; could not be more happier to hear that

We got up and hugged

Later that day. I went to put paris to bed and went to bed, went to take a hot long shower an went out

Dre; can we talk

Me; no use dre cause its not going to happen

Dre; amahle its not like i dont want to. Its just we need to consider a lot. Will be bringing him into our home, he was not exposed to a lot of these things

Me; dre i get it ohk. I get it no need to tell me one thing over and over again i get it

Lotioned myself and slept

On the 19th pa arrived and i was soooo happy he was so happy to be with his great grand daughter and i was happy he was around including dre.

Me; i missed you so much

Pa; i missed you too angel , this princess is growing up

Me; tell me about it

Pa; and getting more beautiful

Me; just like me ne

Pa; \*laughing\* you know just like you where is your husband

Me; he should be back anytime from now

Pa; his good

Me; yes pa, we all good and you

Pa; im good

Me; 22 we going for a check up ohk

Pa; for?

Me; just a regular check up pa

Pa;....

Me; \*laughing\* im a dr pa i can do any check ups i want with you

Pa; thats what i dont like about you being dr amahle

Me; you better deal with it pa

Pa; \*smiling\* come here

I went in between his arms and gave him a big hug. Pa was everything to me and i mean everything he had became my mother, my father, and my grandfather and mother i didnt want anything with this guy and everybody knew that he was my biggest weakness after paris and dre

Dre arrived and he was happy to see pa

Dre; the big man himself

Pa; the little man himself

We all laughed. They hugged

Dre; always good seeing you

Pa; likewise and your beautiful girls

Dre; i do have beautiful girls dont i

Pa; most definitely but they mine first before you, just so you know

Dre; that i know and wont fight you on  
We all ate dinner then went to bed

## INSERT #250

The next day woke up and just sat on the bed. Dre walked in with a tray

Dre; morning

Me; hey

Dre; you ohk

Me; yes im fine

He placed the tray on my legs

Me; i dont want pa eating alone

Dre; me and him already ate, he is sitting with paris

Me;...

He held my cheek

Dre; i love you ohk

I smiled. He kissed my forehead and went downstairs. I ate my porridge and went downstairs i rinsed my plate and went to the lounge to pa

Me; morning

I kissed him on the cheek

Pa; morning baby

I kissed paris

Pa; when is ntando coming

Me;...

Pa; baby

Me; i dont know pa

Pa; does he know im here

Me; no i never got a chance to tell him

Pa; please call him, id like to spend time with him as well

Me; ohk il call him now

I went out and dialled his number

Ntando; amahle

Me; hi

Ntando; you ohk

Me; yes and you

Ntando; im good

Me; uhm p...i mean our grandfather is here and he would like to meet with you

Ntando; perfect

Me; so you will come here

Ntando; id prefer it , if he were to come here

Me; his too old to travel

Ntando; he travelled from cape town to johannesburg

Me;...

Ntando; il pick him up at 5

Me; ohk

I went back in

Me; are you ohk pa cause if you dont feel like going up  
and down you can just sit here

Pa; ...

Me; i just want to make sure

Pa; im ohk baby, so what did he say

Me; he will pick you up at 5

Dre; who will pick pa up at 5

Me; ntando

Pa; great

Dre; ntando is taking pa to his house

I nodded my head

Dre; pa you dont have to travel and we cant trust ntando  
as yet with you, he does not know what you need and you  
not familiar with his place that you can sleep there

Pa; can you two stop, i can take care of myself

Us;...

Pa; whats going on?

Me; nothing pa

Pa; you sure

Dre; yes

Me; let me go and pack your stuff

I went to his room. And packed his bag

Dre; stop freaking out

I turned

Me; im not

Dre; you shaking mami

Me; im ohk dre

Dre; ohk im going out with paris

Me; where to?

Dre; warehouse

Me; dre

Dre; rather there than here when your brother gets here

Me;...

Dre; i didnt mean that

Me; make sure you pack everything off hers

Dre; all done. Im out

We kissed and he walked out. I went back to pa and we talked till ntando arrived. Well they hugged

Ntando; how are you?

Me; im good and yourself

Ntando; im good pa you ready to go

Pa; yes baby my bag

I went to his room and took it. Ntando took it from me and i walked him

Me; il see you tomorrow ohk

Ntando; tomorrow?

Me; yes tomorrow

Ntando; you have been with him for years and you only giving me a day

Me;....

Pa; baby im coming back the following week

Me; but we didnt talk about that

Pa; but he also made a valid point

Me; pa !

Pa; im with my grandson just relax

Ntando; yes amahle grandson your own brother

Me; next week if you dont bring him back il come to your place

Ntando; ohk fine with me

He got in the car

Me; you have my numbers and dres you need anything you will call me

Pa; yes baby

I kissed him goodbye and they drove off

INSERT #251

#ANDRE

Although ntando was paris uncle i did not want him near my daughter. Got to the warehouse and got busy with the guys

Me; so how is everything

Themba; we all set, february dont let it slip your mind

Me; i wont ohk what do you have so far

Themba; iv managed to get one person on our side

Me; our inside man

Themba; yeah his definitely in

Me; share?

Themba; iv got that handled dont worry about that

Me; you have times, dates and whereabouts

Themba; yeah but you know what you need to take care off right

Me; yeah im meeting with jake next week , his out off the country at the moment

Themba; ohk i think everything will go smooth

Me; lets hope so , i dont want her losing me so soon

Themba; she wont and she knows her daddy is stronger than that

Me; do you have any information about ntando

Themba; we still keeping a close eye on him

Deon; close eye on him

We both turned and he was standing on the door

Me; this week il need you to be so close to him that you can literally smell him

Deon; why?

Me; his with pa

Themba; you think thats a good idea

Me; its outta of our hands

Deon; il talk to the guys o be there 24/7

Me; do just that let me go, she misses her mum now

Themba; shes more of a daddys girl, so i think she prefers being here

Me; \*laughing\* dont let mami hear you say that or you never seeing her again

Deon; but his right cause thando is all about his mum

Themba; boys and they mums way close just like girls and their dads

Me; totally agree let me go

I took my baby and we left

Got home and mami was swimming

Me; hey

Mami; hey you two back

Me; yeah

Mami; has she slept

Me; \*laughing\* she never sleeps when shes with me

Mami; you know you have to put her to bed right

Me; ohk dont move

After few minutes she zoned off. Joined mami

Me; so your brother

Mami; i dont even know what to say about him

Me; pa was cool with tit

Mami; yes cause his in the dark

Me; its just one day

Mami; i wish

Me; what you mean

Mami; full week thats what he said

Me; his pushing it

Mami; i know can we not talk about him

Me; he wants to hurt me but i know for sure he wont do anything to pa so dont worry about that

Mami; im not worried about him hurting pa cause i know he wont. Im worried about him turning pa against you

Me;...

Mami; i dont think i can take that

Me; lets cross that bridge when we get there ohk

Mami; i love you so much

Me; i love you too my baby

We made out on the pool until it was time to go in

After a few more days. Mami was at work and i was off, woke up and went downstairs. Ate my breakfast when i was done went to take a shower and watched tv with paris. After an hour or so i heard pa voice i turned and he walked in followed by ntando i closed my eyes and got up

Me; big guy

Pa; \*smiling\* i was missed

I was so relieved to get that reaction from him

Me; all the time

Pa; hey baby

I gave him paris

Me; ntando

Ntando; brother in law

Pa; good to see you too are getting along

Ntando; we definitely are pa

I looked at him. He was pushing the right buttons to piss me off

Me; yes we are pa, thank you for bringing him back with no scratch

Ntando; i promised that when i took him. Im kind off decent you know

Me;...

Pa; want to hold your niece

I just looked on the side

Ntando; id love to, its about time she met her uncle

He picked her up. He stayed there for a while

Ntando; let me get going

Me; il walk you out

Ntando; it was really nice being with you pa

Pa; same here boy

I walked him out

Ntando; you should relax, im not planning to tell anyone about you

Me; should i thank you for that

Ntando; in fact yeah cause you look like you have not been sleeping, probably thinking pa will be hating your guts

Me;...

Ntando; im waiting

Me; get the fuck out of my house

Ntando; i think pa needs to know this

He passed me

Me; thank you

Ntando; thats more like it brother in law

He got in his car and left.

## INSERT #252

One Saturday we were sitting outside , jacuzzi just me and DRE since it was a bit windy funny thing it was december dont know why.

Masebe; andre , your phone is ringing \* giving dre the phone\*

dre; thank you ma... Helo.... Huh??... Where are you... Who you with?... Im coming stay there

He got out of the jacuzzi quickly , taking a towel

Me; whats wrong?

He left without saying a word

## #ANDRE

I rushed out of the house, heading to jozi . Sanele sounded scared and hurt. Jozi streets are too busy and it

was kind of hard to find him but he told me he was near mtn and i knew it wouldnt be easy i parked my car from a distant. I looked for him but nothing, someone pulled my top i quickly turned and it was him

Me; boy, whats up

Sanele; they want to kill me

Me; who?

He looked terrified , looking everywhere

Me; you know whats lets go so will talk

We walked back to my car and got in

Me; you look like shit

Sanele;...

Me; so whats happening

Sanele; where are we going

Me; we not going to my place but we going where i work

We got to the warehouse and we got off

themba; whose boy is this

Sanele; who am i with

themba; \*laughing\* i love this kid already

me; sanele, themba, shane, deon, adel, dorian, danger, and the bull dog ty

Sanele; sure

We sat down around him

Me; so talk, whats wrong

He looked at the guys surrounding him

Me; these are my boys relax

Sanele; so you know i have to eat, and since the boys i live with saw what you have been doing for me, the food and the clothes they have been jealous. So theres this guy i work for and then he pays me so these boys told this guy about you and he was pissed and he hit me saying im a traitor and i want to sell him out, he said a lot of stuff and he gave me stuff to sell usually my entire stuff sells out all the time but Wednesday police arrived took my stuff but i was able to run away so this guy wants his money and i dont have the stuff

themba; which stuff?

Sanele; just stuff

Me; sanele what kind of stuff

Sanele; drugs

themba; how old are you

Sanele ; 15

Them ; 15???

Sanele; yeah im not that young

Me; how much does he want?

Sanele;....

deon; how much ?

Sanele; that does not matter i dont even know why i came here let me go

Themba; then you go where ?

Sanele;.....

Me; how much does the guy want

themba; no fuck that, where the fuck is this guy

Sanele; no no no , this is my problem , il sort it out

themba; \*laughing\* boy when you came here you said you this guys boy, do you even know who this guy is?

sandile; he does not know

Sanele looked at me, which made me laugh

Me; fuck off man

He didnt want to tell so we didnt push him. We stayed with him there for a while

Sanele; \*raising his eyebrows\* so what do you really do

Themba; we work

Sanele; what kind of work

tyrone; we steal cars, fraud and drugs

Us; TY !!!!

Tyrone; what he wants to know

Sanele; \*smiling\* shit, now thats what im talking about  
me; fuck no... So you sleeping at my place or not

Sanele..

themba; i would say yes cause if you dont you might not  
see tomorrow

Sanele; sure il sleep at your place

me; ohk lets go, il see you tomorrow after work ohk

Shane; yeah man

Themba; so this guy

me; will talk when he starts talking

themba; ohk

We left and i drove home

Sanele; so why you doing this

Me; cause you a good kid

Sanele; so when are you going to show me the real you

Me; what do you mean

Sanele; people who are nice to me last for 5 minutes then they show me their real self

Me ; im doing this because i want to, i dont want anything from you no wait what would i want from you , you a kid

Sanele; iv never been a kid

Me;.....

Sanele; serious, i had to look after my mother , eh home they wanted me to be a man not some boy but man , when i got to the streets i was forced to be my own man , had to find ways to feed myself

I just looked at him

Sanele; i dont know how to be a kid not that i dont want to i want to, have a mother and father that loves ne, go to school come back and just watch tv \*smiling\* watch soccer with my father , fight with my mother over stupid things like just to be a kid \* he smiled while imagining that and came back to earth and removed the smile\*

Me; you can get all off that

Sanele; never , nobody wants to adopt a teen man

As i was about to say something before i consulted with my wife he talked before i could say it

Sanele; \*eyes wide open \* you stay here

I pulled on the driveway

Me; sure, come

We went out of the car and he slowly walked to the door.  
I opened up and my beautiful wife was sitting on the  
carpet with our beautiful daughter watching tv

mami; sanele sweetie \*she got up \*

Sanele; hi \*shy\*

Me; nana can he stay over , well his kind off in trouble

Sanele looked at me with the wtf look

mami; of course , here baby \*giving me paris\* lets take a  
shower ohk

Sanele; .... Ohkay

Pa; what kind off trouble

Me; il tell you all about it

Pa; he looks like they beat him up

Mami; pa not now

Pa; ohk

They walked upstairs

#AMAHLE

I walked with him to one of the bathrooms and showed him , he was kind of nervous.

Me; il get you DRE clothes ohk

Sanele; ohk... Thank you

Me; \*smiling\* pleasure baby

I went out and took dre clothes and gave him i was so happy to have him here and went downstairs to talk to dre

Me; it was him who called you

DRE; yeah babe

pa; so what happened

dre; can you believe he sells drugs

Me; what?

Pa; where are his parents

Me; his all alone , he lives on the streets

Pa; what????

dre; yeah and now cops caught him, but he was able to run away but because he lost the drugs the drug dealer wants his money

Me; oh my god babe, what we going to do

dre; dont worry about it ohk

Masebe; we can eat now, is the boy done

Me; not yet ma

Masebe; ohk i will cover our food

Pa; so you taking him in

Us;.....

Pa; hmmmm i want to see this

Sanele; yho, i got lost

He looked so clean he was so was so cute light coffee colour, light brown eyes, short but then he was young, not big or small eyes , i loved the shape of his nose, lips not thick nor thin he was a hottie and girls would go crazy over him

Me; haha askies baby lets go eat

We got to the dinning room , everyone grabbed a chair, we prayed and dug in . Paris was sleeping so i could eat in piece. Sanele finished eating in a split second. Mam sebe gave him more

Sanele; so its just you 5

Pa; no 4

Sanele; why 4

Pa; i leave in cape town

Sanele; oh must be beautiful

Pa; never been there before

Sanele; i dont know a lot of places but this house is too big for 4 people

We just laughed and we all engaged in a conversation then went to watch tv, he wanted to help masebe but she would not let him.

I went to bed living him with dre and pa since masebe was already sleeping

## INSERT #253

Woke up Sunday morning and just stayed in bed. Dre woke up and we sat in silence, we were both leaning on our backs. And we stayed in silence for a couple of minutes just thinking. I finally turned to look at him and he was still lost in his thoughts after a few minutes he turned to face me

Me; what you thinking

Dre; what are you thinking

Me; a lot

Dre; me too

Me; are we ready

Dre; i dont know, do you think we are

Me; maybe. Paris is growing up fine, she has never fell

Dre; actually i once dropped her

Me; what?

dre: \*laughing\* not drop her but bumped her head

Me; and you didnt tell me

Dre; im sorry

Me; at least you wont need to pick him up

Dre; lets think about it some more

Me; ohk

went downstairs masebe was still sleeping. I made breakfast for us all then packed paris things for church , dre and pa were going to be with sanele living paris was not going to be a good idea

Masebe; morning sisi

Me; morning mama

Masebe; when are we leaving

Me; \*laughing\* mama its still 7

Mam joyce; \*smiling\* oh ohk let me go check on paris

I was suspecting masebe had someone at church an its been a while now but i ignored it

Me; ohk ma

Sanele; morning

I turned

Me; morning sweedy, its still early what you doing up

Sanele ; im just used to waking up early

Me; breakfast

Sanele; yes please

I poured porridge for him, i put masebe on the microwave and took mine then headed to the lounge

Sanele; thank you for everything iv never been shown the love you have shown me, paris is lucky to have a mum like you

Me; \*smiling\* thank you baby but you know me and dre wont always be with paris to protect her

Sanele; her brother will work even though she will be the oldest \*he smiled looking down to his porridge\*

Me; well ho...

Masebe; i think she wants her mummy

Masebe gave me paris , and gave me her bottle, i put down my porridge and fed her

Me; baby tell me about your mum

Sanele; well theres nothing to tell ey , she was always out, getting drunk, forgetting she has a kid and bringing a different guy everyday . She then fell sick and people were talking whispering behind me until one time i heard a lady say something i was a still child maybe 4 or 5 i didnt know what it is people said. Eventually my mum passed away then was taken to a welfare until i ran away

Me; im sorry nana

Sanele; its ohk

Me; \*smiling\* you so young though but you tough

Sanele; i was never allowed to be a child

He played with paris toes and i just gave him paris and he was scared at first but finally managed

Sanele; how did you meet dre

Me; \*laughing\* actually weird and long story but while i was still in varsity

Sanele; that long

Me; yeah

We talked for a while and then finally went to go bath wore my grey dress and grey heels with grey bag and went downstairs , paris was ready watching tv with sanele

Sanele; yhooo you look nice

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

Sanele; but she look way pretty \*pointing at paris\*

Me; \*laughing\* oh wow thank you very much

He laughed at my comment. Mam joyce came in looking beautiful!!

Me; nana listen, dre still sleeping ohk, dont buzz anyone that says they want turner . If you cant swim dont even go near the pool. Iv put new clothes on your bed. Food fridge ohk

Sanele;\*smiling\* ohk, who is turner?

Me; ask dre\* i winked \*

Me and masebe left. Got to church, the service began and soon after that it was over we drove home themba and dorian were there talking with pa

Me; helo guys... Pa

Pa; hi my angel

Themba; hey mami... Hey baby \*taking paris\*

Dorian ; you good

Me; im good you

themba; perfect now that shes here

I went to change and came back downstairs . Masebe said she was going and will be back i gave her my car even

though she didnt want to (after paris dre taught masebe how to drive for emergency cases and she was now good ). I made the boys something to eat and began cooking

Themba; so how you doing

I turned and he was leaning on the door frame

Me; can i ask you something

Themba ; sure

Me; would it be fine , if we adopt sanele

He looked at me and smiled

themba; i thought that was your plan from the first , he loves dre and his still a kid the life he lives not healthy man and only you would give him the love he deserves

Me; \*smiling\* you think so

dre; i know so

Me and themba turned and he was at the same position themba was in. He walked to us and sat on the kitchen counter

dre; i thought about it and we kind of checked him out, his clean nana no dodgy thing

Me; really

Themba; yeah so its up to you, if you want to take him in

Me; but you remember what you told me

Dre; forget everything that i said i just panicked that day

Me;...

Themba; so will you or should i

Me; \*Laughing\* themba stop

Themba; believe me i would

Us; mxm

dre; and we did say we would adopt right

Me; yeah so this is our time

themba; just take the boy in man

dre; we doing it

He got off and left us. themba stared at me

Me; stop staring

themba; \*smiling\* do you know you will be a mother of two now

Me; \*laughing\* yes themba now go back there

themba; ohk

He went back. I carried on cooking. Themba and dorian were staying over for dinner masebe came back 19;30 and she told me everything. 8 we all ate dinner paris was already in bed 10 themba and dorian left

I went to pa room and he was reading the bible

Me; pa i want to talk to you

Pa; ohk come sit here i sat next to him

Me; ohk

Pa; is everything ohk?

Me; pa i want your permission to do something

Pa; ohk talk to me

Me; i want to adopt sanele

He laughed closing the bible

Me; is it wrong pa

Pa; you want to give a child a home whats wrong about that baby. I was actually expecting it

Me; \*smiling\* really

Pa; yes my angel. That boy is one lucky boy and he will know that in due time , you giving him something he had already gave up on and im so happy you taking that decision you have no idea how happy i am right now

I smiled

Pa; plus you always told me , ma and your father how when you married you want to adopt so this is your dream and his

Me; \*smiling \* so you going to support me and dre

Pa; each and every step you take but i need one thing from you

Me'; which is

Pa; let me him spend a month or 2 with me

Me; \*laughing\* i think we can agree on that

Pa; i love you ohk baby

Me; i love you to

We shared a hug then left his room to go to bed

## INSERT #254

Monday morning prepared for work , i knocked off and headed home. Sanele was not there masebe said dre picked him up. I went to change to comfortable things, took paris AND PLANNED TO PREPARE THINGS FOR CHRISTMAS she was in between my legs but she did not allow me to do anything

## #ANDRE

I picked up sanele and went to the hardware with him. He finally told us everything about this guy and we left to go to this flats he lived in piece of shit if you ask me it was just me and themba cause deon was not there and we

were armed. We walked up the stairs and went in , where they said we would get him

Guy; who the fuck are you

He had an accent

Me; i dont have time for this

Guy; what ? What? Who are you talking to like that

I tried to sit but it was trash so we just stood up while 3 buffed guys stood behind us. I threw 200 notes rolled , 5k

Guy; ohhh you want to be high

me; thats 5k if you can understand me, a boy owed you this money and we paying back to you

Guy; that nele boy this is for him

Me; yeah now stay the fuck away from him

Guy; \*grinning\* oh what

Me; i dont like talking, i prefer showing you

He removed the grin

Guy; what is he to you

themba; stay the fuck away from me

We turned and stared at the buff guys until they moved away , we went back to the warehouse. And sanele was

pleased and could not stop saying thanks then we went home

#AMAHLE

DRE walked into our bedroom and kissed me then her daughter

Me; hey baby

dre; you good mami

Me; im good, let me finish with this

dre; ohk.. Helo daddy girl... Princess ...

Me; done

dre; i think we should tell him

Me; sanele

dre; yeah

Me; lets tell him christmas

dre; ohk

Me; but baby adoptions processes can take years

Dre; so what you want me to do

I bit my lower lip

Dre; il see what i can i do babe but im not promising you anything

Me; ohk thank you baby

Dre; il do anything for you

We walked downstairs and sanele was laughing with pa

Sanele; \*laughing\* really but i dont believe

Pa; im telling you, i even have pictures

Sanele; so what happened

Dre; let me guess, soccer story

Sanele; \*laughing\* you also dont believe

Dre; rather not say

Pa; both off you sit down, im the old one here i dont lie

I just laughed and went to the kitchen to help out masebe

Masebe; his really a good kid

Me; he is ma , isnt he

Masebe; iv never met someone like you baby

Me; what you mean ma

Masebe; so good hearted put others before you , you just god sent

Me; thank you ma \*smiling\* and you are the greatest ever ever

We both laughed

We prepared dinner

Me; so mama we leaving together right

Masebe; ohk baby what are we going to buy

Me; grocery, gifts and a whole lot off things

Masebe; we need to leave in the morning, you know  
december how full it gets

Me; yes ne mama and the lines and you know how much i  
hate those

Masebe i know you well

Me; so ma your family?

Masebe; they wanted me to come that side

Me; so will you?

Masebe; im not sure

Me; or you can invite them here

Masebe; i can

Me; yes ma the more the merrier

Masebe; thank you baby il call sphe and find out if they  
can get here

Me; if not will fly them down here

Masebe; you see what im talking about

Me; \*laughing\* ai ma ao

We were done. Went to the lounge and the guys were screaming and paris was just looking at daddy in the eyes. I took him from dre and we went to bath before dinner bonded with her dressed her in her pjs and we went downstairs

Me; guys lets go and eat

Them; ohk we coming

I tried feeding the princess but she was going crazy i dont even know why

Pa; let me do it

Me; sure

Pa; give it to me

I gave pa and well he played with her and she finally started eating

## INSERT #255

Next day we all got dressed , sanele wore dre sweatpants and just sweat top cause we had not bought him clothes. Everyone was dressed and we left. Placed paris on her stroller and we began our shopping while we were buying food the guys went to buy clothes for sanele.

Me; yazi mama im just buying la i still dont know what i will prepare

Masebe; just cook something simple, that everyone will enjoy

Me; eish indaba this family off ours its all colours white, coloured and black

Masebe; eish i sometimes forget that the way we all one baby

Me; \*laughing\* me too ma cause we passed that skin colour thing

Masebe; too much

Me; but it means everyone must get food ma

Masebe; dont worry will make enough food

Me; no dre mother will come and help us and she will bring mam joyce

Masebe; thats so much better

We bought everything we would need. Then met up with the guys they had too many bags and i was happy. Then we went to get lunch then headed home the time was 2. 5 minutes after walking in a lady showed up

Dre; hey im happy you could make it

Her; you know i can never say no to you

Dre; im glad its still that way

Her; \*smiling \* still good looking as always

And i was just standing there with shock i can never get used to girls flirting with dre ever

Dre; \*laughing\* you too this is my beautiful wife , my father in law, my baby girl, our second mother masebe and sanele

Her; beautiful family

Dre; thank you man

Her; so....

Dre; you need to talk to my wife in private

Her; ohk

We walked upstairs to the study

Dre; baby this is thenjiwe shes a social worker

Me; oh ohk

Dre; thenj i asked to talk in private cause he does not know what we are planning

Her; totally understand but you know what you did is wrong right. Its totally wrong, what you doing is kind of not different to kidnapping. You should have reported this and taken him in. His not even a young adult

Dre; thenj i know ohk yeah we should have taken him in to welfare but you know how this things are

We sat down

Her; ohk let me start with this its really nice meeting turners wife and i was at your wedding but had to leave early which is why i never met you

Me; \*smiling\* totally understand

Her; ohk now since you already know the child you want to adopt it will make things simpler but il talk to one off my friends whos an adoption agency to screen how you live, if you will be able to take care off the child, if everything goes well with her she will send a report to childrens court to finalise the adoption and issue an adoption order then the court order will go through the report and your details and the childs

Me; that could take months

Her; truth yes

Dre; come on thenj

Her; \*laughing\* dont thenj me turner you still have to go through group orientations, counselling, home visits, home study reports, court processes , birth registration, administration costs, after care service and origin enquiry all off those need money

Dre; money is not a problem

Her; i know

Me; ohk cause i know thats going to take months can we stay with him through that procedure

Her; yes but you need to report it to the joburg welfare

Dre; ohk give it to me , how long will it take

Her; cause his a teen not that long 6 months or 8

Dre; make it 2 thenj

Her; geez i knew it was trouble when you called me

Dre; \*laughing\* please

Her; fine but i need to talk to him , question him about few things when were you planning to tell him

Me; christmas

Her; ncoooo thats sweet

Me and dre laughed

Her; ohk i will come on the 26

Me; can i start looking for a school for him

Her; you really serious arent you?

Me; dead serious

Her; when you go to the welfare , let them know off that but it wont be a problem so yeah

Me; thank you so so much

I got up and hugged her

Her; anything for your husband

I just laughed

Dre; we talking 2 months right

Her; yes turner 2 , i have to get started right now

Dre; thank you come here

She went in between dre hands and they hugged. We went downstairs, prepared lunch for her since we had already eaten then she left

i had a smile throughout the day. We parked groceries then we all went to sit outside just talking and laughing and i loved how sanele was getting comfortable with us.

## #ANDRE

Next day Mami was at work so it was just me, pa , sanele and paris. I was busy with work when the was a knock

Me; come in

Sanele walked in

Me; sure boy

Him; hi \*looking down \*

Me; whats wrong lets talk

He sat on the chair opposite me , only my desk was separating us, closed my laptop

Sanele; its just.., \* he paused \*

Me;....

Sanele; i love it here andre, i love your wife, i love your daughter, i love masebe and i love pa for the first time since i was born i feel like i belong like i have family and i hate that feeling cause i know its something thats not going to happen im getting to attached to you i think its time i go back to the streets that way i wont have to feed myself a lie that im one off you

Me; so you want to go

Sanele; yes and im not taking anything that will remind me off you

Me; ohk

He looked at me

Sanele; ohk ???

Me; hao what you want me to say

Sanele; ma.... Nah nothing

Me; but can you leave christmas

Sanele; why?

me; that will make my wife happy if you leave christmas just stay today and tomorrow christmas il drop you off wherever you want me to drop you off

Sanele; ohk thank you for everything

Me; pleasure

He got up and left and i just laughed not so loud though if only he knew. He was going to be part off this family and SOON!

## INSERT #256

### #ANDRE

23 and 24 none much happened except i told my family my plans with my beautiful wife that we were going to adopt, well they had question and we were able to answer them they were also happy about the decison we were taking. Also amahle went to the welfare and they gave her some temporary form that he can take in sanele until things were sorted but should the application for adoption be rejected they were going to take him away but we knew that was not going to happen. Me and amahle wanted a simple way to tell sanele but kim had other plans and we were going along with them

My mum arrived around 8 with mam joyce and kim to help the wife cook for christmas. They didnt leave for home cause it was already late so everyone slept there and they left early in the morning to get dressed

Woke up christmas morning and the wife was already up, went downstairs

Me; morning and merry christmas

Mami; \*laughing\* merry christmas baby

We kissed

Masebe; merry christmas boy

Me; wheres the prince and princess

Mami; prince bedroom

Me; ohk

I walked upstairs i slightly opened the door and they were sitting on the floor on the other side off the bed. Snaele didnt even hear me coming in

Sanele; just because im leaving does not mean you must misbehave ne i dont care what other people will say or what the situation may be il always be your brother and when im succesful, have a big house and car im going to come pick you up and we spend more time together ohk  
\*he paused\* \*sniffing \* anyone bothers you, you come get me i dont know how you will find me but il make sure you find me

Paris; jah jah jah

Sanele laughed

Sanele; \*laughing\* jah ini, im sure you wont even remember me i wish you were really my sister

Then he placed her on his shoulder patting her back. I slowly closed the door and went downstairs

Mami; you found them

Me;.....

Mami; babe?

Me; yeah thank you babe

I walked up to her and hugged her

Mami; for what? Whats going on

Me; nothing just thank you for what you doing

Mami; \*laughing\* ohk can i finish off cooking now

Me; yeah

Sanele walked downstairs with paris on his arms

Mami; you hungry baby

Sanele; no

Mami; you didnt eat today and yesterday

Sanele; i just dont have appetite

Mami; baby you ohk?

he nodded his head

Mami; good then you going to eat like it or not

Sanele; bu....

Mami; here

She handed him a bowl off porridge, he smiled and went to the lounge. I took paris food and joined them

Me; have you told her you going

Sanele; no it will break her heart i dont think i can stand it

Me; so what you going to do

Sanele; will say we going to bye something then leave

Me; no goodbye

Sanele; better that way

Me; ohk

He looked at me

Me; what?

sanele; nothing

Me; no talk

Sanele; these days iv been here, the was no difference to you

Me; what makes you say that

Sanele; its easy for you to just let me go not that im saying something else but if i were to tell pa, or ma that im going im sure they would not take it as easy as you taking it

The word " ma" made me even more excited to tell him whats really going on

Me; its your decision and i have to respect it

Sanele; ohk

People started coming in including masebe family and it was nice meeting them. We introduced our friends and family to sanele and i think that was hard for him

INSERT #257

#ANDRE

Kim; good day to everyone here

Us; hi/ helo/ yebo

Kim; \*laughing\* its good to be here ne, for those who dont know me im the sister of the husband of this home

They laughed

Kim; yeah yeah whatever so i have a gift for someone but i had to get everyone attention for it

Them; who/ uban?

Kim; \*smiling\* sanele

Sanele looked around and noticed kim was talking to him

Kim; yes you come here

Sanele slowly walked to kim. I was standing next to my wife and princess

Kim; here

Sanele; for me

Us; yeboooo / what is it// open it

He slowly unwrapped the gift and it was a bracelet that's when me and amahle kneeled to the floor. Sanele was confused as fuck

Me; you have made us one happy family and i think its only fair to say

Mami; you are no different to us

Me; will you do us the honour

Mami; of being our son

His eyes popped out. I took out paris jacket and her top was written " and being my older brother ". Sanele just froze there not moving and i think not breathing

Kim; say YES \*shouting\*

He slowly turned around and walked away and he just broke down

Mami; is that no?

He turned to face us

Sanele; \*laughing\* OF COURSE, YES

Pa; then you better show it and give them some love

He walked shy towards us and hugged us , more like a group hug and as i know my wife of course she would also break down

Sanele; wait so does this mean il be your child , paris brother

Mami; exactly that , thats if you want

Sanele; i want that more than anything

Mum; well can your grandmother get a hug too

He walked to my mum and hugged them well everyone requested a hug and he did not mind giving them out

Kim; you see i have good ideas ne

Me; \*smiling\* thank you big head

Kim; anytime, i like him we going to get along really well

Me; \*laughing\* dont condone him

Kim; mmhmmmm

Me; kim

Kim; leave me

We began eating. I went to my bedroom to get pa bottle special bottle for the old guy sanele room was open i walked towards it and peaked. He was on his knees praying

Him; i know i dont do this, actually i never do this but from now on im going to change my ways everyday before i go to bed and when i wake up im going to pray and thank you cause you blessed me with something that many kids wish to have thank you god for the blessing you poured over me thank you for my family my mother and father i know its not by blood but they definitely my parents. You dont have to bless me further cause you have blessed me for life bless other kids who wish to be blessed like me thank you lord amen

I walked in

Him; i i

Me; praying

Him; yeah felt the need too

Me; lets talk

We sat down

Me; you made a huge difference in this house to me, amahle and paris including pa. You dont have to call us mum or dad ohk and i know amahle does not expect that from you cause you 15 man

He laughed

Me; but if you comfortable with it we sure wont mind. You one off us and i dont want you to feel out off place when we out you my kid ohk

Sanele; can i ask for a favour

Me; sure

Sanele; i do want to go to school

Me; and im making sure off that, that january you go to school

Sanele; is it possible that they dont know about the adoption

Me; \*smiling\* when everything is done it will be sanele adams so we wont have to explain anything to them ohk thats what you worried about

He nodded his head

Me; dont worry about that we 4 now those girls downstairs are also your responsibility if im not around you take care off them ohk

Sanele; gladly

Me; lets go son \*smiling\*

Sanele; \*laughing\* yes dad

We both laughed. I went to take pa bottle and we went downstairs

Me; the gift i promised you

Pa; \*laughing\* you know me way too well. My own daughter keeps feeding me with juice

Me; \*laughing\* i hope this does not get me into trouble

Pa; never

Themba; we going to share right pa

Pa; we dont drink the same stuff boy

The guys laughed. I went to get our other drinks and went back to the guys us guys were sitting with pa including masebe husband. As we were enjoying our drinks someone pushed me and my drink spilled and it was ntando.

Ntando; the big guy \*shouting\*

Me;...

I looked for mami but she was nowhere to be found

Ntando; \*shouting\* i envy you man, you living every mans dream

Everyone was staring at him. I got up

Pa; ntando you had too many

Ntando; no pa i havent

I tried to hold him

Ntando; \*shouting\* dont fucken touch me. All of this is yours \*he laughed\* your family, your wife, do they fucken know who you are or what you do to have all of this

I grabbed his arm and pulled him in but he got out off my grip

Ntando; you are a mur...

Before he could finish the sentence themba took him down, he punched him. He fell on his knees and mami uncle held themba, i must have turned pink

Ntando; \*laughing\* why you hitting me scared il reveal the truth about this bitch...

Mami walked out holding paris and she stood next to me , paris was crying

Ntando; \*clapping hands\* and here they b b b b boni and clyde right. Right or die no no its ride or die anything that involves you has to do with die

Mami; ntando please

Ntando; yey yey please for what

He turned to pa

Ntando; let me tell you about your dearest daughter or whatever

I walked up to him and as i was about to hold him, he took out a gun for me. Everyone suddenly began screaming

Ntando; back off back off

I turned to mami

Me; take paris and sanele

Mami; dre

She looked at me and turned

Ntando; yej come back here, you will be here when i say all off this

Mami gave paris sanele and whispered to his ear and they went in....

## INSERT #257 CONTINUATION...

Ntando; now nobody is leaving because you will all listen to me

Pa; \*shouting\* ntando man

Ntando; \*shouting\* shut up, shut up

Us;...

Ntando; your daughter married a killer, he he is a killer, all of this is people blood\* he paused\*, your son MAM MRS ADAMS , murdered my 8 year old, i lost my wife because of him and my job \*laughing\* and she supports all of that

The look on my mothers face, my grandmother cut deep

Ntando; \*shouting\* fuck you ! Fuck you, you piece of shit

Pa; andre

I just covered my face

Pa; amahle

Mum; andre

I turned to mami and she was just crying. I just lost IT...

Me; \*shouting\* what the fuck you want from me? What?

Ntando; i want you to feel each and every pain i felt

Me; \*shouting\* Im fucken sorry ohk, im sorry ntando im sorry. Im sorry i cant turn back time , im sorry i was young it was something that was not suppose to happen and you know it was not suppose to happen, you were there, you fucken saw everything it was not suppose to happen like that

Ntando;..

Me; me and you both know that was not suppose to happen and i reached out to you. Tried to fix it, i tried but

you didnt allow me now you just want to take everything that i have...

Me: we both know I didn't kill your daughter, I'm just the easiest target to blame

Mami uncle; boys lets sit down and talk about this

He turned the gun to him

Ntando; sit the fuck down and you

He turned the gun to mami

Me; thats the kind of disrespect i won't take, disrespecting my wife like that

I stood in front of mami

Me; you want to spill some blood, kill me boy this is between me and you

Ntando; no how about them \*he paused\* \*shouting\* ginger

I turned and this nigga was dragging my kids, I didn't even know him or who he was or how he entered my house

Mami; ntando please\* crying \* ntando please im begging you ntando please

Pa; ntando dont take your frustrations on them

Ntando; everyone shut the fuck up... Its too bad you brought this poor boy to your madness

He was holding Paris, this ginger nigga holding sanele

Me;...

Ntando; now i pull the trigger and its even

Me; i swear to god ntando, i swear on my fathers grave  
you hurt them, both of them im going to kill you and il  
make sure its slow and pain and then im going to make  
you feel worse than what you feeling now

Ntando; \*laughing\* i hope you finally see your son in law  
family and your son.

Me;...

Ntando; feel the pain i felt

I dont know what happened its as if, everything just went  
blur, i just had water splash, and people screaming and  
felt myself jumping inside the pool...

## Insert #258

I got out off the water and nobuhle took over. She rushed  
upstairs and i went to take mami kit and took my kit too  
and handed it too her

Me; \*shouting\* is she ohk?

Nobuhle;.....

Me; \*shouting\* NOBUHLE!!!

My mum barged in and mbali

Me; is she ohk?

paris cried. I held my head

Nobuhle; shes ohk, she just went for a swim didnt you

\*kissing her\*

I picked her up and she was crying and shaking. Sanele walked in crying. My head was all over the place, my mum was crying i could hear people screaming and shouting, mbali was crying, nobuhle was crying all the women there were crying, went to my bedside and took my gun

Mum; \*shouting\* andre no! No!

I left her there and went downstairs

Pa; andre! No

And went outside, themba was holding him and the guys holding the other guys

I hit him with the back of the gun and placed it on the side and punched him.

#nobuhle

I was so scared, i was literally shaking. I went to look for amahle cause she just passed out. When i went out dre

was beating the shit out off ntando, the was blood all over the place

Dre mum; andre stop

Pa; stop the boy

Amahle uncle ; andre!

Dorian pulled dre from the back but dre turned punching him. The look on dre face was fucked up scary he looked as if he was hungry for blood and he was feeding himself over ntando, no matter how many guys went to him to pull him away he got out of their grip. We all tried to stop him as andre mum walked up to him. There was this loud noise a bang, the moment i opened my eyes dre was down. Jack was carrying the gun. I just froze there when amahle passed me running to dre.

Kim; \*crying\* andre

I ran to him as well to help amahle

Jack; im sorry amahle, he wouldnt stop, i had to, he was going to kill him and go to jail, dre cant go to jail

Amahle; you will be ohk.... I need a tow...

She got lost in her thought, as if it was just me and her, she looked like a crazy woman if you asked me but she was still holding dre gun shot wound

Amahle; paris

Me; i need you to focus on dre, paris is fine, shes with sanele

Dre was losing so much blood , his blood covered amahle hands and she wasnt wearing any gloves

Me; amahle his losing blood

Her focus went back to dre

Amahle: I want you to think about your kids, you have two now sanele and Paris... You have a lot to teach sanele

She kept talking to dre

Amahle: we still have 4 more lives to bring into this world

She didn't stop talking to dre , reminding him what they went through, they future

I wanted to focus on dre in order for me and amahle to help him but people were crying screaming it was just too noisy. I went to grab everything we would need

Me; wear this

Amahle; i need you to put your fingers here

Me; can you wear gloves

Amahle; \*shouting\* his my fucken husband i dont need to wear fucken gloves now apply pressure

I could understand her nerves. I did exactly that, he was still breathing

Me; he will choke on his blood in this direction

Amahle; lets turn him

We did just that, you would think it was a movie, everyone was just surrounding us. She took her fingers and applied pressure to the brachial artery in order to stop the bleeding. The bleeding got better. After few minutes, the ambulance arrived and they took him in

Me; go il take of the kids

She went in and they drove off.

The tension you would cut it with the knife, i went to wash my hands and just started crying, i felt hands wrap themselves around me i lifted up my head and it was themba i just hugged him and cried, he brushed my head until i calmed down

Themba; you ohk

I nodded my head

Me; we cant leave sanele and paris

Themba; i know, lets just go and clean up downstairs ohk

Me; ohk

He walked away

Me; themba

He quickly turned

Me; i love you ohk

He walked up to me and smiled

Themba; \*smiling\* i love you too

We went downstairs.

Amahle uncle; no no no umtanethu uyabuya ekhaya ( no no no our child is coming back)

Uncle 2; his a thug, a murderer our daughter deserves no such

Dre grandmother; you wont speak that shit about my son, not while im still around

Uncle; ai suka, will give you back your lobola money

The families just went up against each other not the kind of picture dre and amahle would want to see

Insert #259

#nobuhle

As we were cleaning downstairs, the quarrels got more and more loud.

Uncle 1: lets go this is madness.. Magwenya the kids

I looked at themba  
Andre aunt; hold it right there which kids  
Uncle 2; our daughters kids we leaving with them  
Andre grandmother; over my dead body  
Uncle; mangwenya the kids  
I rushed to stand near the stairs  
Me; woah ma , you cant take the kids  
Uncle 1; my child you very much beautiful but i do not even know who you are and i dont know how all of this involves you as you have no say here  
Me;...  
Andre aunt; those kids are going nowhere with you... Especially in the same car as that psycho path who near killed our granddaughter  
Pa; can everyone calm down  
Uncle; mhkhulu these people are disrespecting us, we going with our daughter kids  
Me; please ma, when amahle gets back and dre they expect to see their kids home. I will be here and look after them  
Uncle 1 wife; do you even know how to take care of a child

Themba; ma with all due respect, dre and amahle kids are not going anywhere. Especially since you insist that you leaving with that b... Ntando... Im not allowing dre children leave with him

Uncle 2; seems like friends nowadays dont know their place

Themba; pa, please

Pa;....

Themba; ma please

Andre grandmother;...

Themba; can we stop thinking about each other, those kids can not be dragged into this mess please guys amahle and dre need their kids right now

Andre grandmother; lets leave

Pa; bab gwenya leave the kids, lets go

Themba; thank you ma and pa

Then they all left even pa left with mbali mum, amahle family took ntando with them. It was just me, mbali, and the guys. Jack was a mess

Themba; i would have done the same thing boy, he was out off control

Jack....

Themba; jack

Jack turned to him

Themba; dre will be ohk, im proud of what you did and i know dre will be glad you did what you did

He got up and went outside

Me; keep an eye on him

Themba; dont worry

I went upstairs, paris was fast asleep, including sanele i went downstairs .

Mbali; im fucken scared

Me;...

Mbali; they know who dre is at least know half, this means they will also question deon

Me; dont stress about it mbali

Mbali; i cant help it

Unathi; today was suppose to be a happy day

Dorian; and i get punched, dre almost loses her daughter, amahle almost loses her husband, amahle might have lost her family, dre might have lost his family, including mbali and me. Now they will also question what i do fuck

Us;...

Nobuhle; i wish i can just wake up from this bad dream

Mbali; i feel like im going to wake up and all of this was a dream

Deon; have you heard from amahle

Me; no

Deon; do you think he will make it

Me; i think he will be ohk

Jack; you sure

I turned

Me; yes im sure jack, if me and amahle didnt stop the bleeding then we might have looked at worst case scenario

Jack; dre will hate me then fire me

Mbali; no he wont just relax

Themba; he will have bigger problems to deal with than you

Unathi; i dont want to lie, i was fucked up scared of dre today

Sandile; iv worked with him for years and not even once have i seen him like that

Themba; boy you better. Iv been with him from a young age but the guy i saw. I was also scared of him

I didnt even want to be near him

Dorian; and i think im iron man trying to stop him  
We laughed

Themba; thats exactly what i was avoiding by not going to  
him

Dorian; never ever again

Themba; he turned into this animal for his family  
Us;...

Deon; what you guys think will happen now

Me; i dont know but im scared to see

Themba; that bitch literally divided this family

Mbali; tell me about it im even scared for my marriage  
now

Deon; will be ohk

Mbali; we have too

Me; thando?

Mbali; he left with my mum

Unathi; jack does this mean you also in trouble with your  
mum

He held his head

Jack; i just hope my mum does not add things up

Mr; you see before they never added things up, your mum dorian, the money, the houses but now

Dorian; and funny thing my grandfather my mums dad knows what me and dre does

Jack; what?

dorian; yeah and kim only know what we do the rest nothing

Jack; what grandpa knows what we do

Dorian; yeah but he got over it, now my mum guys, my mum is going to kill us

Jack;...

Me; im going to bed this is too depressing

I left them and went to bed.

Next morning, woke up and as i was about to go and check on paris. Masebe was feeding her

Me; hi ma

Masebe; hi baby, please go check on amahle

Me; shes here

She nodded her head

I went to my her room and she was on the floor covered in blood and crying her eyes out. I didnt know what to say

so i just knelt besides her and hugged her, she returned the hug way tighter and she just cried her eyes out...

INSERT # 259 continuation

#AMAHLE

I was covered in dre blood, i had the worst headache, i got up from the floor and went to the shower, i couldnt even talk with pa he called me but i didnt even know what to say to him or dre mother, or dre grandmother so i just switched off my phone. When i got out, wore a long dress, packed dre bags and went to sanele room

Me; morning baby

Sanele' morning ma

A smile just left my lips dont even know how that happened. I went to sit next to him

Me; we have a lot to talk about ohk but right now i need you to go and eat cause someone is going to come and see you

Sanele; are they taking me away?

Me; no nana. They just going to ask you a few questions ohk

Sanele; ohk.

Me; now lets go eat

I went downstairs and masebe was holding paris. I held her and she was ohk. When i got back this morning first person i checked up on. I hated ntando and i didnt want to see his sight in front of me. The guys were up.

I ate my breakfast and an hour later thenjiwe arrived and they went outside, it was all clean the guys must have cleaned up the blood and stuff. I was shaking, themba held my hands

Themba; you ohk?

I nodded my head

Themba; his not going anywhere his your son now

Me; everything that happened yesterday could have jeopardise this

Themba; stop stressing, hows dre

Me; he will be ohk, what happened after we left

Themba;...

Me; dont even tell me

Themba; everything will be ohk

Me; i doubt

I got up and went to my room. I was just panicking about everything after a few more minutes themba called me down

Thenjiwe; ohk thank you, im done you will hear from me then

Me; thank you so much thenjiwe

Thenjiwe; pleasure, where is turner

Me;...

Themba; he had a meeting thenj

Thenjiwe; \*smiling\* ohk mr t walk me out, thank you for having me

Me; no thank you

Themba; everything went well

Thenjiwe; he says nothing but great things about you

I smiled

After thenj left, i left to go to the hospital. I bumped to dr alex

Dr alex; mrs adams

Me; hi alex, how is he?

Dr alex; his ohk, he woke up

Me; his awake now

Dr alex; yes you can go on in and see him

I left him there and went in and he was sitting with his butt. In hospital garments, with a broken collarbone bandage around him. He was looking outside the window. I slowly walked in

Me; andre

He didnt even turn to look at me

Me; are you ohk?

Andre; im going to kill your brother

## INSERT #260

Me; can we not talk about this now dre

He turned to look at me

Dre; i said im going to kill your brother i was not asking for your permission, i was informing you

Me; dre theres already enough damage, killing him will make things worse

Dre; \*shouting\* i dont fucken care, he ruined my sons first christmas. He nearly killed my daughter.

Me;...

Dre; \*shouting\* i dont owe your family shit and that rubbish brother of yours \*he paused\*

Me; will killing him solve anything ? We have a lot to fix  
dre ohk, our families

Dre; get the fuck out

Me;...

Dre; \*shouting\* i said get the fuck out

Me; why you fighting with me ? \*shouting\* why? Taking  
out your frustrations on me wont help you or me, im  
trying to be here for you why you pushing me away

Dre; its your fucken fault we in this position. If you ever  
listened to me by not meeting that bitch we would never  
be in this position

Me; \*shouting\* fuck you

He got out off the bed and rushed up to me, i went back  
and he pinned me to the door. There were knocks behind  
us

Woman; mr adams are you ohk... Can you open up

Then a man

Man; andre open up

It was alex

Dre; dont fuck with me wena

His right hand was on my neck, cause the other was hurt

Me; fighting me wont solve your problems , stop being an idiot

With that said he hit the door just next to my face i closed my eyes

Dre; get the fuck out

Andre; amahle, andre open this door

Me; im not leaving you , if you want me to leave you will have to drag me out

He looked at me and walked back to his bed. I turned to the door and opened

Alex; are you ohk?

I looked at dre then nodded my head

Alex; turner, we in a hospital. I kind of dont need tantrums

Andre; i need painkillers

Alex; are you listening to me

Andre; \*shouting\* i said bring me pain killers

Alex looked at me. I pulled him by the hand

Andre; where the fuck do you think you going

Me; one minute ago you wanted me to leave now you dont

Andre; wheres my phone

Me; you dont need your phone

Andre; amahle

Me; you behaving like a mentally ill person

I pulled alex out

Alex; whats going on?

Me; \*whispering\* his \* i paused\*

Alex; his what?

Me; im not sure, his freaked out about paris, he wants to spill blood and that making him be on the edge

Alex; what exactly happened amahle

Me; il tell you just not today its a really long story

Alex; let me get his pain killers

Me; ohk

I went back

Me; you hungry?

Andre;....

Me; il go buy us food

Andre; come back with my phone

Me; your phone for what?

Andre; dont piss me off, i want my phone and where the fuck is alex \*shouting\*

Me; \*shouting\* stop ohk, stop. I came here to be with you cause i was close to my death knowing i might have lost you. I left my kids home to be with you and you want to fucken disrespect me stop ohk just stop. I know you in pain but fighting me wont ease your pain or remove your pains cause you need me dre. You fucken need me so stop getting on my last nerve nxa

I took my bag and walked out. I went to buy him food then called home. I talked with sanele and he was fine then with the guys

Themba; how is he

Me; his getting on my last nerve, iv been with dre for so long but he surprises me all the time

Themba; what happened

Me; his angry at me , swearing at me, fighting with me for what i dont know

Themba; his just frustrated mami

Me; let me go and check on him

I ended the call and went back and he was in the position i found him in

Me; i got you a burger, fries and juice

Dre; thank you

Here

He turned

Me; il come back with your phone tomorrow, you can use mine now

He looked at me

Me; dre i cant drive home and come back here tu, just think about me tu

Dre; im sorry

Me;...

Dre; i was just frustrated ohk

I walked up to him and wrapped my arms around his neck

Me; i understand. Im sorry about everything ohk

Dre; come here

I sat on his lap and kissed him, we got disturbed when someone cleared their throat, we turned to the door and it was dre mother and grandmother. My heart, i looked at dre and he looked as terrified as me.

## INSERT #261

Me; ma

I got up from dre

Dre; ma

Andre mother; \*laughing\* hmm

She turned to the door

Dre; ma

She walked out

Andre grandmother; ayanda no amahle

Us;...

She signalled for the chair and i gave it to her she sat on the middle

Andre grandmother; well we glad you ohk

Us;...

Andre grandmother; yazi angizwani nama simba mina, ende lento esibekene nayo ama simba ( i dont like shit and what we facing right now is shit)

Us;...

Dre; m....

Andre grandmother; shut your mouth boy, who the fuck do you think you are wena ? Ayanda you have put this family through so much man \*crying\* my child died going up and down because of you, because of your shit

Dre;...

Andre grandmother; you said you done with all that shit, you made that promised to your father in his grave. No uayanda, uyabulala wena uwu jesu wena sies man udodi LOYO . ( BUT NO AYANDA KILLS, HIS JESUS THATS BULLSHIT)

Dre; ma

Andre grandmother; voetsek \*shouting\* and you I was ready to die

Andre grandmother; you support this bullshit, you support him for what he does

Me; m....

Andre mother; ayyy voetsek

Me;...

Andre grandmother; you a mother and you a father, what do you expect your kids to think of you and you killed your brother in law child ayanda man \*crying\*

A tear just escaped eyes

Andre grandmother; aya aya aya....

She just broke down. I broke down too and dre face was shattered seeing his grandmother like that

Andre mother walked in , helped andre grandmother and they left just like that

I went to the bathroom and fixed myself up and stayed there for a while, then walked back to the room. Dre was looking down, i went next to him and hugged him and i realised he was crying. Dre never cries he returned the hug and we stayed in that position for a while. No one saying anything to each other

Dre; i cant lose that woman mami, i just cant

Me;...

Dre; i fucken promised her. I was done with crime just after my dad died, i promised her and my mum and sweared on my father grave i was done mami. She will never forgive me for this

Me; we need to find a way to fix this

Dre; \*shouting\* how mami ?

Me; i hope you know killing ntando is out of the picture now?

dre; what am i going to do mami

Me; you need to talk to ntando

Dre; what?

me; you need to talk to him just the two of you, get everything out on the table

Dre;...

Me; talk to him, sort things out then will be able to move from that

He looked at me

Me; we trying and we need to try everything

We kissed and i had to leave

Arrived home, and walked in the lounge it was themba, nobuhle and my two kids

Me; hey guys

I kissed sanele on the head and picked up paris

Them; hey you, you back

Me; yeah long day just need the shower and time with these two

Themba; you ohk?

Me; i dont even know

My phone rang and it was pa

Me; i have to take this

I went out

Me; pa

Pa; you running away from me now

Me; no pa, dre is in hospital i was just busy with him. I just got home now

Pa; amahle we need to talk

Me;...

Pa; amahle

Me; i know pa, i know we need to talk

Pa; im coming there tomorrow

Me; can we wait till dre comes out

Pa; i want to talk to you not andre

Me;...

Pa; il see you tomorrow. Im at your aunts place

Me; il come there around lunch time pa

Pa; good

Then he ended the call

I was so drained and i did not know how to feel

## INSERT #262

I went back inside and we went to my bedroom. It was me, sanele and paris. Sitting on top off my bed and we just talked, laughed. Bonding as though there is no tomorrow. He asked what i liked, what i disliked and he wanted me to share how i met dre, everything paris even fell asleep .

Sanele; ma you dont mind me calling you ma or mum right caus....

I cut him off

Me; i love it

Sanele; \*smiling\* and ...

I cut him off again

Me; \*laughing\* and dre would go crazy, so no sweety anything you comfortable with

Sanele; \*smiling\* ohk

Me; baby listen i know you said you went to school and you had already started high school when you left

Sanele;...

Me; thing is, you will have to start again in grade 8, actually you were suppose to go back in grade 7 but we

managed to talk them through that but they said grade 8  
not grade 9

Sanele; im totally ohk with it as long as i got to school

Me; \*smiling\* im already seeing you all dressed up

We both laughed

Me; after matric what you want to do

Sanele; never thought about it

Me; why

Sanele; i was never good with books, so i figured il never  
get that far so never thought about it

Me; im coming

I got up and went to dre study and took a book and came  
back

Me; hate reading

Sanele:....

Me; \*laughing\* a lot of us do but try this

I handed it to him

Sanele; its so big

Me; and you have time, read it , you have troubles come  
to me. Preparing you for high school right

He opened it flipping through the pages

Sanele; i dont even think il understand half of the words here

I handed him the pencil, and took one of the books i was reading and showed him one page

Me; im a dr but you see the pencil on the edge

Sanele; yeah

Me; those are the words i dont understand, so what i do i write that word and look for the word on the dictionary then i know what it means

Sanele; you didnt know all these words

Me; \*smiling\* yes so if you have any troubles, do this

Sanele; thanks ma for everything i mean

Me; \*smiling\* i want you to know il always be here for you, all the time, day and night, when you sick, when you happy, when you down, when you hate me, when you grow up, when you experience knew things il be here for you all the time , when you have a gf

Sanele; \*laughing\* woah gf lets stop right there

Me; \*laughing\* i mean that

Sanele; gf no girl will take a second look at me

Me; lets bet baby. If more than two girls flirt with you when you start school you read paris a bed time story every night for 3 months

Sanele; deal and if i win

Me; you decide

Sanele; if no girl even looks at me uhm should i join a soccer or whatever sport, every game you will be there cheering me on

Me; il always do that

Sanele; but can we bet on it

Me; \*laughing\* deal

I hugged him and kiss on the forehead

Sanele; can we please go with you tomorrow to see dad

Me; \*smiling\* yes baby

Themba walked in

Themba; hehhh usancela ku mama ( you still breast feeding on your mum)

Sanele laughed

Sanele; goodnight ma

He kissed me on the cheek

Me; night baby

Sanele; should i put paris to bed

Me; will you manage

Sanele; if you going to win, i need to start practising

I laughed

He slowly picked up paris and passed themba

Me; and you still up

Themba; yeah just put nobuhle to bed

Me; thank you for what you did for us

Sanele; \*shouting\* i put her to bed. Night

Me; night baby i love you

Themba; night boy

Sanele; love you too

I smiled

Themba; im glad i can still see that

Me; yeah its hard these days

Themba; so hows dre

Me; he was a pain in the ass when i got there but i know which buttons to push

He laughed

Themba; so you both ohk

Me; me and him yes. Our marriage our families nope

Themba; whats the plan mami

Me; im going to see pa tomorrow, maybe i can reason with him, dre grandmother came to see him today and well things didnt go well at all

Themba; this is all because of that bitch

Me; themba

Themba; i know his your brother mami sharp but he disrespected us and dre on a whole other level, he needs to die

Me; stop shouting, what if sanele hears you

Themba;...

Me; nobody is dying ohk and i mean no one themba. What needs to happen is for dre to speak to ntando

Themba; what? You crazy

Me; the only way everything will work out is if theres no grudge or this gap between ntando and dre

Themba; let me remind you. This guy few months back came to your house saying they will put everything behind. Today the very same guy through a baby in a pool with hopes to kill her and let me remind you for the last time, he threw his niece, your baby , your brother wanted to kill your daughter and hurt your kids

Me;....

Themba; so theres no fucken way that is going happen

He got up and left. I was just too tired to argue with him i just went to bed

Next morning, well themba was not talking to me. Nobuhle was at work. Sanele went to shower, while masebe bathed paris and i went to bath when everyone was done we all left, i was sitting at the back with paris and sanele in front with themba. Got to the hospital and i directed them to dre room. Sanele was the most excited one, and when dre saw him, he just light up. I gave him paris and he looked different with his kids.

Dre; ugrand boy

Themba; sure

Dre looked at me

Me; im meeting with pa today

Dre;...

Me; so i will leave them here and take them when i go home

Dre; what will you say to him

Me; i dont know a lot is on my mind

Dre; just tell him im sorry

Me; i will. Baby lets go grab something ohk

Sanele; ohk

Dre gave him paris and we walked out

#andre

Dre; whats up man?

Themba; tell me the shit amahle is considering you not thinking about it

Me; whats that

Themba; talking with ntando? What you should be doing is putting a bullet on that guys head not talking to him

Me; the moment that guy stops breathing you know whats going to happen

Themba; \*shouting\* i dont give a fuck ? What the fuck is wrong with you and amahle ? That guy nearly killed paris did you lose your memory

Me;...

Themba; you letting everyone step on you now

Me; fuck you! If you have nothing better to say, get the fuck out of here

Themba;...

Me; open your damn eyes, we not dealing with another lubanzi that we can put a bullet and all is done. Fuck no. Use your fucken head. Use your head like you use it when you see a car

Themba;...

Me; il deal with this my own fucken way. Focus on making money

INSERT #263

I left sanele and paris with dre and themba and drove to mbali house. My uncles car was parked outside. I just wanted to turn and not even look back. I breathed in said a short prayer got out off the car and locked, and walked in. I knocked

Woman; come in

I opened the door and came across my uncles wife in the kitchen

Me; hi ma

Her; yebo amahle

Me;...

I just walked to the lounge and the whole family was there, including ntando adopted mother and him and his wife

Me; sanibonani ( hello)

Them; yebo amahle

I sat down. I looked at pa and the look on his face i just looked on the floor

Uncle 1; amahle

Me;...

Uncle; not only did you embarrass yourself but this family too

Me;...

Uncle: you turned your back on your brother for a low life thug, a killer

Me; pa can i talk to you

Uncle 2; leave pa alone, you want to take advantage of the poor old man and make him forget what you did

My focus was only on pa

Me; pa you know me better than anyone in this room, i just want to talk to you

My uncles wife; ay that will never happen us...

Pa; lets go

I closed my eyes in relief and immediately got up. I walked out and a few minutes later pa walked out. We walked to the nearest park and we sat down

Pa; why didnt you tell me

Me; \*crying\* i didnt even know were to start pa  
everything happened so fast with ntando and dre, i  
couldnt please them both

Pa; but you chose to please dre

Me;...

Pa; is it true

Me; what?

Pa; dre and ntando

Me; im not sure pa i just know there is a history between  
them

Pa; \*shouting\* dont lie to me

I got frightened

Pa; im tired of your lies amahle, i want the truth as in now

Me;...

Pa; amahle

Me; pa

Pa; talk

Me; i really dont know much pa

I was so scared, i was shaking my memory was blank i  
didnt know what to tell him

Pa; this is not you amahle, this woman, youve become a  
liar and as for your morals and principles. Accepting dre as

a gang member was hard for me but accepting him as a man that feeds his family through crime till this day, murders people and condemning my daughter to this, this i dont even recognise you

Me;...

Pa; is he the reason why you were kidnapped and nearly killed

Me;...

Pa; the house , you didnt buy it did you and everything else you have, all people sweat and blood and your fiancee lubanzi

Me;...

Pa; one moment you happy with him, next you with dre again and his dead. He killed him

Me;...

I just covered my face. He got up and walked away. I cried cause it felt like i lost pa, i was crying so bad that i couldnt even contain myself or hold myself back. People came wondering what happened but i couldnt even talk. I was in such a bad state going back home was going to be something else for me. I texted themba ' please come pick me up, im at the park near mbali house'. Tears would not stop coming out, pa words were circulating on my mind everything was just a mess after a while, i felt someone

touch my shoulder i quickly turned and it was themba, he came around and hugged me. Then i cried to him and got his shirt wet when i calmed down

Themba; you ohk

I nodded my head

Themba; wheres your car

Me; mbali house

Themba; keys

I gave it to him

Themba; give me 5 minutes ohk

I nodded my head

He left after few minutes, he arrived and we left. He didnt even ask me whatsup he must have figured. We got to the hospital, i didnt even want to see dre face. After few minutes my kids walked out. They got in

Themba; he wants to see you

Me;...

Themba; you need each other mami

I looked at him

Themba; you only need each other and your kids

I removed the seat belt and opened the door. I left them there and walked in and went to see his ward. I opened the door and he was pacing up and down as soon as the door opened he stopped and rushed to me hugging me. I returned the hug

Dre; im sorry

I just let it out. The nurse walked in

Nurse; visiting hours are over mam

Dre; call alex now!

Nurse; sir

Dre; i said now

After few minutes alex walked in

Dre; im going home now

Alex; bu...

Dre; i said now

Alex; il get everything of yours r... Are you ohk amahle?

I just looked away. I just heard the door closed and oh well we went back home with dre

Next morning, woke up next to dre i cuddled next to him and he was brushing my head

Me; morning

Dre; morning baby

Me;...

Dre; you ohk

I nodded my head

Dre; ready to talk to me

I sat up straight so did he

Me; i lost him and the rest of my family. He just added things up, the kidnapping, lubanzi, his death, the house everything we have

Dre; fuck

Me; i couldnt even look at him in the eyes and he just left me there

Dre; and my mum is done with me

I looked at him

Dre; she came today, she said she is done with me and i should be ashamed of myself for dragging both dorian and jack . She said she had hoped my fathers death would have woken me up from this life ye crime and shes doing something my father failed to do which is to be done with me

Me; do we deserve this?

Dre; me yes you no baby wami. Im so sorry for the shit iv put you through and the shit im still putting you through, if it wa...

Me; we in this together ohk dont put this on yourself only  
He pulled me by the neck and kissed me. We shared a kiss and it was so passionate, his hold even if it was one arm. I sat on top of him and the was a knock. We broke the kiss

Dre; come in

The door opened and it was sanele. We both smiled, i got off dre ad grabbed my gown

Sanele; morning

Dre; morning boy

Me; morning baby

Sanele; breakfast is ready

Dre; come here \*tapping the bed\*

Me; il get you two downstairs

I walked out

#andre

He joined me on the bed

Me; you ohk?

Sanele; im good, im just worried about you and mum  
Me; shes ohk and im ohk nothing to get yourself worried  
about ohk  
Sanele; \*smiling\* ohk

## INSERT #264

We ate our first breakfast together and me and dre were not letting anything ruin this moment. Tomorrow was the 31st. Paris was now eating solid food and i could not be more happier, i placed her bowl next to dre to feed her  
Dre; big brother duties

He pushed the bowl to sanele. We all laughed

Sanele; mum please tell dad iv started big brother duties long ago

Me; \*laughing\* long ago, youve done it all ne baby

Sanele; all

Dre; \*laughing\* bribing your mum wont make me change my mind, id love to witness this with my own two eyes

We all just laughed. Paris was adjusting to sanele so much and so strong. We ate our breakfast and left the siblings watching tv as we went to shower

Me; want me to help you

Dre; i was doing this alone at the hospital

Me; well im here

As much as he wanted to do things for himself, fact was he was hurt and he needed my help, we bathed together and i helped him out, where he needed my help then we went downstairs. Sanele went to bath and we stayed with paris. She had already bathed then it was 4 of us again watching tv

Dre; you know what, lets go

Me; where

Dre; we need to have some fun, we going

Me; where

Dre; just get your swimming costumes

Me; \*laughing\*ohk

Sanele runned upstairs and i packed our stuff. Masebe said she would not go with us. I think masebe was seeing someone but i did not want to rush her in telling me. After packing our stuff we left and went to a water park.

Walked in, paid and we found a spot. I laid everything of ours. I was wearing a bikini with a see through top on top and flops, dre and sanele shorts. All of dre tattoos out there, and he didnt even care that he was wearing a

shoulder compressor. And my princess in her pink bikini and hat.

The guys left us and went to swim, we were just sitting under an umbrella taking a lot of pictures. Sanele called us and well we went for a little swim. Dre held paris and me and dre we just forgot about our worries but just focussed on what was in front of us which was two beautiful kids that we would do anything for them. After getting ourselves wet, we went back to our spot and ate and chilled there. Sanele left with paris and we were watching them from a distance

Dre; mami

Me; papi

Dre; i need to ask for your permission on something

Me; whats up

Dre; i have a job february biggest job mami. I do this and we can be settled for years and years. I know its a bad timing and i wouldnt be asking you but i think its only fair i ask you if i should

Me;...

Dre; i know we in this mess because of this but this is us and we cant change that

I looked at him

Me; you will come back in one piece and come back for your kids

Dre; i promise you

Me; but you hurt

Dre; its only february please

I looked at our kids

Me; i dont know why im agreeing to this but if you dont come back for them. Im going to kill you dre even though you will be already dead...

Before i could continue, his was tongue was already down my throat.

## INSERT #265

31st it was just us and our friends. I tried reaching out for pa but nothing so as dre with his family but nothing. So we decided to give them space. Few weeks passed, dre mother got sanele a school a place were dre did not have connections. She just contacted us and told us everything about the school it was a private school and gave us all the things we needed including uniform. Week before school started boughfout him his uniform, stationary and everything else he would need. Wednesday morning got up with paris and went downstairs. To prepare breakfast.

When i was done went upstairs and went to wake up  
sanele

Me; baby wake up

Sanele; hmmm

Me; \*laughing\* wake up and got to shower. Im giving you  
30 minutes

Sanele; ma

Me; dont ma me wake up baby

I left and placed paris on the baby walker, masebe woke  
up and looked after paris while i went to shower. When i  
was done, dre was already up

Me; hi papi

Dre; hey punka

Me; im going to drop of sanele ohk

Dre; first day \*laughing\*

me; yeah

Dre; will go together

Me;perfect

We went downstairs and he looked breathtaking. I kissed  
him all over

Sanele; \*laughing\* mum stop

Me; you look so handsome

Sanele; mum please stop

Me; fine sorry

Dre; \*smiling\* you look great, lets finish this look \* he took his tie\*

He tied it for him and he wore it. And his blazer

Dre; fu\* he paused\* you definitely my son

Sanele laughed. We all ate breakfast then it was time to go

I turned to look at my baby time after time and he was just fiddling with his fingers. We got to his school. He breathed out loud

Dre; you ohk?

Sanele; i dont know what if i dont fit in an...

Dre; \*smiling \* you will be ohk and i know youll fit right in know why

Sanele; why?

Dre; cause you the greatest kids and they fu\* he paused\* they lucky to have you with them

Sanele; thanks dad

Dre; anytime

I laughed

Me; want me to walk you in  
Sanele; no no no mum geez its the first day  
I laughed

Me; im trying to make things easier here  
Sanele; il be fine, pumpkin il see you when i get back  
behave \* talking to paris\*

Dre; be gentle with the ladies  
Sanele; \*laughing\* dad geez bye  
Me; \*laughing\* bye baby

He got out off the car and slowly walked to the gate

Dre; this is a great feeling  
I looked at him  
Dre; im already accompanying my son to his first day of school

I kissed him  
Me; \* and theres still more of these days to come, we need to go to the office

Dre; for  
Me; fees and some things i need to sign  
Dre; ohk

We walked out and headed to the office direction. Got there and there were a number of parents there, until it was our time. We paid the school fees and signed some documents and left

#sanele

I was so scared never have i been that scared in my life. I looked at the paper mum gave me and looked for my class. Only to find out it was assembly we went to this huge hall and well they welcomed us and stuff. It was a huge school. When that was done , i went to my class i sat at the back and my teacher was miss welgemoed

Miss welgemoed; well id love for all of us to be a family, so i want all of you to get up, tell us your name , where you from and what you want to be when you finish your studies

Well everyone talked when it was my turn, everyone eyes were on me. I slowly got up

Me; h h hi...

Them; hiiiiii

Miss welgemoed; relax

Me; uhm im sanele, sanele adams ... Uhm , im from sandhurst and when i i finish school I'm interested on being a pathologist thank you

I quickly sat down

Miss welgemoed; thank you sanele, great choice you know  
you will have to do science in grade 10 right

I nodded my head. She smiled. She was really nice, well  
everyone talked then it was time to go to our other class.  
Sat next to this boy

Him; sanele right

Me; yeah you

Him; joshua

Me; nice meeting you

Him; same here, its still morning and im hungry man

I laughed

Me; makes two of us

Well me and joshua were together the whole time and we  
just became friends. We sat at the school grounds.

Me; i think im going to join the soccer team

Josh; you all about soccer

Me; \*laughing\* yeah arent you

Josh; nah im all about rugby man

Me; so will you join the team

Josh; i think i might. So tell me this why dont you have a  
phone man

Me; cause i dont want it

Josh; oh your parents arent having it

Me; \*laughing\* i can ask my parents for a phone

Josh; do just that, just in case i need to get in contact with you

Me; already in love with me

He laughed and punched me

Josh; fuck you man

Well our lunch ended and me and josh were going to be good friends

## INSERT #266

After dropping off sanele, we passed at the warehouse i dont know what dre wanted there. We got out off the car and walked in. The guys were playing around

Dre; so this is what you do all day

They turned and jack face dropped

Ty; look whose back

Sandile; good to have you back big guy

Dre; me and you lets talk \*pointing at jack \*

I walked with paris to dre office or whatever. And sat down. Dre walked in with jack

Jack; dre im so sorry, i didnt want to hurt you but i knew it was going to hurt you eish what i mean is d...

Dre; jack

Jack;...

Dre; i kind of get why you did what you did so its all good but jack you did some shit like that ever again, you getting out off here and im going to hurt you

The way he looked. I smiled. He just hugged him

Dre; woah man

Me; ncooo

Dre; you tell those guys i beat the shit out of you ohk

Jack; \*laughing\* ohk, im really sorry again dre

Dre; first and last time

Jack ; totally

He walked out all happy

Me; that was sweet

Jack; his mother is already on his neck, he dont need me too

I smiled. Dorian , deon and themba walked in

Dorian; hey lala

Me; hey you

He picked up paris

Dorian; hey nana, so how was the little guy first day of school

Themba; dang first day of school today

Me; \*laughing\* he was so scared

Dre; fucked up scared

Deon; but im sure he has adjusted now

Me; i really hope so

Dorian; so whats up?

Dre; did mum come and see you

Dorian;....

Dre; how did it go

Dorian; lets not talk about it

Dre; i know she thinks i forced you to do this

Dorian; i told her thats not the case

Dre; so how is everything going with your side

Themba; we still set but you dont have to go through it

Dre; we cool man

After an hour or so. We left and just hang out

Me; papi

Dre; mmm

Me; we need to sort things out

Dre; how mami?

Me; talk, dre we need our families. Sanele paris need their grandparents and aunts

Dre;...

Me; please dre. Please

Dre; ohk mami you know i would do anything for you

Me; so its a yes

Dre; yeah

Me; lets start with your mum and grandmother

Dre; ohk

Me; let me call her

I took my phone and dialled her number

Her; amahle

Me; ma

Her;....

Me; ma can we please talk, all as a family , please, ma i really i really want us to fix this mess. Ma please

Her;...

Me; please ma and grandma

Her; amahle

Me; please ma , please if you wont do this for us just  
please sanele and paris please

Her; when will you come

Me; Friday , please the whole family

Her; ohk il see you Friday

Me; ohk

Her; when my grandson comes back id like to talk to him

Me; ohk il ask him to call you

Her; thank you

Then she hung up

Dre; you sure you want to do this

Me; yeah

We cuddled on the couch and just watched tv

INSERT #267

Dre went to pick up sanele and it must have been a good day because he was glad to be going back tomorrow. Pa

called to talked to him and dre mother and i loved that although they were punishing us. They were not punishing our kids. Friday after dropping off paris we went to dre mother house, Cars were parked on the drive way. We kissed and we walked in

Everyone of dre family was there. We sat down next to each other, few minutes , dorian and jack walked in. Me and dre looked at each other.

Dorian; wont allow you to face this alone

Dre smiled. We all sat down

Me; id love to start

Dre held my thigh

Dre; let me mami

Me; ohk

Dre; ma listen i know you angry with me and i understand i completely understand. I promised you both, i was done with crime and i thought i was. In fact i am done with it

I looked at dre

Dre; all those years i was honest with you guys. I left everything. I am done with crime. Ntando yes mistakes happened and cause of my past criminal records he thought i was involved but i wasnt. The incident with his

daughter all true but it was an accident. I did one job after that one and asked jack and dorian to help me out but that was the only time. What they have is what they actually get from they paying jobs, the only money i make is from being a medic thats all. Amahle is a doctor, she earns more than 50 k the house

Dre mother; you lying

Dre; ma im not. Im admitting i did one job and one job only. Ntando is just a bitter cop that has always been accusing me of things i didnt do. If everything he said was the truth dont you think i would be somewhere in a jail cell

Them;....

Dre; and amahle why would she stick with me knowing what i do, she comes from a decent family dont you think she would have walked out the moment she knew what people think i do. I work day and night and you know that i sometimes come here to you and you see how drained i am because of extra shifts i take to support my family. The cars you know its from dads will, and i sold my old place to contribute to what i have now

Them;....

Dorian; can i just speak for myself

Us;...

Dorian; you didnt give me time to talk mum cause you just came to my house and started lashing out at me on how i was involved with dre and jack. I dont know his story but heres mine. Everything you think about me right now is a lie, i have a degree mum why would i leave that to do crime that does not make sense, all the money i make is from my job and you know that. I dont know if you want a photo in my office or my payslip cause i can give you that. Its crazy you would think that of me and dre and jack. Just because of someone who just told you things , things he showed no evidence to prove. I dont know what was his intentions and pretty much i dont care cause it has nothing to do with me and i wont entertain something he made up just to make him happy. I also kind of sometimes help dre with money things if he needs money. The rest of the stuff you said i no nothing about

Them;...

Jack; and mum

\*talking to her mum\*

Jack; i finally get a good job and im clean and im planning my life and behaving like an adult and you think im doing crime

His mum; its jus...

Jack; no mum, i know im not the best son and all of that but to think that of me thats just not fair. I asked dre to

help me look for a job and he did and you accuse him and say bad things about him like really i dont think il ever forgive you for that

His mum; im sorry baby its just eveyrthing happened so fast

Dre mother; are you being honest with me andre

Dre; youve seen me at work, you want to come to work with me. Its fine as along as it will show you im innocent in all these accusations

Dre grandmother; then i wont tolerate amahle family ill treating my son and treating him like a criminal i wont tolerate that shit. They must not think they superior than us

Dre; ma its all just a misunderstanding. They clueless just like you guys, we still have to go and explain this to them

Dre grandmother; amahle

Me; yes ma

Her; is this the truth

The guys looked at me

Me; yes ma i would never support such

Her; \*smiling\* you were ready to take me to my grave

Dre; \*smiling\* im sorry for that ma

Dre got up and they @hugged. Dre family apologised and stuff. After hours, we told them we had to go and pick up sanele. We walked out

Me; we were suppose to go and fix this mess and not lie some more

Dre; they never going to accept what i do and if we went there with. Yes i do crime and i want you to support this. We would have probably left with no adams family supporting us and what happened with them is exactly what will happen with your family

Me;...

Dre; mami they will never accept us for who we really are., lying is the best solution right now

Me; am i crazy for supporting you with what you do

Dre; thats for you to answer but i love you and you my wife mami

We got to sanele school and 5 minutes of being there, school was out

Dre; i want my kids to grow up with grandmothers and not have to suffer because of us

Me; even if its a lie

Dre; its not a lie, we just not telling them how we make money

Me; dre

Dre; mami please

Me; \*laughing\* why did i ever move to johanneburg though

Dre; \*laughing\* im fucken glad you did

As we shed a laugh. The big guy walked out, with two other boys and girls. Me and dre looked at each other. He saw us, hugged the girls, fist bump the guys and walked to the car. He opened the door and jumped in

Sanele; hi pumpkin \* talking to paris\* mum dad

Me; hey baby

Dre; hey boy

Sanele; its already Friday geez

We both turned to look at him

Sanele; \*laughing\* what?

dre; we saw you

Sanele; ???

Me; girls

He laughed so loud

Sanele; just my friends guys yho

Dre; you sure

Sanele; \*laughing\* yes im sure

Me; hmmm

He laughed. We bought food and went home and ate there

Sanele; soooo

We looked at him

Dre; whats up

Sanele; mmm eish

Me; whats wrong baby

Sanele; nothing is wrong, its just i

We raised our eyebrow

Sanele; nah nevermind

Me; you better start talking

Sanele; i dont know if its too soon but can i please i mean please, please, please but you dont have to

Dre; \*laughing\* will you just say what you want

Sanele; can i please have a phone... I swear it wont interfere with my school work.. Or lose it please

Me and dre looked at each other

Dre; you see i told you we should have took it

Me; no he needs to choose it

Sanele; mum , dad

Me; \*smiling\* we knew you needed a phone, so your dad wanted to choose a phone for you but i said it would be best if you chose it for yourself

Sanele; \*smiling\* does this mean?

Dre; \*laughing\* yes you getting a phone will go tomorrow and you chose phone of your choice

He got up and hugged us both

Sanele; thank you so much guys

Dre; anything for you? Just dont hesitate to ask us ohk

He nodded his head

INSERT #268

#andre

Saturday morning. We all got up, dressed up and left. We walked in at vodacom

Guy; good afternoon can i help you

Me; yeah will need your help

Guy; im here to help

I looked at his name tag and it was kwanele

Me; so kwanele my son needs a phone nice phone,  
smartphone

He laughed

Kwanele; what kind would you like?

I looked at sanele

Sanele; uhm

Me; show us your newest phone

Kwanele; ohk

We walked around the shop and told us what this does,  
what that does.

Me; made up your mind

Sanele; its hard to decide

Me; my choice the huawei and iphone

Mami; promise me you wont lose this phone

Sanele; i promise

Mami; well then i think this is the perfect one

Sanele; isnt it too expensive though

Me; nothing will be expensive to me if it comes to you

Kwanele; fuck i wish i had a parent like you

Sanele laughed

Kwanele; ohk we have this on a contract

Me; contract , wanted to buy it cash

Kwanele; cash its 13 k \*laughing\*

Me; oh kay

Kwanele but contract 900 with airtime and data for 24 months

Me; 800 x 24 thats like 19 something thousand

Kwanele; but it includes data

I looked at mami

Mami; he will need data

Me; with contract what do i need

Kwanele; payslip of 3 months, id , proof of address pretty much thats all

I looked at mami, the money i made didnt come with a payslip

Mami; ohk il take it

Me; no let me take it cash then every month i give him 250 and you give him 250 for data which makes it 500

Mami; but you know i can take it right with contract

Me; i know but this is better

I kissed her

Me; will take it with cash

Kwanele; ohk follow me

Well we did everything we had to do. Paid , got everything i needed and we left. The little guy would not stop thanking me and mami . Bought few clothes then went to eat.

Mami; first photo

She posed

Me and sanele laughed. Well he took the pic then it was all of us. We ate our lunch

Man; turner

I turned and it was morrison

Me; mr m

I got up and we shook hands

Morrison; sorry to disturb your lunch with the family

Me; its all good

Morrison; mrs turner

Mami; mr morrison

He bowed his head

Morrison; and who is this guy

Me; \*smiling\* my son

He looked at me

Morrison; turner jnr

Me; \*laughing\* yeah mini me you could say that

They fist bump

Morrison; family is beautiful

Me; thank you man, what you doing here

Morrison; blind date

I laughed

Me; you seeing girls now

Morrison; woman theres a difference

I laughed

Morrison; better get going now good seeing you all

Me; we have a meeting soon,dont forget

Morrison; dont worry

He walked away. We ate our lunch, paid then left. We gave mam sebe her food.

I took my phone and went outside i called number

Pa; andre

Me; pa

Pa; what do you want?

Me; to talk to you? Just man to man nothing but the truth

Pa; ...

Me; i just want to talk, explain things to you put it all out there. My kids need their great great grandfather and you can never talk to me ever again but you cant punish my wife and kids for mistake and punish me after hearing my side of the story. You cant just pick one story and turn the blind eye on the other. I just want to talk thats all just me and you only

Pa;...

Me; please pa

Pa; im in cape town

Me; i can come down there

Pa; ohk make it the following weekend

Me; thank you, thank you so much

Pa; il see you when you get here

Then i hung up. I walked back in

Mami; making a call

Me; yes

Mami; everything ohk

Me; yes

I kissed her

Me; im going to fix this

She wrapped her arms around my neck and we kissed.

We were disturbed by mam sebe

Mam sebe; theres a woman in the gate

Me; who ma

Mam sebe; i dont recognise her

I walked to the kitchen and pressed the sound

Me; helo

Her; helo im nompumelelo, im a social worker and im here for the adams

Me; come on in

I opened the gate. I waited for her in the kitchen. She showed up

Her; uhm hi

Me; hi

Her; i work with thenjiwe

Me; ohk

Her; i dont know if she told you but il be doing daily routines, checking out the environment sanele lives in and how he is

Me; ohk

She had a notepad with her. Mami appeared  
Mami; hi

Her; hi

Me; shes a social worker, here to check the place sanele  
lives in and check on him

Mami; oh ohk come on in

Her; thank you

She went around the house with mami then asked to talk  
to sanele after an hour our 2. she said her goodbye and  
left

Sanele; i dont like her

Me; \*laughing\* why

Sanele; she kept questionning me as if she wanted me to  
say bad

Mami; what you mean

Sanele; she would ask me a question, then i answer then  
she be like are you sure, you dont have to lie, be honest,  
are you sure? , sweety this is a safe space \*imitating her\*

We all bursted out in laughter

Me; thats her job boy

Sanele; i dont even know if shes good at it or not

Mami; forget about it, shes going to come here a lot

Sanele; does she have to?

Mami; yeah

Sanele; wouldnt it be so much better if it was like, do you want him yes ohk you have him

Me; \*laughing\* way better

We continued watching the movie. Then it was time for bed, sanele took paris to bed cause he had to read her a bedtime story for at least 3 months. I didnt know what was that all about.

Me; il be at the study ohk

Mami; babe its 11

Me; i have work to do mami

Mami;...

Me; come sit with me ke after an hour we come to bed

Mami; ohk

We went to my study and she laid on the couch while i got busy on my desk

Mami; dre

Me; hmm

Mami; are you afraid to die

I looked at her. She was laying on her back, looking at the ceiling

Me; no

Mami; why?

Me; i cant be afraid of the unknown

Mami; but its known

Me; no its not. We only know you stop breathing, organs stop functioning and you dont hear anything

Mami; you dont see your family or get to touch your wife anymore,no more sex nothing

I stopped the transcactions i was doing and focussed on her

Me; yeah but you dont know whats on the other side. Life after death could be way better than this life, this world so why could you possibly be afraid of that

Mami; but its your theory

Me; whats yours?

Mami; i dont know im scared of death

Me; what if death is like breaking your virginity

She laughed and looked at me

Me; just think about it before you break your virginity, you scared, scared of sex but you dont know it, you dont know

how it feels but you only have people theories its painful, you wont feel anything, its nice different theories just like death you scared of it but you dont know it you have people theories my theory thats its for the better, someone else might tell you about hell which is painful but after you break your virginity

Mami; \*laughing\* ohk it makes sense

Me; i always tell you what i say makes sense so dont be afraid of death something you dont know, who knows you might just prefer it just like you prefered sex than being a virgin \*laughing\*

She threw the pillow at me. I laughed

Mami; piss off

Me; but you know what im afraid off about death

Mami; what?

Me; you and my two kids leaving you behind in this big world without me

Mami; dre we have a family

Me; who would have thought. The cousin

She laughed

Mami; my virgin breaker

I laughed even louder

## INSERT #269

Well she fell asleep on the couch. I continued with the work past 3 am. Picked her up and tucked her in bed. Then fell asleep as well soon after that. Sunday woke up to an empty bed, went downstairs and to an empty house. I knew they were at church. I ate my breakfast, the intercom rang, i just held my head. I got up to check and it was dorian. I let him in and he showed up

Me; hey man

Dorian; hey you good

Me; yeah

Dorian; why is it so empty in here

Me; its just me

Dorian; church

Me; yeah what brings you here

Dorian; check on you and talk

Me; ohk

Dorian; well everything good with the family they bought the story

Me; lets hope amahle family will buy it too

Dorian; they will

Me;...

Dorian; what?

Me; im seeing amahle grandfather next weekend

Dorina; ohk same procedure

Me; actually no, im going to tell him he truth

Dorian; what? Are you crazy

Me; i have too dude, like i have too

Dorian; his going to hate your guts

Me; no he wont i just have to soften him up

Dorian; amahle knows about this

Me; no so im going to need you to cover for me. If i tell her she will want to go with me and it has to be me and him

Dorian; so what you going to tell amahle

Me; that i have business to take care off

Dorian; you sure this is a good idea, possibility of losing him in your family

Me;...

Dorian; before you do this just think about it and everything hat you might lose

Me;...

Dorian; im hungry what you have

Me; check the fridge

Dorian; i met someone

Me;...

Dorian; no like this time around im serious. Shes nice and beautiful

Me; hmm tell me more

Dorian; \*laughing\* i want you to meet her

Me; ohk tell me when, how long you been with her

Dorian; almost a year

Me; what? You never mentioned a girl not even once

Dorian; i was not sure and had to make sure

Me; now you sure

Dorian; definitely shes the one

Me; \*shouting\* ohhhhhh that sentence shes the one

He laughed

Dorian; fuck you

Me; \*chanting\* my brother is fucken in love... Shes the one

We both laughed

Me; im happy for you man and i cant wait to see her

Dorian; so you will make time

Me; things are hectic for me but i will make a plan

Dorian; thanks man

He made something to eat and he ate. The family got back and he left after an hour or 2

Me; how was church?

Sanele; just good when you coming with us

I laughed

Me; il let you know ne

He laughed

Me; im going to go ohk

Sanele; where

Me; next weekend , i need you to behave

Sanele; oh wow dad

Me; \*laughing\* i mean that

Sanele; does mum know?

Me; no i still have to talk to her. But im telling you

Sanele; ohk you dont have to worry about me and paris

Me; you will be good

Sanele; yes dad, dont worry about us

Me; ohk so hows school?

Sanele; i love it

Me; im glad to hear that gf

Sanele; dad whats with you and me and having a gf

Me; i want to know

Sanele; well there are beautiful girls

Me; always use protection

Sanele; \*shouting\* dad hold it just there

Me; we have to talk about this sooner or later

Sanele; does it have to be now

Me; yeah

Sanele; but dad

Me;...

Sanele; fine dad talk

Me; ohk have you slept with a girl before

Sanele; no

Me; do you know what you umust do

He looked at me

Me; \*smiling\* boy im trying to help you

Sanele; this is weird dad i wont have sex anytime soon so when i will , il come back to you

I shook his head. He laughed

Me; if you dont , remember always have a condom with you

Sanele; il do just that

Me; good

Sanele; when did you first sleep with a girl

Me; \*laughing\* i think primary

Sanele; yho

Me; but dont rush it

Mami; what are you two talking about

We looked at the door and she was carrying paris.

Sanele; just guy talk

He took paris, mami sat next to me. We watched tv

Mam sebe; sanele

Sanele; yes ma

Mam sebe; i cant find your trousers or shirt

Mami; ma theres like 2 trousers in his wardrobe with shirts so dont worry about that

Mam sebe; ohk

I sat with my family until it was time for bed

## INSERT #270

The rest of the week i was at work. I told mami i was leaving to go to cape town. I didnt tell her i was going to pa though. Friday got back from work and she had already packed my bag. Her, sanele and paris dropped me off at or tambo. My flight was 20;00, i boarded and in 2 hours i was at cape town. One off my boys picked me up and i went to my place

Saturday went to bath, took everything i needed and left. Drove to pa house. I parked outside and walked in. He was watering his garden

Me; pa

Pa; andre

Me; how are you sir?

Pa; im still alive, please close the tap for me

I went near the tap and closed it. He passed me

Pa; come on in

We went in

Me; wheres ma t

Pa; gave her the day off

We went to sit in the lounge. He got up and went to the kitchen got back with jameson bottle and two glasses he gave me my glass he opened it and poured it for himself. Then I did the same

Pa; lets talk

He laid on his back. I took a sip off my glass

Me; let me start off with im sorry about everything that has happened pa. I never wanted things to be like this ever i mean things werent suppose to turn out like this

Pa;...

Me; let me start with me. I got arrested when i was still in high school and got involved in this gang thing in jail but i was not into deep with it, the second time i got in deep i mean deep. It became me in a way i got so deep into it , that my body and soul with gangs had become one. Like I told you when you asked me about the whole gang thing

He nodded his head

Me:It did things for me, made things easier for me and that made me get more and more attached to it. I started with selling dagga, then tick, then mandrax Because of what i was apart off it was easy for me and easy to Buy warders. Drug business in was huge I mean it was growing, by the time I Went out I had made a friend in there themba. Started with robberies then cars and fraud. I got smart people involved that would make us get off

slightly. Started paying off cops and judges. I was unstoppable and I loved what I did, I loved making money but I got arrested again this time with themba got connections that are way huge in jail. My business was booming anyone who tried to sell what I was selling I would take them out, more than 3 people I took out if I remember correctly when I Got out that time I had become a crime lord everyone knew my name, every cop on my payroll no one could arrest me. I ran kaapstad and joburg. I owned huge houses, had cars that dr had years trying to pay them off but I didnt even go to varsity and I was driving it. But it also comes with questions but with the money I have, everyone just looks the other way and choose not to get involved. Well I was making money, girls were crazy over me \*I paused\* no let me go back to ntando story because its a timeline. I think I was 20. one cop was on my tail every movement, he had a pile of files on me. But when it came to evidence this is where he flopped because the cop he was working closely with was with me so whenever he would try to rage on me that cop would let me know and the plan would be put on hold until it was safe. He got in trouble with his captain forcing him to let go but nothing. So I paid him a visit, it was just him, his wife and 8 year old daughter. We disrespected him and his house by entering his home without his knowledge. I didnt even hurt his wife or daughter. He came home to me sitting with his family and then....

Pa; and then

Me; i beat the shit out off him, i mean i beat the shit out off him until i ran out off breath. In the process his daughter ran away, his wife insisted on going after her but i said she would look for her when we were gone. When i felt the pleasure of beating the shit out off him, got out, tried to remove the stains but nothing. I took my car keys and walked out. I got in my car opened the gate and reversed but \* i paused\*

Pa; but...

Me; i hit something, i hit something but... But i paid no mind to it. When the car was just outside the gate I took a sip of my drink

Me; she was just laying there, blood running down the driveway. I slowly got out off the car trying to see if my eyes were not deceiving me. I was scared \* i looked at pa\* i was so scared, i slowly walked closer to were the blood was coming from but my thoughts were disturbed by this loud scream and cry and it was his wife. I looked at her, walked back to my car and left. I could not sleep that night, it felt like my first time taking a life. I got myself to go and check if she was ohk but she was dead. I tried pa, i tried to make things right even though the shit i was doing wouldnt bring her daughter back but i tried. Paying off the funeral and whole other shit but nothing. I was forced to move on from that and i did, im not saying i

was comfortable with it or it was easy for me, fuck no i had killed an innocent 8 year old but i got myself too. I took him out off my life and he lost his job and wife left him. But i moved on. Continued with everything that i did then i met your beautiful daughter \*smiling\* i met her and she

Pa took a sip of his drink

Me; she made me think about living before that i was living but i knew i could die anytime, anywhere. But after her i wanted to see the next day , next month. I told her what i did and she told me straight no i cant, then he walked out on me. I begged her, i mean begged her told her i would protect her and would not let anything happen to her. She took me back but she was not comfortable with it cause we had a number of fights because of it but what we shared was way way important than what i did. She didnt know about the ntando thing until at a later stage and knowing her i knew she was leaving me, i knew she was leaving me and i was ready to fight for her but suprisingly ,she fought for me and till this day il never be more grateful than that

Pa; andre

Me; im sorry for bringing her into this life, but i love her i love her so much pa i need you to know that and im telling you this because i have great respect for you and i

want you to know the truth about me. Punish me all you want but amahle im begging you dont do this to her

Pa; her kidnapping?

Me; my ex

Pa; lubanzi?

Me; what you dont know about lubanzi is, everything he shared with amahle was fake. He was using her to get to me and he once kidnapped her

Pa; what?

Me; then called me to come fetch her when i did he told me he wanted everything i own in exchange for amahle

Pa; but...

Me; i chose them both but didnt do anything to him. He got back again claiming he wanted my family. I couldnt allow him to take my family without a fight, killed him next thing he is on the news

Pa; you have an answer for everything

Me; im just being real with you

Pa; this is too much andre

Me;...

Pa; you have put me in between my grandkids

Me; im sorry iv put you in this position. But amahle shouldnt be involved in this

Pa; amahle hurt me, she has lied to me so many times

Me; and its because of me

Pa; exactly what i mean she has turned into a woman i dont know

Me; why has she turned into a woman you dont know when ntando shows up in our lives. Why you only mad with us what about ntando, he nearly killed paris

Pa; andre im old i cant be put into such positions

Me;...

Pa; what you want from me

Me; to help me fix this pa. Iv talked with my family but i will need your help with your side of the family

Pa; what about ntando?

Me;...

Pa; you didnt expect him to just be able to sit in the same table with the man who killed his daughter

Me;...

Pa; dont you owe him an apology

Me; he owes me an apology too

Pa; lets get you boys here together first before talking with the family

I looked at him

Pa; you do want to fix this right

I nodded my head

Pa; good, let me call him

Me:how is he going to get here from jhb

Pa; his in cape town

Me; ohk

## INSERT #271

After 2 hours of being there. The jameson was doing its job now. The door opened

Guy; pa

Pa; im in the lounge

My eyes were at the door. He showed up and he froze looking at me. We looked at each other

Pa; ntando come sit down

He didnt move his eyes from me and he sat down next to pa

Pa; pour yourself a glass

He didnt remove his eyes from me. My phone rang and it was stephen

Me; i have to take this

I got up and walked out

Me; stephen

Stephen; turner

Me; listen id like to listen to you complain but im in the middle of something

Stephen; what could be more important than me

I laughed

Me; let me call you after 2 hours or more ohk

Stephen; ohk

I went back

Ntando; i cant be in the same room as him

I walked in then there was silence

Me; ohk

Pa; we going to sort this out today, ntando i heard andre side of the story i need to hear yours

Ntando; whats there to hear except that he is a criminal that gets away with everything and can do as he pleases but still walk free on the streets

Pa; as he told me, he didnt kill your daughter intentionally

Ntando; \*shouting\* of course he did

Pa; so he placed your daughter under the car and run over her

Ntando;...

Pa; im not choosing his side but i want to sort this out

Me; your problem is you blame me for your shit, you blame me for losing your job, your wife i understand when it comes to your daughter but i didnt force you to abandon your wife

He got up to attack me but pa raised his arm

Me; how the fuck am i involved in you losing your job. You just want someone to blame for your misery and i was the easiest person to blame

Ntando; fuck you, fuck you. You killed my daughter

Me; and iv come to you giving my sincere apology. Im sorry ntando, im sorry for the incident that occured with your daughter it was my fault she was hiding behind the car in the first place im sorry ohk, im sorry but thats the only shit im apologising for

Ntando; my life turned out the way it is because of you

Me; how? How? You failed to do your job, your job you took an oath to catch criminals how the fuck is it my fault

that you didnt catch any. Am i suppose to give you a guideline fuck that

Ntando; yo...

Me; i what? Stop blaming me for the choices you made. Im deeply sorry for the pain i brought in your family ohk, im sorry and i mean that now i have a clue what you felt. Cause the moment you threw my daughter in the pool i felt empty. So im sorry for that, im deeply sorry ntando but again i cant do anything else but to apologise man. This shit wont be easy and im not asking you to just forgive and forget fuck no. Cause i wouldnt be able to do that as well so i wouldnt ask you to do something that i myself would not do, but can we do something to ease things. You have to use your head this is not about me and you anymore like the past but its me , you , your family, my family.

Ntando; i hear you

Me; so?

Ntando; its not easy

Me; i know that. Im just asking you to consider a few things. We dont have to sit on one table and play happy family. No

Ntando; then what you want

Me; peace everything that happened lets put it behind us

Ntando;...

Pa; so?

Me; im willing to forget everything that happened but im not forcing you

He looked at me. I got up and gave him my hand

Me; dont shake my hand if you just manipulating me or pa. Id rather you dont and we both know were we stand which is we get out of each others ways, you want to hang with amahle cool il stay out of your way as long as you stay out off mine, but you dont come near my kids or we behave like a family, my kids sleepover at your place and yours too

Ntando;...

Me; im sorry man i really am sorry. I need you to know i did not do that intentionally or i came in your home with hopes to take your princess away

He looked at me

Me; i really am sorry

He got up and shook my hands

Ntando; im also sorry for the disruption i brought into your home

Me; lets forget about that, all of that

Ntando; so?

Me; are we good?

Ntando; yeah

Me; no i mean like really good, no fake shit

Ntando; no fake SHIT But I need time, just give me time

Me: thank you

## INSERT #272

Everything was sorted. Got back home Sunday and the family was there.

Me; family'

Mami turned and the smile on her face priceless. I kissed her and shook the little guys head

Me; boy

Sanele; hey dad

Me; you good

Sanele; im good

I picked up paris

Me; hey princess

And of course she just laughed, spitting everywhere. I kissed her then mami

Mami; so how was your trip

Me; good we need to talk

Mami ; ohk now

Me; no later on today

Mami; ohk

I hung out with them. We ate supper mondayw as school  
sanele went to bed and paris fell asleep too.

Me; lets go shower

She got naked, and i just bit my lower lip. We went to shower and i couldnt keep my hands off her. I walked her out off the shower to the bed and laid her on the bed. I kissed her thighs, both of them and looked up at her, she was biting her lower lip. i kissed her clit and she closed her eyes . I licked, sucked and she sounded like she was having a hard time breathing. her moans filled our bedroom. She grabbed the sheets into a fist. I went in deeper with the tongue . I got back up and kissed her . ' you taste so good' i whispered to her ear. I flipped us over and she got on top off me and she went down on me. I was holding her hair up, whatever she was doing was perfect I groaned out loud, I pulled her up and slowly entered her, she got up I figured it was kind of painful. I pushed her down and slowly entered it, she closed her eyes I joined our fingers together going in and out, in and out. Her moans filled the bedroom so as my groans

the pleasure i was feeling. She dug her nails into my back until she let out the loudest moan followed by my loudest moan and pulled out. We both couldnt breath, she was laying next to me trying to catch her breath too. I turned to look at her, she smiled and pulled me in a kiss.

Me; we need to talk

Mami; ohk

Me; i was in cape town right

Mami; \*smiling\* i know babe hao

Me; but what you dont know is. I went to see pa

Mami; what? Why didnt you tell me? Andre

Me; please listen

Mami;...

Me; i told him everything and i mean everything, from were everything all started till this day then he called ntando. he put everything out there , i did too and well we put everything behind us

She sat with her butt

Mami; what?

Me; \*smiling\* yes the worst is over

Mami; dont play like this andre

Me; im not, his still in cape town but soon as he comes back he will call you

Mami; who ntando or pa

Me; \*smiling\* both

She hugged me

Mami; thank you, thank you so much even if you lied to me

I returned the hug. And pulled her away so i can look at her

Me; i love you ohk and i want to see you happy

Mami; love you so much more

She kissed me and well, we got down again

Monday morning. Woke up and prepared for work. All of us we were waking up. After our bath we went downstairs. The little guy was already eating

Me; morning boy

Sanele; morning dad

Mummy; morning baby

Sanele; morning mum

She picked up paris

Mum; and morning princess

I kissed paris and sat down to eat my breakfast. We all ate. Then hearded out

Sanele; who am i leaving with

Me; tomorrow is you

Mami; ohk

She kissed us both and left

Me; lets go now

We got in the car and drove to his school

Me; adel will come pick you up ohk

Sanele; ohk bye dad

Me; sharp boy

He closed the door and walked in. I went to work and well it was a busy day. After work headed to the warehouse.

Me; guys

They showed up

Me; did you pick up my kid

Adel; fuck i f...

Me; im going to fuck you up \*shouting\*

Adel; \*laughing\* im just joking

Me; im going to kill you

Adel; relax

Me; mxm wheres Deon?

Ty; downstairs

Me; call him boy

After few minutes they showed up

Deon; whats up

Me; stephen?

Deon; stephen order was mixed up

Me; \*shouting\* i fucken now that. My question is why

Deon;...

Me; \*shouting\* deon!!!

Deon; i kind of mixed them up, gave stephen order to williams and the other way around

Me; are you fucken kidding me. Where is your head

Deon; i have a lot in my head

Me; fu... \* i paused\* go home. Be with your family and get your head straight

Deon; no im fine

Me; i said go home and come back in 2 weeks time

Deon; are you joking

Me; should i call mbali to pick you up

Deon ; fuck this

He pushed me out off the way

Me; \*shouting\* 2 weeks

Deon; fuck you

I heard his car

Shane; so what you going to do

Me; i have to sort out deon mess thats already costing me

Adel; sorry man

Me; wheres themba and jack

Ty; job

Me; they have a job

Ty; yeah

Me; ohk im gone

Took what i came with and went home

Got home and the lights were off. Walked upstairs to go and change and sanele room lights were on. Walked there and knocked

Him; come on in

I opened and he was sitting on his desk

Me; still busy

Sanele; \*he breathed out loud\* yeah

Me; whats up

I walked in

Sanele; how can grade 8 be so hard

Me; why didnt you ask your mum for help

Sanele; wanted to do it on my own now i regret it

Me; ohk lets see. I aint good with this

He laughed. We worked it out together. When that was done, put him to bed then threw myself on the bed then zoned off

## INSERT #273

Few weeks passed. Everything was sorted with our families and my wife was happy and i could not ask for more. It was february and the job i was doing was in 3 days time, Friday Woke up ate breakfast then went to the warehouse

Themba; lets talk

People that would be going on Friday was me, themba, shane, ty, simphiwe and 6 of our other guys

Me; so everything?

Themba; set cars are ready

Me; golf right

Themba; yep all black, everything is set with them they just waiting for us

Me; ohk inside guy

Themba; his good

Me; everything is good man

Themba; everything is good just relax

Me; i dont want any mistakes

Ty; the wont be

Me; good

The time was already to 3

Me; i have to go

Themba; lets go

We got up and walked to my car.

Themba; you cool

Me; yeah you

Themba; im cool we going to be ohk

Me; i know that but the code remains ohk

Themba; dre

Me; i mean it. Stick with the code whatever shit happens

Themba; ohk thinking about it i havent been to sanele school before

Me; you havent

Themba; nah

We parked were drop off and pick ups parked

Themba; this school is huge

Me; way big ntwana

Themba; how much you pay

Me; \*laughing\* i aint going to tell you that shit

School was out

Themba; how is he going to see you

Me; his going to see me

After few minutes the door opened.

Me; hey kid

Sanele hey dad, hi uncle themba

Themba; hey boy... How you see your dad in this crowd

Sanele; \*laughing\* should i tell him

Me; \*laughing\* his so noisy

Sanele; \*laughing\* he parks in this spot all the time. If his picking me up i know il find him here

Me; how was school

Sanele; dad school is...

Themba; school

Sanele; exactly what time is mum knocking off

Me; 9

Sanele; ohk im hungry

We passed at the drive thru, bought food then headed home

Themba threw himself on the couch and turned on the tv we joined him. Paris was sitting with themba we ate while watching soccer later that day nobuhle picked up themba. Mami got back, ate and we went to bed. Next day same procedure picking up sanele this time i left with paris got back changed and took mami out for dinner just the two of us

Mami; its been a while since we went out just the two of us

Me; i know which is why i did this

Mami; thank you

Me; \*smiling\* pleasure baby... You know im .. \* i paused\*

Mami; going tomorrow

I nodded my head

Mami; you coming back andre arent you

I got up and sat next to her then held her face and kissed her. She pulled back

Mami; no say the words you coming back

Me; im coming back ohk, im coming back

Mami; \*smiling\* im scared dre

Me; what did i tell you about fear

Mami; \*laughing\* its like breaking my virginity

We both laughed

Me; exactly, dont be scared cause if you scared, il be scared then il screw up then il die

She punched me

Mami; dre

Me; \*laughing\* im just joking but il be next to you when you wake up Saturday

Mami; then you make love to me

Me; then i go buy you anything you want

I laughed

Mami; i love you ayanda andre turner adams

Me; and i love you amahle mami punka mrs turner adams

She laughed

Mami; can we stay here longer

I kissed her

Me; yes

We enjoyed each others company then went home. Made love until she zoned off

Next morning woke up around 11, ate breakfast with my family then went up i went to shower mami joined me. Got out, wore nike tight fits, if it was a job like that i needed something to be able to easily move in and my trainers

Mami; are you going to gym

Me;\*laughing\* yes

I kissed her. Walked to my wardrobe , moved all my clothes then opened the other side of the wardrobe, took the vest and my 2 babies. Wore it then wore my nike sweat top.

Me; i have to go

Mami; ohk come here

I walked to her amd she wrapped her arms around my neck

Me; i love you ohk

Mami; love you too see you tomorrow

Me; yep

We walked out and i talked with sanele, then paris kissed them both and left to go to the warehouse. All the guys were there

Me; you ready

Themba; yeah

Took the golfs and we took off

#275

Sanele ; mum

I lifted up my head while wiping my tears away

Me; baby

Sanele; wheres dad?

Me;...

Sanele; is he Ohk?

Me; come here

He walked to me, he was carrying paris. I took paris and placed her on my lap. I opened my mouth to talk but nothing came out, it was like i was gasping

Sanele; mum

Me; im ohk, your dad is ohk we all ohk dont worry  
yourself

Sanele; b...

Me; baby

Sanele; ohk, im going to bath will you be ohk with paris

Me; yes baby

He went up the stairs and mam sebe joined me

Mam sebe; his going to come back sis

I couldnt even answer her cause it was just hard for me  
tears just began building up. The thought that we lied to  
his family that his done how was i going to explain his  
disappearance or possibly death

Me; im going to my bedroom ma dont let anyone in

Mam sebe; ohk

Me; including the guys, i mean no one

She nodded her head. I went upstairs with paris and dre  
was the only thing on my mind was he ohk, where would i  
start looking for him? Is he fighting to get home? Was he  
caught, was he hurt questions that were circulating on my  
head. I was so angry at the guys. Paris fell asleep. I went  
downstairs took the keys from the counter and went to sit  
in dre car. I just sat there thinking trying to smell him.

Trying to figure all of this out, it was like my emotions

were being controlled i just kept on crying. Callling his phone, but it rang on the car even if that was the case i still kept on calling.

I heard a knock and jumped out of the seat. I realised i passed out on the car. I went out off the car

Mam sebe; you slept here

Me;...

Mam sebe; im not going to church

Me; no mama please go, i need to be on my own

Mam sebe; you sure

Me; yes ma , im fine now go

She went in and sanele was already dressed and paris. I kissed them and they took my car. I walked to the shower and the most frustrating part i couldnt even inform the cops about dre disappearance cause they would ask a number of questions that i had no answer to and they couldnt know, got out off the shower and wore sweat pants and top and went downstairs. I could not eat at all. The door opened, i jumped and it was themba

Me; what you doing here

Themba; fighting me wont help you or me

Me; ...

Themba; i just want to explain what happened?

Me;...

He stood by the door

Themba; everything was going according to plan, everything was in motion man. We had what we were there for and we were headed out. Me and dre were on the truck while the other guys drove and did other stuff. I jumped to my car and called for him , he was behind me mama he even said it himself im right behind you. When i was already in my car, i looked at him to see whether he had jumped but he just went down. 2 mercedes came behind us how i dont know, i really dont know, they didnt hurt him because he got up again and i shouted towards him and other gun shoot. This time when he got up, he told us to go, he kept on saying the code the code the code go , go , go

Me; and you left him

Themba; we had to mama

Me; you had to

I got so angry after hearing that

Themba; you dont seem to understand this. We had to go, he wanted us to go

I fiddled with my hands

Me; is he dead?

I was trying so hard to hold the tears back

Themba; i don't know mama

Me; the Mercedes?

Themba; i dont know

Me; \*shouting\* you lying to me

Themba; ma...

Me; you know exactly whats going on and you going to talk now

Themba; i d...

Me; \*shouting and screaming\* stop lying, stop lying. You were behind this job the whole time, didnt you know they had extra security or whoever the people in mercedes

Themba;..

Me; tell me the truth ohk? Thats all im asking for \*crying\* what do you know?

Themba;

Me; after what you did to dre , you owe me the truth

Themba; fine amahle, i thought we were going to handle it ohk

Me;...

Themba; i needed the money, i want to give nobuhle what dre gave to you and in order for me to do that i needed to do that job

Me;...

Themba; that money belongs to someone, someone as big as dre and I knew if dre knew whose money it was he wouldn't agree to do it but we had to, I needed that money and i didnt know about the mercedes tracking it, that truck travels alone but i was wrong ohk i was wrong and i think im not sure, i think the money that we have, the owner of this money has dre

I couldnt control myself i just hit him and threw things at him, the coffee mug iw as drinking with. The glasses anything close to me that i could find i threw to themba

Me; \*shouting\* GET OUT OFF MY HOUSE, GIVE THAT MAN HIS MONEY BACK

Themba; we ca...

Me; dont tell me that bullshit, thats my husband the father of my kids get dre back or I swear to god all of this will be over now get out off my house

Themba; y...

Me; get out!!

He walked out. I didnt know who to call or tell cause the people who could help me. Were the one, who put me in

this mess in the first place. Mam sebe got back and my kids. We just sat in the lounge until i thought of the one person who could help me, he did help dre with my kidnapping last time. Mam sebe was gone so i couldnt leave the kids behind

Me; baby lets go

Sanele; where ?

Me; im going to see someone come

I went to andre study, looked everywhere for ugo number, i got it and called him

Ugo; ...

Me; helo

Ugo; hi

Me; am i speaking to ugo

Ugo; yes who may this be

Me; amahle andre wife

Ugo; oh hi

Me; i need your help urgently

Ugo; ohk whats wrong, wheres Turner?

Me; this is about him but i dont know your address

Ugo; do you have a pen with you

Me; yes

Ugo; ohk

Ugo... Rivonia

Me; thank you il be there in less than an hour

Ugo; ohk

I hung up took my kids and we drove there

## INSERT #276

I parked on the driveway and walked in. I was carrying paris. I was welcomed by a woman must have been his wife

Me; hey

Woman; he will be down in just a minute

Me; thank you

Her; im khanyi

She was zulu and beautiful

Me; amahle, ugo is your husband

She nodded her head

Khanyi; its a great pleasure meeting tuners wife

Me; likewise

Ugo came downstairs

Ugo; mrs turner

Me; hi

Ugo; who is this big guy?

Shaking sanele head

Me; our child

Ugo; hey big guy

Sanele; hi

Ugo; lets go talk in my study

Me; ohk baby can you take her

Sanele; ohk

He took paris

Me; il be right back

Sanele; ohk mum

We went up the stairs to this room. I sat on the chair there and he sat opposite me

Ugo; does turner know you here

Me;...

Ugo; listen i dont want to be in turner bad side and im not co...

Me; his missing

Ugo; what?

Me; he had a job Friday big job so he said but he never got back

Ugo; he went on a job alone? Where are his guys

Me; he went with them but they told me about this code...

Ugo; never stay back for another man

Me; you know about this stupid code

Ugo; man like him and me , we stick with that code

Me; yes so now they left him and he was shot

Ugo; ...

Me; worse thing is , themba was the one in charge of this whole mess and two mercedes ganged up on them, so i think they know where he is

He stood up trying to think

Ugo; have you talked to themba?

Me; i dont even want to see his sight, cause this is all because of him and he had the decency to tell me about the code

Ugo; if he didnt stick with the code, more people would have died. The code is very important

Me; can you help me, im desperate. I cant tell the cops

Ugo; \*shouting\* no , this must not be known to the cops  
ohk

Me; i know that

Ugo; do you know which job they were taking

I shook my head

Ugo; ohk thats going to be hard

Me; he just told me , if he did this then we would be settled for years and years

Ugo; ohk this means a lot i mean a lot of money was involved

Me; yes

He went to sit down again and went through his laptop

Ugo; you talked about mercedes

I nodded my head

Ugo; then it means, its not the governments money or tax money you know like fidelity

Me; it could be

Ugo; no they security is inside those cars. They dont have extra security following it from behind

Me; so does this mean it was someone money

Ugo; how does turner rotate his money

Me; anything that has to do with his business honestly speaking i know none

Ugo; well thats how i move my money im sure thats what he does too

Me; so its a gangster money

Ugo; could be

Me; who dont you know each other?

Ugo; thing is pretty much turner runs joburg and me. But a person who runs durban may move his money here.

Just like i do and turner does it. So

Me; andre could be dead, cause if someone did that to him. They wouldnt even take a second to think of killing him

Ugo; im sorry, but thats just how it is. Someone steals from me i kill them i dont have time to torture them just like andre and any other person in this industry

I got up. I touched the door knob and my knees just failed me. Ugo rushed to me

Ugo; \*shouting\* khanyi!!!!

He helped me up and khanyi came. She came with my daughter and i just exploded. The way i was crying caused khanyi to cry too. Ugo was leaning on his desk, his face covered. The door opened

Sanele; mum

I looked at him and i just cried. They gave me water with sugar, i picked up paris and wrapped my arm around sanele

Khanyi; \*crying\* please sleepover, you cant drive in this state

Me; thank you for all that you done

I walked to my car with my kids

Ugo; let me drive you at least

Me; il be fine, thank you for everything

Ugo; but i can be wrong

Me; bye

I got in the car

Sanele; mum wheres dad?

Me; will talk tomorrow ohk, you going to school i need to put you to bed

I dont know how but i managed to get home, i fed paris, burped her bathed her then me and sanele took her to bed. I sat on the chair while sanele read her a story. She eventually fell asleep then walked to sanele room. He got inside his blankets

Me; will talk about everything tomorrow ohk

Sanele; i want dad

I kissed his forehead

Me; i want dad to, now sleep. Tomorrow is school

Sanele; then will talk

I nodded my head. I switched off the lights then went to my room. Went to take a shower and cried there, i screamed and the shower door broke, my hand was covered in blood. And the was glass in my hand, i removed it and the pain was unbearable. I left the glass there, drank my pills and slept. Was woken up by someone shaking me so rough, i opened my eyes and it was themba

Themba; \*shouting\*are you ohk, you bleeding

My sheet was covered in blood from my hand. I looked at the time and it was 11. i jumped up and went out. I bumped into mamsebe

Me; sanele

Mam sebe; his at school

I breathed out loud

Themba; can you check that out

Mam sebe; what happened to you hand

I walked back in my room, and themba was just following me

Themba; he picked up the glass from the floor

Me; leave it

Themba; im sorry ohk

I washed my hand and dressed it up. I went downstairs to get a broom got back and sweeped it

Themba; can we talk

Me;...

Themba; im going to find andre

Me; ...

Themba; mama

Me; can you please leave me alone, leave and dont come back here ever again and while you on your way out. Go and tell andre family what happened to him

I passed him

## INSERT #277

March nothing from dre and i mean nothing from him. I talked to everyone but they told me one thing 'there is no way he is still alive' others said move on, focus on your kids and work. I told sanele that dre just disappeared not possibly dead and that affected him, he blamed himself

and that cut deep. Thenj finalised everything with sanele birth registrations, they found him on the system and he was sanele ngcobo, birth date august 5. they changed ngcobo to adams and it eventually became official which was not suppose to happen because dre was not there but thenj felt so sorry for me , he made the applications go through, so sanele was my baby even with the law. Paris was walking and mumbling and soon started talking first word of cause 'mama' and with dre picture and videos he said 'ada" a lot, after few weeks of hearing masebe calling sanele, she caught up with 'nele'. I wanted nothing to do with themba i mean nothing and nobuhle was not comfortable with that , in such a way that we were distance. We didnt talk as much anymore, mbali was busy with her family as well, she was not happy i mean not happy at all with dre and deon told me she cried herself too sleep, everyone was just miserable including unathi. All the girls had their lives they needed to live. They felt sorry for me with andre situation, i stayed away from them and was with my kids most of the time if not work. Andre family were aware about his 'disappearance' themba story "car jacking that led to a kidnapping" how he came up with that story i dont know. His family reached out for cops but themba made sure they reach out to their connections so they will say one thing and i mean one thing only to say "we working on it"...his family was there for me i dont even want to lie, i was even losing

weight. My family too, pa talked to them telling them some sort of lie and it worked perfectly because they felt so bad for mistreating him and now he could be dead, they were also there for me including pa.

Woke up one Saturday and went downstairs, sanele was playing with paris. I kissed them both and walked to the kitchen. I opened the fridge and just looked at it, i didnt know how long i had been standing there

Mamsebe; cant find anything to eat

I turned to look at her

Me; im still thinking

Mamsebe; full 10 minutes

I closed the fridge door

Mamsebe; what you want me to make for you

Me; nothing

Mamsebe; baby please eat

Me; im not hungry

Mamsebe; you look so \*she paused\*

Me; ma please

She passed me and i walked outside, i walked around the garden.

Mamsebe; here

I turned and she was holding a bowl

Mamsebe; its not something heavy and you can easily swallow it

Me; ...

Mamsebe; amahle

I took the bowl. She stood there

Me; thank you ma

She still didnt go

Mamsebe; eat

Me; ma

Mamsebe; im not going until you eat

I took one spoon followed by another and another and i eventually finished

Mamsebe; thank you

Then she walked in. I sat with sanele and paris. And just bonded with them

1 may sanele, walked in with paris and mamsebe singing me a happy birthday. After they sang for me , we sang for paris she turned one and dre was not here. I couldnt

help but smile and cry. They gave me paperbags kissed them all and they gave me one heck of a breakfast.

Sanele; so mum

Me; \*smiling\* so baby

Sanele; im taking you both out today

I laughed

Me; you taking us out

Sanele; yes just mcdonalds mum budget is tight

I laughed even louder

Me; oh wow should i dress up what will i wear this will be the best day of my life

Sanele; just look beautiful, im sure you will both be the prettiest girls in the room

We both laughed. Got up and kissed him

Me; thank you so much baby

Sanele; im going to shower

I went to bath with paris, we got out and waited for the mr that was taking us out. He came down and we drove to the mall. We walked around bought a few stuff then he took me to mcdonalds. Haha this was the best gift ever with dessert on top was i lucky or was i lucky lol. After our lunch we went home and for the first time in a while i had

forgot about dre not in a bad way but i didnt think about the whole situation at all.

Sunday was just another Sunday and a few weeks more nothing happened, i was with my kids and healing you could say that but i was not giving up on my husband. People said he was dead, the people who worked with him said he was dead but i was not going to confirm something especially since i had not seen his body

One day dropped off sanele and headed to work. The was a car flicking their lights on me. I looked on both mirrors but they werent signalling me anything. They came on my window and i opened my window. They opened the window and my eyes grew wide

## INSERT #278

Guy; you might want to check out your back tyre, slow punch i think

I checked it out but i couldnt see  
Me; thank you

The robot opened and i stopped on the bus stop, the car stood in front of me. I got off the car

Guy; will you need help?

I turned to look at him

Me; no i'll be ok

Guy; I feel so much better when I help you out

Me; why do you think a girl can't change her own tyres

He raised his hands up

Guy; \*laughing\* I believe in woman power trust me, I'm sure a woman can even build her own house so a tyre should be nothing

Me; exactly

Guy; but let me help you

Me; well thank you

Guy; have a tyre at the back

I nodded my head

Guy'; where are you headed beautiful

Me; I'm a married woman

Guy; where are you headed married woman

I laughed

Me; work

Guy; where do you work

Me;...

He looked at me

Guy; secretive

Me;...

Guy; ohk

Me; thank you for helping me

Guy; pleasure im bradley

Me; enhle

Guy; en...

Me; hle

Guy; ohk il work on it enhle

He said it all weird. He was white after all. It took him a while to change my tyre but he eventually did. Then he was done

Me; thank you so much, i dont even know how i can possibly thank you

Guy; lunch

Me; no

Guy; i thought you wanted to thank me

Me; yes but not lunch

Guy; but thats my offer

Me; no

Guy; insecure, jealous, aggressive married man

Me; \*laughing\* all no

Guy; then im sure he would want you to thank a guy who helped you from death

Me; bye bradley

I got in my car. He stood next to my window

Guy; please

Me; no

Guy; ohk breakfast

I laughed

Me; still no

Guy; come on enhle please i just want lunch and company is that too much to ask

Me; yes

Guy; ohk how about you bring someone on our lunch maybe you not comfortable with the idea of your husband not being there. Bring the guy along

Me;...

Guy; im saying you bring your husband along and its still a no

Me; my mum

Guy; your mum?????

I nodded my head

Guy; fine your mum

Me; ohk meet me at spurs at clearwater

Guy; ohk when

Me; you decide

Guy; Saturday

Me; Friday

Guy; Friday it is time

Me; 12

Guy; perfect see you there dont stand me up with your mum

I started my car and drove to work

After work , went home and sanele was already there, dorian picked him up all the time i did not want themba next to me or my kids. Got home, we ate all together and went to bed, paris refused to sleep on her bed so i just slept with her. Few more days passed Friday i took mamsebe and we went to spurs and to my surprise he was already there. We sat opposite him

Me; ma this is bradley the guy that helped me out

Mamsebe; helo

Bradley; hi mam how are you

Mamsebe; im ohk and yourself

Bradley; im good mam im sorry about your daughter behaviour in dragging you into this

I laughed

Mamsebe; i have to make sure she is safe

Bradley; totally understand, enhle

Me; bradley

He laughed and i couldnt help but laugh too. We ate our lunch i paid then he walked us to my car

Bradley; thank you for my lunch

Me; pleasure and thank you for helping me out

Bradley; pleasure

He gave me a piece of paper

Me; this?

Bradley; my numbers

Me; i wont need this

Bradley; just in case you need to talk thats all

Me;...

Bradley; you can throw them away but please dont

Me; bye bradley

Bradley; bye il be waiting for your call

I just laughed and we drove off

Mamsebe; hmmm

Me; what ma

Her; nothing

Me; ma

Her; his good looking

Me; ...

Her; you ready?

Me; for?

Her; moving on, moving on from andre

Me;...

Her; dont force yourself to something you not comfortable  
with ohk thats all im saying

Me; il never be ready from moving on from andre ma

Her; y...

Me; but andre could be dead, will i keep on hoping,  
praying he walks in

Her; he...

Me; ma i was not alone , when you heard them talk. They said it, they said the is no chance his still alive so do i keep on hoping his alive

Her;...

Me; but i know he is and im not giving up on him ma, that was just lunch nothing will happen. Im still madly in love with dre and it will take more than lunch for me to move on from andre or the father of my kids and its only been 4 months theres still a chance its not 10 years

She just smiled

## INSERT #279

Paris now attended creche. More months passed i sometimes felt so weak that i could not do ANYTHING like to eat i would just lay in bed and cry and cry because more days were passing and it meant less chances of andre being alive, but other days i would just wake up and think about my two kids and it would be fine. My last encounter with the guys i dont remember i hardly saw them i didnt want to see them. The only person i talked to was dorian. One Saturday, woke up had breakfast with my kids and there was a buzzer. I went to open cause it was dorian. He greeted the two and asked for us to talk, we went to andre study

Me; how you been doing

Dorian; hanging in there you

Me; im trying

Dorian; we need to talk

Me; ohk about?

Dorian;...

Me; dorian

Dorian; andre things

Me; what about andre things

Dorian; his business, accounts everything

Me; i know nothing about that

Dorian; i know but everything is under you

Me; but the business is his and themba

Dorian; more of his and managing the accounts. The guys have not earned a salary for months

Me; what?

Dorian; yeah we have been living off things we do right now, the money we make right now

Me; but i dont have any kind of that info

Dorian; his lawyer should be here in 30 minutes to give you everything

Me; wait dorian you already distributing his things, his not dead

Dorian;....

Me; \*shouting\* he is not dead

Dorian; ohk but his lawyer still needs to do this. You need to take over

Me; no, why dont i give you what you need then you take care of things

Dorian; it wont look right to the guys, they will think otherwise

Me; i dont care what they think

Dorian; you should, they keep everything running so you need to do right by them too

Me;....

Dorian; i know this is hard but this is what andre wanted

The was a knock

Me; come in

Mamsebe walked in.

Mam sebe; there is a man downstairs shaun

Me; andre lawyer please let him in ma

She left

Me; you staying

Dorian; i cant, he needs to talk to you alone

I walked dorian outside and came across shaun, we walked to andre study

Him; mrs turner

Me; hi shaun

Him; we meet again

Me; whenever we meet its never in good circumstances

Him; you can say that again. Im sorry about your lo...

Me; his not dead

He faced the floor

Me; so how can i help you

He opened the bag that he was carrying and placed 3 files on the table, and a brown envelope

Him; this is for you to read

Me; ohk

I took it and opened it

Him; alone

Me; oh ohk

I closed it

Him; i brought 5 files with me i still need to bring 8

Me; ohk

Him; this is for all the transactions that need to be done, i mean all the transactions mrs turner, from turner boys salary, to his buyers, to his distributors. This is one file you need to die for. All the banking details are here for everything that you need, account numbers here and pins for every card you will use ohk

I nodded my head

Him; and this is for drugs

My eyes grew wide

Him; all the drugs that turner sells, the information is here. Who they come from where they go to dont get these mixed up, dont let themba or dorian see this ohk

I nodded my head again. He told me about the other files what i had to do i mean everything. It was all too much to take in but i had no choice. After hours he eventually left.  
I sat in the lounge

Guy; helo helo helo

I turned and it was deon

Me; hi

Deon; we need to talk

Me; ohk sanele is in his room, talk

Deon; tomorrow morning im going to pick you up

Me for?

Deon; meeting

Me; huh?

Deon; andre clients

Me; do you guys realise i know nothing about this business

Deon; themba will be there

Me; im not going there

Deon; stephen wants you there

Me;...

Deon; you just listen take notes for dre right

Me; his coming back right

Deon; i know he will

I smiled. He left soon after that

## INSERT #280

Next day wore a black skirt with a slit up my thigh and a coat on top. I took andre jeep, deon smsed me the details. Got there and walked in a woman met me halfway

Her; im sorry mam but its closed

Me; b...

Stephen; miranda let her in

She moved away and i passed her. There was a table on the balcony with just men i felt intimidated others old enough to be my father, themba was also there when he saw me he just looked on the floor.

Stephen; mrs

Me; mr stephen

Stephen; you know its stephen for you

I smiled. He pulled the chair for me and i sat down.  
Others i knew , others i didnt

Stephen; i just need you to listen ohk

I nodded my head

Themba; your friend jason gave me half for the car and he wants me to run after him, i cant afford that

Owen; he hasnt paid up

Themba; no

Owen looked at me

Owen; il make sure he pays before the end of this month

Themba; dont tell her that you talking to me

I looked at themba and he looked mad

Themba; i called you letting you know about this and you did shit

Owen;....

Themba; you fucking with us now, i want the fucken money owen

Owen; \*shouting\* i dont have your money

Themba; but your friend does, your friend not mine make sure i get that money before the end of this week

Owen; this week?

Themba; Friday i want this money

Me; b...

Stephen raised his middle finger and index finger signalling for me not to talk

Owen; fine

They talked , i got confused a lot and they were talking about a lot i mean a lot of money after 5 hours or so or even more thats how long we were there for. Stephen brought me food , he was treating me like a queen and i loved every moment of it. By the time it was time to leave it was already dark. Stephen walked me to my car

Stephen; how you holding up

Me; im trying

Stephen; im really saddened by turner death

I wanted to reply but i couldnt make out the right words i just kept quiet

Stephen; i want you to know, il be here for you and support you ohk whatever you need dont hesitate to call me

I nodded my head, he gave me a piece of paper with his numbers

Stephen; call me ohk

Me; thank you for everything

He smiled, started the car and needed time to myself i parked at florida lake, left everything of mine and took a walk i needed to think 'turner death' was the only thing on my mind.

Got home and my kids were already sleeping. I went to sanele room then paris. Walked to my bedroom and played music with my laptop. Walked to dre clothes and just wanted to smell him in such a way that i put his cologne and it felt like he was on top off me or he was hugging me. I went to the sliding door and just sat there thinking, crying, laughing on my own then back to crying. I needed dre so much, i wanted to feel his touch, his kiss, his hold, his smile. I sat there drinking my sorrows away. I sat there till the next morning just sitting on the balcony.

I got up and went to the kitchen i did breakfast, mamsebe was not awake as yet, i fixed sanele and paris things.

Mamsebe walked in

Mamsebe; baby

I continued with what i was doing

Mamsebe; you smell alcohol

I didnt pay her any attention. When i was done i walked passed her, she held my arm and brought me in a hug i cried to her and i just let it all out, her grip was so tight. When i eventually calmed down

Mamsebe; go take a hot bath then sleep, il take over now

I kissed her cheek and walked upstairs. I did as told and just zoned off. Was woken up by sanele, i got up and paris was on her walker jumping up and down ' mama' mama' mama' i just smiled and picked her up. We sat down to watch tv. Mam sebe called my name i got up and went to the kitchen, she was standing near the screen monitor i walked up to her and checked the screen it was police officers, i just walked out and went to the gate.

Mamsebe followed me

Officer 1; mam

Me; what you want

Officer2; can we talk to you

Me; talk

Officer1; can you let us in

Me; did you find my husband

They just looked at each other, i could feel tears building up

Me; \*screaming\* where is he?

Officer; im sorry mam

My knees just failed me, mamsebe rushed to me. She was also crying we comforted each other on the gate. They left us there. I dont know how i ran upstairs taking dre stuff, but i couldnt find what i was looking for, i ran downstairs mamsebe was so confused, i opened the door and reached my hand under the driver seat until i felt his gun. I got in the car and opened the gate, mamsebe was just screaming my name. I drive straight to the warehouse, nhlanhla let me in got out off the car with the gun and headed straight to themba

Me; wheres themba?

Both deon and dorian turned to face me, they freaked when they saw what i was holding, i must have been a mess from all the crying

Me; where is he? \*screaming\*

Dorian; mama you dont want to do this

Me; where is he

Themba; amahle

I turned and he was behind me, his hands raised up. He looked at me so hurt i was a broken woman to be honest

Me; you took my husband away from me, the father of my kids themba and you just left him to die and you say you his best friend...

He looked on the floor

Me; what am i living for now? I want my husband themba

I dont know what happened i just had a loud bang so loud i dropped the gun with my eyes closed

## INSERT #280

Well it was just a blank shot, themba was still fine. They drove me home, i was miserable i mean miserable. Dre mother was the worst also his grandmother , after few days she had a stroke on her right, she was in hospital for weeks but nobuhle was taking good care of her.

Woke up one morning and dre was next to me, the smile on my face. He was facing the other side i shook him but nothing. I turned his body to face me and i just screamed, he was covered in blood i couldnt even see his face. I

jumped out off bed and bumped into mamsebe and dre mother

Me; \*shouting\* i have to help him

I passed them and went to the bathroom. I grabbed a towel and they were at the door

Me; move i have to help him

They were both crying

Me; dont worry il help him, he will be ohk

I passed them but andre mother just pulled me into a hug

Me; ma let me go, i have to help him

Andre mother; his not there baby

Me; \*crying and screaming\* he is, his in our bed. Let me go \*screaming\* let me go, i have to help him

Andre mother: \*shouting\* his not there, his not here

Me; you lying, let me go \*crying\* ma please let me go , i have to help him before its too late

I got off her grip and ran upstairs and the was no one. I turned to the door

Me; where is he?

Them;...

Me; \*screaming\* WHERE IS HE???

Dorian walked up the stairs, with alex. I walked to dorian and went on my knees

Me; \*crying\* where is dre?

Alex knelt beside me and injected me. I looked at him

Alex; im sorry

Then blackout.

Woke up in my bed, i turned to the other side and pa was sitting on the edge off the bed

Me; pa

He faced the ground, i got out off the sheets and went besides him.

Me; why you crying?

He looked at me

Me; when did you get here ? What are you doing here ?

he looked at me confused

Pa; i wanted to be with you

Me; \*smiling\* did andre pick you up?

Pa; baby

Me; lets go make you something to eat ohk, im sure you hungry

Pa; baby andre i...

The door opened , alex walked in. I looked at pa

Me; are you sick?

Pa; she does not know whats going on?

Me; what you talking about ?

Alex; \*shouting\* dorian... Dorian... Come with your mum

I was so confused on what was going on. Dorian and  
andre mother came and stood on the door.

Pa; she does not know anything

Andre mother; baby

Me; ma, what are you all doing here

Dorian; what did you give her man?

Alex; its just shock

Me; whats going on? I want to see andre

Andre mother; baby andre is...

Alex; dont tell her, she will go to instant shock

Me; tell me what? Where is andre ? \*shouting\* where is  
andre ?

Alex went through his bag, and came with an injection  
towards me. I went back

Alex; amahle

I took a few more steps back until i hit the wall...

#DORIAN

Seeing amahle like that was too much for me, so i just walked down the steps and at the end of the steps i just heard screams. I needed air, i took a bag off weed and walked to the garden. I rolled a joint and smoked it. My phone rang and it was my baby

Me; babe

Her; hey baby

Me; you ohk

Her; im ohk but i should be asking you that, im really sorry about your lil brother

Me;...

Her; dorian

Me; im ohk but his wife... Its like im reliving what happened when my dad died, and she is my mother

Her; that bad

Me; worse babe i dont know what to do

Her; you just need to be there for her, she lost the love of her life, she cant be taking it easy

Me; il try, listen i have to go ohk

Her; ohk i love you

Me; i love you too

I walked back in and they were sitting on the lounge, alex was talking with pa, my mum and masebe

Me; whats going on

Alex; she is not coping, i have to stay with her

Me; what?

alex; yes

Me; so you will keep on drugging her

Alex; i have no other choice but it wont harm her. I was telling them that masebe or your mum will have to take the kids with at least for a few months

Me; we cant do that to her

Pa; she is a danger to herself and her kids right now  
dorian

Me;...

My mum; how about mamsebe and the kids move in to my house just for this time, cause i cant leave her alone

Mamsebe; i also cant leave her alone, she needs me

Alex; one off you will have to stay with the kids and one stay here cause pa cant do it

My mum; masebe let me please

Mamsebe; ohk

Alex; ohk

Me; so will you let her know about the kids

Alex; her mind is only on dre, so at this point i might even have to say. Its possible she does not know she has kids

Me; what?

Alex; thats why i need her to be far away from them

Pa; its for her own sake

Few more weeks passed, sanele and paris including mamsebe moved to my mums place. While my mum moved to andre and amahle place. The state amahle was in was really scary, it was as if andre took half of everything, her heart, her brain and mental capacity. She was a broken woman, i knew she loved her but now i was certain that she would die for dre. I was there day and night. Some days she would scream in the middle of the night, somedays she woud start talking to " andre" i mean talk, laugh and she would tell him, she loved him until we made her snap out off it, somedays were worse than others, somedays she looked dead. No talking no eating, no emotion nothing but look dead but somedays we all would think she was ohk, gotten over the tragedy of andre death but next day, it would all start again. It gotten so

worse than my grandmother called a traditional healer for her but no difference at all. We stopped two suicide attempt, one by alex and the other by me. At times it all got too much for me , seeing her like that but i knew i had to be there for her and pa seeing her like that another tragedy. Things got so bad that alex admitted her to a psychiatric ward. My mother refused but alex assured her it was for her own safety....

## INSERT #281

### #DORIAN

After the guys heard about what happened to amahle, things at the warehouse were awkward we didnt know what to say to each other, they didnt know what to do, keep on working or just let go of everything. The person who was suppose to keep this on the ground was not mentally fit and she had the papers and files that this business needed. were all at the warehouse

Jack; what do we do now?

themba; we carry on working

Deon; its not that easy man

Themba; we have what we need right now, dorian you will have to find those files

Dorian; i dont know where could i possibly find them

Themba; you need to try, since amahle is not there il come with you and we look for them

Me;; ohk

Shane; so should we carry on working

Themba; yes

Ty; ohk man, dont you think we should go check amahle out, just to find out if she is ohk you know

Me; its not a good idea right now, alex said no one should visit her at least not know

Deon; mbali needs to see her

Me; like i said no one is to see her man

Jack; whats going on with amahle? Is the reason why i dont want to fall in love man. You depend on someone, love them, they become a part of you and one day you have to wake up to news that they no longer with you, you can never see or touch them again scary shit

Us;...

Simphiwe; i feel you jack

Me; this is too much guys can we talk about work now

I carried on with work, later that day went to my house only to see a car parked on my driveway. I got out and the door opened.

Me; who are you

Him; dorian right

He was an old guy , really old with guys helping him

Me; yeah and who may you be

Him; let me tell you that over beer

Me; what do you need here

Him; we need to talk

Me; about

Him; you me us

Me; huh?

Him; lets go inside

I opened the gate and they went in , i followed behind them and walked inside my place. It was 3 of them, the two looked like the guys bodyguards

Me; so ?

Him; im sorry about your lil brother

Me;...

Him; dorian i have an offer for you

Me; whats that

Him; partnership, me and you

Me;...

Him; over your brothers territory

Me; what?

him; your brother is no more and people will kill for this territory, both here and cape town and probably kill you but i want to work with you, not remove you

Me;...

Him; just think about it. We both own this place, i leave joburg to you and i take care of cape town. The money we would make together. I heard you have always wanted to be a big shot in this industry, now is your time. Imagine it everyone scared of you, the people you will have wrapped around your finger, you will finally have what your brother always had and what you always wanted

Me;...

HIM: it's survival of the fittest now, Turner ain't here to protect you. It's every man for himself so the people who you think have your back, who is it again themba and deon

Me:...

Him: they don't give a shit about you right now, they have their claws out and guns out and they won't let turner brother take over definitely not

Me:...

Him: right now it's every men for himself

Me:...

Him; just think about it and call me when you want to do business

He left his card on the table and walked out. I took it and my mind was just all over the place now. I went to bed but to be honest i could not stop thinking about what that guy said. I knew that people would start fighting for dre territory and the guys might just turn their back on me. Especially themba, we all did not trust each other anymore so how i could possibly trust them. We are at a point in time that everyone has to scratch their own back, and i have this opportunity that could give me what iv always wanted i didn't know whether to turn my back on it or no, but then again i thought off amahle would this mean i had to go against her, but again she was not in it for this business anyway...

INSERT # 282

# Themba

Woke up the following morning and my head was all over the place, it has been for a while now. I just couldnt think straight, no matter how hard i tried. Nobuhle had already left for work, i took my phone and called dorian

Dorian; sure

Me; hey man where are you

Dorian; my place whats up?

Me; the files?

Dorian; we going today

Me; the sooner the better

Dorian; ohk lets meet there around 3

Me; 1

Dorian; fine 1, il find you there

Me; yeah the security wont give me problems right

Dorian; have they ever

Me; i wanted to make sure, things could have possibly changed

Dorian; no will see you there man

Me; ohk

I went to shower and left to go meet up with dorian, he arrievd 15 minutes later, opened and we got in. The house was so empty and it felt kind of weird

Me; search down here il go upstairs

Dorian; no why dont you search down here and i go up

Me; lets go up then will search this side

Dorian; ohk

We went to andre study and went through his stuff

Me; you have no clue where amahle, could possibly them

Dorian; no

We went through dre things, then moved to their bedroom, the kids bedroom. Then downstairs but nothing

Me; you know dre security code for his safe

Dorian; no, do you?

me; no i didnt even know he had a safe

Dorian; so what we going to do?

Me; i dont know we looked everywhere and my guess right now, is in this safe

Dorian; do you know anyone who can crack the code

Me; no do you?

Dorian; no

Then there was silence

Dorian; themba after we get those papers what then?

Me; what?

dorian; i mean whats going to happen

Me; we run the business

Dorian; all of us or just you?

Me; what you trying to say

Dorian; im not saying anything im just asking?

Me; well you asking me bullshit

Dorian; you want dre empire dont you?

me; fuck you

Dorian; you not even denying it

Me; what you want me to say? We all fucken want this, you want this, i want this, deon wants this. Its not personal or about dre . Its all about money

Dorian; did you set dre up?

i threw a punch and he went down

Me; \*shouting\* fuck you! Fuck you

He got up and tried to hit me but i moved away just in time

Dorian; \*shouting\* you fucken set dre up

Me; \*shouting\* dre is my fucken best friend , more than a best friend in fact, his my brother why the fuck would i set him up. I didnt want things to be like this but somehow they ended up like this. The kind of shit i wont tolerate is you accusing me of killing my best friend fuck you

I took my car keys on the table and walked out

#dorian

3 months passed, sanele wanted amahle, including paris but my mum talked to sanele, he understood but when a child wants her mother, he wants her this whole thing affected him bad in such a way they suspended him at school for fighting with students and teachers. I told them what happened at home and they understood. Well paris she knew someone was not there. I was on my way to see alex. I walked in and he was having coffee

Me; hey man

Lex; hey

Me; you good

Alex; im good , want some coffee

Me; no im good, i need some good news

Alex; \*laughing\* well i already talked to your mum, she is with her including pa and her family

Me; what? Are you serious

Alex; yeah i called them this morning. I tried calling you but it went to voicemail

Me; yeah was busy this morning so shes ohk

Alex; well not exactly

Me; huh?

alex; she wont have any mental breakdowns that i can guarantee you, but she did lose her husband so she will cry, she will think about him but what we went through 3 months back, we wont see that again

Me; are you sure?

alex; yeah we had a lot off setbacks trust me. Everytime we sedated her , she would wake up thinking andre was ohk, sharp or hurt that she would want to help him.

Me; what?

Alex; yeah , we had a lot of screams, fighting and suicide attempts

Me; again

Alex; yeah but with time, things got better. I recommended someone for her, for her to talk to them and they did, they opened up, put everything on the table. One of the reasons why she is dealing with this in a normal way now

Me; so she is ohk

Alex; yes, she must be home by now actually

Me; alex , you sure she is not a danger to herself or kids

Alex; no she is fine, i faxed the hr at bara and she could be ready to go back to work

Me; i though...

He cut me off

Alex; i knew this was a couple of months things. I faxed them telling them she was going on a retreat, cause if i didnt and they knew her case. They would see her as unfit for her to hold her job description and she would have lost her job, so she is safe with her job

Me; she wont have a fit

Alex; shes fine ohk, trust me

Me; thank you man i dont know how i can possibly thank you

Alex; turner death hit us all deep man and thats the least i could do. I have to go back to work

Me; thank you again

Alex; sure

He got up and left. I followed him. I drove to amahle place and the were a lot off cars parked on the driveway, i walked in and i came across her smiling. With the biggest

smile on her face, she was carrying paris, talking to my grandmother. She lifted up her head and i saw some life in her after a while. I smiled at her and she gave paris to my grandmother and walked up to me. She just gave me a big hug an di returned it

Me; you look beautiful

Amahle; thank you

She looked at me

Amahle; \*smiling\* thank you so much

Me; \*smiling \* you look good

She turned

Amahle; do i?

I just laughed and hugged her again

Me; its good to have to you back man

Amahle; i feel like myself again

Me; im glad to hear that

Everyone was there , including amahle brother and to be honest, he supported her at all time

#amahle

Since i got back i was taking things slowly for one i was glad i was back home and back with my kids. Andre death

cut deep the were times i just wanted to die but alex, oh god alex he was everything to me and i would forever be grateful to him. It was great being back home, with my family and kids. I was going back to work in like 3 weeks time and i was ready, i was also ready in running andre business again. I was in the right state of mind

INSERT #283

#amahle

August 5 sanele didnt want to do anything but it was his first birthday with us and i was not letting anything ruin that. I took him out , it was just the 3 off us and i think the three of us forgot the tragedy we were facing just for those hours. Then it was december sanele passed to go to grade 9, i stayed off work and i was getting a hand of dre business. I knew every month i had to pay the guys their salaries. A year had passed already it was april, good Friday weekend. Woke up and we headed to church, i prayed for my family, after church we went for lunch.

Me; baby

He looked at me

Me; you ohk

Paris; nele, nele, nele

She couldnt say sanele, she just called him nele. He just laughed after paris called him

Me; i miss him too

He just laid his head on the table. I got closer to him and rubbed his back. And of course paris thought i was hurting him , she screamed refusing for me to touch him

Paris; ha aha mama

She was literally removing my hands from him and only she was allowed to rub sanele back. Me and sanele just laughed. Sanele picked her up and we continued with our lunch. When that was done we walked out. Headed to my car and we went straight home. The 3 off us fell asleep on my bed. Woke up after a few hours , and the two were still sleeping. I just sat in andre room.

Me; punka i dont know what must i do, help me show me a way please, i know papi you alive just please come home i cant do this alone, sanele needs you , paris needs you and i need you. Andre come home please.

I got up and went to the kitchen. The time was 3 am, i couldnt sleep so i just went for a swim, got out and went back up. The two were still sleeping i went to shower and the time was already 5 am.

I prepared breakfast for us all and went up to wake up sanele. Paris was still sleeping He walked to the bathroom, while i carried on downstairs, few minutes mamsebe walked in

Mamsebe; am i late

Me; \*laughing\* no ma , i woke up around 4

Mamsebe; why

Me; couldnt sleep

Mamsebe; ar...

She got cut off as sanele and paris walked in, sanele was carrying her and she looked sleepy

Sanele; morning masebe

Mamsebe; morning boy

Sanele; ma isnt she going to school

Me; she is, lets go bath baby

I picked her up and we went upstairs. I bathed her , dressed her up fast and went downstairs. Sanele was already done eating, he was watching tv. I fed paris then drove them to school. Rushed back home and went to shower and went to work.

I did my rounds as usual and got my schedule only to find out that i was to start working nightshift. I went to the

human resource department and talked with the person in charge

Me; i cant do nightshifts, i just cant

Her; im sorry dr adams but its been years since you did it and nightshift comes with the job

I looked at her

Me; cant you do something

sHe shook her head. I took those papers and headed back to work. Knocked off at 7 and i was so tired. Got home and just went to shower and was with my kids the whole time. Around 10 it was time for me to go to bed cause everyone was already sleeping.

Next day pretty much the same as yesterday just work. Got home and while i was in the shower. I heard sanele call for my name. I closed the tap

Me; baby

Sanele; ma uncle themba is at the gate should we open

Me; no

Sanele; so what should we say

Me; im coming

Sanele; ohk

I took my towel, went out wore my gown and slippers and walked out. I walked to the gate and he got out off the car seeing me.

Me;...

Themba; hi

Me; what do you want

Themba; i need some files

Me; which files

Themba; a very important file amahle, i need it

I remember shaun telling me not to give anyone including themba and dorian. The files he gave me

Me; why?

Themba;...

Me; whatever you need on those files, tell me and il do it myself

Themba; \*shouting\* you know shit about this

Me; you \*i paused\* mxm

I walked away

Themba; i know you hate me ohk i know you do but i need you to understand that i need those files

I turned to look at him

Me; and you need to understand you not getting shit from me, get off my yard

I walked in the house. I called the security complex and told them not to let themba in ever again here. An hour of being in there my phone rang i answered it

Me; helo

Guy; mrs turner

He had an accent

Me; yes

Guy; this is dominic

Me; oh dominic

Iv never met this dominic guy, iv only heard about him and his name. He was andre drug supplier from offshore.

Guy; how you doing

Me; im ohk and yourself

Guy; il be great after we talk, il skype you in 15 minutes time

Me; ohk

He hung up. I walked up stairs to andre study. Logged in to his laptop and waited for the skype. It came through and i accepted it. It was my first time seeing this guy they goes for him too

Me; hi

Him; you are indeed beautiful. I would fly to south africa for you

Me; \*fake smile\* thank you

Him; shall we

Me; yes we may

Him; ohk the prices for your usual package will be increasing with 10 %

Me; what? Thats just unreasonable

Him; you know how the economy gets, something that is out off our hands

Me; 10% thats just bullshit

He bit his lower lip

Him; fiesty hmm

Me; im not joking dominic its too much and you just telling me this now . Few days before i order my next package

He just looked at me

Me; make it 5%

Him; \*laughing\* 5% mrs come on now, im running a business here

Me; im running a business as well here

Him; 8

Me; 5 come on dominic im a lady

He gave me a dirty smile

Him; and a lady should get everything she wants

Me; \*smiling\* you think

I was in a mens business and i had to use what i have to get what i want, which is seduction to be honest

Him; fine 5% however

Me; \*smiling\* yes

Him; this stays between us, i dont need my other clients knowing im giving you , your package for 5%

Me; ohk

Him; \*laughing\* i thank God for turners death. Im coming to south africa for you

Me; bye dominic

I switched it off , did what i had to do there. Then walked downstairs

INSERT #284

More weeks passed, my birthday and paris was in a weeks time and dre was missing paris second birthday. His

business was in order and the fact that i was giving themba orders on what to do, the cars our clients needed did not sit well with him and pretty much i didnt care. The rest of the guys could not believe i was managing the whole operations so smooth with no goosebumps, i surprised myself actually and in a way i enjoyed it more than my work. My kids were growing each day and i was just a proud mum. Mamsebe was still secretive about her lover, her kids came one weekend taking her out and i was glad they still made time for their mother. One day was off and sanele and paris were both at school. I was just busy outside in the garden

Woman; well your work is great

I turned and it was andre mother

Me; \*smiling\* well you motivated me

Woman; your roses are absolutely beautiful

Me; you have made me love flowers just as much as you ma

Andre mother; \*smiling\* good and i dont regret it

I hugged her

Me; you just got here

Andre mother; yes, but i had a talk with mamsebe first

Me; about

Her;...

Me; ma

Her; lets talk

We walked near the pool and sat down

Her; so how you been DOING?

Me; good, way better

Her; you sure

I nodded my head

Me; i should be asking you that

Her; it gets better each day, but im fine now

Me; and GRANDMA?

Her; i think she is healing each and day but you know that everything gets better with time just like she is ohk now

I nodded my head

Me; i miss him so much ma

Her; \*smiling\* i know you do and i miss him too. Infact we all miss him

Me; do you think by any chance that he is still ALIVE?

Her; i hope that, at times

Me; me too

Her; any leads on the highjackers

I shook my head

Me; they closed the case

Her; im angry that , the cops were so fast when they had to arrest him but now they cant arrest someone who killed him

Me;...

Her; im sorry baby

Me; no its ohk ma, iv gotten used to that actually. The people i come across each day, im sorry about your husbands death, your loss, andre death

Her; how does that sit with you

Me; that i will never see him ever again or talk to him or hear him laugh

Her; im sorry baby

Me; its ohk ma. I have to move on i think

Her; yes you do, you still young but dont rush yourself ohk

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

We had small talks and she waited for her grandchildren to arrive and of course they were excited to see her. She left after eating supper with us, we were watching tv

Me; baby lets go bath

Paris; lets go

She stood up

Me; when this is over bed

Sanele; yes mum

I kissed his forehead and we walked upstairs with paris, i opened water for us

Me; go take your pyjamas baby

Paris; ncess

Me; yes princess she ran out off the bed room, got back with not matching pyjamas. We got in the tub and i got her hair wet. She had curly hair big hair to be exact, her long eyelashes and same eyecolour as andres. She was a duplicate off him, i just looked at her and she was splashing water everywhere. I bathed her then we went out, dressed her up and put her to bed. Sanele was already sleeping. I went to make myself a cup off coffee, drank it then went to bed.

I got in and was laying in the middle, my hands stretched out. I closed my eyes and just saw andre, i opened them and it was just a dark room, i slowly closed them again and he was smiling walking towards me

Dre; open for daddy

I smiled and parted my legs apart, he got in between them and kissed my neck. I let out a moan, my hands holding on the sheets. He was kissing every parts of my body, while going down. I lifted up my head and he just smiled...

#285

#amahle

Someone from my dreams.

Them; mum, mum wake up... Mum

I opened my eyes and sanele was standing beside the bed , in his uniform

Sanele; will be late

I jumped up and headed to the shower, i didnt evn spend 10 minutes in there. Then walked out

Me; lets go guys

Sanele; you not eating

Me; il eat at work baby, lets go

The two rushed to the car, i dropped them off and went to work. I grabbed something to eat

Nobuhle; busy morning

I turned

Me; i was so late this morning

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* sorry babe, lets go

I finished the rest of my coffee and we left. We did what we had to do and it was hectic i mean hectic. I was in surgical training and the books i had to buy , i knew i was getting myself in trouble, nobuhle accompanied me

Nobuhle; will you manage babe

I nodded my head

Nobuhle; dont be putting yourself under a lot of stress ohk

Me; \*laughing\* i wont just relax

I bought them then we went out for lunch

Me; so how you been doing ? You glowing

Nobuhle; no im not

Me;...

Nobuhle; i dont see any glow, thats all im saying

Me; ohk so you good?

nobuhle; yes baby im good what can i say you?

me; im good way good

Nobuhle; we should go out for some drinks sometime

Me; uhmmm nahh

Nobuhle; what we need to go out , get some air have some fun you know

Me;...

Nobuhle; please

Me; fine just one day though

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* yesss

Raising her hands up

Me; but that day i need to talk to mbali mum or andre mother for sanele and paris

Nobuhle; i think andre mother is best

Me; yeah cause thando ne

She nodded her head

Nobuhle; you would be killing her yho

I laughed

Me; lets get back to work woman, did i tell you i would be doing nighshift now

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* you joking right

Me; i wish

Nobuhle; so what you going to do

Me; i dont know but masebe is there

Nobuhle; talk to her about that first, i think you should hire a nanny

Me; i have to build this trust thing from the start again, i dont think i can do that

Nobuhle; eish but you have to talk to masebe first

Me; yeah

We went our separate ways. After work went home and the two were there sitting with dorian and this girl, she was beautiful yho

Me; helo

They turned

Dorian; hey you

I kissed paris then sanele

Me; you good

Dorian; yeah, dropped off this two safe and sound

Me; thank you

Dorian; no need, oh and this is jessica, jess this is amahle

Me; \*smiling\* hi

Jess; hey its great finally meeting you

Me; likewise, its great knowing he finally found someone who would make him settle down

She smiled

Jess; im really sorry about your husband , dorian told me

Me; its ohk thank you for accompanying dorian. His the only one i can bother

Jess; there was no hassle trust me

Me; did you eat already

Jess; yes mam sebe already gave us something to eat

Me; ohk

Dorian; yes we were headed out actually

Me; thank you for staying

Dorian; pleasure, you ohk right?

I smiled and nodded my head

Me; im fine travel safe

He kissed my cheek then i hugged jess and we walked them out

My life got soo busy and i mean real busy i was preparing for exams, i was running andre business, i was a dr and i was a mother of two kids who needed both my attention. Mamsebe was like my right hand, she helped me out everywhere. She was fine with working alone and insisted i hire no one cause taking care of the two was nothing to her when i would be working nightshift. By the time i was working nightshift, everything was still smooth. I would

get back home at 8 am sleep and wake up around 2, prepare things for my kids, while i study, 3 when they arrive i bond with them 6pm i leave for work. Weekends was occupied by andre business, all the men there try to sweep me off my feet and made things easier for me. Stephen treated me like a queen of course and i worked hand in hand with themba, dorian and deon with the business but the files i kept them away from them. The money was coming in like crazy at times i was like fuck my job. This will be my job from now on and i enjoyed what i did, i now understood and felt what andre felt and it felt sooo good making money , making millions a week...

Nighshifts got really busy, around 3 am went to my office and ate my supper in peace. I just played games on my phone until I had to jump at the next call. 8 am drove home and just slept.

One Friday after waking up went to shower and went to the mall. Tomorrow sanele was going to his best friends birthday party josh and i had to look for what he was specifically suppose to wear. Took my car and headed there with paris, she didnt go to school. Got to the mall and we walked in, she was on her stroller the whole time

Someone; and we meet again

I turned and just laughed

## INSERT # 286

ME; bradley

Him; enhle

Me; how are you?

he walked to the stroller and knelt down

Him; hey beautiful

He lifted up his head to look at me

Him; im ohk and yourself

Me; im good

Him; do you mind

Me; isnt she sleeping

Him; no

Me; go ahead

He removed the belt and picked her up. She looked like  
she had just woken up, rubbing her eys

Him; she is absolutely beautiful

Me; thank you

Him; she is yours

Me;...

Him; \*laughing\* im just asking

Me; yes

Him; hey princess

Paris just laid her head on his shoulder, she still wanted to sleep

Him; im still waiting for you call

Me; i told you , i wouldnt

Him; cause you a married woman

Me; yes

Him; \*laughing\* let me take you out for lunch

Me; whats with you and lunch

Him; come on, cant i have the compnay of two beauties

Me; no

Him; but his not here and we at the mall. I think god brought us together

Me; what?

him; come on, im at a kids shop, i dont have a kid but i felt the need to walk in here. I think i passed like 4 aisles not knowing what i was doing here and i see you. You telling me thats not faith

Me; \*laughing\* no its just a coincidence

Him; ohk think what you think il do the same please

He said that placing paris back

Me; im still shopping

Him; ohk

Me; i might take a while

Him; im not rushing anywhere

Me; are you always this persistent

Him; never but with you , i feel the need to

Me; wow

Him; \*laughing\* so what are we looking for

Me; boys dungaree

Him; and

Me; white top

Him; thats all

I nodded my head

Him; ohk

We walked down the aisles, trying to look for it

Him; so you have two kids

Me; yes

Him;hmmm

Me; \*laughing\* changing your mind on that lunch

Him; hell no, mother of two that looks 20 wow

Me; flattery will get you everywhere

He smiled and looked at me

Him; really

Me; \*laughing\* forget it

Him; i never said anything you did

I looked through clothes i came across but nothing, we went to few more shops until we found what we were looking for.

Him; let me pay for it

Me; no

I took out my wallet

Woman; cheque or saving

Him; cheque

Me; dont take that card

Him; will you allow me to do anything

Me; i wont allow you to pay for my sons clothes

Him; but i want to

Me; no

I took the card from the girl and handed it to him and gave her my card she swiped it then took the bags. We walked out, i placed the platics on paris stroller

Him; let me

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

I moved away and he pushed the stroller

Him; so how you been?

Me; im ohk and yourself

Him; well before i saw you i had mixed emotions

Me; why?

him; stress from work

Me; what do you do?

Him; restaurant owner

Me; hmm can you cook

Him; can i cook \*eyes wide open\* woman i can cook and i can bet you, that i cook better than you

Me; you wouldnt want to make that kind of bet

Him; oh really

Me; yes really mr

Him; \*laughing\* when did you get married

Me; why?

Him; just tell me

Me; uhm 4 years back or 5

Him; fuck where the hell was i , four or five years back. I was suppose to be in joburg

I laughed and he just stared

Me; \*laughing\* what?

him; his fucken lucky

Me; you think

Him; i know

I smiled and looked away. I choose where we would eat and we found ourselves a table , ordered, and we ate

Him; so what do you do

Me;...

Him; oh so im going to tell you but you wont tell

Me; its for the best

Him; why ? Scared il walk in your work place

Me; \*laughing\* just guess what i do

Him; id say model, you beautiful

Me; cliche

He laughed

Him; \*laughing\* ohk maybe a bank something or an attorney i dont know

Me; il let you figure that out

Him; wow mrs, wow

I took a bit of my food

Him; id like to have this again

Me; your food

Him; \*laughing\* yes my food and you

Me; nope

Him; why not

Me; cause im married

Him; so you not suppose to eat?

Me;...

Him; please

Me; i dont know bradley

Him; ohk not lunch how about a tour

Me; huh?

Him; yes im not for johannesburg

Me; wow really?

Him; yeah i have 3 restaurants this side, and i have a habit that i can only do this side

Me; so what brought you here this time?

Him; work

Me; but you have seen it

Him; not the whole off it please

Me; where you from ?

Him; mozambique

I raised my eyebrow

Him; \*laughing\* i moved there when i was like 10 its been my home ever since

Me; iv never been there before, i hear its beautiful

Him; most definitely, i should take you there sometime

I looked at him

Him; \*laughing\* im just joking geez woman

Paris woke up, i picked her up and she was just looking at bradley

Brad; im sure she is hungry

Me; what will you eat baby

She raised her shoulders. Brad called the waiter and ordered her mash with gravy

Me; you sure you dont have kids

Brad; i have a niece and nephew so i know a few things

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

He was just staring at me. The food came and paris ate. When we were all done eating. He walked me to my car, he gave me his phone

Him; last time , you didnt call and im not taking a chance again

I dialled my numbers, as i was about to get in my car, he held my arm

Him; wait

My phone rang, i laughed

Me; happy

Him; way happy, travel safe

Me; you too

He kissed my cheek and walked away. I got in and breathed out loud. I turned to look at paris and she was just staring at me

Me; \*laughing\* what?

she didnt move her eyes from me. I turned back and drove us home

## INSERT #287

Next day, andre mother wanted paris since sanele was leaving. We first dropped her off and i drove to josh place, i walked sanele in and it was a big party. I stayed

with the parents for a while just talking and left. They asked for sanele to sleepover and he was keen for it, mamsebe was also leaving i was going to be alone. The whole night, i was already full so i drove home. When my phone rang. I couldnt help but smile

Me; the mr

Bradley; the mrs

I laughed

Bradley; \*laughing\* how are you

Me; im ohk and yourself

Brad; im

Me; you

Brad; i want to see you

Me; like really

Brad; please

Me; im on my way home

Brad; to the husband

Me; no

Brad; perfect get your ass here

Me; where are you?

He told me and i was going to get bored so why not. I drove there arrived in nasrec. I called him and he walked out, i got out off the car

Brad; are you sure you are a mother of two  
I was in shorts and just a top with sandals

Me; stop

Brad; im just joking , you look beautiful

We hugged

Me; thank you

He held my hand and we walked in

Brad; remember the habit i told you about

Me; yeah

Brad; thats what we here for this is me

I looked at him. It was a racing track, spinning cars.

Me; i have goosebumps

Him; \*smiling\* perfect come here

He held my arm, we walked to the benches and sat there, few minutes later three guys arrived they greeted him and i greeted back

Bradley; this is enhle, enhle this is michael, tshepo and anele

Me; hi nice meeting you all

Michael; same here

They sat with us

Anele; you up next

Bradley; yeah

I looked at bradley

Me; you going down there

He nodded his head

Me; what? Are you serious

Tshepo; this is his thing

Bradley; dont blink

He said that getting up and walking to the track

Anele; so you together?

Me; no more like friends

Michael; how can he be friends with you

Me; what you mean

Tshepo; never mind him

I just laughed. Well bradley did magic i was kind of shocked to be honest. When that was done, we headed to his car got in and he drove to this place, he parked his car and we went up the flats, he opened the door and he just pulled me in a kiss.

I dont know why maybe i missed a mans touch but i kissed him back, he held my butt and he picked me up, i locked my ankles around his waist and he pinned me to the wall. He locked it and walked to his bed. He laid me there and i took off his top, he broke the kiss in order to remove my top, i helped him with it and threw it on the floor. He kissed my neck and i let out a slight moan, my hands were above my head, he joined them with his and kissed my breast. My breathing just changed, his breathing. He removed them jeans and i was left with my underwear, he held my thigh up as he grinded me. I bit my lower lip and removed his jeans. He looked at me , more like just looked at each other and i just pulled him to me....

INSERT #288

He grabbed a condom and put it on, but my phone rang we looked at each other

Bradley; ignore it

Me; i cant

I took it and it was an incoming facetime with sanele, i quickly got up and moved away from bradley i answered it

Me; baby

Sanele; mum iv been trying to call you

Me; im sorry whats wrong

Sanele; where are you?

me; at a friends of mine , whats wrong

Sanele; nothing was just making sure, you ohk? Im sorry for not sleeping at home even though i knew you would be alone

I smiled

Me; im ohk baby.., you having fun?

Sanele; yes a lot

Josh; hi mrs adams

He was wet

Me; are you wet?

Josh; \*laughing\* we swimming

Me; \*laughing\* ohk look after yourselves

Them; will do

I switched it off and turned to bradley. He was looking at me

Me; i cant do this

I walked up to him and grabbed my stuff

Bradley; really

Me; i have to go

Bradley; come on enhle

Me; im sorry you need to take me back to my car

I was trying to take everything of mine at once, he got from the bed and held my arm

Me; im sorry but i cant

He held my face

Bradley; ohk we wont have sex, lets just talk

Me; i have to go home

Bradley; but you will be alone

Me; please let go of me

He held my face with both his hands

Bradley; will both get dressed, il cook for us, we eat while we watch a movie. No sex

Me;...

Bradley; please dont go im begging here

Me;...

Bradley; will lock my bedroom in case you will be comfortable with the fact that no sex

I laughed

Bradley; i really dont want you to go

Me; no sex

He raised his hands up

Bradley; no sex

Me; ohk

He went back and looked at me

Me; \*laughing\* stop

We were in the most awkward position. He was naked, and so was i.

Bradley; want me to help you

Me; \*laughing\* no

Bradley; i insist

I laughed and handed him my clothes. He took my underwear and went on his knees

Bradley; one leg up

I did as told, he slowly pulled them up and kissed my thighs while doing so. I held his shoulders and he kissed my centre before pulling them all up and standing up. I looked at him. He kissed me and i wrapped my hands around him, he pulled back

Bradley; no sex remember

Me; oh yeah

He was turning me on, while he was dressing me. When we were both dressed we walked downstairs

Bradley; what do you want to eat

Me; anything

Bradley; i could spaghetti and mince last night

Me; thats fine

Bradley; ohk let me warm it up

I sat on the couch and switched on the tv. He came back and we both ate.

Bradley; where is your husband

Me; business tri[

Bradley;...

Me; what?

Bradley; dont you watch movies husbands and business trips dont mix

Me; \*laughing\* you just said it movie and who am i to judge im with you

He ;laughed so loud.

Bradley; yeah you right lets leave him in peace

We both laughed.

The food was sooo great when we were done. We watched movies until midnight. We drove back to nasrec

to pick up my car and i went home. We texted the whole night until i fell asleep.

I ended up hanging out with bradley a lot i mean alot, we have been seeing each other for months now despite the spinning thing, he was in the food business, restaurant owner and he was a great cook. 05 august sanele turned 16. we had a lunch at my house big birthday cake for him, my family and andre family it was really special for him, as i was dishing up my phone rang it was bradley and the smile on my face god.

Me; ma can you please take over for me

Andre aunt; yes baby

I went out, i walked to the gate i didnt want anyone hearing my conversation

Me; lover

Bradley; mine

I laughed

Bradley; i miss you

Me; i miss you

Bradley; how is the party

Me; great, his having the time of his life

Bradley; im glad, you should come collect his gift

Me; you bought him a gift

Bradley; yes so will you

Me; is this your way of trying to get me there

Bradley; yes and yes

Me; \*laughing\* brad

Bradley; lover come on i miss you

Me; il come to your place tonight

Bradley; why dont i ever come there

Me; you know why

Bradley; just get your ass here so will talk

Me; \*laughing\* ohk

I went back , we ate and everyone left, ntando left with pa and andre mother sanele and paris. I went to take a shower then left

## INSERT #289

I knocked and the door opened

Me; ...

He just looked at me

Me; will we stand out here the whole day

He smiled and moved away i got in. I turned to look at him but his tongue was already down my throat, he took off my clothes and we took it to his bed. I removed his towel and he removed all my clothes

i placed my leg on his waist and he just moved his fingers up and down my clit, he kissed my neck and my eyes rolled at the back off my head, he put on a condom and kissed me again and unexpectedly he entered me . I gasped for air, he entered me hard , fast and deep his groans filled his bedroom, my moans filled his bedroom. My nails dug deep into his back and it was as if i was signalling for him to go deeper. He came and i came and i just laid my head on his chest. He was playing with my hair the whole time

Bradley; your husband

Me; what about my husband

Bradley; does he make you happy?

Me;...

Bradley; you never tell me anything i just know your name and that you have 2 kids

Me;...

Bradley; and i tell you

Me; what you want to know

Bradley; you

Me; then what?

Bradley; lets cross that bridge when we get there

Me; my last name is boysens

Bradley; enhle boysens

I nodded my head

Me; one thing at a time

Bradley; ohk fine with me

We stayed quiet for a few minutes

Bradley; im falling for you

I lifted up my head to look at him

Bradley; i know thats bad but i cant help it. When i came here, i just came this side for work, i do what i have to do then i leave but i met you, i talked to you, i felt connected to you i know this is wrong since you married and stuff but i just cant help it

I sat up straight

Bradley; why dont we go

Me; huh

Bradley; what i came here for, i didnt find but i found you. Lets go, you take your kids and we go

Me; i cant do that

Bradley; why ? You obviosuly not happy

Me; its not that easy i cant take my children lives away too, i have a family this side no

I got up

Bradley; b...

Me; stop i shouldnt have done this in the first place, you turning this into a movie now, the wife leaves the marriage for an affair

Bradley; \*shouting\*what kind of marriage, you always with me , me you not in a marriage

Me; i love my husband

Bradley; then why the fuck are you here?

I wanted to talk but i couldnt, i grabbed my clothes and walked to the kitchen, i placed them on the counter and started dressing up.

Bradley; are you seriously leaving?

Me;...

Bradley; what the fuck is this? I tell you i love and you just going to leave

Me;...

Bradley; enhle

Me; leave me alone

I took my bag and went for the door but it was locked

Me; please open

Bradley; no lets talk

Me; i dont want to talk

Bradley; do you feel anything for me , i mean anything

Me; i want to go

Bradley; you know what if you going to be this mad, lets just leave it. you dont have to hear how i feel ever again, im sorry can we forget it now

Me;...

Bradley; enhle what do you want from me like honestly

Me;...

Bradley; cause it seems like you dont know but i know you feel something for me maybe even a slight chance that you love me just like i love you

Me;...

Bradley; i dont even want sex from you, sex is just bonus to me i just want you and i know you do too

Me;...

He banged the counter

Bradley; \*shouting\* can you say something ! Anything

Me; i dont know what i want \*crying\*

He covered his head , facing his back to me

Me; i dont know ohk, i dont know if im ready to be with you leaving my husband. Its not just about me, i have to think about my kids too. They involved in this as much as im involved, they know their father and if you think we just going to move away with you and they will accept you as their new father then you wrong. They know their father and to them you will be a man who caused their parents separation

He looked at me

Me; think about all off that not just the good stuff

Bradley; do you love me

Me;...

Bradley; just tell me that

Me; i feel something for you, something deep what it is i dont know as yet, im trying to figure that out so give me time to figure that out

Bradley; so should i stay in joburg for another year or no

Me; its up to you

Bradley; no i want you to tell me that way i know we have a real chance

I thought for a while and looked at him, he didnt remove his eyes from me

Me; id love it if you stayed

Bradley; \*smiling\* come here

I laughed and walked up to him, he wiped my tears with his hand and kissed my forehead

Bradley; you going to send me to my grave early

I laughed, he held my face in order to look at him

Bradley; i meant what i said i love you, i dont know how it happened but it did and im not ready to let go

I just kissed him, he returned the kiss while picking me up. We took it to the bedroom.

## INSERT #290

I slept over at bradley place next morning headed home. I went to shower went out and as i was dressing up there was a knock

Me; come in

The two walked in, giving me hugs

Me; you just came back

They nodded. Andre mother walked up the door

Andre mother; hey baby

Me; \*smiling\* hi ma

Andre mother; how are you?

Me; im good and yourself

Andre mother; good thank you for yesterday

Me; you know , you dont have to thank me ma

She smiled

Andre mother; we bought you lunch

Me; thank you let me get dressed and il join you

They left the bedroom, i lotioned my body and noticed i had a hickey, i just panicked grabbed my make up bag and covered it up. Well i tried dressed up then walked downstairs. I joined them on the lunch and we just ate, talked shared laughs it was always great being with my family. Around 7 ma left then it was bed for all of us since we were all waking up.

More weeks passed it was just usual days. I gotten the hang off andre business, would go to meetings do all the transactions but my work i never missed a day. What i had with bradley was becoming real for me, i was falling for him to be honest even if that was the case i was joping andre could still walk through the door even if that was impossible. Thursday afternoon i picked up paris and had to go to sanele school he had a soccer match and i never missed those, while driving there my phone rang and it was bradley

Me; lover

Bradley; mine

Me; \*smiling\* how are you lover

Bradley; i miss what is mine

Paris; helo

I turned and looked at her. I shook my head at her but she just covered her mouth

Bradley; \*laughing\* helo princess

Me; she is being naughty

Bradley; where you driving to?

me; babies soccer match

Bradley; can i come

Me; you know you cant

Bradley; mr boysens coming

Me; no

Bradley; then mummy work friend please

Me; fine where are you will pick you up

He told me, i turned and went to pick him up.

Bradley; she is so beautiful

Me; and what do we say

Paris; thank you

She was really shy, laid back as if she was scared off him  
Bradley; daddys eyes?

Me; yeah

Bradley; ever since i saw her iv been trying to figure out  
who she look like and she looks li... \*he paused\*

Me; like

Bradley; superstar

I laughed

We got to sanele school and walked to the benches after  
15 minutes or so, the game started

Bradley; you know im going to ask ? You entered in this  
marriage a single mother

I didnt want bradley to know a lot about my life especially  
that sanele was adopted

Me; yes

Bradley; how old was he

Me; really small, he does not remember anything

Bradley; ohk

We screamed our lungs out and they lost 2-1 and my  
baby was of course disappointed

Me; im sorry

Sanele; its ohk mum hey pumpkin

Picking up paris

Paris; nele

Me; baby this is my friend bradley

He looked at him as if he was trying to figure him out

Sanele; hi

Bradley; hey great match

Sanele; thank you

Bradley; cant win everyday right, im sure next time all will be better

Sanele; mmm

We walked to the car got in and bradley insisted on driving. He was taking us all out for lunch. We arrived and walked in and only found out when we got there that it was one of his places

Bradley; il take your order what would you like to have

Me; i...

Bradley; mum lets start with the man of the match ohk

We laughed

Sanele; can i just have ribs and chips with mixed fruit juice

Bradley; ohk mum

Me; il have this

Bradley; baby  
Paris just covered her face  
Me; \*laughing\* lets get her mash  
Bradley; coming right up  
He walked away  
Me; im sorry about today  
Sanele; its ohk mum , next time  
I smiled  
Sanele; i appreciate you being there but...  
Me; but?  
sanele; dad, mum  
Me; i know baby and i know he would have done anything  
to watch you play soccer  
Sanele; we have to stay together mum the three of us for  
dads sake  
I knew were this was going. I kissed his forehead and  
bradley showed up with our food  
Me; this looks great  
Sanele' thank you  
Paris; thank you  
Bradley; pleasure guys

We all sat down and ate, after that was dessert. I was full so was Sanele and Paris, Paris had fallen asleep.

Bradley walked us to my car he was carrying Paris on his shoulder, he placed her on her car seat. Sanele was sitting with me on the front

Bradley; it was nice meeting you big guy

Sanele; same here

He looked at me and smiled, I smiled back

Bradley; drive safe ohk

Me; I will, you sure you will be ohk here

He nodded his head, he kissed my cheek

Bradley; call me when you get home

Me; ohk

He moved away started the car and we drove home

## INSERT #291

The 27 we went to a memorial park, it was just a stone with Andre's name since his body was never recovered, I parked our blanket, picnic basket and headed there.

Sanele was quiet the whole time. We got there laid the blanket and sat on top of it. I said a prayer and got busy with Paris

Sanele; dad i dont know if you can hear me or see me.  
Happy birthday i havent spent any of your birthdays with  
you and im disappointed in that, cause we still had a lot to  
do me and you and paris. Im taking really good care of  
mum and paris like you said i should. I really miss you,  
and i miss our talks and wish we had certain talks that i  
avoided that time when you were around. Please look  
after us and we love you

I smiled and kissed his forehead and tears just rolled  
down his face. I gave him a hug and he just broke down  
and i tried so hard not to cry with him. When we both  
calmed down, we just sat there ate and just had time with  
my family. Around 6, parked our things and headed home.  
Only to see deon car in the driveway. We walked in

Mbali; helo , helo helo

Me; \*laughing\* hey

Mbali; hey baby

Sanele; hi aunty mbali,

Mbali; princess

Paris just waved her hand

Mbali; how you doing

Me; \*faking a smile\* im ohk

She looked at me

Mbali; i thought i should be with you , since

Me; thank you where is deon

Mbali; his smoking outside, dorian is coming

Me; guys like im not in the m...

Mbali; we all are not in the mood but we need this, to be here all off us for his birthday

Me; mb...

Mabli; please

Me; everyone is coming

She nodded her head

Mbali; including themba and nobuhle

I breathed out loud

Mbali; they didnt want to hurt dre intentional and you know that

Me; let me go and change

I went up to my room and wore shorts with just a top and slippers, went to sanele room but he was not there, entertainment room walked in and he was playing video games, paris sitting next to him, she thought the controller was plugged in but lol no she was just pressing.

Me; baby il be downstairs ohk

Sanele; ohk

His eyes didnt even look at me

Me; 12 bed

Sanele; its a Saturday mum

Me; 12

Sanele; will see

I just laughed

Me; nana

Paris; hmmm

Me; dont you want to come with mama

She shook her head

Me; should i leave her

Sanele; yeah she wont go anywhere, if she wants to sleep  
il take her

Me; ohk you need anything just shout even if you hungry

Sanele; mum im ohk

I just smiled and walked downstairs, a lot of people had arrived, ty, shane, simphiwe, themba, unathi, nobuhle everyone was there. It was kind of awkward for me and themba at first, they had alcohol with them, we sat outside near the pool, with my plate and juice. I was just looking at it quiet , everyone was actually. It was just silence...

Unathi; \*laughing\* i fucken miss him

I looked at her

Mbali; \*laughing\* me too, and the many fucks

Shane; dont fucken piss me off muthafucker fuck man

\*imitating dre\*

We all laughed

Ty; we had some good times, from partying every week

Mbali; i mean every week before love hit him

I laughed

Themba; i mean girls would bow down to us

Deon; the hate he had over love

Me; and i just came along

They screamed

Dorian; trouble, trouble, trouble

Mbali; i see trouble what about the tears

Shane; it even got to that state that when he came in to the warehouse mad, we knew it had to do with amahle

Me; \*laughing\* what?

themba; sorry mama but its true

I laughed

Dorian; the fights

Me; the breakups

Nobuhle; drama

Me; just drama but at the end of the day, we would wake up with a hangover and forget about a lot off things

Mbali; life then was easier

Me; yeah i feel like i didnt get to enjoy my marriage that much

They kept quiet

Me; im sorry

Deon; no dont be talk

Me; we would be happy for 5 minutes , then something bad happens. Paris we were happy, then ntando we were miserable, then sanele we were happy, then \*i paused\*

Mbali; but you were happy and thats the only thing that matters

I smiled

Unathi; im sorry amahle

I looked at her

Unathi; i know i was not there for you when you needed us most, when you were going through the most, im really sorry i failed you as a friend

Nobuhle; me too. I just cared about my feeling and forgot that you lost the love of your life, il understand if you dont forgive me but i need you to know that im sorry

Themba; i wanted to do this when it was just us but since everyone is putting how they feel on the table i might just do this as well. I would never want anything to happen to andre, i made a mistake and im acknowledging that, im sorry we in this position because of me at the time i thought we would prevent it and we would achieve it just like we always do. Im really sorry i took a part of you away from you and your two kids and il never forgive myself for that cause not only did i take half of you but i took half of me as well and \*he paused \*

He looked up on the sky trying to hold his tears back, now i was crying and all the girls including the guys but they were hiding it so well

Themba; im sorry and it cuts deep \*sniffing\* knowing i pushed my best friend under the bus and his not with his wife because of me and kids and no matter how many times i convince myself that it was a mistake each and every day i just cant seem to forgive myself. Im really sorry amahle

I just got up , walked up to him, knelt down and hugged him. My top on the shoulder just got wet

Me; \*crying\* im sorry for blaming you and i know he would probably hate me for pushing you away and saying all those things im so sorry

He returned the hug so tight and the guys joined in on the hug. We were all so emotional

## INSERT #292

We sat there all was put on the table and well all was forgiven past 1 went up to go and check on sanele, i started in paris room and she was fast asleep then sanele and he was sleeping too. Walked down the steps and jack was sitting on the steps, i joined him

Me; you ohk?

Jack; yeah are you?

Me; yeah i think im so much better now

Jack; w...

My phone rang, i checked the caller id and it was bradley. He looked at the screen and i just ended the car

Me; you were saying

Jack; who is calling you so late

Me; colleague

Jack; ohk oh and i was just saying that dre really loved you a lot

Me; \*smiling\* and you do know he favoured you right

Jack; \*laughing\* my secret and his

I laughed and left him there. They were getting all so drunk so i didnt allow anyone to drive they all slept there, went to my room and called bradley

Me; brad

Bradley; im sorry its just i missed you

Me; ...

Bradley; did i get you in trouble

Me; almost but im alone now

Bradley; ohk

He went quiet

Me; whats wrong

Bradley; could not stop thinking about you

Me; brad

Bradley; hmm

Me; can i call you tomorrow please

Bradley; ohk, you ohk

I nodded my head

Bradley; enhle

Me; yes im fine

Bradley; ohk goodnight or goodmorning

Me; \*laughing\* morning

I hung up and just went to bed. Next morning woke up went downstairs and they were eating breakfast, mam sebe had left for church. Dorian was carrying paris

Me; morning

Them; morning

I sat down and took my plate, i dished up for myself and well we ate while having small talks. They left around 3, prepared supper and mam sebe walked in

Me; hmm

She looked at me. I looked at the watch

Me; 15; 35 church came out 12

She laughed

Mamsebe; im the oldest here, i should be asking you that question not you

Me; ma?

Mamsebe; \*laughing\* what baby

Me; when will you tell me?

Mamsebe; tell you what?

me; ma i know you seeing someone at church

She laughed

Me; i hope his not married ma

She threw the cloth for wiping dishes at me. I laughed so loud

Me; haybo ma!

Mamsebe; im a church woman, i would never do that

Me; hmm

Mamsebe; i mean that

Me; so his singel only seeing you

She just laughed and left me there. I laughed and finished off the supper, past 7 i dished up

Sanele; yho \*covering his mouth\*

Me; what?

He got up from his chair and ran upstairs, and walked back to the table again with an envelope

Me; and that

Sanele; i forgot about this and its due tomorrow

Me; whats that for

Sanele; school subjects for next year

I looked at him

Sanele; im sorry , it slipped my mind

Me; have you made up your mind

Sanele; im doing science

I smiled

Me; you sure

He nodded his head. We filled in the form and signed  
were i had to then he put it on his bag. Past 8 it was time  
for bed, but paris no. We sat on my bed together and  
gave her my phone she pressed and pressed and suddenly  
i just heard dre voice, i took the phone and it was video,  
she started crying for my phone so i just gave it to her  
and she looked at it, replaying it over and over again as if  
recognising the voice from somewhere as if the voice was  
his favourite sound

Me; who is that

Paris; hmmm

Me; who is that

Closing the screen with my hand. She raised her shoulders  
up

Me; thats daddy

Paris; daddy

I nodded my head

Paris; daddy, daddy, daddy

She said as if she did not want to forget it. After pictures and videos, she passed out next to me. Picked her up and took her to bed. Monday morning we all woke up, then ate breakfast

Me; guys we need to go

Paris; yes mummy

She got up and took her bag, i took mine followed by sanele

Me; bye ma

Masebe; bye

We got in my car and drove to paris school first, walked her in kiss then left. Then the big guy

Me; il pick you up

Sanele; ohk bye

Me; i love you

Sanele; \*laughing\* love you too

Drove too work and 2 hours of being there, my phone rang and it was paris school

Me; helo

Woman; mrs adams

Me; yes

Woman; im calling for paris, she is not well overheating

Me; ohk il send someone to come pick her up

Woman; ohk

I could not leave work, i called dorian but he didnt answer so i just called themba

Themba; mama

Me; hey i need a favour from you

Themba; ohk

Me; im at work i cant leave and paris is sick could you please pick her up and bring her here, il work from the office

Themba; ohk will be there in an hour

Me; thank you

Themba; sure

I was at the office, dealing with patients files , themba called and i met them halfway, she was so hot. I took her and themba insisted on going with us so i didnt say no. I waited for a dr childrens dr

Themba; why dont you call alex

Me;...

I was panicking, she was so hot, and sweating and the dr from work was taking her own time

Me; lets go

We walked back to his car, we sat at the back and she started having breathing problems. I called alex and he would be waiting for us at the hospital, themba sped there, he took her and we ran to alex. He was already waiting for us and he took paris. I was panicking , i couldnt even think, we sat at the waiting area after 30 minutes or so, he walked out

Me; is she ohk

Alex; what did she eat

Me; i dont know, she was at school

Alex; an allergic reaction and she couldnt breath

Me; how is she

Alexl \*smiling\* she will be fine, but i need her to sleep here

Me; what?

Alex; please just to make sure everything is fine

Me; she was just fine when i dropped her off

Alex; they probably gave her something at school that she was allergic to

Me; i have to go and find out

Themba; dont worry il go there

Me; \*smiling\* thank you but still, my car at work and sanele

Themba; just stay here but il need your keys

I gave it to him

Themba; il see you in a few hours

Me; ohk

I walked to the childrens ward and she was eating a banana. I brushed her big afro out off her face

Me; hey baby

Paris; mummy

She wanted to cry

Me; come here

I picked her up and she sat on top of me , i cuddled her until she fell asleep, my phone rang and tried to get it out off my pocket without having to wake up paris

Me; brad

Bradley; you said you will call me

Me; i know i was but i just got distracted

Bradley; whats wrong

Me; paris, is in hospital

Bradley; \*shouting\* WHAT???

me; yeah allergic reaction, i was so scared i was going to lose her

Bradley; where are you , im coming to see you

Me; im fine , you dont have to come

Bradley; is he there?

Me;...

Bradley; please even if its just for an hour, just to make sure you ohk and she is ohk and i know a really good doctor

Me; no my dr is perfect. Where are you

Bradley; my house

Me; should he arrive you a colleague

Bradley; yes now where are you?

I told him, i needed bradley to be honest, after an hour. He walked throught the door, with a teddy bear the smile on my face, paris was still sleeping on top off me. He kissed me and i returned the kiss

Me; \*whispering \* thank you for coming

Bradley; you needed me , is she sleeping

I nodded my head

Bradley; let me help you

He took paris and her head just laid on his shoulder and he placed her on the bed and placed the teddy next to her

Bradley; how is she?

Me; they said she should be ok but she will have to sleep here

Bradley; I'll stay with you

Me; you don't have to

He wrapped his arms around my waist

Bradley; even though you're not mine by law but you are mine and I'm staying with you, just find a way to send the man home

I laughed. I kissed him and the door opened, I just closed my eyes praying inside it was not Themba. I turned and it was Alex. He just looked at me

Me; so is she ok?

He looked at Bradley and Bradley looked at him

Alex; yes, will you excuse us?

Bradley; b...

Me; it's ok

He walked out

Me; so?

Alex; I did see that

Me; I know you did but it's not about me, so how is she

Alex; I'm sorry for meddling in your business

Me; ok

Alex; she should be fine but il monitor her through out the night

He changed a few things, checked a few things and left.  
Bradley walked in

Bradley; and that

Me; he knows my husband

Bradley; fuck im so...

Me; dont worry about it , you really staying

Bradley; 8smiling\* yes but il come back later since the may come here now

Me; ohk

We kissed and he left

## INSERT #293

After few hours of being there, sanele walked in with themba. He rushed to paris

Sanele; is she ohk mum?

Me; yes baby just an allergic reaction, shes going to sleep here

Sanele; what? Mum

Me; shes ohk i promise you

Sanele; ohk

He walked up to me and i just asked him

Me; il be right back, he sat on my sat

Me; thank you ohk

Themba; pleasure, your car sanele saw where its parked  
you should be good

Me; thank you again

Themba; need anything

Me; no

Themba; i can sleep here you know

Me; \*laughing\* i know you would but im ohk and we ohk.

Go home

Themba; ohk

We hugged

Themba; everything will be ohk

He kissed my cheek and walked away. I sat next to sanele and the princess woke up and she was so happy seeing sanele there. I called mamsebe letting her know and she was on her way including dre mother. After few hours mamsebe arrived first followed by andre mother. She asked about the teddy and i said it was from a friend. She stayed with us then left

Me; ma i cant go home

Mamsebe; yes baby il take ubaby boy

Me; baby you will leave with masebe right

Sanele; im not leaving you here alone mum

Me; im ohk baby and immediately after school il come pick you up tomorrow

Sanele; you sure you will be ohk

Me; come here

He walked up to me, i kissed him everywhere

Sanele; im old now, you cant be doing this

Me ; you my baby and you will always be my baby

He laughed

Sanele; ohk but we not leaving now right ma

Mamsebe; \*laughing\* no

Sanele was playing with her while i sat with mamsebe

Me; ma i need to talk to you

Her; ohk about?

Me; im seeing someone

Her eyes grew big

Me; ma dont do that

Her; i was kind of expecting it

Me; huh

Her; you have been glowing this past few days. So i was kind of expecting it

Me;...

Her; baby its ohk... Its ohk to move on ... You were a widow at a very young age you still have so much in you... Its ohk

Me; really

She smiled and nodded her head

Her; you mourned for dre and im sure his family know that sooner or later you will find someone so its ohk dont feel bad about it

Me; ...

Her; so who is it

I laughed

Me; bradley

Her; wow bradley, spur?

I nodded my head

Her; i knew it, i didnt know you called him

Me; i didnt , i met him again few months back and we have been together ever since. His such a great guy and \*i pause\*

Her; and?

Me; i think i love him ma... Not as much as dre ma but i love him... If he were to go down on his knees today id say yes

Her; that deep?

Me; that deep ma and im kind of scared

Her; have you told him

I shook my head

Her; does he know about dr...

Me; its kind of complicated

Her; well then, if thats how you feel best you tell him

Me; you think

Her; yes baby. Im all about you being happy and if he makes you happy then so be it

I hugged her

Me; thank you so much ma

Her; but you have to think about these two dont forget that

Me; i will

Past 8 mamsebe and sanele left.

Me; kiss me

She pouted her lips and kissed me

Guy; well , well, well

I turned and it was bradley. The smile on my face

Me; i though you were going to call

Brad; yeah but i had to see you

He kissed me and paris just closed her eyes

Brad; hey princess

Paris; hiiii

She stretched that out. Bradley picked her up

Brad; how are you?

Paris; fine

Brad; dont scare me and mummy like that ohk?

Paris just laughed

Brad; i thought the lil guy would be here. I brought us all food

Me; he wanted to be here but tomorrow is school so im going to pick him up tomorrow after school

Brad; what does your husband ever do miss?

Me;...

Brad; you ohk

Me; we need to talk

Brad; ohk i dont like the sound of this  
I gave paris my phone and earphones, he got busy with it  
Me; there is something i havent been telling you

Brad; ohk

Me; first brad, the last few months were amazing i mean i never thought even the slightest chance i would be this happy with you. I feel so alive again, i feel so happy and so many other things

Brad; babe you scaring, you cant be breaking up with me , il beg. If im pushing to much il back off ohk will go with your rules

Me; listen to me

Brad;...

Me; i love you brad

His eyes grew big

Brad; what?

Me; \*laughing\* i love you and the way it was with you, not expecting to fall for him. Its exactly what happened i dont know how or when but i know i love you i mean that

He held my face

Me; im not done... The things is i lied about certain things for one, im not cheating on my husband

Brad; huh?

Me; my husband died

He faced the floor

Me; yeah and i was living in denial for a long time. Iv been with him from varsity, i could even say he was my first love. He gave me two beautiful kids. Remember when you asked me about sanele

He nodded his head

Me; his actually adopted

His eyes were huge

Me; we adopted him when paris was like 8 months i think and he instantly connected with us. His crazy about my husband i mean my husband is his father and his angry at himself sometimes that he missed certain talks with him and bringing you into our lives im not sure he will welcome you with open arms cause i know him and he wants one man and i mean one man only in his life and thats my husband

Brad;...

Me; another thing is \*laughing\* im not an attorney im actually a dr soon to be surgeon

His face dropped. I wanted to tell him my real name and surname but i just couldnt dont know why

Me; will you say something

He got up

Him; woah this is big , fuck this is big

He was pacing up and down

Him; so you were only seeing me, i was not sharing you with your husband

I nodded my head

Him; thank you god for answering my prayers

I laughed

Him; and sanele is adopted but paris is your daughter and your husband

Me; and sanele is our son

Him; yes

I nodded my head

Him; and you a dr ?

The smile on his face was just priceless

I nodded my head again. He walked up to me, held my face and just kissed me. I laughed and returned the kiss

Him; please say it again

Me; i love you

Him; i love you so much more

## INSERT #294

We ate what brad brought, alex came doing his checks and left. Me and bradley were just talking the whole night. Next morning, i had fallen asleep on the couch. I woke up and bradley was sitting on the bed with paris feeding her while they talked.

Paris; then , the frog changed

She said that moving her hands everywhere , bradley laughed

Paris; then , ncess was with the frog

Brad'; really

She nodded her head

Paris; nele told me

I laughed

Me; morning

They both turned

Paris; morning mummy

I walked up to her and kissed her

Me; morning baby

I looked at bradley

Bradley; morning beautiful

Me; morning

We kissed

Me; il be right back

I went to the bathroom and washed up, used my finger as a toothbrush and called sanele

Sanele; mum

Me; morning baby

Sanele; morning, you both ohk?

Me; yes are you at school

Sanele; yep

Me; ohk il come pick you up ohk

Sanele; ohk im about to go to class

Me; ohk i love you

Sanele; me too

Me; oh you too what?

He laughed

Sanele; love you to mum

I laughed and hung up

Paris; nele?

Me; yes baby , you will see him when he comes here ohk

Paris; ohk

Bradley; why dont i pick him up

Me; dont think thats a good idea

Bradley; come on please

Me; you sure

Bradley; yeah

Me; ohk, il text you the school details then

Brad; ohk

He had to leave for work, he said he will send someone to bring us proper breakfast and they did, mamsebe arrived with my clothes. I went to shower and we stayed there.

## #SANELE

Josh; so how is your sister

Me; she was ohk , last night im going to see her today

Sandra; im sorry sanele \*smiling\*

Me; its ohk sandra

1 period before after school, mum called me and told me bradley would pick me up. For a second i wanted to call uncle dorian to come and pick me up cause i knew what we would be atlking about with bradley. I breathed out loud

Michael; whats up man?

Josh; yeah you seem stressed

Me; its j\* i paused\* nothing

Josh; you sure

Me; yeah dont worry about it

He looked at me

Me; im cool man

Josh; i know you man and you not cool

Me; josh

Josh; sanele we keeping secrets from each other now

Me; fine

Josh; ohk talk to me

Me; i think my mum has a bf

Josh; fuck!

Me; yeah josh and his picking me up

Josh; yho

I laughed cause his " yho" was weird

Josh; he wants to win you over son, step daddy things

Me; that i know

Josh; so tell him straight up, you dont any step daddy

Me; i could but my mum seems like he likes this guy

Josh; whats his name

Me; bradley

Josh; bradley, iv never trusted guys named bradley. Brad

Me; huh??

Josh; they are players

Me; josh they not 16 , he is not a player geez man

Josh; ohk fine, what will you do

Me; i dont know

Josh; but what if you will have another brother or sister

I looked at him

Josh;\*laughing\* im just joking, i just wanted to lighten up the mood. Just hear the guy out and tell him how you feel but step daddies are bad

Me; ...

Josh; but not all of them

I just laughed, after school josh waited for him cause he wanted to see if he does not meet the player description. I waited at the gate and he walked up to us

Me; thats him

Josh; well good lord, his a player

I looked at him

Josh; look at him dude , he could get any girl he wants

Bradley; hey boys

Me; hey

Josh; hey

Bradley; you both good

Josh; kind off

I looked at josh

Me; this is joshua, dude this is bradley

Josh; nice meeting you

Bradley; same here josh

Josh; i have to go, nelz call me man so il Talk to your mum

Me; for what?

Josh; im sure she wants to hear from her favourite

Me; \*laughing\* you so annoying dude, greet your mum

Josh; bye

Bradley; bye

I followed bradley and we got in his car

Bradley; school

Me; school is school

Bradley; hungry

Me; not really but thank you

Then there was silence

Bradley; sanele i need to talk to you

I raised my eyebrow

Bradley; im sorry about what happened to your dad , i know his death...

I cut him off

Me; i wouldnt say death, he was just presumed dead does not make him dead

He looked at me confused

Bradley; ohk im sorry about that

Me;...

He parked on the sideway and turned to look at me

Bradley; i love your mum

I raised my eyebrow

Bradley; i mean i really love her, im sure you wont understand a lot but i need you to understand that i love your mum and she makes me so happy. I did this , meeting with you not because i wanted to win your approval which i would appreciate but i did this because i need you to know im not trying to be your father, or paris father. Im trying to be the best that i can for your mother cause i love her. I can never be your father and paris but i

can act and show you something that you would need your father to show you since his not around. I also need you to know i will never hurt your mum and so many other things you see on tv about men getting involve with a woman who was previously married and has kids. I have no intentions to take your mum away from the two of you, i have no intentions to hurt you, most importantly i have no intention of trying to replace your father. I just want to be there for your mum and you guys thats all

Me;...

Bradley; will you say anything

Me; im still trying to digest this cause if i say im ohk with you coming in our lives. I feel like il be betraying my father

Bradley; completely understand

Me; but mum is happy and my dad always said make sure the two girls in our lives are happy. I dont know about paris but mum is happy

Bradley;...

Me; can we start off slow

Bradley; \*laughing\* deal

Me; ohk

He drove us to the hospital and we walked in. They had just discharge her.

## INSERT #295

# amahle

The two walked in all smiles and i was relieved to be honest

Sanele; hey mum

Me; hey baby

I kissed him

Sanele; hi pumpkin

She jumped out off the bed , jumping to sanele

Me; thank you

Bradley; \*smiling\* i want this and im serious

I smiled. I had already signed everything. We walked to the parking lot and bradley took us out for lunch, it was a fiest. When we were done, he drove us home i gave him directions since he never has been to my house ever. I opened the gate and he drove the car in. He looked at me

Bradley; this is your house

Me; \*laughing\* yeah

Bradley; fuck? What is this drug lord empire, huge walls , security tight

I faked a smile

Me; stop playing around

Sanele and paris got out walking in

Me; want to come in?

bradley; yes

I laughed. He got out off the car and we walked in.

Me; hi ma

Mamsebe; hey baby... Bradley

Bradley; \*laughing\* mam

I walked to the lounge and turned andres pictures around.  
He walked in the lounge and paris was already watching  
ncess, with sanele playing video games

Bradley; this is just \* he paused\*

Me; beautiful

Bradley; that and big geez? How the hell can you afford  
this house or your husband?

Me; mostly my husband

Bradley; what did he do?

Me; business man like yourself, worked closely with  
people

Bradley; the sec...

I cut him off

Me; want anything to drink

Bradley; no baby... Guys im leaving it was nice being with you

Sanele; thank you for the lunch

Paris; thank you

He just laughed

Me; let me walk you out.

He said bye to masebe and i walked him out. We kissed then he left. Spend the day with my two munchkins. Rest of the week was just fine Saturday i went to see andre grandmother

Her; how you makoti

Me; im good ma

We had small talks

Me; ma

Her; hmm

Me; id love for you to give me your permission to move on

He looked at me

Her; huh?

Me;...

Her; no talk makoti

Me; i dont know how to put this ma but im asking of you to please let go off me i mean in terms of being your makoti, not literally but i mean give me your permission to move on

Her;...

Me; i know this is not easy ma, and it was also not easy for me but

Her; i understand baby

Me; huh

Her; \*laughing\* you young baby, not even 35 as yet. But i need you to know that you will always be my makoti whatever happens

I smiled

Me; and im still going to come here to you ma. Thank you for everything

I got up and hugged her. She talked to the rest of the family but before she did that i talked with andre mother and pa and they did a ceremony for me. Once that was done, me and bradley were official but i still respected my house, he never came there whenever. He was getting along with my munchkins really well. Nobuhle was 6 months pregnant and i was so happy for her. The money i was making unbelievable. During december holidays, we all flew to mozambique to meet bradley family and they

were so welcoming of us. Just after i placed paris to bed i went to the kitchen to wash the dishes and bradley sister was there. Her name was elizabeth

Her; you have two beautiful kids

Me; thank you, you too

Her; \*smiling\* i never thought id see the day

Me; for?

Her; bradley and women dont mix, we were starting to think he may be into boys

I laughed

Her; but im really glad he found you, you both seem so in love

Me; we are, he means so much to me

Her; am i hearing wedding bells

I laughed

Her; i think i am

Me; \*laughing\* stopped

Bradley; what is this one saying

I turned

Me; \*laughing\* nothing

Bradley; you done with her right

Elizabeth; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; you sure you will be ohk alone

Her; go ahead

I took bradley hand and we walked out

Me; i love your family

Brad; you should hear what they say about you

Me; good

Brad; perfect

I just laughed

Brad; babe

Me; hmmp

Brad; i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

Brad; lets go in

Me; already

Brad; yeah

We walked in and my eyes grew so wide ' will you marry me?' each and every family member of his was holding an alphabet, i turned to look at bradley and he was on his knees

Brad; you may say its too soon but to me its not I love you and I know I will love you tomorrow, I love your body and soul and most importantly I love your kids. Will you please do me the honours of being my wife?

Me; \*laughing and crying\* YES YES

I laughed and just hugged him and the screams there...

## INSERT #296

I went back to South Africa with a ring. I was so happy, New Years Eve I broke the news to the guys and they were not pleased but I did not care it was my life after all but the girls were fucked up happy for me and that's all I needed. January's little guy was going to Grade 10 how times has flew. Weeks passed I couldn't get married till I finalised my divorce so I had to make an order letting the court know what was happening and my application was in the process. February just like January. March, Nobuhle and Themba welcomed their baby boy 'Siyabonga' he was beautiful. Woke up one morning oh and I passed my exams and I was a surgeon officially. Sanele and Paris were at school. I went downstairs and ate breakfast, the house was abuzz on the monitor. I went to check and I didn't recognise the guy.

Me; helo

Him; hi

Me; how can i help you?

Him; im looking for turner wife

Me; and this is?

him; im just here to make a delivery

I didnt open the gate, i just walked out,i was wondering  
how did he even pass the security

Me; helo

He turned

Him; hi

Me; so?

Him; i was told to come to tell you that Friday you should  
go to leeuwkop medium b and ask for siphamanda mkhize

Me; huh

Him; just do it

Then he walked away

Me; just like that

Him...

Me; thats really rude

He walked away either way. I went back in and this got  
me thinking. I wnet to eat out with bradley but my mind

was just not there. Friday i went to leeuwkop and sat in the visitor room

I wore sweatpants and top , took my car and drove there. wnet throug the normal security measures. Then went to sit inside this hall, it was huge, i was just fiddling. Someone pulled their chair and i lifted up my head it was an old man, i mean old man

Him; mrs turner

Me; hi

Him; thank you for coming to see me

Me;...

Him; i need you to listen to me. There are people who have been looking for you but turner hid them from you so that he will protect you and your family

Me;...

Him; we most especially i didnt know about this until a month back. This people have been looking for me from the inside with hopes that i will talk and well i didnt

Me; whats this about?

Him; i need you to sleep somewhere today

Me; what?

Him; people are coming for you today so i need you to park your things and go somewhere just for a day, dont tell anyone about this and the files you have

Me;...

Him; you didnt give themba or deon right

I shook my head was kind of shocked this guy was informed and he was in jail

Him; take those files and die for them if you have to

Me; what?

Him; what you going to do now? Go home. Pack your things, leave take your kids and il tell you when to go back

Me; this is som...

He just stood up and walked away

Me; whats is this \*shouting\*

He didnt even respond me but i was not about to put my family in danger packed what i could, left with mamsebe picked up sanele and paris and went to sleep at andre mother place, we made up a story and she believed it. After a week the guy called me letting me know everything was fine.

As time passed by me and bradley fell for each other even more. April just like any other month and i never heard from that guy again. I was confused but i was not about to get involve in this. Everyone had suddenly become distant and they didnt act the same especially stephen. He seemed shook all the time i didnt know what was up with him. Was woken up by sanele and mamsebe singing for me on my birthday then we went to paris room ro sing for her, she was singing for herself , jumping she was soo happy and i was working, and knocking off at 7 but i was going to make it up to her on a Saturday , we prepared for our day school and work

07;00

Me; guys lets go now

We all rushed to the car, i dropped them all off and headed to work. Nobuhle was not back as yet from maternity leave. I was in my office, when there was a knock

Me; come in

The door opened and the mr himself was carrying red roses, and a cake. He began singing and i just laughed

Bradley; happy birthday baby

Me; thank you baby

We kissed, he gave me my gifts. He took me out for lunch and spoiled me some more.

Bradley; tomorrow right

Me; yes dont be late

Bradley; i wont , il call you to wish the princess a happy birthday

Me; \*laughing\* and sing

Bradley; how can i forget

I laughed, we kissed and said goodbye. 19;30 drove back hom. Arrived to 9 parked the car and walked in.

Me; im so ti... \* i paused\*

INSERT #297

#ANDRE

I gave sanele paris and stood up. She looked like she was seeing a ghost, i was disgusted by her but i had to keep my cool. I walked up to her but she stepped back. I stood where i was, she was carrying flowers she just looked at me as if i was a ghost

Me; happy birthday

The closer i walked to her, is the more she stepped back. She finally hit the kitchen wall and raised her hand up. I stood where i was and tears just came out, i tried going closer to her but she just closed her eyes with her hand up signalling me to stay where i was

Me; i need to explain some things to you

She wiped her tears

Her; ma!... Ma

She said that so soft, mamsebe appeared from behind me

Her; please take sanele and paris bag including yours

Mamsebe; huh???

Her; ma just do it

Me; you leaving

Her; sanele take paris in my car now

Sanele; but mum dad is here

Me; i said now

I turned to look at sanele and he picked up paris and walked up to her mum. I shook his head when he passed me and stood by amahle, mamsebe came down with her bags

Me; i just need you to give me and hour to talk to you

She gave mamsebe her car keys and she picked up paris.  
She stood behind while the two walkked out.

Me; mami i...

She walked out, i walked behind her but she quickly turned, she looked at me and walked out

Guy; should we stop her

Me; no

I just covered my face

#AMAHLE

I couldnt think, i didnt know what to say or do. I was just shaking and crying no matter many times i wiped my tears they still came down

Me; we going to bradley, not a word to him ohk

\*Silence\*. I looked at sanele in the mirror

Sanele; but mum we havent seen dad in years and his finally here and you want us to go to bradley

Me; watch your tone

Sanele;...

Me; i mean it not a word to bradley

He just looked outside the window, i looked at paris and she was also looking at me probably confused. Mamsebe

was looking outside of the window the whole time. I called bradley telling him we outside and he let us in. He bought a bigger place , bigger than his flat. And we walked in with our bags

Bradley; whats going on

Me; can we sleep here just for today

Bradley; of course babe whats wrong

Me; just there was a burglary and i didnt feel safe anymore

Bradley; at your house?

He looked confused. I nodded my head

Bradley; how did they even get in there? Are you ohk

Me; yes

He helped us in and made something to eat. I couldnt even eat. Around 10 we went to bed. I stood next to the other bed side and my mind just got lost somewhere, i just felt bradley hold my hands. I snapped out off it

Bradley; you shaking

I removed his hand from mine and got inside the sheets

Bradley; babe you scaring me, what really going on

Me; nothing im really tired

Bradley; ohk

He cuddled me but i couldnt sleep around 3 am bradley was fast asleep. I got up and went outside and cried my eyes out. Next morning i cancelled the lunch thing cause i was in no state to fake smile or laugh. I drove us home all night and my hands on the steering wheel were just shaking.

INSERT #298

#ANDRE

A LOT OF THINGS HAVe changed and i mean a lot of things have changed. I found out my own best friend sold me out. In a way i was expecting such from dorian and not themba but again blood is thicker than water. I was tortured and they did things to me that fucked up my mind, i got away after 2 years of torture and so close to my death and found myself in nigeria, how i dont know. I was helped by an old man with his wife who was a nurse i couldnt talk, eat, walk i lost so much blood, i still have some scars from the whole thing, i was shot and almost killed during my time there i dont know what happened, i just woke up one morning in a care centre, things attached to me. Few minutes of waking up ugo walked in. I dont know even know what happened most of the time. When i asked him about it apparently one off the guys recognised me from where i dont know, he told ugo about

it but he didnt believe him until he sent him a picture of me in my death bed. Nigeria was his hometown , he came down as soon as possible with alex. He told me he thought i was dead and he told amahle that. I healed in there after few months. When i was out and about, i settled in nigeria, with no passport and no id but ugo got that for me. I found out everything , talked with people and a whole lot of shit. We finally flew to south africa again but everything was on the low, i found out the nigga had a son. February i met up with my the guys, stephen, morrison, williams, jake everyone off them and well they were taken back. They told me amahle was doing a great job and i was proud off her. I went over every guy on my warehouse to see who was fucking over me and to my surprise dorian was not one off them including deon and jack and a few more guys. I met someone in that whole process ' michaela l' Alex told me amahle was seeing the nigga. Everything had changed now, i had a new team, and a new partner

I went out off the shower, dressed up and went to my place. The security let me in and i drove there, opened the gate and drove the car in. Her car was on the driveway, i went out and walked in. Was met by mamsebe she got sturtled

Me; sorry to scare you ma

She just nodded her head

Me; where is she

Mamsebe; bathing

Me; ohk

I walked to our bedroom and entered. Walked to the bathroom and the water was running. I opened the shower door and he just freaked out trying to cover herself up. I grabbed a towel and threw it to her. She looked at me

Me; we need to talk now

I walked out and waited for her. I was pissed and angry that my wife was fucking the nigga that kept me away from her. She walked out, i got up and locked the door and looked at her

Her; just go

Me; \*laughing\* just go

Her; i dont want you near me or my kids. I need you to leave me and my kids alone, pack your bags and go back wherever you were this whole time

Me; fuck you!

Her; what?

Me; you just couldnt wait to move on didnt you

Her; ...

Me; do you even know the shit i have been through, the shit i did to protect you and you go open your legs for some nigga

Her; \*shouting\* get out!

Me; this is my fucken house

Her; i did not send you to go there, you promised me you will come back

Me; where the fuck am i right now, am i not with you

Her; after how long andre, after how long? I waited for you, i waited

Me; then you fucken didnt wait long enough did you? The nigga that you sleeping with let me enlighten you is another lubanzi, you never fucken learn. You my fucken wife, no one will want to be with you knowing you turner wife, no one will look at you even twice but one guy says some sweet things and they sweep you off your feet and you ready to open your legs

Her; \*shouting\* Get out!

Me; fuck you!!! And get the fuck out off my house

Her; you should have died, bradley is more of a man than you. You disgust me you piece of shit

I hit her, she turned to look at me and she jumped to me and we fought, she threw things at me, i ducked and went

for her. My hand was around her neck, she couldnt breath and i was pinning her to the ground

Me; get the fuck out and leave my kids behind

I got off from her, walked out off the bedroom and mamsebe was standing at the end of the stairs, i looked at her and she didnt remove her eyes from me. I passed her and went to make myself something to eat, my baby called me

Me; lala

Her; im at the security complex, they not letting me in

Me; give the security the phone

She did , i talked with the nigga and after a few minutes, she called me letting me know she was at the gate. I walked out and met her on the drivethru, she went out off the car

Me; you look beautiful

Michaela; thank you

I kissed her and she returned the kiss with a hug

Me; ignore the drama ohk

Michaela; what?

me; just stand by me

Michaela; ohk

We walked in and after an hour or so. Amahle came through the door with suitcases, michaela was sitting on the kitchen counter and i was in between her legs, she looked at her and me

Me; you done packing your shit?

She left the suitcases there and turned. I followed her and she walked to paris room. It was an empty room

Me; i told you, you leaving my kids

Her;...

She pulled the suitcases out off the room

Her; ma you done?

Mamsebe walked out off sanele room with his suitcases

Me; dont fuck with me wena

Her; \*shouting\* i raised them alone, alone while you were playing whoever you were playing toying with our lives. Im not leaving this house without them and im sure you ready to fuck your bitch...

She went down

Mamsebe; haybo

She ran to her, i kneeled in front off her

Me; my kids are not going anywhere. Get the fuck out now before i drag you out off here

Her; fuck you

I grabbed her leg and she kicked and screamed, mamsebe begged me to stop, i held her by her top

Me; i swear to god, il push you down these stairs...

Mamsebe; andre please, shes the mother of your kids

Me; leave now

She spit on my face, i tripped her on the ground and pulled her by her hair down the steps, mamsebe followed us from behind. Hitting me from the behind begging me to stop. I passed the kitchen and dragged her outside

Me; \*shouting\* GET THE FUCK OFF MY YARD AND LEAVE THE SHIT I BOUGHT YOU AND I SWEAR TO GOD IF I GO PICK THE TWO UP AND THEY NOT THERE YOU GOING TO REGRET IT

Mamsebe helped her up and they walked to her benz and mamsebe drove it and they left. I walked back in

Michaela; and that

Me; crazy bitch, now come here

She laughed and walked to me. I kissed her and picked her up, i walked us to the couch and made love to her there

## INSERT #299

I woke up few hours later, the time was to 1. michaela was still sleeping. I woke her up

Me; i have to go and fetch my kids

Michaela; ohk

Me; make yourself at home ohk

Michaela; \*smiling\* ohk

I grabbed my pants and top, took my car keys. I knew where paris attended school. I started with her first, i walked in

Woman; good afternoon sir

Me; hi im here for paris adams

Woman; and who may you be?

Me; her father

Woman; her father?

me; yes, iv been away for a while and i came back trying to make it up for all the time i missed out

Woman; i understand but i will have to call mrs adams

I gave her my id

Me; i am mr adams

Woman; i understand but i still have to make sure  
She went away and after a while came back with paris  
Woman; thank you for understand , she confirmed it  
Me; its ohk

I picked her up and we walked to my car, she seemed scared and was quiet the whole time. We waited for sanele school to come out. I turned to look at her

Me; hey baby

Paris;...

Me; you hungry

Paris;...

I just turned back again and after a few minutes, sanele walked out, he didnt see me so i just walked up to him and he was happy. We got in and we had small talks, paris started talking with sanele there but the moment i would look at her , she would just keep quiet. We got home and walked in

Sanele; where is mum?

Paris; mummy

Me; she is not here

Sanele; wh...

Michaela; oh hey

She walked up to me and stood next to me  
Michaela; and you must be sanele and paris  
Them;...

Me; you guys hungry?

Sanele; where is mum?

Michaela; how about i make us burgers?

Sanele; dad! Where is Mum... I think we both want mum

Me; she left?

Sanele; left? Where to

Paris; nele , i want mummy

Sanele; wait pumpkin

Me; she left ohk its just us now

Sanele; she left us

Me; yes, she wanted to start off fresh wit...

Sanele; she left with bradley

I nodded my head. He just turned and walked to his bedroom

Paris; \*crying\* nele

I picked her up and she just screamed. I tried calming her down, but your kid not knowing you is the worst. She eventually fell asleep. I scratched my head

Michaela; will be ohk

Me; i hope so, i have to find someone who will help us around here cause we wont do this alone. I walked up to my bedroom and laid on the bed, michaela sat on top off me

Me; im really tired

Michaela; ohk , you hungry?

Me; no

She got off me. I zoned off and woke up around 3 am. I walked downstairs to get water and the kitchen lights were on. I peaked and paris was sitting on the counter while sanele was feeding her. It smelled really nice in there

Paris; \* laughing\* then ncess

Sanele; \*laughing\* yes pumpkin then he changed and was with princess

She clapped her hands

Sanele; thank you, thank you, thank you very much

They both laughed

Sanele; swallow pumpkin

I walked in, they both turned to the door, paris mouth was still full of food.

Me; why didnt you wake me up?

Sanele;...

I sat next to them.

Me; ohk lets talk what you want to know

Sanele; where were you?

Me; i had to go in order to protect you all, im sorry i left without a proper goodbye and i missed a lot with you two but i need you to know that i love you guys more than anything and you the reason why i had to come back

Sanele; what about mum

Me;...

Sanele; we prayed together for you to come back, they took her away and we could not see her

Me; what?

Sanele; yes but uncle dorian never told us why, we stayed with grandmother for months

Me; where was your mum?

He raised his shoulders

Sanele; i dont know

Me; all of that does not matter anymore, its just us 3 now

Sanele; why not 4 with mum

Me; i told you with your mum

Sanele;...

Me; and i need you to give michaela chance ohk  
Sanele; ...

Me; boy please

Sanele; ohk

Me; and the princess over here

Sanele; will both try

Me; thank you guys, what did you make

Sanele; mash and chicken with gravy

Me; you can cook now

Sanele; mum is something else

We talked and we laughed, paris ended up telling me a story and we all just laughed about it from now on, i was all about protetcting this. We went to bed around 5 am luckily it was a Friday so they had no school.

Next morning got up and went downstairs and they were eating

Me; morning guys

Them; morning

Went to the kitchen and kissed her only for the door to fly open, i slowly turned and it was my mum, grandmother, my uncle and dorian. I just closed my eyes

## INSERT #300

They came in happy, shouting, insulting me and a whole lot of shit but the happiness button quickly turned off. My grandmother was like michaela was leaving now but i stood my ground, they kept blabbing about amahle and my kids. Dorian was quiet the whole time, i looked at him and he looked away. Words were thrown all over the room about how amahle was my wife and shit when i told them about her moving on they told me they gave her the permission and they insisted they were taking the kids if michaela was not leaving. Thats when i got pissed, i told them they had crossed the line and they should stay in their side of the line , when that was said they all left but my mum left with sanele and paris, i told her if amahle ever even takes them she was never to hear from me again. Later that day, dressed up clean and went to themba place, i let myself in and knocked and the door opened and it was nobuhle carrying a baby. She stepped back, shocked

Me; hey stranger \*smiling\*

Nobuhle; andre oh my

She hugged me

I returned the hug

Me; how are you ?

Nobuhle; no , no how are you

We got in

Nobuhle; im fine , oh my god you look great, why didnt amahle tell us this

Me; \*laughing\* where is your man

Nobuhle; his at work

Me; il wait for him

Nobuhle; of course, we all thought you were...

Me; i also thought i was but here i am

She laughed

Me; and who is this

Nobuhle; well this is siyabonga

She handed me him and i gently picked her up

Me; my boy is a father

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* yeah

Me; congratulati...

Before i could finish the word, the door opened

Themba; we have to g....

He froze at the door, i was carrying his son. He moved his eyes to nobuhle

Nobuhle; \*laughing\* i was just as shocked as you

I got up

Me; brother from another mother \*smiling\*

Themba; dre...

Me; i could give you a hug but, im carrying your life here

Nobuhle; let me take him

Me; no lala, his ohk and i dont want to wake him

Nobuhle; \*smiling\* ohk let me leave you too, im sure you have a lot to talk about, you sure dre

Me; his fine

She walked away

Themba; you.. You

Me; im alive , yes im alive

Themba; there are some things that i need to explain to you

Me; you have a beautiful son

Themba;....

Me; you going to see his first steps, first teeth, first word all the first man. How lucky are you?

Themba; im sorry

Me; for?

Themba; can you please give nobuhle the kid and we talk  
dre

Me; \*laughing\* you know im no longer with amahle, my  
daughter does not know me and my son i missed out alot  
in his life

Themba;...

Me; and you know why?

Themba;...

Me; \*laughing\* cause of money! Yeah i said it money  
some shit that is, isnt it

I placed the baby on the couch

Me; you try to run, im going to find you then im going to  
kill your wife, your son in front of you then kill you. I dont  
like chasing people around so do me a favour and make  
yourself available should i need you

I passed him and left. I went to the warehouse and the  
guys went crazy, i told others to get the fuck out off my  
place and called my new team in.

Jack; but themba and me, were in charge of cars

Me; not anymore

Deon; you ohk man? Mbali will go crazy im so glad to  
have you back

Me; its good to be back

I talked with deon and told him everything, he failed to believe it but the truth is fucked up at times. After everything i left, i needed everything that amahle had, i needed the money she had, the files she had back but i did not know where to find her.

## INSERT #301

After a week or so on a Saturday i was with my kids and michaela was out and about. I was in the shower, got out wore sweat pants and top and went downstairs only to find this bitch in my house. She was carrying paris while sanele was standing next to her

Amahle; why did you lie to them?

Me;...

Amahle; tell him the truth

Me; boy take your sister and go up your room

Amahle; im not leaving without my kids

Me; sanele

Sanele; mum

She gave him paris and they walked up the stairs, i waited till i heard the door closed. I turned to face her and walked up to her

Me; you trying to fuck with me ne

Amahle; andre i dont want anything from you, i just want my kids. Take all your money, your cars everything i just want my kids thats all give me my kids and you dont have to see me ever again. You can live with your girl without hell from me i just want my kids

Me; get the fuck out

She tried passing me to go upstairs, i grabbed her hand, she strating hitting me with the other hand , i took a few steps back until i held her hands, and pinned her to the floor.

Amahle; \*shouting\* after everything i did for you, after all the sacrifices i took for you, and this is how you thank me by bringing a hoe into my house. While i was hoping for your return, you were fucking around fuck you

Me; i was the one that was fucking around? Last time i checked, you the one who is wearing another mans ring, a man that almost killed me

Amahle; \*shouting\* stop it ohk, eveyrthing is always about you. Turner this, turner that. He doesnt even know who i am

Me; \*shouting back \* you fucken stupid

Amahle; get off me

sHe tried pushing me off

Me; im going to tell you this again, get the fuck out off my house and never come back here again

Amahle; \*crying\* andre please

Me; get the fuck out

I got off from her, she stood up and looked at me

Me; leave

She walked out...

After 2 weeks or so, child services came all in for me with her. I looked at her

Me; you going to regret this

Amahle...

Man; take your kids mam

She started packing their clothes

Me; seems like you have forgotten who i am

She walked up to me and whispered on my ear

Amahle; i know every shit about you, all the killings, all the jobs, where your money is and which cops are not on your payroll. I could take you down just like that

She snapped her fingers

Amahlre; you want to play dirty, try me papi. You have taught me a lot about this business and i will use that against you, you will lose every client, money and a supplier. Ask dom about me seems like you dont know who i am now, I don't mind taking turner on since you left andre wherever you were behind, il be brave enough too, to leave amahle elsewhere and you deal with turner wife. Don't forget You gave me this throne

She stepped back and looked at me

Amahle; i would be worried if i were you Dont try me andre

I laughed, not because it was a funny situation but because she was the only person that could take me down just like that \*snapping finger\* and hiding the fear was better than actually showing it. She went back and finished off packing then they left. I was panicking i decided to call dom after the second time around

Dom; who the fuck is this

Me; dom, its turner

Dom; is this a joke, its 2 am this side. I need my rest

Me; dom shit happened and im back now

Dom; for real

Me; yeah

Dom; where is the mrs

I closed my eyes

Me; i need to talk to you about some things

Dom; no no no turner, you need to speak to the mrs first  
the has been some changes

Me; dominic

Dom; talk at a good time

Then he hung up.

Me; fuck , fuck fuck man \*screaming\*

The door opened and it was michaela

Her; baby you ohk

Me; \*shouting\* fuck no

Her; ohk let me give you time

Then she walked out.

After few days got a call from one off my boys letting me know off amahle whereabouts, i went there and he was having lunch with the gusy i didnt even know about the

whole setup. They all looked at me and I tutnered to amahle, she smirked and took a sip off her drink

Amahle; gentleman thats my cue to leave

She grabbed her purse, got up

Stephen; thank you

Amahle; pleasure is all mine

She walked passed me and I held her arm

Amahle; dont embarrass yourself

I walked out with her

Amahle; no lets make a deal, I give you your files and you let me keep my babies and I even let the guys work with you again

Me; who you think you are

Amahle; the crime lords wife more specifically turner wife. You should be proud

I pinned her to car

Amahle; youv gotten so weak that the only time you feel you have power over me is by hitting me and weird how i can't hit you but I have way more power than you

Me: I'm going to kill you

Amagle: we both know you a lot of things but killing me would mean killing half off yourself

Me: why you doing this? I worked hard for what I have  
Amahle: we worked hard for this, your business is were it  
is because of me. I lost you because of this job which  
means we in this together with this business. I would  
never think of doing such ever but you made me like this

Me:...

Amahle,: you not andre

She tried touching me

Me: don't fucken touch me

Amahle: think about what I said, files for my kids

INSERT

#302

Me; im going to get my files and my kids

She got in the car and drove off. I went back to the  
restaurant and they were still seating there. I grabbed a  
chair

Me; so this is were it has got to

Them

Me; this is my business

Stephen; it hasnt been yours for years now

Me; fuck that! This is my baby and whatever happens it will pass through me. I dont need any one off you talking to her or having meeting with her. Im back and i mean im back for good, if you want to follow her, then do so but not with my business

Morrison; b...

Me; fuck all off yourll

I pushed my chair back and walked out, got in my car, and called one of the guys

Snethemba; boza

Me; sure boy

Snethemba; ugrand

Me; sure, listen i need you to do something for me

Snethemba; ohk whats up

Me; i need you to look for a guy. Il sms you the details

Snethemba; ohk when do you need this

Me; soon as possible. I need him, dont do anything to him. I just need you to bring him to me

Snethemba; ohk il wait for the sms

Me; ohk

I drove back home. Only to see dorian car parked outside,  
i opened the gate and drove in. He followed me, i went  
out and stood by my door. He got out off the car

Me; i thought you would never welcome me back

Dorian;....

Me; whats up , cheer up

Said that hitting his arm

Dorian; whats going on andre

Me; with?

I said that walking in the house

Dorian; themba? You? Amahle? The kids

Me; nothing for you to worry about, how have you been

Dorian; do you know amahle was i....

Michaela; didnt know you were back

Me; i just got back

I wrapped my hand around her neck and pulled her into a  
kiss

Dorian; are you fucken kidding?

me; baby this is my older brother dorian, dorian michaela

Dorian; you brought a bitch in amahle house

Michaela; what?

Me; watch it

Dorian; fuck that, you sleeping with her on the same bed you slept with amahle. Are you sick in your head

Me; i thought we were going to have a brother moment but you just stepping out off line...

He cut me off

Dorian; stepping out off line. Look at you, you brought a bitch in amahle house. \*shouting\* fuck! you an idiot. I wonder what your kids think off you. Sanele is not 3 like paris that he wont see whats going on. He sees everything and how you treating his mum, and when he wants nothing to do with you blame yourself for that shit.

Me; get out

Dorian; \*shouting\* amahle stood by your bullshit, shit that many women would not stand for . And this bitch

Michaela; andre...

Dorian; this bitch wont stand for half of the shit , you put amahle through. When shit get real, she will pack her bags and go. I guess it is true, one man trash is another mans treasure

He turned and walked away but quickly turned

Dorian; she loves you so much , that life without you to her was no life at all. She lived in a bubble, with you next to her for months and all that pain and the man she could

not live without, showed her he can live without her sad story, i feel so sorry for you. You never deserved her from the first time, you laid your eyes on her

Michaela; get out

Dorian; il shut that mouth off yours quick

He looked at me and walked out

Michaels; baby

Me; i need some air

I took my car keys and went for air got back

Michaela; i THOUGHT you were going to pick up the kids

Me; amahle took them

Michaela; how can you let her take your kids

Me; i can handle her, dont worry yourself about her

Michaela; it seems like she will bring a lot of drama in our lives

Me; i said dont worry about it il handle it

Michaela; ohk no need to be angry with me

Me; im not angry baby, im just frustrated

Michaela; ohk want to go shower

Me; ohk

She held my hand and we walked to the bathroom. After the shower we took it to bed, i was woken up my phone ringing

Me; helo

Guy; bozza, we have him

Me; what?

Guy; yeah his roaming around the streets of jozi as if his from here

Me; where are you?

Guy; warehouse

Me; im coming give me an hour

Guy; ohk

I got to the warehouse and they had tied him to the chair, he was unconscious. I took a chair and sat opposite him. They poured water over him and he quickly lifted up his head. I smiled and he looked at me

Me; thought i was dead

Him;...

Me; it feels good being in the position you were in , you know and daddy aint here to save you

Him;...

Me; but i will allow someone to come and save you  
Him;...

Me; your girlfriend

His eyes grew wide

Me; or fiance which was a good strategy after all.  
Engaging i too would not think off that

Him;....

Me; so how did you find her

Him; find who?

Me; dont play games with me man, you and daddy  
wanted my wife so bad. I remember the beating as if it  
was yesterday and your words ' who is she?' 'where is  
she?'. I rememeber i did not tell you shit , so how did you  
know

Him; what are you talking about

Me; my wife

Him; \*laughing\* your wife? What about your wife

Me; how did you find her, or themba told you

Him; we didnt find her

Me; what game you playing

Him; no one talked mr turner, we found her name only '  
amahle ' is it

Me;...

Him; how many amahle are in joburg

Me; i know ohk, stop fucking with me

Him; know what? What you on about? You want to kill me, kill me stop fucking with me talking in riddles its draining

Me; your fiancee

Him; \*straight face\* you touch her and i swear to god im going to kill you

I laughed. I decided to see if he was not fucking with me

Me; one would think jozi is big isnt it, but it isnt? So who should i start with first sanele or paris

Him; what the fuck do you know

Me; \*laughing\* i know i gave paris that name, i know i wont hurt your girlfriends two kids wanna know why?

Him;...

Me; \*laughing\* because they are my kids SURPRISE

Him; what?

me; \*laughing\* stop ohk with the act, we both know you got with her cause off me

Him; what the fuck are you talking about?

Me; amahle

Him; amahle? Where the fuck do i fit in with your wife

Me; what?

Him; \*laughing\* you fucken crazy man

Me; who is your girlfriend

Him; who the fuck is my girlfriend aint your business

I punched him

Me; who is she?

He laughed

Him; you pathetic

I hit him a few times until i got ahold of his phone. I went through it and the were pictures of amahle and him. I showed him the pictures

Me; this is my wife

I said that swiping through the pictures

Him; that is not your wife, isnt your wife amahle?

Me; \*laughing\* she was smart for once, not smart enough though

Him;...

Me; she gave you the wrong name her real name amahle adams, turner wife , has two kids paris and sanele, more specifically dr adams

He was taken back

Me; \*laughing\* ohhh shit , she fucken lied to you and you both played yourselves

Him; ...

Me; you going to regret every shit you ever did...

## INSERT #303

Was woken up by a phone call i checked the caller id and it was brad, i just ignored it they didnt stop. I finally answered but kept quiet

Guy; so you used a fake name with your bf smart  
I got up

Me; andre

Andre; \*laughing\* you learned something this time

Me; where is bradley?

Andre; your fiancee right hmmm

Me; \*shouting\* where is he?

Andre; you will come to the warehouse right now

Me; w...

He hung up, i wore sweatpants and top.told mamsebe i was leaving , took my car and drove to andre warehouse

they let me in and he walked to my car covered in blood, i got out off the car. He clapped his hands

Andre; welcome enhle boysens \*laughing\*

Me; you pathetic

Andre; i would be nice if i were you

Me; where is he?

He moved away, i passed him and

from the door the were traces off blood i mean i lifted up my head and he was tied on a chair, i dropped my bag and rushed to him, he was covered in blood, he was half naked he had only his boxes in. The placed smelled so bad. I felt his pulse and it was slowing down, i untied him and laid him on the floor, i couldnt even stand up. I crawled to my bag and grabbed it and went back to him. They were just looking at me, i took everything out and shot him with two injections. His entire body was wounded.

Me; he needs a hospital

Andre; no sweety

He knelt on the other side and took out his gun pointing it to brad head, he pulled the slide back

Andre; now i want every file that you have, every bank card you have. Everything off mine i want and i want my kids as well you can decide not to give it to me and i just

pull the trigger and next morning the police will raid your house for the murder of this guy, remember cops on my payroll i just give them 30 and all the evidence points to you, you face probably 25 years but after 2 you will be dead. Cause his father will send people to kill you inside

Me; why you doing this?

Andre; whats your choice

Me; you have changed? And not for the best, you a duplicate of an animal

Andre; you fucken changed me now whats your choice

Me; il bring your files today

Andre; and my kids

Me; i cant live without my kids

Andre; 25 years in a womens correctional service, imagine what they will do to that pretty face and losing your license hmmm ready to give it all up

Me; andre please

Andre; make up your mind amahle

Me; can you just for a second think about me and you? Forget bradley, forget about everything. Just think about me and you were we came from..

I was cut off by a loud bang and scream, i slowly opened my eyes and he had shot him on the leg. I lifted up my head, he pointed the gun to my forehead

Andre; make up your mind. His going to die soon

He said that emphasizing every word

Me; il drop them off today

He stood up and walked away. He didnt even bother helping me getting bradley to the car i had to drag him with all the blood. I pulled him in my car and quickly drove to the hospital on our way there, he began gasping through the mouth and nose. We got to the hospital and by that time he had stopped breathing

The dr there just looked at me

Me; \*shouting\* defibrillate him

Dr; its t...

Me; now

They went away with him and i was just pacing up and down, i have never met bradley father before. I took bradley phone from my pocket and found his numbers

Guy; bradley its 6 am

Me; uhmmm mr peterson

Guy; hi who is this

Me; am... Enhle

Guy; the famous enhle

Me;...

Guy; whats wrong

Me; there has been an accident and bradley is in hospital.

Its really lookin...

Guy; where are you

I told him, i was just fiddling with everything after few minutes 3 guys walked in an old man and other two guys

Old guy; enhle

I looked at him

Him; \*smiling\* bradley father

Me; oh uhm hi

Him; how is he?

Me; he stopped breathing then i told them to defibrillate him, i have heard nothing so far

Him; what happened?

I just looked on the floor

Him; ohk, its ohk do you want anything

I shook my head. I sat down again after few hours or so. The dr walked out and told us his heart started beating after they defibrillate him but he was in a critical condition hence his entire body was wounded and had multiple

stabs and gun shot wounds. I wanted to stay but i think bradley father knew who was behind all of that, he sent me home and i went to gather andre things. All the files everything. Sanele and amahle had woken up already

Me; guys we need to talk

Sanele; whats going on

Me; come sit down baby

He sat down, paris was on my lap

Me; you have to go and stay with your dad for a while

Sanele; why do we keep on coming here then leaving and back again its exhausting mum

Me; i know baby its just your dad misses you guys so much so he wants to spend time with you

Sanele; what about you

Me; me and him we \* i paused\* dont worry about me, your bags are already packed, will leave at 2

Sanele; you will come see us

Me; yes baby every chance i get

Sanele; ohk i love you mum

Me; i love you too sweetie

Paris; love you mum

Me; love you baby

I kissed them both. Around 2 we left, got to the house and they walked in with their bags. I followed behind them and was met by this bitch wearing andre shirt. In my kitchen, i looked at her and followed the two

Girl; you cant just walk in here

Me; say that again and let me show you what i can do

Andre; do you have my shit

I turned to the door

I took them out off my bag and threw them on the floor

Andre; pick them up

Me; tell your bitch to pick them up

As i was about to pass him, he held my arm and pulled me back to look at him

Andre; i said pick them up

Me; no

As he was about to hit me , i called for sanele and paris they showed up

Me; do it, infront of them

He looked at me

Me; you were going to do it in front of her right, do it in front of them

Andre; leave

He let go off my arm

Paris; mummy

Me; come here baby

I took her and walked out and made sure i stepped on those papers. They both walked me out, kissed them and had to leave.

Months passed and i could only see paris and sanele at school. Bradley got better and well we never spoke he was mad on his side and so was i. I was so stressed and angry i did not know what to dow ith myself, i was staying at an apartment that i had recently started renting with mamsebe. One morning got a call from bradley asking to meet with me so i did.

Bradley; why didnt you tell me?

Me;...

Bradley; you lied about everything , your name is not even enhle

Me; \*shouting\* it seems like i helped myself by lying, what would have happened if you knew i was amahle

Bradley; ....

Me; seems like you are the liar here, while i was sleeping with you , you were killing my husband

Bradley; im sor...

Me; dont touch me , dont come near me i want nothing from you, you sick bastard

Bradley; can you listen to me

I looked at him

Bradley; this may have been a joke to you but to me it wasnt. I fell deep inlove with you and you know i fell inlove with you not turner wife, i was not aware of that and i wish it was not true but despite everything i still fell in love with you, im still inlove with you and when i heard him say, you were his wife and i realised i was looking at the love of my life, who was someone else love of their life it cut deep. if i knew you were his wife id probably would have killed him so that i would be with you and i regret not killing him cause by not killing him, i lost the one woman i actually fell in love with. Whatever that will happen i need you to know that i love you and il probably die loving you. Im sorry for the pain iv caused you without even realising it enh... I mean amahle i really am

He got up, held my face and kissed me

Me; this was also real for me ohk

Bradley; so whats going to happen now?

Me; i dont know

Bradley; i dont need that answer right now

Me; i just cant be with you im sorry

Bradley; ....

Me; despite everything i still love you

Bradley; \*smiling\* me too and not because you turner wife

Me; ohk

Bradley; i know some people this side who can help you with your kids

Me; his a powerful man

Bradley; i know that and here in joburg im powerless

Me;...

Bradley; but i meant what i said and i understand you dont want to be with me but let me help you

Me; no thank you, il do this on my own thank you for everything

I said that removing the ring and placing it on the table

Me; and im sorry to you and your family

Bradley; im sorry things had to end like this

Me; so where you going

Bradley; i hate being powerless so im going back home

Me; goodluck

Bradley; you too

He got up and kissed me. It felt like a goodbye kiss and we both knew it was

Bradley; i still love you

I smiled

He kissed me again then walked out

#### INSERT #304

I was getting along with my kids really well, my grandmother asked to see me and my kids. So we drove to her place. I parked outside and we walked in only to be welcomed by a full house, i walked to the lounge and paris scream filled the room

Paris; \*screaming\* mummy

She ran to her, and she got up and picked her up. Then she kissed sanele. I looked at my grandmother, i was pissed

Grandmother; il take those eyes of your out since you dont know how to look at me , you must never look at me like that boy

Me; whats going ?

Grandmother; whats going on? Hehhh you have the nerve boy... Sanele boy go with your sister outside

Grandmother; you talking rubbish your shit. You take those kids away from their mother after she raised them alone when you were not there and you want to say whats going on? You shitting on me

Me;...

Grandmother; give her , her kids

Me; i dont have time for this

I turned

Grandmother; i swear on your father grave, you walk out here i will kill you myself ayanda

I turned back and sat down

Grandmother; whats wrong with you? Look at yourself

My mum; andre

Me;...

My uncle; boy, whats this we hear from umakoti, you brought a woman into her home

Grandmother; and you must know ke bhuti, that this woman is going back to that house. Its her house

Me; wena you shitting with me ne

Amahle;....

My grandmother threw the remote at me, it hit me. I looked at her

Grandmother; voestek!!

My mum; why you behaving like this? You were gone for so long , you come back and we suppose to be happy but no

Amahle; ma i dont want anything from andre, i just want my kids

Grandmother; no , he is taking advantage. That house is your home and you going back there

Me; i have no say

Grandmother; shut that mouth boy

Me;...

Grandmother; lets go, if you dare wena rubbish take her out off her own home. You will know who i am

They all got up , i just sat down

Me; so you telling me , she is moving back into my house by force

Grandmother; yho \*shouting\* sonti give me the broom

Me; you going to hit me now

Grandmotherl \*shouting\* sonti man

She gave her the broom, she pointed it to me

Grandmother; say shit out off that mouth

Me;....

Grandmother; say it

Me;...

Grandmother; good lets go

Well amahle moved back in with us , now it was me, michaela, and the two.

Everyday for the whole month me and amahle fought i dont mean verbally i mean physically. We would literally fight, me on top off her and vice versa punches it was the worst thing ever. One weekend she left to go to cape town, she left with the kids using his grandfather name

## #AMAHLE

We arrived in cape town, i picked up my rental car my entire body was aching and i had blue eye that i hid with make up. We got home parked my car and pa met us by the gate. After stopping the car i rushed to him and hugged him, followed by sanele and paris. We walked in, i made food for us while the two were talking with pa. Later that day they were so tired from the trip so they fell asleep

Pa; baby are you ohk?

I turned to look at him

Me; yes pa

Pa; how is andre

Me;...

Pa; you must be glad his back, the both off you

Me; i...

He cut me off

Pa; he has never given up on you, hasnt he? Thats how a marriage should be. I see you with nobody but him cause i knwo you will be safe and he would never hurt you

A tear escaped my eyes but i quickly wiped it away

Pa; i need to see him before i go

Me; go where

Pa; i dont know

I looked at him

Pa; tell him i want to see him ohk

Me; i will pa how you been?

pa; when will you and andre have other kids

Me; pa

Pa; \*laughing\* you both still young and you always said you wanted a big family

Me; i have to tell you something

Pa; what?

He looked so happy whenever he talked about andre, and bursting that bubble even though thats what i came here for i just couldnt

Me; i love you

Pa; smiling\* i love you too baby

## INSERT #305

Sunday they came back. Monday woke up and i was meeting themba. He was already waiting for me

Me; big man

Themba;....

Me; come on be nice

Themba;...

Me; ohk if you want to be like that

Themba; i did...

Me; i need something to drink

I ordered, it arrived and took a sip  
Themba; they were threatening nobuhle family ohk  
Me;...

Themba; i just had to deliver you. Nobuhle would have left me should something have happened to her family  
Me; i need something strong

I ordered another drink

Themba; dre you have to believe me man

Me; hows your son?

Themba;...

Me; so nobody knows this but im going to be a father again, michaela is pregnant

Themba; what? Who is michaela

Me; my woman, what you mean now

Themba; andre

Me; she is 4 or 5 im not sure

Themba;...

Me; her bump is even showing. Im going to marry her

Themba; ...

Me; im going to kill you

He looked at me, i smiled

Me; before that, il take everything from you. I want you nowhere near my house or my business or my contacts. Im kind of indecisive whether should i kill you or not cause if i dont il be showing you how brother should really behave but if i do il be showing you how turner treats pieces of shit like you

Themba; you want to kill me, kill me man but my family no

Me; what about my family ? Did you spare them the pain, amahle did you spare her the pain. Paris or sanele did you?i heard She spent months in a mental institution months thinking i was with her going crazy because you failed to tell me that they were threatening you and we could have fixed this whole thing but you chose to sell me out. You

Themba;...

Me; you my fucken brother heard that i said you my brother not were my brother

Themba;...

Me; iv lost all respect for you

Themba;...

Me; i found you a job

Themba; what?

Me; yeah you will be a checkers packer from now on, you start in 2 weeks time. I cleaned out your bank account and you have a full tank gas. You grew up without a father im not about to do that to your son, thank him everyday cause he saved your life. Now you will leave joburg and head to kuruman, i found you a spot there , nobuhle will have to transfer there as well I don't know you will decide and i never want to see your face here again. The day i die is the day you will come back and il put the word on the street should i find you somewhere here. I wont hesitate to put a bullet. The cars i took them, they were mine after all except for one

I got up

Me; thank your son

Then i just walked out

I was suppose to meet michaela for a check up. She was already waiting for me at alex place. We talked and he did what he had to do then we left on our way home , my phone rang

Me; helo

Guy; andre

I checked the caller id but i recognised the voice

Me; pa

Pa; yes, how are you

Me; im fine

Michaela looked at me

Pa; i thought i was going to see you this weekend

Me; uhm i was busy

Pa; ohk i was hoping you could come sometime so that will have a drink , you know like old times so you will tell me what happened exactly

Me;...

Pa; andre

Me; no i heard you pa

Pa; so will you come

Me; yes i will

Pa; ohk will talk another time then

I hung up

Michaela; and that?

Me; she didnt tell her grandfather about us

Michaela; for what?

me; i dont know, thats what im going to find out

I turned and drove to her place, she eventually moved out off my house. I parked on the gate and rang the buzzer, she opened the gate

Me; il be right back

Michaela; ohk

I got out and walked in

Amahle; i was going to drop them off andre, i will drop them off , im still spending time with them please

Me; why didnt you tell pa?

Amahle...

Me; are you fucken kidding me? Now he wants to see me

Amahle; i know you dont owe me anything but can you please go and see him please

Me; fuck no

Amahle; \*crying\* andre please im begging you please

Me; like i said fuck no, tell him me and you are over

Amahle; \*shouting\* im asking you for a simple thing to do, after everything that you put me through , i just want you to go over there and talk to him thats all ohk, thats all

Me; ...

Amahle; andre please il do anything right now

Me; anything

She nodded her head

Me; stop going to my family, they no longer your family.  
You have your own family do you understand me

Amahle; b..

Me; i said stop

Amahle; ohk

Me; il go see him when i have time

Amahle ; just one day

Me; i just said il go see him when i have time yeses

I took my keys that were on the counter and walked out  
back to the car.

## INSERT #306

After few weeks i had a meeting with stephen, i met him

Me; morning man

Stephen; hey

I looked up at him

Me; you ohk? Rough morning

Stephen; something like that

Me; ohk sorry, so your order is bigger than the last time right

Stephen; she does not deserve this man

Me; who?

Stephen; you know who?

Me; stay the fuck out off my personal life

Stephen; did you even love her ?

Me;...

Stephen; just right now, right now think about the first time you saw her, the first time you kissed her and the first time you made love to her just think about all off that. She went all out off for you, to make you happy. Remember when you told me what she did with her brother for you. She gave you two beautiful kids and you want to give up the woman who sat on a table with men fighting for what belonged to you and you want to give that all up then you fucken stupid, never tell me you smart if you going to leave a woman like her never

Me;...

Stephen; you fucked up man and you might want to make sure if that girl is really carrying your child

Me; what?

He got up and left. I just covered my face and left. On my way home i got call from pa

Me; pa

Pa; andre boy

Me; how you doing

Pa; good, you?

M; im ohk

Pa; when are you coming to see me? You have been saying you will come

Me;...

Pa; andre

Me; il come this weekend

Pa; ok

Then the was silence

Me; are you ohk pa?

Pa; yes andre im fine, how are you and amahle

Me;...

Pa; treat my daughter good and with respect do you hear me

Me;....

Pa; a lawyer would have been perfect for her but you came along and you made her happy, i just want to see her happy andre and you make her happy so you being together makes me happy

Me; ohk pa

Pa; ohk goodbye

Me; bye

He hung up. A lot was going on my mind what stephen said, what pa said everything nje was just frustrating me. I got home and i put my boys on michaela tail. After few hours sanele and paris arrived we ate and later that day they went to bed.

My phone kept on ringing i finally took it and answered it.

Me; boy its 2 am

Deon;...

Me; deon

Deon; something has happened

I got up

Me; what?

Deon; where are you

Me; in my bed whats up talk

Deon; ...

Me; \*shouting\* deon!!!

Deon; pa passed away

I just closed my eyes, hung up and threw my phone on the wall...

Me; \*screaming\* FUCKKKKK

## INSERT #307

Michaela; andre whats wrong ?

I took my sweatpants and i didnt even know where i was going or what i was doing

Michaela; andre!

Me; \*shouting\* shut up ohk just shut up

Michaela: where you going?

Me: this Can't be happening

I was wearing my clothes

Michaela: don't tell me it's about that bitch

Me: she lost her grandfather

Michaela: that has nothing to do with us

Me: \*shouting\* it has everything to do with me everything

Michaela: it's just her way to get you there

Me:...

Michaela: so you going to abandon me and your child

I took my keys

Michaela: you leave here don't ever come back

I turned and walked up to her

Me: this bed is hers, this house is hers. Stay in your line or get the fuck out

I went out, woke up sanele and paris and left. They were so confused and it was still dark. I drove to amahle place and cars were parked on the driveway. Mbali, her parents and deon were there. I got out off the car

Me; where is she?

Deon; inside she wont open

Mbali: what you doing here? She does not need you Andre right now

I ignored her

Me; i have to get in there

Deon; you can try to jump

Sanele: where is mum?

Mbali: you going to make matters worse

Me: \*shouting\* she needs me, only me you understand that

Mbali: she stopped needing you the moment you disrespected her

Mbali mum: this is not the time or place Ohk. We just need to make sure amahle is safe

Sanele: I can try to jump

Me: no stay here

I jumped over the wall and walked in, paris just screamed for me. I walked to the house and The entire house was dark. I walked up the stairs and i could hear her cries on the hallway. I opened the door and she was sitting on the floor, crying her eyes out, she lifted up her head and looked at me. I slowly walked up to her and sat opposite her, brought her closer to me, i wrapped my arms around her and she cried even louder. She was holding on to my top and she just cried. Hearing her cries like that took me back were i came from with this woman. The shit we have been through, the things she did for me, the things she sacrificed and the love i had for her, the shit i put her through and i felt a huge whole in my body as if someone was drilling my chest, my arms were around her, holding her so tight. I said with my inner voice " god make her forgive me for everything i put her through, i need her " . My sweatop was wet, she cried until she had hiccups. After she had calmed down, i helped her to her bed and

went to open for the guys. Mbali mother said they had to leave they already booked tickets for the flight. When sanele heard about pa, he just broke down as well. I couldnt leave so i just dropped them off at the airport and drove back home.

Michaela was watching tv

Michaela: well you took your time

I looked at her

Me: we done

Michaela: what now?

Me: I just can't do this

Michaela: you can't do this because of that bitch

Me: I can't do this because you not even half off the woman I need in my life

Michaela: I'm pregnant with your child remember, what wrong with you are you drunk

Me:...

Michaela: you just feel guilty baby Ohk, you don't have to do this

Me:...

Michaela: she will win.. We need each other then will be a family just the 5 of us

Me:...

Michaela: let's go shower then will talk in the morning

I walked up the stairs took a long ass shower and went to bed. Next morning woke up and headed downstairs michaela had prepared breakfast

Michaela: I hope you hung...

The intercom rang, I walked up to it and it was my boy. I opened for him and in a minute he walked through the door

Me: boy

He looked at michael

Me:let's go and talk

We walked to my study

Me: what you have for me

Sne: she needs to go boza

Me: talk to me

He gave me the papers. I went through them but the was nothing

Me: and this?

Sne: exactly nothing. There's nothing about this girl, no record, no id nothing it's like she does not even exist

Me:...

Sne: where did you meet her, what do you know?

Me: you sure about this, her name is michaela with an a at the end peterson

Sne: I did and there's nothing

Me: fuck!

Sne: where did you meet this girl

Me: she bumped into me she made small talks I went with the flow next thing we here

Sne: who ever she is, she's here for you I mean turner

Me: you have to go

We walked out and went downstairs she was eating

Me: il get back to you boy

Sne: sure

I walked up to her

Michaela: everything ohk

Me: yeah I'm sorry about yesterday Ohk I was just stressed

Michaela : don't worry about it I understand

I kissed her. We watched TV the whole day I texted sanele to tell her mum I would be there Monday since it was a Friday.

Later that day I met up with ugo and told her everything about this michaela thing. He said he would get back to me. My mind was everywhere, I mean everywhere she would talk but I would not hear a word I would just see her lips moving

## INSERT #308

I kept on tossing and turning i couldnt sleep. I woke up and went downstairs, i called sanele and he picked up on the first ring

Me; boy

Sanele; hey dad

Me; you still up?

Sanele; yeah the house is packed and we busy

Me; hows your mum?

Sanele;...

Me; boy i need you talk to me

Sanele; i dont know what to do dad, we all dont know what to do. You need to come here sooner

Me; Monday morning il be there

Sanele; why not tomorrow

Me; i have to sort out some things but Monday morning il be there

Sanele; ohk

Me; and wheres your sister

Sanele; shes sleeping

Me; ohk will talk in the afternoon ohk

Sanele; ohk

He hung up. I called ugo and he also answered

Me; i though you would be sleeping

Ugo; then why did you call

I laughed

Ugo; \*laughing\* my boys are doing a job, waiting for them

Me; ohk so any feedback

Ugo; no, nobody knows who she is. I thought

Me; thought what?

Ugo; maybe one off these old guys daughters you know  
but nothing man. You need to sleep with one eye open

Me; you think maybe she could be a

Ugo; cop

Me; yeah

Ugo; shes pregnant man , nah i dont think so. Imagine  
cop pregnant with a criminal child no sense at all

Me; yeah you got a point

Ugo; maybe, she was a gangster or something now she is  
going into hiding. I just dont know man

Me; im confused just as you

Ugo; but il ask around ohk

Me; ohk

I hung up. I went up and she was sleeping. Got in my  
blankets and slept

Michaela; baby

I opened my eyes

Michaela' im going out ohk

Me; where

Michaela; just shopping

Me; ohk

She left. The only person who could help with this was just out off my life and i had no plans of bringing him back. Sanele called me and i talked to paris. I went to shower and walked out took my phone and i had a message from sne, i opened it and it was michaela with some guy all cosy. I called sne

Sne; you seeing whar im seeing

Me; where are you?

Sne; greenstone, i slept outside your house yesterday. Im sorry i knew i should have told you but i just dont trust this girl, so this morning, she left and came here. I asked my gf to follow her since she didnt know her and she sent me these pictures and she said they looked like a couple, buying baby clothes so boza theres a chance this baby aint even yours

Me; boy found out the guys name for me

Sne; sure boza

I should have been angry, throwing things, doing all the crazy shit but i was just hungry. I went to make something to eat. Then went up to park my bags since i was leaving. When i was done parked all her shit into her bags all her shits. Took the bedding, the blankets, the pillows everything. I placed what i could on the plastic and

took it to people on the streets drove back home and she was still not back. Past 9 the door opened

Michaela; baby

Me;...

She walked in

Michaela; so i ha... Uhm whats this

Me; il help you put this in the car

Michaela; for what now? Whats going on?

i took her bags and she kept pulling my top, pulling me back in the house. I loaded all off her shit in her car

Michaela; im not going anywhere

Me; i never want to see you here ever again, you understand me

Michaela; andre im carrying your child

Me; after you give birth, il come to you, we do a paternity test, if they mine il take them but you i want you nowhere near my property

Michaela; who do you think you are, you think you can just chase me out off here

Me; get the fuck out

Michaela; no

Me; i dont have time for this, if you dont want me to make a joke out off you, you will take your shit and get out without any hassles

She looked at me and smiled

Michaela; bye andre

Me; bye michaela

She laughed and walked out

Me; you fucken crazy

I walked her out, she left. I called the security complex to confirm if she really left and she did. I also told them to never let her in ever again. Knowing michaela was not a cop, i just dismissed the issue of even entertaining her. I knew there was no chance the child was mine, i just believed it could be cause condoms do burst. I was suppose to leave Monday but i took a Sunday evening flight to cape town

I arrived in two hours time, went to take one off my car and drove there the time was 4 am. The gate was opened so i just walked in and there were woman already sweeping outside. I greeted them and they knew me i recognised 2 only. I opened the door and she turned her head to the door. I looked at her and she looked so

drained and tired but still beautiful, she turned her head back .

Me; he...

Amahle; what you doing here?

Me; w...

Aunty; andre

I turned to the hallway and her aunt walked in

Me; \*smiling\* hi ma

Aunty; mahle you dont say when our son in law is here

Amahle; uyahamba mawe ( he is leaving ma)

Aunty; hao boy

Me; no ma

Amahle looked at me

Aunty; mahle yenzela umkhwenyana ukudla ( make your husband food)

Amahle; ma mele ngiyenze itea for abo gogo ( ma i need to make tea )

Aunty; ngizolenza mina ( dont worry il do it)

I looked at her , then sat down. Her aunt left

Me; im really sorry about pa

She threw the bowl at me and it just spilled everywhere, i literally ahd to jump so it wouldnt spill on me

Amahle; \*whispering\* go now and dont come back here ever again

Me; just give me two minutes of your time

Amahle; i sa...

She was interrupted by a scream ' ahhhh dada ' i turned and she ran to me. I smiled and picked her up

Me; shhh baby people are sleeping

Amahle; i wa...

She got interrupted again, cause sanele walked in

Sanele; dad

Me; \*smiling\* hey boy

I shook his head. Now sanele is on one side, paris on my arms and she has to tell me to leave. She looked at me

Me; 2 minutes

Amahle; baby go bath before abo gogo want to bath ohk

Sanele; ohk

He walked out. She walked up to me and took paris and took her to the other room. I walked out and she followed behind me....

## INSERT #309

As we about to reach the gate , i took out my car keys cause i didnt want us to talk here. I wanted us to talk where it would be just the two of us, i walked to my car, i got in and she got in. I started the car

Amahle; woahhh im not leaving with you

Me; you said you going to give me two minutes

Amahl;e yes talk, not drive away with you

Me; will be back before 10

Amahle; no

Me; you least owe me that

Amahle; owe you, i dont owe you shit, i dont even owe you underwear. So dont be telling me i owe you

I locked the car and drove off, she started off hitting me. Telling me to stop.

Me; \*shouting\* you going to kill us both, stop

She looked at me and sat back again

Me; im not kidnapping you i just need to speak to you

We got to my place and she refused to get in

Me; the more you sit out here, is the more time will spend here, come in we talk you leave

Amahle; move

I moved away and she got out. We walked in

Amahle; what do you want

Me; tell me about you and bradley

Amahle; is this some kind of joke, i lost the one man in my life that would die for me and you want to ask me about bradley

Me; i lost someone too and knowing that person. I know he would want us to have this talk

Amahle; fuck that

Me; \*shouting\* we talked about you ohk, your happiness and you fighting with me as if i didnt care about pa is insane

Amahle; \*shouting back \* care about him! Care about him. He called me andre \*crying\* he called me asking what he did to you that you were failing to just come and talk to him after you promised him, you would come. I begged you and i even stayed away from your family so you could just come and see him and you knew , you knew how he felt about you and you co...

Me; \*shouting\* im sorry ohk, im sorry. i have to live with that shit everyday from now on after everything he did for me, i have to live with that regret. I cant change that if i could i would but i cant.

Amahle;...

Me;...

We just went silent after that

Amahle; i had no intentions what so ever to take it that far with bradley, we met years after you were presumed dead. Your mother drafted an order and took it to court for your presumption death order. The court accepted and it was granted, i had to make another order to set aside our marriage but i didnt. I asked everyone of your contacts for help and they told me one thing 'theres no way he is still alive'after years i met bradley, told him all the fake shit, fake name, fake everything. Just to avoid another lubanzi saga. We talked and in his eyes we were having an affair i was cheating on my supposedly husband . It went on for a while and he fell in love with me first. I never for once brought him into your house. He met sanele and paris and instantly fell for them too, he was there for sanele and paris. After months, he declared his love for me again and took me to meet his family so we all went there and he asked to marry me. Before that i talked to our family about me and they all said one thing you young, you mourned now its time to move on. I did mourn for you, not for 6 months or a year or 2. i accepted bradley proposal. On my birthday you show up, looking all fresh clean as if you were neever even gone and in my mind im like fuck his back, not fuck why is he back but fuck with an excitement but i look at you and it seems like you have been living the life, i asked myself that he cant

be looking like this while he was tortured even if thats the case he must have got away and freshened up. I got more mad when i thought to myself why did he make me think he was dead when he wasnt cause the moment you were ohk to talk or whatever you were doing, you should have contacted me. I was angry for the shit you put me and my kids through. I took my kids and left and \*she paused\*

She lifted her head to look at me

Amahle; thats what you wanted to know right

I looked at her

Amahle; i fought for what was yours, i reminded your kids who you were. Paris videos and pictures so she does not forget you. Sanele always told him andre is your only father, brad is no one to you. I protected what was yours, your family and ensured everyone was ohk. Im not perfect, never was never will be. I make mistakes i made a mistake with no intentions whatsoever to hurt you, with no intentions to take away what you have. Do i love bradley? Yes i did and i once told him i would never love him as half as the way i loved my husband. I couldnt throw stones at him for what he did to you that i dont know, i only know he had you but i couldnt hurt him not because i couldnt but because that was not my fight, and im sorry if you think i betrayed you in some way, im sorry andre, im sorry for everything i ever did to you that i disgusted you so much, im sorry ohk, i really am sorry

Me; am...

Amahle; but what you did to me? I can never fully recover from

Me; i need you to understand that i was angry ohk, i was angry i felt betrayed by the one woman i would give my life for. You were the easiest person i could take my frustrations on. I was angry i did some shit im embarrassed about and did things to you, i would never hope off doing ohk. I thought i was dead amahle ohk, i couldnt do anything i was weak by the time i was able to get away i felt like it was too late and when i recovered i should have called you, i agree with you but the situation i was in just wouldnt let me. When i found out you were seeing someone, i just wanted to hurt you i dont know why cause it was not like i had left a month ago. I met this michaela girl and we started talking and having sex i knew i was going to hurt you the way you hurt me and feel that pain. I took it too far i know but i need you to know that meant nothing to me, she is not even pregnant with my child im done with that

Amahle;....

Me; we both made mistakes, lets just fix this ohk

Amahle; fix this? What did you think would happen here? I told you what you wanted to know and me finding comfort in your arms meant shit

Me;...

Amahle; i stayed away from your family as you said, they not my family. Now you will drop me off and leave, i want you nowhere near my family as well.

Me; im not going to leave. I realised this is some crazy shit and i love you ohk and i would never stop

She quickly turned cause she was facing the other way and i felt this pinch on my cheek

Amahle; \*shouting\* i refuse for you to realise you love me because you feel sorry for me and you feel guilty because you could not set your pride aside and see pa. Leave me alone andre. You \*she paused\* just leave me alone ...

## INSERT #310

After that being said i dropped her off, the time was 11 am. But i didnt leave I walked to this place that sold alcohol it was like 3 streets away, when i was about to go in. I met ntando and he was wasted, he was about to fall when i held him before he could. He lifted his head and looked at me

Ntando; andre

Me; hey man, look at yourself

I helped him to a seat while i went to buy myself a cig and one beer. I sat opposite him

Ntando; i dont have money anymore, please buy for me

Me; you already wasted man

Ntando; please man

Me; ohk

I got up and went to buy it for him

Me; why you like this

Ntando;...

Me; boy

Ntando; the only family i had has died man and his last words to me

Me; what did he say

Ntando; that his sorry, his sorry they were all not there and he loved me and my family

Me;...

Ntando; its as if he knew that he was going man, you know but i didnt see it

Me; well you better

He looked at me. I took a sip off my beer

Ntando; did he talk to you too

Me; yeah

Ntando; you see , he was saying bye to all of us

Me; yeah but i kind of failed him

Ntando; what did you do?

he was so wasted, he got up from his chair pulling it to sit next to me, then wrapped his arm on my shoulders

Ntando; what? Talk to me brother

Me; you weird when you drunk?

Ntando; talk

Me; well i was suppose to come and see him but i kept postponing, day before he called me telling me he wants me to treat amahle better cause he knows that i make her happy

Ntando; so thats good

Me; i have been treating amahle like rubbish

Ntando; why you treating my sister like rubbish

Me;...

Ntando; are you cheating on my sister

I didnt want to get in a fight with drunk ntando

Me; no , its way complicated than that

Ntando; ohhhh well he left you with something you should not forget

Me; yeah lets go

Ntando; no lets buy more

Me; no , you need to go sleep

I helped him up and we walked back home. I took him to the room outside and put him to bed, then left. I bumped into amahle walking with one of pa friend, she was helping him to go in

Me; let me

She moved away and i helped him inside. As i was about to leave, he held my hand i looked at him

Him; andre

Me; \*smiling\* yes

Him; you were like his son you know that

Me;...

Him; he talked of you so many time and he thought maybe he did something to you

Me; why?

Him cause you didnt come see him

Me;...

Him; but talking to you over the phone, he knew it was just his imagination

I smiled and walked away, but i felt so dizzy as i walked to the kitchen i kept on bumping into things on the kitchen door, i looked at amahle and she quickly walked up to me then blackout.

## #AMAHLE

My aunt insisted i stay with andre. I sat on the floor and he was laying on the bed behind me. I took his phone and unlocked it, the whole screen had cracked i checked if he was awake and nope. I went through his call log and there was pa, i checked the call duration and it was long, i looked at him but nothing and it was a day before he passed away. I went through his pictures and it was sanele and paris mostly then his bitch. Tears just built up

I buried my face with my hands a just couldnt hold back, I was so tired from everything. I just wanted to be happy nothing else just to be happy like I was before with pa to call anytime, with dre but happiness was just not for me. I felt a hand on my back

Andre: amahle I'm sorry

I wiped away my tears and tried to pull myself together

Andre: I don't want to but it's clear I'm not good for you and you not good for me we just kill each other

I got up and walked out. Andre followed me

My aunt; you ohk boy?

Andre; yes ma, i need to go

My aunt; no amahle make him food

Andre; n...

My aunt; sit down

He sat down

Andre; is ntando still sleeping

My aunt; yes i went to check up on him a few minutes ago

I dished up for him, my aunt left leaving us

Me; what did you two talk about

Andre; what?

Me; you and pa

Andre; your happiness

INSERT #311

#ANDRE

Things between me an amahle were awkward but i was there because of pa and even that kind of tension would not prevent me for making sure everything went smoothly, i was working hand in hand with ntando and his

uncles. I called at sanele and paris school informing them and with sanele they would email me the weeks work so he does not stay behind. Tuesday we had to go buy a few things, check the coffin and all of that.

Me; baba we have to go

Amahle uncle; no i cant go anymore, go with amahle

Amahle; uncle i cant leave

Amahle uncle; please leave that, your aunt will take care of it

Amahle; ohk

We looked at each , she just gave me that look and walked away. I walked out and sanele was sitting outside

Me; boy we going

Sanele; where

Me; sort out some things you coming

Sanele; do i have to?

Me; up to you

Sanele; nah , il stay behind just incase we need to do something

Amahle showed up, with paris on her arms

Amahle; baby we going

Sanele; no go mum, il be ohk

Amahle; want anything

Sanele; mum theres food in the house. If im hungry il go make something

Amahle; ohk my purse is in your room

Sanele; ohk

Paris; nele

Sanele; im coming

We walked out and headed to my car. We had no car seat for paris

Amahle; il sit at the back with her

Me; ohk

They got in and started the car. Paris kept calling me dada , dada, she knewhow to speak but with me it was dada, but with amahle it was mummy. But i figured she took it from sanele dad and she made her own version dada. When i turned to look at her she would just laugh. She was no longer skeptical when she wanted to talk to me

Me; im sorry i didnt come and see him

I looked at her on the mirror, she looked at me as well then looked away

Me; i only got away after 2 years of torture. I couldnt talk, speak walk. I was even shitting on myself

The robot closed for me and i turned to look at her

Me; i thought i was going to come back, i had a bad feeling about the whole mission bu..

Amahle; robots

I drove off again

Me; but things turned for the worst and i find out in the process you seeing someone that fucked me up. I was angry at you which is why i took out all my frustrations on you

Amahle; by showing me off to your girlfriend, dragging me out off my own home \*crying\* my own home and that you bought for me and our kids with my hair

Paris; dont cry mummy

Those words.i pulled out on the side and jumped to the back. She was crying, paris trying to cheer her up. I gave paris my phone and placed her behind me while i got closer to amahle. Her head was on her thighs. I held her face and pulled her to me, she didnt even want to look me in the eyes

Me; please look at me

She opened her watery eyes

Me; im sorry, im sorry for everytime i laid my hands on you ohk. I dont want to be that father to sanele that hit her mother or paris. I was angry but me being angry cant

justify what i put you through, i guess i was just trying to hurt you so that you would feel what i felt. I was angry...

Amahle; you humiliated me more than once, i had to go to work with blue eyes having to lie and make up stories and the next day and the next day. What you put me through is what i dont want paris to go through, and staying with you i teach her its ok for a man to hit you

I covered my face

Amahle; i love you more than the word itself but andre, you put me through the mosti...

Me; just give us a final chance, i screw up you leave

Amahle; andre please

I held her face again

Me; final chance please

I joined our foreheads together. She shook her head

Amahle; i cant, i just cant

I kissed her cheek and jumped back to the front seat, started the car and we drove where we were suppose to go. I checked on her time after time on the mirror but she was just crying. We did what we had to do, bought what we had to do and went back. I was tired so i had to leave with paris and sanele but paris refused and of course her family were like. Amahle should go get some rest too so we had to leave together. The drive was silent only paris

and sanele were talking. We got to my place and it was a two bedroom

Amahle; il sleep on the other room with paris and you will sleep with your dad

Sanele; no mum i want to sleep here

Amahle; to watch tv

Sanele please

Me; ohk lets go take the blankets.

He made it himself and i was just laying on the bed. I checked the time and it was 2 am. I got up and walked to the other room. I walked in and paris was fast asleep, legs and arms everywhere. I got closer to amahle and kissed her neck, she held my face and opened her eyes

Me; i want to talk to you \*whispering\*

She looked at me

Amahle : We already talked what more do you want us to talk about

Me; please

She looked at her phone

Amahle; its 2 am

Me; please

She looked at paris

Me; place her on the floor

She did as i told her.

Amahle: this is crazy, I shouldn't even be here

We walked out and she stood at the hallway

Amahle: what?

Me: sanele is just down there

She looked at me with those beautiful big eyes and walked in front and headed to my room. I got in and closed the door locked, she turned

Amahle; so...

I just kissed her, she held my face trying to push me back but she just failed and didnt hesitate to kiss me back and i was glad, i held her thighs and picked her up. She locked them behind my waist and i laid her on the bed she was wearing those dressed. I removed it throwing it on the floor. She had already pushed my boxers down. I sucked on her neck and she let out a moan that was loud.

Considering we have two kids i placed my hand on her mouth and continued with what i was doing. I stopped kissing her and admired her body. I kissed her breast while cupping the other and went down to her stomach to he thighs

Amahle; we shouldnt \* breathing out loud\* uhmmmm

I lifted up my head to look at her, her eyes shut while biting lower lip. I licked what was mine and her moans drove me crazy, she buried her head to the pillow trying not to be so loud. I did things to her that only i could do to her. Her legs were on my shoulders she tried to move up but i pulled her to me. She pulled me up to her face and she kissed the leaving shit outta of me, i was in between her legs and i entered her. Her nails were digging deep into my back, her moans on my ear.i held her so tight while giving her hard, deep strokes. She was sweating, I was wet she was wet. I removed her hair from her face and looked at her, she opened her eyes and we just looked at each other.

Me: I love you

She responded so softly as if trying to prevent the words from coming out

Amahle ; i love you

Then she closed her eys

Amahle; im gon, im gon,

She couldn't finish her sentence

Me; wait for me

I kissed her and pushed the last inch of my d inside of her, she gasped for her, i held her so tight and groaned to

her ear. We stayed in that position trying to catch our breath. We finally did and I laid next to her.

## INSERT #312

Woke up the next morning and she was not there, I checked the time and it was 11. I went downstairs but there was no one. I called Amahle and she said they had to leave early. I went to shower and my back had marks all over. I just let out a slight laugh thinking about yesterday. No one does me like my woman I mean no one. After my shower dressed up and left, it was already packed. I walked to the bedroom and Paris just screamed when she saw me.

Me; \*laughing\* shhh baby

I picked her up

Amahle aunt; daddys girl

I laughed. Amahle couldn't even look at me in the eyes

Me; how are you

Paris; fine

She wrapped her little arms around my neck.

Me; I kind of didn't eat when I left

Amahle looked at me

Me; please

She got up cause if she said no, her aunts would have fought with her. I walked behind her

Me; you ignoring me

Amahle; \*whispering\* you took advantage

Me; \*whispering back \* i took advantage, you had a lot of chances to say no but did you

Amahle;....

Me; just give me a final chance

Amahle; what happened yesterday wont happen again

She handed me a bowl

Me; im suppose to be full with this

Amahle; its for paris, feed her

Me; so me and you. We done

Amahle; we done

Me; lets go tell your family then

Amahle; lets start with yours and il talk with my lawyer

Me; your lawyer is shaun

Amahle; il hire one, to draft the divorce papers

Me; what about these 2

Amahle; you can see them over the weekend

Me; im not going to be a weekend father

Amahle; andre i cant talk about this right now ohk, i just  
cant so please

She walked away

Paris; mummy mad

Me; yes baby at daddy

Paris; no dada no

I kissed her and went outside only to see the boys from  
my warehouse in cape town with the guys from jozi

Me; \*laughing\* and this

Adel; we here to support you and amahle

Jason; iv never met her before

He said that picking up paris

The rest of the guys from cape town went crazy over her  
and they all wanted to pick her up. I fed her , gave her  
the bowl to take it to her mum she did and got back  
quickly to me. She was sitting on my lap. Amahle came  
greeting the guys, they knew her since they had to report  
to her the time i was gone. Rest of the week things got  
smooth, Friday me and mahle were all over each other but  
i knew she knew it was going to be hard today and me  
being there eased the pain for her a bit. Later that day pa  
arrived and it was emotional, especially with amahle.

Saturday morning everyone prepared themselves, i had to talk and i was so nervous. The service began and when it was my time to talk i was shaking. I talked nothing but the truth about pa , the kind of person he was the love he gave us and everyone else and how much i would miss him, i even got emotional. We went to the ceremony which was next to ma. Went back was with the guys, amahle was with me the whole time. Nobuhle came down and his bf new he would not be welcome there.

Sunday we flew back to jozi late because during the day they had to do some ceremony, but amahle was coming back the following week. Monday took the guys to school and was working. I had a meeting with my clients and we were definitely back in business after lunch i went to meet up with shaun.

Shaun; good to have you back

Me; yeah we need to talk

Shaun; ohk

Me; me and amahle are divorcing

Shaun; what you trying to cover up?

Me; nothing its not over for me but its over for her man

Shaun; im sorry to hear that

Me; yeah

Shaun; so you dont want her to have anything?

Me; are you fucken crazy

Shaun; im just asking

Me; shes going to take everything

Shaun; uhmmm everything

Me; yes the house, her cars, and the money we make of diamonds all off that will be hers

Shaun; we talking about real money here turner

Me; i need you to make sure of that, shes going to hire a lawyer but i dont need your service so you will emply yourself and be her lawyer i dont want her to suffer, i want her to have everything she needs

Shaun; you sure

Me; yeah im sure man as for my kids , shes not going to take them away from me. The trustfund of paris and sanele remains untouched

Shaun; ohk so what should i do

Me; call her and tell her , i sent you

Shaun; ohk

Me; thank you for seeing me

Shaun; call me if you need anything

Me; ohk

Took what i came with and left...

## INSERT #313

Amahle came back and picked up the two. I told her about shaun and she eventually agreed. Few months passed. We were still busy with the divorce settlement, i was suppose to meet her but she stood me up and said we should face time

Me; you should have told me you cant meet up

Amahle; im sorry ohk

Me;...

Amahle; what?

me; something is different about you

Amahle; so what did shaun say

Me; nothing, his drafting it and then he will send it to you, you sign it and i sign it thats all

Amahle; ohk

Me; so i must go tell my family alone

Amahle; yes

Me; you really doing this

Amahle; sorry

Then she hung up. I drove to the family house and everyone was already waiting for us i couldnt believe she was going to make me the bad person. I walked in

Me; hi guys

Them; yes ayanda

Me; i called you here to talk to you about somethings

Grandmother; whats wrong?

Me; im me and amahle are splitting up

My mum; what?

Me; yes mum, i ruined everything this is because of me and i understand why she decided to file for divorce

They were all just looking at me

Me; i hit her , more than once

I dont know how but two women were on top off me beating the shit out off me. My 2 uncles had to pull them away

Mum; \*shouting\* i never ever taught you that ... Andre man

Then she stomped out

Grandmother; \*crying\* ayanda whats wrong with you my child, whats wrong with you?

Me;...

They told me shit, i mean i felt like getting up and going. Instead they wanted to leave me and find out if amahle was fine, they wanted to apologize to amahle family it was just all too hectic i only left later that day cause i had to go, since amahle was coming to drop off the two. I got home and i was just so drained after an hour or so, a car pulled up the driveway, i waited for them in the kitchen and it was mamsebe

Me; ma

Her; andre

Sanele; hey dad

Me; hey boy

Paris; dada

Me; hey baby

I kissed her

They walked with their bags. Mamsebe turned to the door.  
I held her arm

Me; ma i want to apologize

Her;...

Me; im sorry about what you saw and how i treated  
amahle

Her; i thought better of you

Me;...

Her; she loves you so much and thats the thanks she got from you, embarrassing her in front off your floozy

Me;...

Her; i know you better than what i saw but im no longer sure if you the man that girl deserves

Me; im sorry ma , i was just angry and i was taking out my frustrations on her

Her;...

Me; i really am and i promise you i will never do such again. I just need to you remove that picture of me in your head cause that was just not me. You of all people know i love amahle and i would never hurt her

Her; as much as i dont want to believe that i know its true

Me;...

Her; goodluck

Then she left

Me; ma wait

Her;...

Me; i sometimes cant keep up with those two so if they here, i would appreciate if you came here as well thats if you dont mind

Her; il talk to amahle

Me; thank you

Then she left. I had already cooked. I went to the lounge and paris was bothering sanele. I picked her up

Me; you hungry?

Sanele; i ate she didnt

PARIS : Nele lie

Sanele: I'm lying let's ask mummy. You said you were going to eat with dada

She crossed her arms cause she was mad

Me; why didnt you eat

She raised her shoulders

Me; come

She held my hand and we walked to the kitchen, i made her and me something to eat. Paris didnt love food i mean when she had to eat, we struggled, she took time to swallow, she would play around so i ate first before feeding her. We were watching soccer

Me; baby swallow

She lifted up her pj rubbing her big tummy

Paris; noooo dada

Me; baby you not done

Paris; seee, im like mummy

Rubbing her tummy

Me; \*laughing\* mummy no baby, not even close

Sanele coughed

Me; you ohk?

He signalled with his hand that he was ohk. After we watched soccer and the princess fell asleep

We were in the middle of a divorce settlement but amahle was full of games, never showing up nothing. Finally she told me was at this restaurant . I went there and she was already sitting, she seemed nervous

Me; what game you playing? Especially since you the one who wants this

Amahle;...

Me; you know whats lets talk about why we here

Amahle; ohk

Me; so you keeping everything

Amahle; but i dont want to

Me; il be ohk, il be back on my feet in no time

Amahle; but still thats just not fair

Me; no i mean it, its fine

Amahle; ohk

We talked some more and then we were done

Me; il walk you to your car

Amahle; no you can go ahead

Me; want me to leave you here

Amahle; yes im fine, il get more dessert

Me; i can join you

Amahle; no i want to be alone

Me; ohk

I tried kissing her cheek but she moved back

Me; ...

Amahle; what?

Me; your nose

Amahle; what about my nose

Me; uhm nothing enjoy your dessert

Amahle; i will

Then i walked away

Weeks passed. I had sanele and paris over for the weekend. I had just put paris to bed and threw myself on the bed, my phone kept on ringing i checked the caller id and it was themba so i just ignored it. I passed out and was woken up by bright lights, i looked up and my bedroom lights were on i turned but someone pinned me

on my pillow with a gun on the back of my head, i tried to turn and eventually did and my room was surrounded by cops

Me; \*shouting\* what the fuck is going on

Guy; you under arres....

And this nigga told me all the shit i was arrested for

## INSERT #314

Me; is this some kind of joke

Let me give you a picture, im half naked, surrounded by pink buffed man in police attires, 2 had AK and others 9mm wearing bullet proof vest

Me; \*shouting\* get the fuck out off my house

And this nigga hit me with the gun, i literally flew to the other side of the bed. I got up and i was bleeding from the nose and lips. The door opened and sanele walked in, he stepped back seeing the situation i was in

Cop 2; son go back to your room

Me; what is this

Officer1; \*shouting\* KRY DIE FUCK UP EN LAAT ONS GAAN ONS DIT NIE HET TYD VIR JOU BULLSHIT ( get the fuck up and lets go we dont have time for your bullshit)

Me ; jy gaan my huis en my familie te respekteer ( you going to respect my house and my family)

Office1; ek het nie n fuck oor jou of jou familie ( i dont give a fuck about you or your family)

I tried to get up and talk to the cop that was talking this shit but the other one just hit him with a gun shoving me to the wall. Sanele tried to defend me

Officer; get back son

Paris; dada \*screaming\*

Now im trying protect my kids and these idiots were not allowing me. They dragged me out

Me; \*shouting\* I cant leave my kids

They didnt even care. They took me in, when i walked out. My entire place was surrounded by cops i was confused as fuck. They pushed me in the car and one cop was walking with sanele and paris...

#AMAHLE

My phone would not stop ringing, i finally took it

Me; helo

Sanele; mum

I quickly got up, he sounded as if he was crying

Me; baby whats wrong

Sanele; dad, police station

Me; what? Where are you

He told me i wore my sweat Pants and top and left. I couldnt even tell mamsebe. I got to that police station and my kids were sitting there, both off them crying. One officer tried to stop me but i just pushed him away

I knelt next to sanele taking paris

Me; baby im here, whats going on

Woman; you the mother of these kids

I turned

Me; yes whats going on

Woman; the father?

Me; what about the father?

woman; he was arrested are you together

Me; no

Woman; well then take your kids and leave

Me; where is the father?

woman; he was taken in

Me;for what

Woman; that has nothing to do with you

Me; \*shouting\* im married to that man, it has everything to do with me

Woman; you s...

Me; his my husband now start talking woman

Woman; you need to calm down

Me; il calm down the moment you tell me where is my husband

Woman; his in police holding cells

Me; what is he doing there ? You fucken not answering my question

Woman; watch your tone

Me; \*shouting\* dont fucken tell me to watch my tone, im tired, i should be in bed. These babies are making me go through the most. And you cant answer a simple question dont make me take my frustrations on you

Her;...

I raised my eyebrow

Her; come with me

I followed behind her and we got to the door. I looked at my bump and thought of turning back

Me; do you have a pillow

Woman; what?

me; pillow? A pillow ? My back hurts

Woman; just stand here

She dissapeared and came back with it. I held it just infront off my bump and walked in, he turned and stood up when he saw me

I looked at the cop. She looked at me

Me; space

She turned annoyed and left. His lip was cut and shirt had blood stains

Me; whats going on?

Andre; mama i dont know \*he covered his face\* i dont know whats going on \*shouting\* FUCKKK

Me; you need to calm down

Anadre; im in trouble, i can feel it baby

His hands were shaking, i held them with one hand, the other holding onto the pillow. He was so stressed, he didnt even question himself about the pillow

Me; what do they have on you

Andre; they said a whole lot of things alot of things. I dont know if they have evidence or what?

Me; who set you up

Andre; i dont know all of this just doesnt make sense

Me;...

Andre; i need you to get themba here

Me; what?

Andre; he knows something, his been calling me the whole night but i ddint take it then im arrested. It doesnt make sense mama

Me; ohk il call him

Andre; is paris and sanele ohk

Me; they just confused but they will b ohk

Andre; im sorry

Me; \*smiling\* im going to get you out off here ohk

Andre; \*smiling\* ohk

I walked away. The moment i got to the door, i removed the pillow and walked there. The cops there refused to talk to me so we had to go

The next morning, i called themba with andre phone

Themba; andre

Me; themba

Themba; amahle

Me; hey

Themba; wheres andre?

Me; he was arrested last night

Themba; \*shouting\* FUCK ! FUCK! He should have answered my phone

Me; whats going on themba

Themba; im at your place open up,

i went to check the intercom and saw his car i buzzed him in. After few minutes he walked throught he door, he looked so different with a beard

Themba; which holding cells is he in

I told him. He quickly turned to the door and turned again to face me

Me; what?

Themba; you expecting

Me;...

Themba; congratulations

He hugged me

Me; thank you, just dont tell andre

Themba; what?

Me; he does not know im pregnant, dont tell him

Themba; o... W... I have to go

Me; ohk

Then he left

#ANDRE

I walked out as i had a visitor only to see themba

Themba; listen i know you dont want me here but i need  
you to listen to me

Me;...

Themba; you in shit.

Me; what?

Themba; they have everything, your files

Me; what? The cops

He nodded his head

Me; i have those files man

Themba; your girl, the one you were going to marry. Is a  
cop working hand in hand with the investigative  
authorities. You let her in your space and she took that  
advantage

I covered my face

Themba; she must have seen the files somehow i dont  
know how

Me; how do you know all off this

Themba; nobuhle and amahle still talk, nobuhle told me what happened with you and amahle because you busy with some girl. I dont know why but i searched for her and her identity was fake. I talked to amahle and well we still talked over the phone, she gave me the girls picture and i found out who she was channelle september, investigave officer has been for over 10 years. Following in daddies footsteps, she heard about your case and how beautiful girls have their way around you and to her luck you and amahle there was tention. Gets into your pants and you fall for it. Husband peter september, also a cop. Shit happened and she got pregnant now case could blow up

Me; but its my child

Themba; yes, you fall for it and she has you were she wants you

Me; can a cop do that, have sex with me

Themba; things have changed

Me; she has everything

Themba; you looking at life no chance of parole if there was a death penalty , you would be facing one

Me; this cant be happening

Themba; i owe you my life, im going to make sure it doesnt get to that

Me;...

Themba; im going fight this just allow me

Me;...

Themba; its in your hands

Me;....

## INSERT #315

Me; id appreciate that

Themba; do you need anything ?

Me; i need to see amahle

Themba; oh an...\* he paused\*

Me; what?

Themna; nothing, il tell her to come

Me; more like tell her i need things to bath so she will bring them

Themba; ohk when are they moving you

Me; tomorrow, i dont know where

Themba; get a phone, will keep in contact

Me; ohk

I got up and heae=ded back to the cells

#AMAHLE

Themba got back

Me; so?

Themba; well its bigger than all of us

Me; whats he in for ?

Themba; everything

Me; what?

themba; yes , the girl he was with , she was a cop

Me; \*shouting\* what?

themba; yeah i need to go

Me; no let me make you something to eat first

Themba; b...

Me; sit down

He sat down, i made something to eat and we ate together

Me; what happened with you and andre

Themba; im the reason all of this is happening

Me; what? Why?

Themba; the mission, he disappeared cause of me. Im sorry amahle, people were threatening nobuhle family and i had to protect her

Me; oh

Themba; im really sorry, so when he got back. I left the city but i talked with some people and you

Me; yeah

Themba; so one off the guys told me what was going on and what was going to happen that night, i tried to warn him but he was not picking up

Me;...

Themba; im really sorry

Me; its all in the past

Themba; does he know

I shook my head

Themba; why?

me; we in the middle of a divorce, im pregnant. If he knew he wouldnt allow us to go through with it

Themba; he will find out eventually you know that

Me; yeah

Themba; who knows

Me; his whole family. I thought about aborting but I just couldn't i told his family not to say only he is in the dark.

Themba; you need to tell him

Me; i need time, plus with this whole thing now going on

Themba; he needs to hear this

Me; i know but his expecting 3 kids already and bringing this to him now

Themba; the girl was pregnant with twins?? Either way the girl is not pregnant with andre kids

Me; how you know

Themba; trust me shes not

Me;...

Themba; ohk girl or boy

Me; you mean girls or boys

Themba; \*laughing\* fuck no! You the one one Pregnant with twins

Me; \*laughing\* i hate your friend

Themba: what did his family say

Me: nothing but that their are a blessing especially since there's no twins back home and the Adams family, kim even tried

Themba:...

Me: Andre grandmother said something

Themba: what?

Me: he said this was the last gift pa was giving me

Themba: you believed it

Me: \*smiling\* yeah

Themba pulled me into a hug

Themba; he needs things like bath towels, soap all that and money, i mean money mami

Me; ohk il take it to him tomorrow

Themba; no day after tomorrow, they moving him so

Me; oh ohk

Themba; dont worry yourself

Me; you too and thank you for coming

He smiled, got up hugged me and left

It was weird being in the house again, even though after the divorce i was moving back in. Since andre said it was my house. I walked around and stopped at the bedroom door, i opened it and got in, the bed had not been made and there was blood on the sheets. I felt the need to do this, i removed the whole bedding, even the one that was

not used, took the pillows everything and it was just the matresses. I called someone to come pick up the matresses as i was selling it for free and in less than an hour they were already there. I had to clear my head went tot he nearest mall to buy new bedding and a matresses that would be delivered tomorrow. Around 3 paris and sanele got back, made them food and they slept. Next day i ahed a lot of people coming for andre and his family was still unaware of the whole thing. Later that day just after i put paris to bed , my phone rang. I didnt recognise the number

Me; helo

Guy; hey

He said that so soft as if he was scared or i dont know. I rushed to my bedroom, sat on the new bed and bedding

Me; you ohk?

Andre;....

Me; andre

Andre; im never seeing daylight ever again

Me; what happened?

Andre; didnt receive bail. Im back were the whole mess started

Me; they placed you at leeuwkop?

Andre; yeah, word quickly got out im back and now everyone wants a piece of me

Me; are you safe

Andre; \*slight laugh\* im safe

Me; ohk

Then the was silent

Andre; i

Me; i

Andre; no talk

Me; uhm im coming to see you tomorrow

Andre; ohk please b...

I cut him off

Me; i know what to bring you

Andre; ohk i have to go

Me; ohk be safe ohk

Andre; you still care?

Me; goodnight

Andre; goodnight

Then i hung up

## INSERT #316

I dropped off sanele then paris then went back home, i looked for something to wear that would not show but it was useless. I finally decided on a summer dress, with a jacket and a bag that i would hold that carried andre things. I took my car and left, got there and i had to smuggle money in. I got in and he was not there yet. I didnt believe they still did this glass thing, which helped me cause the bump would not be visible. He showed up wearing clothes i did not recognise, took the phone and sat down

Me; hey

He just smiled

Me; \*smiling\* already going crazy huh

Andre; of you

Me;...

Andre; you look beautiful

Me; thank you, where did you get the clothes

Andre; borrowed shit

Me; i brought you clothes and everything else you would need.

Andre; thank you

Me; should i tell your family, your mum might help you

Andre; dont tell them anything. To them im overseas for a couple of months to clear my head

Me; andre

Andre; i cant tell them where i am plus il be back

Me; how is the case go...

He cut me off ignoring the topic

Andre; you look beautiful

Me; you said that already

Andre;....

Me; i have something for you \*whispering\* money

Andre; you will meet a warder outside, coloured give it to him. Il get it from him

Me; ohk

Andre; mama you cant leave me

Me;...

Andre; i know im taking advantage of the situation but im nothing without you i need you to understand that. You are my life as cliche as that may sound

Me; we cant talk about this now andre

Andre; no we have to talk about it. I need you to know that i love you, iv loved you from the first time i saw you,

when we were out with mbali celebrating the new year, iv loved you from the time you let me talk half of you. Iv always loved you i know i have a funny way of showing it but truth is. I love you and im nothing without you. Make me have something forward to having when i get out off here

Me;...

Andre; you dont have to answer now. When we apart tragedies just strike everywhere

Me; i dont know

Andre; just think about it please

Me; ohk

The warder told me , time was up. I didnt get up though

Andre; when will i see you

Me; next week

Andre; \*smiling\* ohk think about what i said

Me; ohk

I was still seating

Andre; i want to make sure you safe, go now

Me; i want to think go ahead

Andre; dont sit here too much

I nodded my head

He placed his hand on the glass, i smiled and placed mine. He moved his lips to i love you. Then walked away. When he had completely disappeared i got up ,gave the warder the money and left.

Few weeks passed. Trying to get someone to work with us was hard. Themba had everything on this michaela girl, i took everything of mine and headed to where she worked. I walked in

Me; helo im here to see chanel

Lady; and who may you be

Me; dr adams

I showed her my work card

Lady; ohk come through

I followed behind her and headed to an office, she knocked and got in

Lady; theres a dr adams for you... Yes dr adams

She turned to me

Lady; come on in

I walked in and she just laughed. I smiled

Michaela/chanel; excuse us sindi

Then she left

Her; hmmm the wife right or ex wife

Me; actually wife, no hoe can come between me and my husband even years behind bars

She clapped her hands

Her; you pregnant

Me; would you look at that

She walked up to me

Me; when did you give birth

Her; what brings you here

I sat down

Me; what kind of fucked up marriage are you in? Your man that much of a coward couldnt get you wet that you had to sleep with mine and use work to your husband as an excuse

Her;...

Me; \*laughing\* butt girl i know my man is good iv been meaning to talk to a girl that gets to feel what i feel. Just imagine i used to get that everyday

Her; get out off my office

Me; the shit you put my family through. You will face 10x worse

Her; is that a threat

Me; me and my husband never make threats

I passed her, she pulled me by my arm and anger wouldnt control itself. I slapped her she turned to face me holding on to her cheek, she tried to return it

Me; hitting a pregnant woman, assault

She held back

Me; im going to fuck up your life bitch and your hope that my husband gets life i hope you will be there when they say not enough evidence for this CASE ITS closed in less than a year

Her; you will regret this

## INSERT #317

To be honest with this whole dre thing, i thought it would be easy knowing dre has connections everywhere but that was not the case. Themba was struggling we were all struggling, i was so stressed i took time off from work. Wednesday i had to go see andre. Same procedure as the last time

Andre; you glowing

Me; stop!

Andre; \*smiling\*

The guy i was looking at was andre not turner or the monster that came back few months ago, it was andre the way he was conducting himself, the slight laugh he let out when i said something, showing off his dimples to me. He was the man i married but i was disappointed that it took him jail time to bring my andre back

Me; iv missed you

Andre;....

Me; the andre im seeing right now, i want this andre. I only need turner in two places, protecting his family and \*i paused\*

Andre; and?

Me; and giving me pleasure

He covered his face

Me; but im scared, il want to give this andre a go and the moment you leave here you will bring back the devil

He looked around as if wanting to break the glass that was keeping us apart. He held the glass and placed his head on the shelf

Me; i want andre and if i cant get andre then i cant be with you

I took out the papers

Me; look at me

He looked up

Me; i sign this, you sign this no longer andre and amahle  
but sanele and paris

Andre;....

Me; so whats its going to be

Andre; m...

Me; am i having andre back or not. This andre

He looked up as if trying to hold his tears back

Me; dre!

He looked at me and his eyes were red, funny enough i  
didnt even see one tear

Andre; you have him, nobody but andre spiritually and  
physically. Turner unleashed when we together and when  
i protect my family.

Me; you promise

Andre; i promise you with my life, the shit i pu...

Warder; time to go

Andre; vader please

Warder ; nie turner man nie

Andre; this is very important for me, give me extra 10  
minutes just 10

Warder; 5

He walked away

Andre; \*he was talking fast\* i love you and i love you only , im sorry for the shit i put you through and i would never put you or my kids through that ever again. Im all about you, just you my baby and our kids. I love you mrs adams

Me; i love you mr adams

He smiled as they took him away. When he had disappeared. I got up and left.

On my drive home themba called

Me; hey

Themba; hey where are you

Me; going home?

Themba; so i have something

Me; ohk?

Themba; judge mr peter koen, state prosecutor mzukisi gxumisa

Me; enlighten me

Themba; let me get straight with you

Me; ohk?

Themba; a bribe and we share the same cell with andre

Me; fuck

Themba; thats not all

Me; what?

themba; his familiar with andre

Me; which way?

themba; his the first guy that sentenced andre

Me; oh god, how old is this guy

Themba; going to retirement after andre case

Me; are you fucken kidding me

Themba; not one bit. I dont know mami i dont have an idea manje

Me; what we going to do?

Themba; i dont know to be honest! Iv tried everything, everyone but nothing

Me; email me the files of both the guys prosecutor and judge

Themba; ohk

Me; did dorian pick up my kids

Themba; yes did you tell him

Me; themba i cant just tell him that im pregnant please be patient

Themba; im giving you 2 weeks

Me; geez you so pushy  
Themba; he has a right to know  
Me; just bring the files  
Then he hung up

Drove home and dorian was there with my two kids  
Dorian; you sure you only 5 months  
Me; il shut that mouth of yours  
He laughed  
Dorian; you still look beautiful  
He kissed me on my cheek  
Me; thats more like it hey pumpkins  
Sanele; hey mum  
Paris; hey mum  
Copying sanele with everything he says  
Dorian; so how is he  
Me; getting there  
Dorian; does he know  
Me;...  
Dorian; when will you tell him

Me; we still have a lot to talk about dorian

Dorian; ohk, i have to go

Me; thank you

Then he left, mamsebe had already cooked and i was starving i sat with the two until it was time for bed but not for paris. So i just took her to bed with me,she fell asleep on top off me, i was watching a movie while feasting. My phone rang and i just smiled before even looking at the caller id, i took it and i blushed

Me; helo

Andre; hey

Me; how are you?

andre; well i miss our bed

Me; soon ohk

Andre; i know, i miss the 2 muskateers

Me; they miss you too, wont stop talking about you

Andre; what about you

Me; \*laughing\* what about me?

andre; you dont talk about me

Me; i have nothing to say

Andre; yeah right

Me; you sure you ohk?

andre; im ohk go to bed now

Me; im watching a movie

Andre; ohk i love you ohk

Me; i love you too

Then i hung up, after the movie took paris to bed and slept.

The following day i got busy reading everything about these guys. I had to know everything about them something came to mind but i knew dre was not suppose to know about it called all the guys that were helping us. They came and i let them know

## INSERT #318

Themba; Fuck no!

Ugo; it could work

Dorian; she is not doing that

Me; what choice do we have, we cant bribe him. They only know me by name amahle adams. I just change my name to whatever. He bumps into me and i make him fall for me

Themba; You fucken pregnant if you not aware

Me; il make up a sob story. Im a woman, il say im a sports dr i was scared i was going to die alone, went to do surrogacy now im expecting my first child. He believes IT.

Deon; his married! For 15 years

Me; and his still a man. Let me try it we can only make him do this by blackmail do you understand that

Themba; he will want to sleep with you

Me; i know pills that make your eye sights really bad , i give him that and you find a prostitute, he has sex with her. He thinks we had sex, we have the video threaten to send it to his wife come on guys

Ugo; but chances are blackmail might not work

Me; ohk tell me what you have?

Them;...

Me; let me try this, and for the sake of safety il try it both with koen and gxumisa

Ugo; you definitely are turner wife

He said that getting up

Ugo; what you need?

me; a new look

Themba; the hair has to go, just so they dont recognise you

Me; il cut my hair

Dorian; you really doing this

Me; im really doing this

Them; ohk

Themba accompanied me to the saloon and i cut my hair, short i mean really short but i looked good or so i think. Iv never cut my hair before it was a first. I had two plans way different from each other way with koen and gxumisa the first target was koen. After 2 weeks or so, he was having brunch at sandton. I was sitting behind him i just ordered a drink. Then i got up and screamed my lungs out. They quickly got up, i held the bottom of my stomach

Koen; mam... Call the ambulance

Me; \*breathing in and out\* no , no im a dr il be ohk

I calmed down, everyone was staring and people surrounding me. I turned to koen hoping his the one who will give me attention not the people surrounding me

Me; i need air

Koen; move back people

They did as told. I took a sip of the water they gave me

Koen; are you ohk?

Me; yes thank you so much

Koen ; you almost scared me for a second there

Koen was old but not old that he shows, old but he dressed well, smelled well and he dyed his hair black. It was too black so i knew it was dyed

Me; \*smiling\* thank you

Koen; \*smiling back \* you sure you ohk

I nodded my head

Koen; do you need me to call anyone

Me; uhm \*i paused\*

Koen; whats wrong

Me; no one to call

Koen; husband?

Me;...

Koen; ohk did you drive here

I nodded my head

Koen; i wouldnt let myself , for you to drive alone.

Me; il just call a friend

Koen; im in a middle of a meeting order yourself some lunch then il take you home. Just so i can sleep at night

Me; thank you

I didnt want to hesitate just in case he changed his mind and was like ohk you will drive yourself.

I ordered lunch and after an hour or so

Koen; all done

Me; ohk

I got up and he helped me up

Me; thank you...

Later that day themba and ugo arrived

Ugo; so?

Me; everything went well, he has my numbers and he will keep in touch

Ugo; ohk perfect

Themba; i still dont like this

Me; you have no choice, tomorrow its gxumisa right

Ugo; yes his always at his office, so you will go there

Me; that wont be a risk

Ugo; no will be watching your back anyway

Me; ohk

I had an early night, didnt even talk to andre. Next day, headed to this big firm. I was sitting on those chair my life was like a movie, i kept on fiddling i would have preferred a restaurant than this. He walked out off the elevator got up and took my bag as if i was looking for something to my luck he was busy on his phone. We bumped into each other and he rushed to hold me and his phone dropped to the floor

Me; oh my, im so sorry \*crying\* im really sorry i wasnt looking where i was going

Him; miss its ohk, its just a phone and i was too busy on it. I wasnt looking are you Ohk? Oh my god you pregnant

Me; no ! I really am sorry

He held me

Him; whats wrong

Me; dont worry about me \*crying\* im really sorry about your phone

He breathed out loud as if thinking , im in shit

Him; you crying, did i hurt you

Me; \*shouting\* everything is hurting me, my legs hurt, my back hurts, mylife hurts, my emotions hurt everything. Im crying right now i dont even know why im crying but im crying

He looked around cause now everyone is staring at us. He said under his breath fuck

Him; come on, lets go up to my office

Me; but you were leaving

Him; that was not important

We went up the elevator and i was crying telling him my problems that i too was not aware about. We got to his office and he gave me warm water with sugar.

Me; im sorry about all of this?

him; its totally ohk, my wife has been through this so i understand

Me; you married

Him; yes

Me; how long

Him ; 15 years

Me; wow thats amazing

Him; and you, father of the child

I began tearing up again

Him; im sorry i should have not mentioned that

Me; can we not talk about him

Him; ohk lets talk about something happy then...

## INSERT #319

I havent been to andre in 4 weeks now, i was 6 months pregnant today and my bump was not getting smaller. The plan was in motion with koen and gxumisa but something was going wrong.

Themba; so whats wrong

Me; we might have to swap the plans

Themba; what you mean

Me; koen is the one who seems to be interested in me despite the belly as for gxumisa, he just sees a pregnant woman

Themba; i knew this was not going to work

Me; it will definitely work. The judge is the one who seems to be taken aback with me. He is an old man, probably wants something young and thats me

Themba; black mailing him

Me; just trust me to do this

Themba; fine

I put on my wig

Me; you will wait for me here

Themba; yes and tell him

Me; dont rush me

I got out off the car and walked in. Passed through security measures until i got where dre was placed. I sat down and 2 minutes he showed up

Andre; you look beautiful

Me; \*smiling\* than \*i paused\* you hurt

He covered his eye with his hand

Andre; its nothing

Me; andre! What happened

Andre; its really nothing, i just got in a fight this morning

Me; \*crying\* andre

The moment he saw i was crying. He got up as if trying to find a way to comfort me

Andre; mami look at me

I just looked on the floor, my emotions were running all over the place

Andre; \*shouting\* fuck

Warder; yeyyyy this is not your mothers place...lets go

Andre; my time is not over \*shouting\* mami look at me please

I lifted up my head, the warder was standing next to andre

Warder; how do rubbishes like you marry such art

Andre; im ohk look at me im ohk nothing is going to happen to me. Im ohk look at me im smiling

Me; andre im scared

Andre; baby im ohk, dont be scared ohk. Im working t get out off here then it will be just us. Dont be scared, i told you before, you get scared and you make me get scared...

I cut him off

Me; then you mess up

Andre; \*smiling\* exactly ohk

The warder walked away and he sat down again

Andre; this is nothing. Now tell me how you been

Me; im ohk theres something i need to tell you

Andre; ohk what is it

Me; im p...

Warder; times up inmate

Andre turned to face him

Warder; asambe baba (lets go)

Andre turned to me

Me; whats with him?

Andre; il tell you all about it, il see you next week ohk

Me; ohk'i love you

Andre; i love you too sthandwa sami

Warder: nyave you too \*laughing\*

He pulled andre away. That warder was very mean yeses,  
i got up and walked out walked to the car and themba  
was on the phone

Themba; i miss you too guys, il come back when  
everything is ohk this side..ohk il call you later

Then he hung up

Me; family?

themba; yeah

Me; sorry to keep you away from your family

Themba; you also my family so how did it go

Me; i was about to tell him but then the warder  
interrupted us

Themba;....

Me; \*laughing\* im being honest

Themba; you have to tell me

Me; i will

We got home and an hour being there. The intercom rang  
there was a car parked outside

Me; who is it

The window of the car came down and i just screamed my lungs out. I opened and met them halfway the car pulled up and the door opened. Kim walked out looking all grown up and really beautiful. We hugged

Me; how you been, when did you get back? You look so grown up

We both laughed

Me; i missed you come here

We hugged

Kim; one question at time and you dont even tell me

Me; we both know why

The door opened and a guy walked out , with a baby seat i looked at kim. My eyes were literally all out.

Kim; lets go in before you pass out here

We walked in and i picked up the baby, she was so young she must have been a week old

Me; talk

Kim; \*laughing\* amahle this is washington, baby this is amahle my second brothers wife

Washington; nice meeting you amahle

He said it all weird

Me; nice meeting you, im just shocked to be meeting you right now

Washington; well she is to blame for that

Me; start talking

Kim; first i heard about you and andre

Me; ...

Kim; talk to me

Me; lets start with the good first

Kim; ohk we met a year ago

Washington; nearly two years now

Kim; i had just knocked off from work and this guy shows up holding flowerr

Washington; she must have thought i was a weirdo, iv been seeing her around the office for some time but i was scared to approach her one time, decided to take away the fear bought flowers and walked up to her

Kim; he was like, i know im not the best looking guy not that i dont have confidence but i know im below your league before rejecting could you please go out for lunch with me

Me; \*laughing8 and you agreed

Kim; \*laughing\* i could not resist, the rest is history

Me; you dont tell me you were pregnant

Kim; im sorry ohk and i didnt want to ... I heard about pa, you and andre... Dre disappearance

Me;...

Kim; im really sorry i was not there

Me; i know you would have been there sweety

She got up and hugged me

Me ; so introduce me to this princess

Washinton; well this is aaliyah williams

Kim; and one last thing

She showed me her left finger. I hit her

Me; how can you hide such , when did this happen

Kim; last month

Me; when is the wedding

Kim; i came back cause i wanted it to be here in south africa, with my family next to me

Me; that so beautifu congratulations you two

Kim; and mum tells me andre is not around

Me; uhm yeah this whole divorce thing has been draining us

Washington; im sorry to hear that about your marriage

Me; its ohk

Kim; you and him were always perfect together

Me; enough about that

Kim; and where are my babies

Me; school they should be back actually

Kim; cant wait to see them

## INSERT #320

We hung out with kim and sanele was pleased to see her as for paris. She takes time to adjust to someone and not knowing kim that well, she was just quiet hiding behind her older brother. Later that day as i was about to zone off, my phone rang

Me; hey big head

Andre; hey big nose

Me; haaaaaa andre

Andre; \*laughing\* im just kidding

Me; bye

I hung up, he called again and again. The third time i picked up

Andre; \*laughing\* ohhh so its ohk for you to use my insecurities but its not ohk when i do so

Me; you dont even have a big head

Andre; well i never thought off that

We both laughed

Andre; iv missed that laugh

Me; i missed you being the reason behind it

Andre;...

Me; you ohk

Andre; yes my baby

Me; so you wont guess who showed up at our home, with a future hubby and a new born

Andre; who?

Me; kim

He laughed

Me; im serious

Andre; i knew she was expecting, i wanted to tell you but with everything that was going on i couldnt

Me; andre!

Andre; im sorry and the nigga but i havent met him

Me; his really nice

Andre; il meet him when i get back

Me; ohk

Andre; what is it you wanted to tell me

Me; whats up with that warder

Andre; ahhhh that one, his just mad

Me; why?

Andre; cause im turner

I laughed

Me; have you talked to michaela

Andre; she wouldnt come here

Me; ohk and your child

I said that cause i wanted to be sure that she was not pregnant with his child

Andre; i only have two kids with you

Me; andre

Andre; she was never pregnant with my child, only you are capable of that. I pray to my father about that

Me; what?

Andre; that you be the only girl that gets to give me kids

Me;...

Andre; is it too early to ask

Me; what?

Andre; for us to have another baby

Me;...

Andre; i dont want to push it

Me; we can try it but i wanted us to try something

Andre; whats that

Me; marriage counselling

Andre; ahhh amahle

Me; please it might help us to get over our issues, we have issues that are not resolved in our marriage andre

Andre;...

Me; please

Andre; ohk i w...

Background voice; turner lets go

Me; where you going

Andre; il talk to you later

Me; an...

He hung up. I just went to bed after

More weeks passed, i was 7 months and hiding it to dre was becoming difficult, i looked like i was going to pop

today. Me and koen had been talking from our first encounter. 2 weeks back he made his first move and went for the kill. Iv never ever in my life been so disgusted, the kiss was wet and he was enjoying it. I felt like throwing up to be honest. He must have been the same age as pa its just he was taking care of himself and dressed well. I was meeting him over lunch

Me; hey baby

He kissed me

Koen; hey my love, how are you

Me; im ohk and yourself

Koen; getting there busy day

Me; whats wrong

Koen; got this big case over my sleeve the trial starts Monday

Me; shame big one

Koen; big i mean big one my love let me no bore you

Me; you know iv always had something about law was kind of interested in it

Koen; you would have been one good looking lawyer

Me; yeah but my parents were all about me being a dr

Koen; they did you a favour , this job is not easy

Me; big criminal

Koen; way big and i know him from a y... Lets not talk about this

I got annoyed

Me; ohk

Well he talked and talked and talked. Listening to him tell me how much he loves me and how he feels young with me. How he was going to support me and my babies and a whole lot of things. While i was sitting there my phone rang and it was gxumisa

Me; babe could you please excuse me

Koen; ohk

I kissed his cheek and walked out

Me; mr

Gxumisa; hi miss khumalo

Me; how may i assist you

Gxumisa; i know we not friends but i need a favour

Me; ohk

Gxumisa; my son wants to study sports science

Me; great choice

Gxumisa; and i was hoping you would mentor him just give him a piece of advice you know

Me; gladly where can i meet you

Gxumisa; il sms you my address

Me; ohk

I hung up and went back in. I told koen i had to go and he understood. I took my things and drove to gxumisa place i was looking all pretty with my bump. The boy was like 17. i did everything to get this guys attention the laugh, the laugh and the holding off the thigh. The acting smart, the independent woman all the shit a man would fall for but nothing, i knew i was pregnant and had a big nose but come on i was still attractive. For a second, i was proud of gxumisa to think such man still exist that they that honest and faithful to their marriage but something was not right. I told the kid all the things i had googled when i was coming there, then got up, gxumisa walked me to my car

Me; thank you for trusting me

Gxumisa; i wouldnt have asked someone else

I smiled

Gxumisa; want to go out for lunch sometime

YES!!!!

Me; id like to when

Gxumisa; you choose

Me; il sms you

Gxumisa; ohk and take care of yourself

## INSERT #321

Two days after met up with gxumisa his name was chuma. We had lunched and we talked as if we were friends. I think he wanted more of a friendship than an affair and as wrong as it sounds i wanted an affair. I was selfish cause i was not thinking about his wife i was thinking about my husband .

Chuma; so ndixelete muntu ? ( so tell me)

Me; what?

chuma; who is okuhle?

Me; ay pa, ayikho into endingakuxelela yona ( theres nothing to tell)

Chuma; i hope you dont find this weird but you the first friend that i actually have you know

Me;...

Chuma; sorry to scare you like that

Me; no its nothing like that. I just feel the same i just thought maybe if i told you...you would think i was weird after how we meet then im saying you my friend cause i

know other people dont just become friends with other people

Chuma; thats the case with me but im just comfortable with you

Me; \*smiling\* good cause i need someone to talk to

Chuma; ohk i also need that

Me; so i was in a relationship with this guy right

Chuma; ohk

He sat back

Me; i loved him chuma i mean i did things for me i was sure he was the one. Like really sure

Chuma; then

Me; we always had protection but we stopped using it but i would buy morning afters, then i started using contraceptives but sometimes these things do not work

Chuma; you got pregnant

Me; yeah and he wanted nothing to do with it, he forced me to have an abortion. I couldnt go through with it when i told him i was keeping it. I never heard from him again  
\*crying\*

He came and sat next to me

Chuma; im so sorry sweetie

We hugged. The crying thing was becoming a talent now like really. He calmed me down and we sat in silence

Me; but im not going to , il just raise them as a singel parent. I am financially stable and no guy wants to look at a woman who has two kids

Chuma; forget about being with someone, focus on your bundles of joy ohk

I smiled

Chuma; well i guess we not so fortunate in our lives are we

Me; what? \*laughing\* you have it all perfect marriage, kids

Chuma; ...

Me; we friends right

Chuma; i know we are its just

Me; you dont have to rush opening up to me but you must know im here for you

Chuma; thank you

We hugged and carried on with lunch. If it was not for this whole thing being a set up, i would have definitely became his friend. He was really nice. I went home and the two were watching tv

Paris; mummy wheres dada

Me; hold on

I took my phone and dialled andre number the time was past 7 i was hoping he would answer. The second time someone picked up

Me; uhm

Guy; turner is still out call after 30 minutes

Me; o...

He hung up. After 30 minutes i called him

Andre; mother of my kids

I smiled

Me; hold on... Baby heres dada

She jumped to the phone and held it

Paris; dada... Fine... Yes... He here ...yes.... Yes...yes

\*laughing and screaming\* yes... Nele

Sanele looked at her. She handed him the phone. He got up

Sanele; dad... Im ohk you? ...when you coming back....ohk... Yes...yes...no...\*laughing\* no...ohk...i miss you too

Paris; miss you too

Sanele gave her the phone to say that. She took it

[paris; miss you too... Love you... Mwah mwah

I just laughed when they were both done they gave me the phone

Me; well that took long

Andre; good i have to go baby

Me; ohk i love you ohk

Andre; love you so much more

The plan was still in motion. I was now 8 months , my feet were swollen i was fat everywhere and i postponed going to see andre i was still trying to figure out the perfect way to tell him. I finally did. I couldnt got and see him but themba was going so i gave him the package i met with chuma.

Chuma; you ready to pop

Me; not yet bhuti

I kissed his cheek

Chuma; iv missed you

Me; me too sorry i havent been available

Chuma; its all good

Me; a picnic really

Chuma; \*laughing\* i wanted us to have privacy

Me; why

## INSERT #322

Chuma; so im from eastern cape, and studied law at uwc,  
did my masters at uct

Me; thats amazing

Chuma; yeah i guess

Me; oh kay

Chuma; i met my wife and we soon got married and had  
kids

Me; 15 years youv told me

Chuma; but what you dont know is, im not attracted to  
my wife

I was hoping for im attracted to you

Me; oh kay how?

Chuma;...

Me; chuma!

Chuma; im

Me; you

Chuma; im attracted to men

My eyes almost fell off

Me; what? Like bisexual

Chuma; no gay im into men not girls

Me; chuma hold on here, you married you have 3 kids

Chuma; im from a xhosa family ezilalini. My father no scratch that my entire family almost disowned me if i didnt get through this phase or so they said. A xhosa man with another man a disgrace babe. I had to pull up a brave face and act

Me; your whole life has been an act

Chuma; pretty much yes

Me; your wife

Chuma; she is aware, iv told her but she says i wont embarrass her like that. I should get my head straight. If not she will inform my colleagues and get me fired because of my sexuality and now we have brought 3 people in this mess. Boys worse part, i dont regret my kids okuhle trust me i dont but im living a lie.

Me;...

Chuma; please say something

Me; im just shocked you to manly

Chuma; not all gays wear skirts

I laughed

Me; \*laughing\* sorry i shouldnt have laughed

Chuma; \*laughing\* why you like this

Me; chuma this is serious

Chuma; so i have to live up with this lie, if they found out at work i dont even want to imagine what would happen

Me; chuma so this is how your life will be

He nodded his head.

Chuma;I feel as if someone has removed something off my shoulders

Me; come here babe

I hugged him. I felt so sorry for him and worse part what i was going to do to him

Chuma; i just had to tell you reason why i needed a friend

I started tearing up this time real tears cause i knew what was going to happen but i had to think off my kids too and my husband. We hugged again and enjoyed our picnic he was himself when he talked to me, he told me how he found out and first boyfriend everything he was just open about the whole thing.

I got home past 8 and the two were eating i was so tired i didnt even check my phone i got up and went to shower after my shower. I took my phone and the were 20 missed calls from andre and a message " come see me tomorrow its an order" i just laughed and went to bed. Following morning dressed all up and themba drove me

there i couldnt drive anymore walked in normal procedure and sat Down. 2 minutes he walked out he didnt sit down. He signalled with his fingers for me to stand up. I just laughed and buried my face. I held on to the chair and got up. His eyes just lighted up... I moved my lips to SUPRISE!!!!. He turned around covering his face, he turned back and his eyes were pinching red

I sat down and he sat down we took the phone

Andre; amahle

He said that with a teary voice and i got emotional. I just bursted out in tears and now we both crying and we cant even hold each other

He buried his head again

Me; we on 8 months now

He lifted his head up and looked at me

Andre; amahle

It was as if, that was the only word he could say

Me; i need you to come back

Andre; we having twins

I nodded my head

Andre; there are no twins at home

Me; \*laughing\* me too

Andre; after all the shit i put you through and god carries on blessing me

I smiled

Andre; \*smiling\* 8 months its like you going to pop now

Me; andre !!!

Andre; \*laughing\* now everything makes sense paris, you avoiding me, never wanting to get up fist

Me; i told sanele and everyone else to keep quiet

Andre; wait im the only one who did not know

I nodded my head

Andre; mami fuck! So i was a joke to you when i talked about having kids

I laughed

Me; all your work not pulling out

Andre; \*laughing\* how was i suppose to know you would get pregnant

Me; oh wow andre

He laughed. He was so happy

Me; now we need to fight to get you out off here

Andre; im fighting baby, gender

Me; i dont know as yet

Andre; we going to be parents again... Did you go to alex

Me; im fine and yes

Andre; im sorry for everything amahle. I really am sorry

I smiled

Andre; i promise to be a better husband and father from now on

Me; i know you will be

Time was up, we got up and left

## INSERT #323

After a few days me and themba went to see andre. We went through the normal procedure but they had moved him, now we could talk and not over the phone

Themba looked relaxed

Me; you relaxed

Themba; \*laughing\* remember this place as if it was yesterday

Me; like really themba

Themba; \*laughing\* what?

Andre ; hey

We looked up and it was andre , his arm was hurt

Me; you hurt

Andre; \*smiling\* im fine, i want you to model for me

I laughed

Andre; please

Themba helped me to get up and andre walked around to get a clear view of me

Me; \*laughing\* you like

Andre;....

He just looked at me saying nothing

Me; you happy

He bended down and he was just sniffing. I walked closer to him and rubbed his back

Warder; \*shouting\* YEYYYYYYYY

I raised my hands up and backed away. We sat down and he was just looking at me, he just lighted up

Andre; baby

Me; im sorry i didnt tell you earlier

Andre; its ohk only this matters now\*smiling\* , you taking good care of her?

Themba ; im trying so what happened

Andre ;ghefgsfuwkjgfoid (i did that cause they spoke in a language i could not even understand i think it was afrikaans i was not very sure )

They talked for like 10 minutes both of them serious faces and guys that were near by kept looking at them

Me; im here you know

They didnt mind me , they talked for another 5 minutes and themba got up

Andre; how are you

Me; and that?

Andre ; dont mind that? How are you baby

Me; im ohk i dont want you here baby, like people die here you can \*i paused\*

Andre; dont worry i wont do anything that will make me stay here for years

Me; so your hand

Andre; i was just in a fight last night nothing big

Me; you already fighting andre

Andre; \*laughing\* im ohk you worry too much woman

Me; i love you ohk

Andre ; i love you too my angel , so much. So tell me everything

Me; 8 months, i dont know the gender wanted it to be a surprise. Been busy with one room for the both off them kgontsi helps me out. He did everything actually

Andre; you look beautiful

Me; ohhh no more big nose

He laughed then He just looked at me, more like stared at me

Me; what?

Andre ; its just....

Warder; TURNER!!

He tilted his head back and look behind him with his head upside down. The warder snapped his wrist with his index finger

Andre ; i have to go

Me; already

Andre; they just going to give us 5 minutes

I lay my head on the table and cried. He brushed my head

Andre; baby look at me

I shook my head

Andre; please

I looked up

Andre; i love you more than anything in this world and il  
be back home i promise you just stay strong ohk and dont  
stress too much

Me; ohk

He got up and he helped me up

Warder; WATCH IT TURNER

Andre ; SHES PREGNANT RELAX VADER

Me; better get going

He held me in a tight hug until this warder shouted again.  
I let go and walked out. themba was waiting for me and  
we left i was silent the whole drive

Dre trial has been going on for over a month now. The  
weekend i was going out with koen. I prayed to god i dont  
give birth.

Koen; you look beautiful

Me; thank you

We kissed geez the kisses i hated we got to this hotel and  
i drugged his drink. In less than hour he was bumping into  
shit. I called themba and they did things. I insisted the girl  
does not sleep with him, he just gave him a hand job and  
he cum in 5 seconds lol. He was screaming my name as if  
we were having sex. They took all the pictures that they

needed and i had to sleep naked not really naked but with my underwear. I didnt even sleep. I was woken up by kisses on my shoulders

Koen; last night was amazing

This guy in his right state of mind thought i had sex with him while i was this heavy pregnant. I got up and wore my gown

Me; i have to go

Koen; whats wrong

Me; theres a problem i need to sort out

i gave him a peck on the lips i felt a slight pain on my lower back. I held the scream in i walked out and took my phone fast and called themba. I took my bag and walked out with a gown just imagine leaving koen there, he could not be there when i gave birth. Themba and ugo were walking directly to me. When i let out the loudest scream they ran to me. They rushed me out off there and to the car. My phone kept on ringing. Ugo texted him that i had to rush somewhere and he believed it. They rushed me to the hospital and alex walked in.

Me; \*screaming\* epi dural

Alex; its too late for that

My head was all over the place. I never heard anything i just heard the word c sections and they were moving me out off there.

## #THEMBA

Alex said, the one twin was in danger and if she did natural birth he would die so they had to do c section me and ugo were just walking around amahle phone rang and it was andre

Andre; b...

Me; andre

Andre; boy!

Me; you going to be a father again man

Andre;....

Me; andre

Andre; where are you?

Me; we at the hospital

Andre; i cant believe i missed this

Me; you will be out soon, its close now

We talked and he was excited after an hour or so. Amahle family showed up and andre family. We told them what

alex told me and they siad we should pray after 2 hours or more alex walked out

Alex; \*smiling\* she gave birth to two beautiful, healthy boys

Me; boys

Alex; \*laughing\* yeah the nigga is in trouble

The families were so happy

Andre mum; wheres my daughter?

Alex; she is still sleeping mam and kids are in the maternity ward, im afraid you will view them from the window

Us; ohk

We walked with alex and headed to the window. Thy were so white and pink. I took a pic and sent it to andre with the caption 'your boys just arrived'. Theres nothing we could do so we had to leave.

#AMAHLE

Woke up in the middle of the night and i was thirsty took a sip of my water and called fro the nurse. Alex showed up

Alex; helo to our mummy

I smiled

Me; are they both ohk

Alex; perfect want to see them

I nodded my head

Alex; il get the nurses to come bring them for you ohk

Me; can i borrow your phone

Alex; sure, last number

I laughed

Andre: alex is she Ohk, my boys?

Me: andre

I heard him breath out loud

Andre; hi to the most beautiful and strong woman who just gave me the greatest 2 gifts ever

Me; \*smiling\* what a greeting

Andre; you deserve it, how are you?

Me; i need you baby, i need you here

Andre;.....

Me; Andre

Andre; im really sorry im not there my baby , im really am

Me; please come home, i cant raise them alone

Andre; il be home soon i promise you

Me; ohk

Andre; thank you baby, thank you so much

Me; i love you ohk

Andre; i love you too so names?

Me; i dont know what were you thinking

Andre; anything but i want them to also have zulu names

Me; il think of something

Andre; i love you my wife

Me; i love you too daddy

Then we hung up. The nurses walked in and i was in love they were so pink. And tiny i wanted to scream to the world and let them know i had twins to be honest. I was still not sure about the names though. Follwing day my family came in large numbers andre mother and grandmother cried and it was great seeing that. andre grandmother wanted to give them zulu names ' it was "lindo "and 'okuhle' i was in love with them cause joined together it meant 'wait for whats beautiful" . Later that day they had to leave i fed them but okuhle yerr he was trouble constantly crying. I talked with andre that night and he was in love with the names as well. We finally decided over the phone it would be ' JAYDEN OKUHLE ADAMS' AND 'AYDEN LINDO ADAMS'. I was so happy i even cried. They were so identical yet they were so young

but okuhle had a black mark on the side of her eye just like me. It was cute

After a week or so, we got discharged. Themba came and visited me to update me

Me; so?

Themba; we got everything

Me;...

Themba; what?

Me; can i do it for myself with chuma

Themba; mami

Me; please i owe him this

Themba; ohk when will you leave

Me; i dont know im scared to leave the boys alone

Themba; will make a plan

Me; ohk

Another week passed, sanele was happy to have two little brothers but he was so scared to hold them as for paris she wanted girls and no boys so she did not like them.

After a week i left early to go and see chuma. We met at a private place

Chuma; did you give birth

I laughed then twirled

Chuma; you look yummy

Me; thank you babe

Chuma; when am i seeing them

Me;...

Chuma; whats wrong

Me; we need to talk

Chuma; ohk

Me; my real name is amahle adams and my husband is andre adams

He got up

Me; you the state prosecutor for his case

Chuma; what the fuck is this

Me; this was real for me i gained a friend but in difficult circumstances and i know probably after this we will never see each other again. I just want you to know that i love you chuma, you have been real with me and i loved your friendship so much more but again im sorry for what im about to do

I played the record

Me; i need you to back off my husbands case, get rid of the evidence you have if not you know whats going to happen

Chuma; you bitch

Me; il give you two weeks

I passed him. But i turned

Me; you an amazing guy and this is not you. I loved it when i was with you not this false character, for once think about yourself and not others. I meant what i said i loved our friendship and i hope in the near future we could go out for drinks. (smiling) take care babe

Then i walked to my car...

Insert #324

Everything was in themba and ugo hands from now on. Lindo didnt cry that much but okuhle i mean he would cry for no reason at all, i was tired i had four kids that i had to give all my attention to my older baby was there for me oh god. He helped me where he could and i mean help. Mamsebe aslo helped me pretty much everyone was helping me. Andre family would come time after time to see how i was doing and stuff. Themba was busy the entire time he hardly slept there anymore he would come

back late and leave early. I broke the sim card that kept me and koen connected so he could not reach me. Woke up around 4 am cause they were crying

I picked up okuhle and lindo and walked downstairs and placed them on the baby sitter. I had pumped out their milk so i was warming it up. Lindo loved food jesus i was hoping he would be like this even after he starts eating solid food. I picked up okuhle while placing the bottle in lindo mouth one arm was occupied by okuhle the other lindo. This was not easy especially being alone and i did not want to wake up anyone off them.

After feeding them lindo fell asleep right away not okuhle.  
I called andre

Andre; baby i cant talk we leav...

Me; \*crying\* dre i cant do it, he just keeps on crying and crying

Andre; baby please stop crying

Me; ...

Andre; is it okuhle

Me; mmhmmm

Andre; put the phone on loudspeaker

I did as told i dont know if dre thought this was going to work but i doubted it, he just started talking about how he could not wait to meet him, how we should stop draining mummy . Dre voice seemed like a lullaby to him, he just fell asleep on my arms, i quickly removed it on the loudspeaker

Mel \*whispering\* well we know he will be a daddys boy, his sleeping thank you

Andre; ohk baby will talk later

Then i hung up. I placed him near lindo and made food for us all. Lindo woke up and i went to bath him he was a quite soul no lies as i was bathing him sanele woke up and sat next to me

Me; whats wrong

Sanele; so mum

Me; ...

Sanele; theres a friend of mine coming over

Me; josh

Saneel;...

Me; baby

Sanele; no a girl

Me; a girl \*raising my eyebrow\*

Sanele; no mum , she is my friend so you dont mind

Me; no baby

Sanele; ohk great cause her mum is at the gate

Me; \*shouting\* sanele

Sanele ; im sorry mum

He got up and walked out, i dressed up lindo and walked out. I was met by this beauty at the door with her mum

The mum; mrs adams

Me; mrs

Her; smith

Me; nice meeting you

Her; emma told me sanele mum gave birth to twins

Me; \*laughing\* another job

She laughed

Her; i hope you dont mind me dropping her off so early , i just have to rush somewhere

Me; its complettely fine, we were about to eat breakfast

Her; thank you il pick her up later

Me; ohk

I got introduced to emma, she was beautiful with pinching blue eyes and long black hair. I made them breakfast and my baby was blushing to this girl i dont even want to lie.

the boys were sleeping and paris was sitting next to me watching ncess

Later that day, they picked up emma and we went to bed. Around 07;00 am i had to wake up for the third time

the boys had turned one month and it was still torture i was exhausted i hardly slept. They were always crying my head was spinning. Woke up from my nap cause i no longer sleep. Themba was already gone early that morning he said he had to do some things. My hair was a mess , i was in leggings and a baggy tshirt with socks i went to the boys room , i changed them , fed them and burped them then did all i could do to put him to bed. When he fell asleep the other boy woke up waking up him and i did the same trying to keep the other one quiet i started crying cause this was too much for me i mean too much they finally settled down , i went to my bedroom and sat down on my side of the bed , buried my face on my legs and just burst out in tears. I just cried cause I could not do this alone

The door opened but i didnt care if they saw me crying i knew it was either themba or mamsebe cause it was still early for my 2 other kids to be back from school.

Me; please leave me alone please

I let out every tear that was within me if there is anything like that i couldnt hold back anymore. The door had not closed and i knew who ever it was just watching me

Me; i said \* i lifted up my head \*

I couldnt finish my sentence , i just froze and looked at him

## INSERT#325

Andre ; this was not the image i had in mind , when i knew i was coming home

Me;.....

He walked towards me, but i stood up and walked back but he didnt stop he walked towards me and i walked back not stopping until i hit the wall behind me. He put his hand on my face and i just shivered i was still confused and scared and angry. I pushed him away but he stood right in front of me again before i could move from that position

Me; \*crying\* andre

He moved his head right on my neck, i could feel his breath on my neck, breathing in and out his cologne, he was in a position that made it hard for me to push him away

Andre; im sorry i was not there, i really am sorry but right now i just want to fuck my wife please dont push me away please

Me;....

Andre ; i need your sweat on my body, your lips on mine, i need to hear your moans please dont push me away il make it up to you and alex gave me the green light

Before i could talk back he lifted me up and pinned me to the wall and i could not say no cause i missed him like hell , i put my arms around his neck and put my lips on his. The touch of our lips together came in contact with my tears. He walked us to the bed and slowly laid me on our bed , the feel of his lips on my face, he moved his kiss from my lips, to my cheeks, to kissing my tears ,then eyes and moved to my forehead to my ear " i love you" he whispered to my ear and i responded back. I removed his jacket and he moved his kisses to my neck causing me to realise a moan , i locked my ankles around his waist pulling him closer to me he held my top in fists and ripped it apart revealing my breasts , he looked down at my body and he stared at it for a while admiring it with his eyes, he laid kisses on my neck going down to my breast, i bit my lower lip tossing my head back , he went down, kissing my stomach and down removing my leggings, he played with his hands on my vagina, i moaned and pulled him up

to kiss him again while he massaged my clit, i let out moans in between our lips. He broke the kiss and removed his pants and got up to lock the door.

He pulled me towards him at the end of the bed with my waist and used his tongue , i held the sheets in a fist and moaned so loudly, and moaned his name , the tight grip on my waist made me moan even louder. I could feel every movement that was made down there and that brought pleasure to me. He pulled me back up to the bed and looked at. He kept his balance with his knees and pulled me closer to him, never letting go of the tight grip on my waist, I didn't even care about the car section scar I just wanted him. my legs were behind his body, my body all up from the sheets. Only the tip of my head on the sheets, I was not even aware I was capable of such a position. He slowly entered me and he groaned while i moaned , he went out and in again and increased the pace . My head was upside down , he had a clear view of my entire body. He went in hard, deep and fast and i loved it , he moaned against my stomach and marked his territory i screamed at the feeling of his d inside of me and the pleasurable pain. He went in faster and faster and the louder our moans were, i felt mixed feelings building inside of me and my body trembled , we cumed at the same time. Both out of breath he laid between my legs and we both zoned off

I woke up hours later, covered and andre was not next to me. I suddenly smiled and took his tshirt that was on the floor and wore it, i could still smell him and went out of our room. I noticed the twins bedroom was open so i tiptoed and he was in his boxers , looking down at his kids

Me; they look just like you

He turned to the door and gave me a smile

I walked to him and put my arms around his back and he held them on his front

Andre ; this is ayden lindo and this jayden okuhle the trouble maker

I laughed

Me; yes , you like them

He turned to face me

Andre ; i love them

He picked me up and i locked my ankles around his waists

Andre ; but i love you more

Me; \*smiling\* just kiss me

And he didnt even hesitate . I loved his lips on my lips but ayden felt he had to disturb

Me; your turn

He put me down and picked him up

Me; il be downstairs

I went out and walked downstairs and grabbed something to drink

Shane; oh sorry \* covering his eyes\*

Me; relax nothing is showing

Shane; ohk themba went to pick up sanele and paris

Me; when did he leave

Shane; maybe 5 or 10 minutes ago \*stuttering\*

Me ; am i making you uncomfortable

He was shaking and staring at me but also trying not to look at me , his eyes were all over the place

Shane; y n...

Andre came downstairs holding ayden on his left arm. he looked sexy as fuck, he had cut his hair so short, with tattoos all over his chest, hands and neck, his great body , wearing only shorts carrying a cute baby with the craziest hair (Now imagine what i was seeing)

andre; whats up man

Shane; uh uh

Andre opened his eyes wide and stood opposite me and now we were both looking at shane

Andre; sit here \*hitting the counter \*

I did just that and he stood in between my legs

Shane covered his eyes again, sweating now

Andre; shane!

Shane; i just came to tell amahle that themba went to pick up the kids

Andre; you take an hour to answer one sentence geez man

Shane took bottled water and left . Andre gave mamsebe ayden

Andre ; the judge said , the state failed to provide solid evidence so what did you do

Me; \*laughing\* nothing

Andre; baby!

Me; you out, thats all that matters

Andre; i missed you so much

I just smiled looking at him and he cupped my face

Andre; no more tears ohk just that smile

Me; since you here, i doubt the would be any tears

He held my neck and pulled me to him as our lips were about to touch

Paris; \*screaming \* DADA!!!!!!!!!

She ran to andre and we were still shocked by the scream , he picked her up and she gave him a big hug. I just smiled at that view and sanele came in soon after that also running to andre. The 3 of them went to the lounge , themba got in

Me; thank you

Themba; for what?

Me; everything come here \* opening my hands\*

Themba; no way i will say no to a hug

I got off the counter and hugged him

Themba; im happy if you happy

Me; i want you two to talk ohk

Themba;...

Me; please, you just need to talk the two of you and put everything on the table

Themba; will talk

We decided to have a small braai . themba took out the meat and i cooked pap and made green salad cause mamsebe was busy with the twins

That was around 3 around 4 i was done and we were waiting for the meat, andre held my hand and we walked outside very far from everyone

Me; you ohk

Andre; thank you

Me; \*smiling\* for what

Andre ; sticking with me , our kids everything baby

I put my arms around his neck and kissed him

Me; and thank you for everything being my husband and the father of our kids i love you

Andre; i love you too my baby

## INSERT #326

It was great being back and being with my family again. I slept with my wife, in our bed and nothing could possibly ruin this. I pulled her to me and kissed her, she slightly opened her eyes

Me; i love you

Amahle; \*smiling\* love you too

Me; you cut your hair

Amahle; you only seeing that now

Me; im sorry i was just too excited

Amahle; i look good?

Me; you look good in anything

I pulled her into a kiss again and the cries began

Amahle; i need sleep bye

She said that pulling the covers i laughed and went to the twins room. Okuhle geez this one

Me; boy whatsup ? Im here now ohk Never leaving you again im sorry for not being there...

I took the bottle that was on the counter and sat down with him. I fed him and he zoned off. Lindo was a sweetheart eating then sleeping. I wnet downstairs to make the mrs the breakfast. Took it to her, she ate and themba came, i asked him to come since we had a lot to talk about.

I went downstairs to open up for him and we went outside. The was silence maybe 5 minutes until i broke it

Me; thank you

Themba; its all good anyway amahle did all the work

Me; what happened themba? I thought me and you were tight? You were like my brother you always had my back and so did i

Themba;

Me; is it the money? Im just failing to understand a lot of things here

Themba; i didnt want all of this, none of it... One morning people were threatening me and nobuhle they went as far as threatening nobuhle family and invading her family home. I did not have that kind of money andre. So i suggested we do the job, i knew who the money belonged to and where it came from but i just thought we were going to do it, we go in take the money and leave. I pay off this bitches and its done all forgotten. But thats not what happened

Me;...

Themba; i made a fucked up decision and im acknowledging that, but i would never try to kill you or try to get you killed. I just had to do what i had to do. I was thinking with my heart, thinking of nobuhle and her family and not my head. I just panicked

Me;...

Themba; im not saying believe all the shit im telling you. I just want you to know that im sorry for the shit i put you through and making you lose respect for me or trust, im sorry but i would never sell you out, i just need you to know that

Me; i want to believe you man but its just hard

Themba; we live off such an industry that requires trust so i get why it would be hard for you to trust me and im not expecting you too

Me;...

Themba; andre im sorry man

I looked at him

Themba; i really am sorry for taking you away from your family and i would never forgive myself for such

Me;...

He turned around and walked away i stood there for a minute or so then rushed behind him. His car was already going out off the gate. I stopped him and walked to his car, he got out

Me; we have been through a lot of shit together man, a lot and i get why you did what you did but i will never understand why you did it. But you my brother as much as i fucken hate to say that after all this shit, truth is you my fucken brother and i want us to put this behind us, we never talk about this and its like it never happened cause i want us to start on a clean slate

He just walked up to me and hugged. It was weird but to us, it was real. It was emotional for the both of us. After a good 10 minutes acting like little bitches he left.

I walked back in and mami was waiting for me holding lindo

Me; \*laughing\* what?

amahle; thank you

Me; for

Amahle; you and themba

Me; come here

She walked up to me and we kissed

Sanele; geez guys do i have to snoop around in my own home

We laughed

Amahle ; ai suka, why dont we tell dad about emma

Sanele; \*laughing\* really mum? You going to go there

Amahle; you know im going to go there

Me; no no lets hear about this emma

Sanele; she is my friend dad

Andre; friend, she doesnt seem like a friend

Sanele; mum you see now

I walked up to him and shook his head

Me; you going to tell me all about it

I turned to amahle and the smile on her face was priceless, i looked over the twins and they were fucked up beautiful, the princess of the house sitting next to me with her arms around my waist and the big guy. This was literally my life...

## INSERT #327

Girl; yeYYY vuka mele sihambe ( wake up we need to go)

I slowly opened my eyes and mbali was standing next to me

Mbali; \*laughing\* you were so fucken Drunk, you are such a burden when you drunk let's go\*hitting my thigh \*. You see this is how the guys roll. We need to go

I got up and... I was so confused i was wearing all black, i got up from the bed and went to the mirror. I was so young, my hair, my boobs, my body

Mbali; \*shouting\* AMAHLE!!!

I was so scared, i was literally shaking. I walked out off the room and walked to the lounge and then outside to the balcony. My stomach began tying up in knots. I looked up at andre, candice was sitting next to him and helen. He was smoking. My breathing just changed

Dorian; you ohk lala?

I quickly turned to him

Mbali; its the first of january what are we doing ? I plan to get drunk today but she is going home, I dont want to be in trouble with my mum

Andre; i feel like braai meat then we buy goodies

Candice: I need to shower

Mbali: well we don't have time to wait for you

Helen: I'm up for anything

Me; it was a dream

Andre turned to me , blowing out the smoke

Andre; what was a dream?

Me;...

Mbali; \*laughing\* what the fuck did you drink yesterday, wena dorian what did you give her cause you were mixing drinks

Dorian: I think it was the weed

Me; what year is this

Deon; are you Ohk? What's wrong?

Me; what year?

Mbali; well I know for sure you no more going out. If you going to be acting crazy

Me; mbali

Mbali; a year after you lost your father

Me; you three fucking

Candice; what???

Helen: I understand you mbali cousin but you crossing the line

Andre: \*laughing\* I'm going to get you drunk more often, the after effects are amazing \*laughing \*

Me; it was a dream

Andre; what did you dream mama?

I looked at him and tears just began building up

Me; it couldnt have been a dream no!

I turned around and walked away

Mbali; \*shouting\* AMAHLE

She followed behind me. I felt hands behind me. I turned and it was andre

Andre; you crying come here

I went in between his arms. He smelled the same

Andre; what did you dream about? Your parents???

Me; u u

I couldnt speak. Mbali showed up

Mbali; lets get you home seems like you still drunk

Deon took his car keys and we walked out. The whole drive i was silent, thinking about this whole thing, paris was not real, the twins were not real, my big house, andre being a criminal, the money we had. Good thing about this whole thing was ma and pa but still my whole life was shown in a dream it couldnt be possible or was it. We got home i just walked in the house and went to my bedroom, still the same how i left it. I was still a fucken virgin. I just started crying cause it just couldnt be a dream no fucken way.

I woke up around 4am i fell asleep in my clothes, my heart was so heavy i was hurt. I just wanted to sleep and carry on with my dream actually no i wanted it to be reality. I made myself coffee and watched cartoons. The thought that i was only 19 freaked me out. I was a grown up with 4 kids 4 how did i end up here. As childish as this was i cried again

Following morning just sat in my bed. I didnt even want to eat as if that was going to change anything. Mbali walked in

Mbali; drunkard

Me;...

Mbali; \*laughing\* im joking ey wena

Me; what do you want

Mbali; yho

Me; mbali

Mbali; you have a visitor

Me; who

Mbali; go and see

I wore my gown and walked out, i walked towards the gate and i froze

Andre; \*laughing\* mrs it was a dream \*imitating me\*

Me;...

Andre; oh ohk

Me; what do you want?

Andre; you want me to shout now, come here

I walked out and stood near the gate, folding my hands

Andre; you look beautiful

Me;...

Andre; \*laughing\* why you mad at me?

Me;...

Andre; please go out with me ke?

Me; what?

andre; lets go out for lunch just me and you and we talk and you tell me about this dream that made you look insane

Me;...

Andre; please

Me; where are your fuck buddies

Andre; i dont give a fuck about where they are but i give a fuck about taking you out

I smiled

Andre; so im giving you 30 minutes to get ready

Me; \*smiling\* ohk

Andre; and dont forget, you going to tell me about that dream

I just laughed and walked in

My time with you has been the greatest. Thank you for the support from day one and thank you for not giving up on me or getting bored. I enjoyed every insert i wrote , loved every comment i read and with some of you i got to

talk to on a more personal level. Thank you for everything and thank you for supporting this diary. But turner is out!!!!